











# A HISTORY OF ENGLAND

---

GROWTH OF DEMOCRACY

---

1237—1220

# A HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

By the Rev. J. FRANCK BRIGHT, D.D.,

*Formerly Master of University College, Oxford; late Master of the  
Modern School in Marlborough College.*

With numerous Maps and Plans. Crown 8vo.

This work is divided into five Periods of convenient and handy size, especially adapted for use in Schools, as well as for Students reading special portions of History for local and other Examinations.

Period I.—MEDIÆVAL MONARCHY : The Departure of the Romans to Richard III. From A.D. 449 to A.D. 1485. 4s. 6d.

Period II.—PERSONAL MONARCHY : Henry VII. to James II. From A.D. 1485 to A.D. 1688. 5s.

Period III.—CONSTITUTIONAL MONARCHY : William and Mary to William IV. From A.D. 1689 to A.D. 1837. 7s. 6d.

Period IV.—GROWTH OF DEMOCRACY : Victoria. From A.D. 1837 to A.D. 1880. 6s.

Period V.—IMPERIAL REACTION : Victoria. From A.D. 1880 to A.D. 1901. 4s. 6d.

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

LONDON, NEW YORK, BOMBAY, AND CALCUTTA

A

94-2  
B76h

# HISTORY OF ENGLAND<sup>c</sup>

BY THE REV.

J. FRANCK BRIGHT, D.D.

FORMERLY MASTER OF UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

*PERIOD IV.*

GROWTH OF DEMOCRACY

VICTORIA

1837-1880

With Maps and Plans

*NEW IMPRESSION*

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

NEW YORK, BOMBAY, AND CALCUTTA

1907

*All Rights Reserved*



# CONTENTS.

## LORD MELBOURNE'S MINISTRY.

MAY 1835—SEPTEMBER 1841.

	PAGE
1835 <b>Position of parties,</b> . . . . .	1
Consequent weakness of the Government, . . . . .	2
Many questions awaiting settlement, . . . . .	3
1837 <b>Accession of Queen Victoria,</b> . . . . .	4
New Parliament, . . . . .	5
Settlement of the Civil List, . . . . .	5
<b>Difficulties in Canada,</b> . . . . .	6
Grievances of the Colonists, . . . . .	7
Open rebellion, . . . . .	9
Danger of war with America, . . . . .	10
1838 Lord Durham sent as High Commissioner, . . . . .	11
1840 Canada Bill, based on Durham's report, . . . . .	13
1837 <b>Difficulties in Ireland,</b> . . . . .	14
Ireland the victim of party government, . . . . .	15
1838 Revision of the Irish Poor Law, . . . . .	16
The Irish Tithe Bill, . . . . .	19
1840 The Irish Corporation Bill, . . . . .	21
1836 Lord Normanby's Irish administration, . . . . .	22
1838 Opposition of Irish Tories to Under-Secretary Drummond, . . . . .	23
1839 Debates on Irish affairs, . . . . .	24
1838 <b>Difficulties in Jamaica,</b> . . . . .	26
Evils of modified emancipation, . . . . .	27
Two bills to amend the evils, . . . . .	28
Consequent disaffection in Jamaica, . . . . .	29
1839 Proposal to suspend the Jamaica Constitution, . . . . .	30
<b>Resignation of Melbourne's Ministry,</b> . . . . .	31
The Queen refuses to change her ladies, . . . . .	31
Peel declines the Ministry, . . . . .	32

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1839 Melbourne returns to office, . . . . .	33
The Jamaica Bill passed, . . . . .	34
1840 The Queen's Marriage, . . . . .	35
1837 Importance of social questions, . . . . .	36
Condition of the Working Classes, . . . . .	37
Rise of Trades Unions, . . . . .	38
1838 Ashley's attempts to pass a Factory Act, . . . . .	39
Schemes for national education, . . . . .	40
Ignorance of the people, . . . . .	42
Rise of Chartism, . . . . .	44
1840 Weakness of the Ministry, . . . . .	46
Failure of Irish Registration Bills, . . . . .	47
Financial difficulties, . . . . .	48
Introduction of Penny Postage, . . . . .	49
1841 Free Trade proposals in the Budget, . . . . .	50
Russell's proposal to modify the Corn Laws, . . . . .	51
The Budget rejected, . . . . .	52
New Parliament, Conservative majority, . . . . .	52
Fall of Melbourne's Ministry, . . . . .	52
Palmerston's foreign policy, . . . . .	53
1838 Spain and Portugal . . . . .	53
The Eastern question, . . . . .	54
Dreaded advance of Russia, . . . . .	54
Efforts to revivify Turkey, . . . . .	54
1839 Its existence threatened by the rise of Egypt, . . . . .	55
France and England differ as to Egypt, . . . . .	56
1840 Convention of Powers without France for armed intervention, . . . . .	57
War with Egypt, . . . . .	58
Defeat of Mehemet Ali, . . . . .	58
1841 Success of Palmerston's diplomacy, . . . . .	59
Danger of Russian advance in Asia, . . . . .	59
Afghanistan, . . . . .	60
1840 Failure of the English Embassy to Cabul, . . . . .	60
Expedition to depose Dost Mahomed, . . . . .	61
Its apparent success, . . . . .	62
1841 Murder of the Envoys, . . . . .	63
1842 The retreat from Cabul, . . . . .	65
The garrisons at Jellalabad and Candahar, . . . . .	66
Invasion of Afghanistan, . . . . .	68
Rescue of the prisoners, . . . . .	69
Withdrawal of the English, . . . . .	70
1843 Return of Dost Mahomed, . . . . .	70
1840 The Chinese Opium War, . . . . .	71
Origin of the dispute, . . . . .	72
Capture of Chusan, . . . . .	73
1841 Attack on Canton, . . . . .	74
1842 Treaty of Nankin, . . . . .	75



SIR ROBERT PEEL'S MINISTRY.

SEPTEMBER 1841 TO JULY 1846.

	PAGE
1841 Peel's reticence in the autumn session, . . . . .	78
1842 Excitement at the opening of Parliament, . . . . .	79
Peel's financial measures, . . . . .	80
His sliding scale, . . . . .	81
Introduction of the Income-tax, . . . . .	83
Reductions in the tariff, . . . . .	85
The Budget carried by large majorities, . . . . .	86
Misery of the Working Classes, . . . . .	86
Opposition of the Chartists to the Anti-Corn Law League, . . . . .	87
Rejection of the Chartist petition, . . . . .	88
Interest felt in social questions, . . . . .	88
Ashley's Collieries Bill carried, . . . . .	89
The new Poor Law retained, . . . . .	90
Apparent success of Peel's administration, . . . . .	90
Serious causes of anxiety, . . . . .	91
Chartist riots, . . . . .	92
Wars in India, . . . . .	92
Excitement in Ireland, . . . . .	93
Peel adheres to his financial measures, . . . . .	93
1843 The Sindh and Gwalior wars end favourably, . . . . .	94
Efforts at social legislation, . . . . .	95
Ashley's address to the Queen on Education, . . . . .	96
1844 Graham's Factory Bill, . . . . .	97
Religious movement of the time, . . . . .	99
Position of the Scotch Church, . . . . .	99
1839 Disputes in the General Assembly, . . . . .	100
1842 Appeal to Government, . . . . .	101
18 The Disruption and formation of the Free Church, . . . . .	102
The Tractarian movement, . . . . .	103
1841 Publication of Tract XC., . . . . .	104
1843 The High Church under Dr. Pusey, . . . . .	105
The Rebecca riots, . . . . .	106
1842 Repeal Agitation in Ireland, . . . . .	107
"Young Ireland" starts <i>The Nation</i> , . . . . .	108
O'Connell adheres to constitutional agitation, . . . . .	109
1843 Peel removes the Liberal Irish Magistrates, . . . . .	109
Passes the Irish Arms Bill, . . . . .	110
Refuses Smith O'Brien's motion for inquiry, . . . . .	113
Proclaims the monster meetings, . . . . .	114
Arrests O'Connell and the other leaders, . . . . .	114
The verdict against them reversed, . . . . .	115
1844 Peel's financial policy, . . . . .	116

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1844 Reorganisation of the Bank Charter, . . . .	117
The Currency Bill, . . . .	118
Reduction of the National Debt, . . . .	119
Changes in the Sugar Duties, . . . .	121
Characteristics of Peel's statesmanship, . . . .	123
Advance of Free Trade, . . . .	124
1845 <b>Peel's Irish measures</b> , . . . .	125
Increase of the Maynooth endowment, . . . .	126
Establishment of the "Godless Colleges," . . . .	127
No attempt at land legislation, . . . .	128
Poverty revealed by the Devon Commission, . . . .	129
Failure of the Potato Crop, . . . .	130
Peel determines to repeal the Corn Laws, . . . .	132
Opposition in the Cabinet, . . . .	132
Peel resigns—December 5, . . . .	133
Russell fails to form a Ministry, . . . .	133
Peel returns to office—December 20, . . . .	134
1846 The Corn Bill, . . . .	135
The Coercion Bill, . . . .	137
Attempt to pass both Bills together, . . . .	138
The Corn Bill carried, . . . .	138
Vengeance of the Protectionists, . . . .	139
Liberals and Protectionists join in opposition, . . . .	139
The Coercion Bill thrown out, . . . .	140
The Ministry resign, June 29, . . . .	140
1845 The Railway Mania, . . . .	140
<b>Foreign affairs</b> , . . . .	141
Difficulties in India, . . . .	141
1844 Recall of Lord Ellenborough, . . . .	141
1845 The Sikh war, . . . .	142
Difficulties on the Canadian frontier, . . . .	144
Danger of war with America, . . . .	145
1846 Peaceful settlement of the frontier, . . . .	146
<b>Difficulties with France</b> , . . . .	146
1844 The Tahiti question, . . . .	147
1845 Rivalry with France in Spain, . . . .	148
Suitors for the Spanish Queen, . . . .	149
1846 The Spanish marriages, . . . .	151
Breach with France, . . . .	153

## LORD JOHN RUSSELL'S MINISTRY.

JULY 1846 TO FEBRUARY 1852.

Difficult position of the new Ministry, . . . .	154
Ireland the chief difficulty, . . . .	155
Renewal of the Potato Blight, . . . .	156

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1846 Mismanagement of the relief works, . . . . .	157
1847 Proposed measures of relief, . . . . .	159
Soup-kitchens established, . . . . .	160
Corn and Navigation Acts suspended, . . . . .	161
Bentinck's railway scheme rejected, . . . . .	162
Alteration in the Poor Law carried, . . . . .	163
Death of O'Connell, . . . . .	163
Extent of the famine and pestilence, . . . . .	164
Increase of crime, . . . . .	165
Coercion Bill passed, . . . . .	165
1848 The Clearances, . . . . .	166
Kennedy's report on the evictions, . . . . .	167
Outbreak of rebellion, . . . . .	168
Government Security Bill passed, . . . . .	168
Habeas Corpus Act suspended, . . . . .	169
The Rebellion suppressed, . . . . .	169
<b>Effect of Irish affairs on England,</b> . . . . .	170
1847 Fielden's Factory Act carried, . . . . .	171
Increased Education grant, . . . . .	172
Commercial crisis, . . . . .	173
1848 Financial embarrassments, . . . . .	174
Practical strength of the Government, . . . . .	176
<b>Continuation of Chartist agitation,</b> . . . . .	176
The Chartist petition, . . . . .	177
<b>Revolutions in Europe,</b> . . . . .	178
Deposition of Louis Philippe, . . . . .	179
Palmerston's sympathy with the reformers, . . . . .	181
Conservative reaction throughout Europe, . . . . .	182
Palmerston's diplomacy, . . . . .	183
In Spain, Switzerland, Italy, and Austria, . . . . .	183
England's firm position, . . . . .	187
1849 Palmerston's defence of his policy, . . . . .	187
<b>Difficulties of Government at home,</b> . . . . .	189
Opposition of the Protectionists, . . . . .	190
Repeal of the Navigation Laws, . . . . .	190
Continued misery in Ireland, . . . . .	191
The Encumbered Estates Act, . . . . .	192
Changes in the Poor Law, . . . . .	192
<b>Difficulties in India,</b> . . . . .	192
1848 The Punjab war, . . . . .	192
1849 Annexation of the Punjab, . . . . .	195
Difficulties in the Colonies, . . . . .	196
<b>Reform of the Colonial Office,</b> . . . . .	197
1850 Australian Constitution Bill passed, . . . . .	198
<b>Conservative reaction in Europe,</b> . . . . .	199
Sympathy of England with the Liberals, . . . . .	200
Support of Hungarian refugees in Turkey, . . . . .	200

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1850 Misgovernment in Greece, . . . . .	201
English fleet sent to the Piræus, . . . . .	201
Submission of Greece, . . . . .	202
Opposition to Palmerston in the House of Lords, . . . . .	203
His policy vindicated in the Commons, . . . . .	203
Death of Sir Robert Peel, . . . . .	204
The Sleswig-Holstein war, . . . . .	205
Palmerston in favour of Denmark, . . . . .	207
The Queen's Memorandum, . . . . .	208
Position of Prince Albert, . . . . .	208
1851 The Great Exhibition, . . . . .	209
1850 Ecclesiastical questions, . . . . .	210
Mr. Gorham's case, . . . . .	210
The Ecclesiastical Titles Bill, . . . . .	211
1851 Ministerial defeat on the County Franchise, . . . . .	211
The Ministry retain office, . . . . .	212
Palmerston mistrusted by the Court, . . . . .	212
The <i>Coup d'État</i> in France, . . . . .	213
Palmerston's despatch to Normanby, . . . . .	214
His correspondence with Russell, . . . . .	215
Palmerston's dismissal, . . . . .	215
1852 The Militia Bill rejected, . . . . .	216
The Russell Ministry resign, . . . . .	217

## LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY.

FEBRUARY TO DECEMBER 1852.

The Militia Bill carried, . . . . .	218
Villier's Free Trade resolution carried, . . . . .	219
Disraeli's budget rejected, . . . . .	221
The Derby Ministry resign, . . . . .	222
Death of the Duke of Wellington, . . . . .	222
Napoleon III. proclaimed Emperor, . . . . .	223

## LORD ABERDEEN'S MINISTRY.

DECEMBER 1852 TO FEBRUARY 1855.

1853 Rejection of various reforming bills, . . . . .	226
Mr. Gladstone's Budget, . . . . .	227
Burmese and Kaffir wars, . . . . .	228
Origin of the Crimean war, . . . . .	229
Quarrels between Greek and Latin Churches, . . . . .	229

	PAGE
1853 Russia and France implicated, . . . . .	230
The Czar's views with regard to Turkey, . . . . .	231
Menschikoff sent to Constantinople, . . . . .	232
Stratford de Redcliffe sent to Constantinople, . . . . .	234
Menschikoff withdraws defeated, . . . . .	235
Russia occupies the Principalities, . . . . .	235
Conference at Vienna, . . . . .	236
English and French fleet enter the Dardanelles, . . . . .	237
Turkish fleet destroyed at Sinope, . . . . .	238
1854 English and French fleet enter the Black Sea, . . . . .	238
Declaration of war, . . . . .	239
Mr. Gladstone's Budget, . . . . .	240
The University Reform Bill, . . . . .	241
The Campaign on the Danube, . . . . .	243
Despatch of English and French troops to Turkey, . . . . .	243
Siege of Silistria raised, . . . . .	244
Unnecessary continuation of the war, . . . . .	245
The invasion of the Crimea ordered, . . . . .	246
The allied armies land in the Crimea, . . . . .	247
Battle of the Alma, . . . . .	248
The flank march to Balaclava, . . . . .	251
The Russian plan of defence, . . . . .	252
Siege of Sebastopol determined on, . . . . .	253
Position of the allied armies, . . . . .	254
Bombardment of Sebastopol, . . . . .	255
Battle of Balaclava, . . . . .	256
Arrival of Russian reinforcements, . . . . .	259
Battle of Inkerman, . . . . .	260
Miseries of the army in the winter, . . . . .	265
Causes of the suffering, . . . . .	267
Popular demand for change of Ministry, . . . . .	269
1855 The Aberdeen Ministry resign, . . . . .	271

## LORD PALMERSTON'S MINISTRY.

FEBRUARY 1855 TO FEBRUARY 1858.

Lord Palmerston's vigorous war administration, . . . . .	273
The Vienna Conference, . . . . .	275
Lord John Russell resigns, . . . . .	276
Committees of inquiry in the Crimea, . . . . .	277
Reform of the army hospitals, . . . . .	278
Improved condition of the army, . . . . .	279
The Russian position strengthened, . . . . .	279

	PAGE
1855 Death of Lord Raglan, . . . . .	280
Battle of the Tchernaya, . . . . .	280
Capture of the Malakoff, . . . . .	281
Fall of Sebastopol, . . . . .	282
Surrender of Kars, . . . . .	282
1856 Peace concluded, . . . . .	283
Difficulties with America, . . . . .	284
Cost of the Crimean war, . . . . .	285
Domestic legislation, . . . . .	286
Progress in sanitary reforms, . . . . .	287
Prince Albert's influence in Culture and Art, . . . . .	287
<b>The Persian war,</b> . . . . .	288
<b>The Chinese war,</b> . . . . .	289
1857 Debates on the Chinese war, . . . . .	291
Palmerston appeals successfully to the country, . . . . .	291
<b>The Indian Mutiny,</b> . . . . .	292
India held by military occupation, . . . . .	292
Changes in the native army, . . . . .	292
Warnings given by former mutinies, . . . . .	293
The Mahrattas alienated by Dalhousie's policy, . . . . .	294
The annexation of Oude not well carried out, . . . . .	295
Discontent excited by rearranging the revenue, . . . . .	296
Effect on the army of this general discontent, . . . . .	297
Panic of suspicion among the Sepoys, . . . . .	298
Mutiny at Berampore and Barrackpore, . . . . .	299
Mutiny at Meerut, . . . . .	300
General description of the mutiny, . . . . .	301
Geographical limits of the disaffected district, . . . . .	302
General outbreak of the mutiny, . . . . .	303
The Punjab a source of strength, . . . . .	304
Energetic measures of Sir John Lawrence, . . . . .	304
The siege of Delhi begun, . . . . .	305
Advance of European troops from Calcutta, . . . . .	307
Relief of Allahabad, . . . . .	307
The defence of Cawnpore, . . . . .	308
Massacre of the garrison, . . . . .	309
Havelock's victory at Futteypore, . . . . .	309
Massacre of Cawnpore, . . . . .	310
Sir Henry Lawrence's preparations at Lucknow, . . . . .	310
Death of Sir Henry Lawrence, . . . . .	312
Arrival of Havelock at Lucknow, . . . . .	313
Outram's arrival at Cawnpore, . . . . .	314
The Siege of Delhi, . . . . .	315
Fall of Delhi, . . . . .	318
General view of the state of affairs in September, . . . . .	318
Sir Colin Campbell's campaign, . . . . .	319
His rescue of the garrison at Lucknow, . . . . .	320

		PAGE
1857	His victory at Cawnpore, . . . . .	320
1858	His capture of Lucknow, . . . . .	322
	Reduction of the Central Provinces, . . . . .	322
	Sir Hugh Rose's march, . . . . .	323
	Capture of Jhansee and Calpee, . . . . .	324
	Capture of Gwalior, . . . . .	325
	Reduction of Behar and Oude, . . . . .	326
	Close of the mutiny, . . . . .	327
	Palmerston's India Bill, . . . . .	328
	<b>Orsini's attempt to murder Napoleon,</b> . . . . .	330
	Mutual irritation of England and France, . . . . .	331
	Proposed amendment of the conspiracy laws, . . . . .	331
	<b>Palmerston resigns,</b> . . . . .	332
	Napoleon's schemes, . . . . .	333
	Settlement of the Danubian Principalities, . . . . .	335

## LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY.

FEBRUARY 1858 TO JUNE 1859.

	Reply to Walewski's despatch, . . . . .	337
	Derby's India Bill, . . . . .	338
	Excitement caused by Canning's proclamation, . . . . .	339
	Admission of the Jews to Parliament, . . . . .	340
1859	<b>Failure of Disraeli's Reform Bill,</b> . . . . .	341
	Appeal to the country—Liberal majority in Parliament, . . . . .	342
	<b>The Ministry resign,</b> . . . . .	342
1858	<b>Condition of Italy,</b> . . . . .	343
	Alliance between Sardinia and France, . . . . .	343
1859	Breach between Austria and France, . . . . .	344
	Attempts of England to maintain peace, . . . . .	345
	Failure of the suggested Congress, . . . . .	346
	<b>War between Austria and Sardinia,</b> . . . . .	346
	Character of Lord Derby's foreign policy, . . . . .	347

## LORD PALMERSTON'S MINISTRY.

JUNE 1859 TO NOVEMBER 1865.

	Reunion of the Liberal party, . . . . .	348
	Character of Palmerston's Ministry, . . . . .	349
1860	Failure of Russell's Reform Bill, . . . . .	351
1861	Westbury's measures of law reform, . . . . .	352



	PAGE
1859 Change in the Government of India, . . . . .	353
Reform of the Indian revenue, . . . . .	353
Reorganisation of the Indian army, . . . . .	354
Interest absorbed in foreign affairs, . . . . .	355
1860 Napoleon's war in Italy, . . . . .	355
Progress of Italy during the war, . . . . .	356
Formation of the Italian northern kingdom, . . . . .	357
Annexation of Savoy to France, . . . . .	357
General mistrust of Napoleon, . . . . .	358
The Sicilian insurrection, . . . . .	358
Garibaldi's expedition against Naples, . . . . .	359
Triumph of Cavour's policy, . . . . .	360
1861 Victor Emmanuel, King of Italy, . . . . .	361
1860 Preparations in England against French invasion, . . . . .	361
Difficulties in the north of Europe, . . . . .	362
The Sleswig-Holstein question, . . . . .	363
1863 Death of the King of Denmark, . . . . .	363
Bismarck's policy, . . . . .	364
1864 Failure of the London Conference, . . . . .	365
Denmark deserted and crushed, . . . . .	365
Consequent discredit to the English Ministry, . . . . .	366
1863 Insurrection in Poland, . . . . .	367
The futile remonstrance of England, . . . . .	368
1859 War in China, . . . . .	369
1862 War in Japan, . . . . .	371
1864 War in Ashantee, . . . . .	372
1860 The American war, . . . . .	373
1861 Secession of the Southern States, . . . . .	373
Feeling of England on the war, . . . . .	374
Determination of the Ministry to maintain neutrality, . . . . .	375
Danger of war on the <i>Trent</i> affair, . . . . .	376
1863 Strained relations arising from the cruisers, . . . . .	378
1864 Turn of the tide, . . . . .	379
1865 Success of the Northern States, . . . . .	380
Irritation of both North and South against England, . . . . .	381
1862 The Cotton famine, . . . . .	382
Wise measures of relief, . . . . .	383
Effect of the American war on trade, . . . . .	385
1859 Mr. Gladstone's finance, . . . . .	385
Commercial Treaty with France, . . . . .	386
1860 Budget of 1860, . . . . .	387
Dispute between the Houses on the Paper Duty, . . . . .	388
1861 Budget of the next five years, . . . . .	390
Political apathy awaiting Palmerston's death, . . . . .	393
Effect of the death of Prince Albert, . . . . .	394
1865 General Election, . . . . .	394
Disraeli indicates Church and Reform as the chief topics, . . . . .	395



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1865 Effects of the Tractarian movement, . . . . .	395
1860 Rise of the Broad Church, . . . . .	396
1864 Excitement caused by "Essays and Reviews," . . . . .	397
Action against Dr. Coleuso, . . . . .	398
1861 Efforts to abolish Church Rates, . . . . .	399
Apparent apathy of the Working Classes, . . . . .	399
Their practical politics, . . . . .	400
1860 Rise of Trades Unions, . . . . .	401
Strikes and Locks-out, . . . . .	402
Good effected by Trades Unionism, . . . . .	404
Rise of Co-operative Societies, . . . . .	405
Growth of the Temperance movement, . . . . .	406
Philanthropic movements, . . . . .	407
Efforts to improve Education, . . . . .	408
1862 The Revised Code passed, . . . . .	409

## LORD RUSSELL'S MINISTRY.

NOVEMBER 1865 TO JUNE 1866.

1865 Liberal majority at the General Election, . . . . .	410
The Cattle Disease, . . . . .	411
The Commercial Crisis, . . . . .	412
The Jamaica Insurrection, . . . . .	413
Its cruel suppression, . . . . .	414
Trial of Governor Eyre, . . . . .	415
Rise of the Fenian movement, . . . . .	416
Arrest of its leaders, . . . . .	417
1866 Suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act, . . . . .	418
<b>Failure of Russell's Reform Bill,</b> . . . . .	419
Disruption of the Liberal party ; the Adullamites, . . . . .	419
<b>Resignation of Ministry,</b> . . . . .	420

## LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY.

JUNE 1866 TO DECEMBER 1868.

	Agitation for Reform, . . . . .	422
	Disraeli's views on Reform, . . . . .	423
1867	<b>His Reform Bill,</b> . . . . .	424
	Split in the Cabinet, . . . . .	425
	Radical character of the Bill as carried, . . . . .	427

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1866 Bismarck's German policy, . . . . .	429
War between Austria and Prussia, . . . . .	430
Battle of Sadowa, . . . . .	431
England maintains a policy of non-intervention, . . . . .	432
1867 Conference to guarantee the neutrality of Luxemburg, . . . . .	433
Confederation of the British North American Provinces, . . . . .	434
Disraeli's view of Imperial policy, . . . . .	434
The Abyssinian war, . . . . .	436
1868 Continued danger from Fenianism, . . . . .	438
Futile attempt at Chester, . . . . .	439
Rescue of prisoners at Manchester, . . . . .	440
Attack on Clerkenwell Prison, . . . . .	440
Causes of Fenianism, . . . . .	441
Critical position of the Ministry, . . . . .	442
Debates on the condition of Ireland, . . . . .	443
Liberal party united on the Irish Church question, . . . . .	444
Gladstone's three resolutions carried, . . . . .	445
Disraeli refuses to resign, . . . . .	447
Irish and Scotch Reform Bills carried, . . . . .	448
Abolition of compulsory Church Rates, . . . . .	449
Dissolution of Parliament, Liberal majority, . . . . .	449
Resignation of Ministry, . . . . .	449

## MR. GLADSTONE'S MINISTRY.

DECEMBER 1868 TO FEBRUARY 1874.

	Mr. Gladstone's programme, . . . . .	450
1869	Disestablishment of the Irish Church, . . . . .	451
	Reform of the Irish Land Laws, . . . . .	454
	Evils of the Irish land system, . . . . .	455
	Demands of the Irish tenants, . . . . .	457
	Failure of previous efforts at reform, . . . . .	458
	Gladstone's Irish Land Bill, . . . . .	460
	Unsatisfactory results of the new legislation, . . . . .	461
	Rise of the Home Rule movement, . . . . .	462
	Educational reforms, . . . . .	462
	Bill for Secondary Education, . . . . .	463
1870	Bill for Elementary Education, . . . . .	464
1871	Abolition of religious tests in the Universities, . . . . .	466
	Loss of popularity by Government, . . . . .	467
	Agitation for reforms in the army, . . . . .	467
	The Army Regulation Bill, . . . . .	468
	Abolition of Purchase by royal warrant, . . . . .	470
1872	Reorganisation of the army, . . . . .	471

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1872 Failure of various Government measures, . . . . .	472
Failure of the Budget, . . . . .	473
Gladstone's Greenwich speech, . . . . .	473
Ballot and Licensing Bills carried, . . . . .	474
<b>Discontent with the management of the Foreign Office,</b> . . . . .	474
1870 The Franco-German war, . . . . .	475
Fall of the Empire, . . . . .	477
Siege of Paris, . . . . .	478
Gambetta's attempt to rouse France, . . . . .	479
Defeat of the French armies, . . . . .	481
1871 Surrender of Paris, . . . . .	482
Terms of peace, . . . . .	482
Establishment of the Commune, . . . . .	483
1870 Position of England during the war, . . . . .	484
Bismarck's revelation of the Belgian Treaty, . . . . .	484
Policy of neutrality firmly maintained, . . . . .	485
Various efforts to secure peace, . . . . .	486
Russia withdraws from the Treaty of Paris, . . . . .	487
1871 <b>The Black Sea Conference,</b> . . . . .	488
<b>The Treaty of Washington,</b> . . . . .	489
1872 <b>The Alabama Arbitration,</b> . . . . .	490
The San Juan difficulty arranged, . . . . .	491
Government discredited by two home appointments, . . . . .	492
1873 <b>The Irish University Bill thrown out,</b> . . . . .	493
<b>Gladstone resigns and returns to office,</b> . . . . .	495
The Judicature Bill, . . . . .	496
The Ashantee war, . . . . .	497
1874 <b>Dissolution of Parliament,</b> . . . . .	499
Gladstone's intention with regard to the Income-Tax, . . . . .	500
<b>Resignation of the Ministry,</b> . . . . .	500
General view of Mr. Gladstone's Ministry, . . . . .	501
Causes for its fall, . . . . .	502
Social progress during this Ministry, . . . . .	502
Spread of Trades Unionism, . . . . .	503
Prevalence of strikes, . . . . .	504
Dislike of Trades Unions among the propertied classes, . . . . .	505
Attempted union of Conservatives and Working Men, . . . . .	505

## MR. DISRAELI'S MINISTRY.

FEBRUARY 1874 TO JUNE 1880.

Peculiarity of Mr. Disraeli's position, . . . . .	507
General character of his government, . . . . .	508
Ecclesiastical questions, . . . . .	509

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1874 The Endowed Schools Act amended, . . . . .	509
The Scotch Church Patronage Bill, . . . . .	510
The Public Worship Bill, . . . . .	511
1875 Retirement of Mr. Gladstone, . . . . .	512
<b>Quiet domestic legislation,</b> . . . . .	513
The Irish Coercion Bills renewed, . . . . .	513
The Judicature Bill completed, . . . . .	514
Agricultural Holdings Bill, . . . . .	514
Land Transfer Bill, . . . . .	514
Labonrrers' Dwellings Bill, . . . . .	515
Friendly Societies Bill, . . . . .	515
Amendment of Labour Laws, . . . . .	515
<b>Foreign policy,</b> . . . . .	515
Purchase of Suez Canal shares, . . . . .	516
Fear of Russian encroachment, . . . . .	517
Prince of Wales's visit to India, . . . . .	518
<b>Re-opening of the Eastern question,</b> . . . . .	518
European efforts to secure reforms in Turkey, . . . . .	519
Failure of the Andrassy Note, . . . . .	519
Failure of the Berlin Note, . . . . .	520
Deposition of the Sultan, . . . . .	521
1876 The Bulgarian Insurrection, . . . . .	522
War between Servia and Turkey, . . . . .	523
European efforts for peace, . . . . .	523
Divergence of English and Russian views, . . . . .	524
1877 Failure of the Conference at Constantinople, . . . . .	524
Last effort for peace, . . . . .	525
Rejection of the Protocol by Turkey, . . . . .	526
Russian war with Turkey, . . . . .	526
Change of feeling in England, . . . . .	526
Course of the war, . . . . .	527
1878 Excitement in England ; Jingoism, . . . . .	528
Warlike measnres of Government, . . . . .	528
Resignation of Lord Derby, . . . . .	529
Lord Salisbury's circular, . . . . .	530
Indian troops summoned to Malta, . . . . .	530
Mistrust of Beaconsfield's policy, . . . . .	531
The Berlin Congress, . . . . .	531
Separate treaties with Russia and Turkey, . . . . .	532
<b>The Berlin Treaty,</b> . . . . .	532
Opinions as to Beaconsfield's policy, . . . . .	533
<b>Afghanistan,</b> . . . . .	534
1869 Treaties with Shere Ali, . . . . .	535
1874 Disastrous change of policy, . . . . .	536
1876 Lytton insists on the reception of a Resident, . . . . .	537
And a Scientific Frontier, . . . . .	538
1878 Invasion of Afghanistan, . . . . .	538

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1879 Treaty of Gandamak, . . . . .	539
Murder of the English Resident in Cabul, . . . . .	539
Second invasion of Afghanistan, . . . . .	540
1880 Desire of the English to withdraw, . . . . .	541
The retreat safely effected from Cabul, . . . . .	542
Disaster to the Candahar army, . . . . .	542
Roberts's march to Candahar, . . . . .	543
<b>Final withdrawal from Afghanistan,</b> . . . . .	544
1878 Carnarvon's views of Imperialism, . . . . .	544
1873 <b>Difficulties in South Africa,</b> . . . . .	545
Carnarvon desires confederation, . . . . .	545
1877 Annexation of the Transvaal, . . . . .	546
Consequent difficulties with the Zulus, . . . . .	547
Sir Bartle Frere insists on guarantees, . . . . .	548
1878 Invasion of Zululand, . . . . .	548
1879 Disaster of Isandlana, . . . . .	549
Subsequent successes, . . . . .	549
Wolseley's settlement of the country, . . . . .	550
<b>Difficulties in the Transvaal,</b> . . . . .	550
1880 The Liberal Government maintain the annexation, . . . . .	551
1881 Disaster of Majuba Hill, . . . . .	552
Cession of the Transvaal, . . . . .	552
<b>English policy in Egypt,</b> . . . . .	552
1875 Gradual establishment of English influence, . . . . .	553
Efforts of the Khedive to shake off foreign influence, . . . . .	554
Egypt under the joint control of England and France, . . . . .	554
Interest absorbed in foreign affairs . . . . .	555
<b>Rise of obstruction in Parliament,</b> . . . . .	556
1874 Activity of the Irish members, . . . . .	557
1879 Obstruction used against the Army Bill, . . . . .	558
The Home Rulers wage unscrupulous war, . . . . .	559
The use made of the distress in Ireland, . . . . .	560
Parnell's agitation against Landlordism, . . . . .	561
Arrests of Irish leaders, . . . . .	561
Parnell's visit to America, . . . . .	562
Approaching dissolution of Parliament, . . . . .	563
Autumnal speeches against the Ministry, . . . . .	563
1880 Measures for relief of Irish Famine, . . . . .	564
Standing order against obstruction, . . . . .	564
Water Works Bill, . . . . .	565
Dissolution—nature of the crisis, . . . . .	565
Lord Beaconsfield's letter, . . . . .	566
Mr. Gladstone's Midlothian speeches, . . . . .	567
Liberal result of the elections, . . . . .	567
<b>Growth of the Democracy,</b> . . . . .	568
<b>Changes in the Constitution,</b> . . . . .	568
Separation between the Houses, . . . . .	569

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1880 The Lower House loses its representative character, . . . . .	569
Increase of sentiment in politics, . . . . .	570
<b>Changes in society,</b> . . . . .	570
Increase of the Empire, . . . . .	571
Improved financial system, . . . . .	572
One-sided growth of prosperity, . . . . .	573
Condition of the Artisan, . . . . .	573
Condition of Agriculture, . . . . .	574
Condition of the very poor, . . . . .	575
Striking contrast between rich and poor, . . . . .	576
Its effect in producing social legislation, . . . . .	576

## LIST OF MAPS AND PLANS.

	PAGE
1. CHINA, . . . . .	75
2. DENMARK, . . . . .	206
3. THE ALMA, . . . . .	248
4. INKERMAN, . . . . .	261
5. DELHI, . . . . .	316
6. LUCKNOW, . . . . .	321
7. SOUTH AFRICA, . . . . .	547
8. SOUTH-EAST OF EUROPE, . . . . .	At end of Book.
9. CRIMEA, . . . . .	” ”
10. NORTH OF INDIA, . . . . .	” ”

# GEORGE III.

Georgé IV.,  
died 1830.

Frederick, Duke of York,  
died 1827.

William IV.,  
died 1837.

Edward, Duke of Kent,  
died 1820.

= Victoria of Saxe-Coburg  
(widow of Prince of  
Leiningen, sister of  
Leopold, King of Bel-  
gium), died 1801.

Victoria,  
born May 24,  
1819.

= Albert, Prince of Coburg and  
Gotha, born August 26,  
1819, died December 14,  
1861.

Victoria, = Frederick III.,  
born 1840.

Albert  
Edward,  
born 1841.

Alexandra,  
daughter of  
Christian IX.  
of Denmark.

Alice, = Duke of  
Hesse.  
born 1843,  
died 1878.

Alfred,  
born 1844.

Marie,  
daugh-  
ter  
of Alex-  
ander  
II. of  
Russia.

Helena, = Prince  
Chris-  
tian of  
Sleswig.  
born 1846.

Louise, = Marquis  
of Lorne.  
born 1848.

Albert Victor,  
born 1864,  
died 1898.

George,  
born 1865.

Arthur, = Louise  
born  
1850.

of  
Prussia.

Leopold, = Helen  
born  
1853,  
died  
1884.

of Wal-  
deck.

Beatrice, = Prince  
Henry  
born  
1857.

of Bat-  
tenberg.

## CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

### France.

Louis Philippe, 1830.  
Lamartine (President), 1848.  
Louis Napoleon (President),  
1849.  
Louis Napoleon (Emperor), 1852.  
Thiers (President), 1870.  
MacMahon (President), 1873.  
Grévy (President), 1879.

### Austria.

Ferdinand, 1835.  
Francis Joseph, 1848.

### Prussia.

Frederick William III., 1797.  
Frederick William IV., 1840.  
William, 1861.

### Russia.

Nicholas, 1825.  
Alexander II., 1855.

### Denmark.

Frederick VI., 1808.  
Christian VIII., 1839.  
Frederick VII., 1848.  
Christian IX., 1863.

### Sweden and Norway.

Charles XIV., 1818.  
Oscar I., 1844.  
Charles XV., 1859.  
Oscar II., 1872.

### Spain.

Isabella, 1833.  
Alfonso XII., 1874.

### Portugal.

Maria, 1834.  
Pedro V., 1853.  
Louis, 1861.

### Belgium.

Leopold I., 1831.  
Leopold II., 1865.

### Holland.

William I., 1814.  
William II., 1840.  
William III., 1849.

### Italy.

Victor Emmanuel, 1849.  
Humbert, 1878.

### Greece.

Otho, 1833.  
George, 1863.

### Bavaria.

Louis I., 1825.  
Maximilian II., 1848.  
Louis II., 1864.

### Turkey.

Mahmoud II., 1808.  
Abdul Medjid, 1839.  
Abdul Aziz, 1861.  
Abdul Hamed, 1876.

### Popes.

Gregory XVI., 1831.  
Pius IX., 1846.  
Leo XIII., 1878.



# VICTORIA.

## CHAPTER I.

LORD MELBOURNE'S MINISTRY, May 12, 1835.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	Lord Melbourne.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Cottenham, January 1836 (before that in Commission).
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Lord Lansdowne.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Lord Duncannon.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer.</i>	Mr. Spring Rice.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Lord John Russell.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Glenelg.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Palmerston.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	Lord Howick.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Lord Minto.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	Sir John Cam Hobhouse.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Mr. Poulett Thomson.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	Lord Holland.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	Lord Lichfield.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	Lord Mulgrave.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Plunket.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	Lord Morpeth.

The following changes took place in 1839 :—

<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Mr. Francis Baring.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Lord Normanby (Lord Mulgrave)
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord John Russell.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	Mr. Babington Macaulay.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Mr. Henry Labouchere.
<i>Lord Lieutenant of Ireland,</i>	Lord Ebrington.

In 1840 Lord Clarendon became Lord Privy Seal, and Lord Duncannon First Commissioner of Land Revenue.

In 1841 Lord Fortescue became Lord Lieutenant for Ireland, and Lord Campbell became Lord Chancellor for a few weeks.

THE two years which intervened between the failure of Peel's attempt to establish a Conservative government and the accession of Queen Victoria, are occupied by a piece of parliamentary history of a remarkable character. The King was in almost open hostility to his ministers; the enthusiasm which had attended the Reform Bill was fading away; the strife of parties

Position of  
Parties.

was resuming its old form. The Whigs, to whom, as the accredited leaders of liberal thought, the guidance of the great movement had been intrusted, were reaping the bitter fruit of the exaggerated hopes that they had raised but could not fulfil. Unable to free themselves from their traditions as a great constitutional party, their half-measures satisfied neither the ardent desires of the people nor the conservative feelings of the propertied classes, to which they really belonged; and the result was a practical annihilation of government, both in its legislative and administrative functions. Such strength as the Government possessed was due to its alliance with the Radicals and the Irish. At the head of the Irish members was Daniel O'Connell, and so many of them were either personally connected with their chief, or owed their seats so entirely to his influence, that they were commonly spoken of by the opprobrious title of "O'Connell's Tail." But the Government, as far at least as its head, Lord Melbourne, and its more important members were concerned, was far from being Radical. Even Lord John Russell was less advanced in his views than many people supposed. It had been proved by Peel's short Ministry, in 1835, that this very moderate Government was at the time the only possible one. But to keep its place it had to pick its way cautiously between its own wishes and the more extreme objects advocated by its half hostile supporters, the Radicals and the Irish.

Such a Government is of necessity weak. Though it can command a majority on vital points, it is constantly compelled to modify its measures, and it even runs the risk of losing them if it offends either of the sections on which its power practically depends. In its *personnel* there was still further cause of weakness. The Premier and several of the more important ministers were in the Upper House. Nor could Lord John Russell and his colleagues in the Lower House pretend to rival in power of debate or parliamentary management the predominant personality of Sir Robert Peel, supported as it now was by the ability of Stanley and Graham, the late deserters from the Liberal camp. But Peel's predominance affected his supporters as well as his opponents. Understanding the impossibility of undoing the work of the Reform Bill, he had placed himself in a new position. Though opposed to Radical and hasty reform, he accepted not only the constitutional changes already made, but even the position that within the limits of the Constitution wise and measured progress was desirable. The skill with which he had maintained his ground during his short tenure

The consequent  
weakness  
of the  
Government.

of power in 1835 had obliged even the unwavering Tories of the old school to accept him as their indispensable leader. Kicking somewhat against the pricks, they as yet submissively followed him. He thus commanded a minority consisting of men of both extreme and moderate Tory principles, sufficiently strong to oblige the Government to be very careful in making any concessions to its Radical supporters. As far as the House of Commons therefore was concerned, the vigour of the Government was curtailed on both sides. Any step of too liberal a character was prevented by the minority, which, from its liberal propensities, might easily draw to itself moderate men of all parties, and become a majority; any measure not sufficiently pronounced in Liberalism might induce the Radicals to withdraw their support, and the ministerial majority might be thus destroyed. But the real efficiency of the Ministry was still more completely nullified by the balance which existed between the two Houses of Parliament. In the Upper House the Opposition commanded a certain majority, so strong in numbers that it was impossible to get rid of it by the only method the Government had at its disposal,—the creation of Peers. It was only on the good sense of the Lords, and their probable dread of breaking entirely with the Commons, that any hope of passing ministerial measures could be based.

The Opposition  
in a majority  
in the Lords.

Yet the circumstances of the country were not such as to make a deadlock of this sort at all desirable. Many questions of supreme importance were pressing for settlement. Affairs in Spain were in a most critical condition, it seemed as though the policy of Lord Palmerston, and the support he had given to the Queen's faction there, was likely to result in failure. Ireland, the unceasing difficulty of English politics, was in an excited condition. The position of the English Church was seriously assaulted by the Dissenters. Canada was on the verge of rebellion. And a financial crisis was shaking the credit of the kingdom. The Ministry seemed on the point of sinking under its accumulated difficulties. Of three great Bills for the amelioration of Ireland, the Municipal Corporation Bill, the Tithe Bill, and the Poor Law Bill, not one had passed the two Houses. On a Bill for changing the character of Church rates the Government had been defeated. There seemed no possibility of the Ministry extricating itself from its impotent position except by a dissolution, which might possibly give it such an overwhelming majority in the Lower House as to counteract the obstruction in the Lords. But there was no ground for dis-

Many great  
questions  
awaiting  
settlement.

solution ; there was already a majority for Government in the Commons ; the King was entirely opposed to such an idea, and rejoiced at the difficulties of his ministers, and, as was well known, would at once have snatched at an offer of resignation on their part.

The death of the King (June 20, 1837), and the accession of the young Queen Victoria, rendering a new Parliament necessary, came to the assistance of the harassed Whigs. The elections restored them to power, the friendship of the Queen removed one source of their weakness, and they were able to struggle on for some years longer. The accession of Victoria thus forms no epoch in our history. The hands of the Ministry were strengthened by the removal of the hostility of the Crown, but, with this exception, no important change took place ; the government was continued in the same hands, upon the same lines, and with the same party difficulties as during the reign of her predecessor.

The young Queen had been brought up in considerable retirement by her mother, the Duchess of Kent, between whom and the late King there had been some estrangement. But young as she was, she at once displayed a propriety and dignity of conduct which won all hearts, and appeared to be of the happiest augury. It was plain that she would want little more than friendly guidance ; and that guidance Lord Melbourne was well fitted to give her. He surrounded her with constant and watchful care, which there is every reason to believe was wholly disinterested, and there sprang up between him and the new sovereign a mutual respect and affection which never wavered. At the same time the political lessons of a Whig minister could not fail to have their influence, and to conduce largely to the constitutional character which has marked the reign.

As a change of sovereigns rendered the dissolution of Parliament within six months necessary, it was thought desirable to postpone for future consideration all the great measures before the House on which difference of opinion existed, and to proceed with those only which seemed at once important and open to little discussion. Of these the only one which requires mention was an Act for ameliorating the criminal law. In 1833 a Royal Commission had been issued to inquire into the expediency of reducing the criminal law into one digest ; and in 1836 the same commissioners had made a second report on the subject of the employment of counsel by prisoners, and on the punishment of death. Their recommendations had produced in the preceding session a Bill allowing

Opportune  
death of the  
King.

Accession of  
Victoria.  
June 20, 1837.

Work of the  
Session  
completed.

counsel to prisoners, and now formed the basis of a second Bill abolishing capital punishment, except for the following offences—high treason, murder, attempt to murder, rape, arson, piracy, burglary, and robbery, if attended by circumstances tending to endanger life. The feeling of the country was so decidedly in favour of this change that the Bill passed without any serious opposition. Having completed its necessary work the Parliament was dissolved, and the fate of the Ministry placed in the hands of the constituencies. Dissolution and Elections. Fortified with the favour of the Queen—of which they made, perhaps, too ostentatious a show—the Ministers were successful in securing a fair majority in the new Parliament. But the result of the elections gave no proof of the growth of Liberal feeling in the country. Such increase of strength as the Government acquired arose rather from the decrease of the Radical element in the new House than from any diminution in the number of their open opponents.

The new Parliament met on the 20th of November for a short autumn session. The Queen, in her opening speech, was made to speak with gratification of external peace and domestic tranquillity, and to point out as the main subjects for consideration the affairs of Spain and the condition of Canada and of Ireland, suggesting the reintroduction in some form or other of the three Irish Bills that had been dropped. English Church rates and the Bill against pluralities disappeared in the programme, making it evident that the ministers felt the necessity of keeping some terms at least with the Conservative opposition. The brief autumn session was occupied chiefly with the settlement of the Civil List. Lord Melbourne took a liberal view of the First Session of Parliament. Nov. 1837. question; there was no parsimonious curtailment of the sum allowed to the Crown, and, after being referred to a Select Committee, the income of the Queen was fixed at £470,000, very much the same as the amount paid to the late king. The Parliament was then adjourned till the following February. Settlement of the Civil List.

The meeting of Parliament after this adjournment was, however, hastened by the state of affairs in Canada. It re-assembled on the 16th of January, and its attention was at once occupied with Colonial affairs, which from time to time, for several years, formed the battleground for party strife. The difficulty in Canada had been of long standing, but at this moment it had ripened into an armed rebellion. The colony was not originally an English settlement, but had been ceded with its people to England at the close of the great war in 1763, and the questions arising were somewhat The Canadian difficulty.



analogous to those which have made Ireland a constant source of trouble. But although there had been much carelessness and mal-administration, England could not in this case accuse itself of intentional repression or of disregarding the wishes of the people; for as early as 1774 (by the Quebec Act), on the representation of the French inhabitants, the old Canadian law, known as the Custom of Paris, was re-established in all civil cases, and the free exercise of the Roman Catholic religion guaranteed. But Canada had not been conquered for the benefit of the French colonists alone; its chief value lay in the outlet it afforded to the superabundant population and energy of England. It was not possible that the uneducated, sedentary, and contented inhabitants of French origin should amalgamate well with the eager and enterprising English emigrant. Their characters were absolutely opposed, and the education which they had received through their system of law and government exaggerated the difference. Division of property in the place of primogeniture, the despotic rule of the French Governor-General and Intendant, and of a Church chiefly in the hands of the Jesuits, had created among the French population a character which formed the sharpest contrast, not only to that of the Englishman accustomed to see self-government at home, and to look for a still further development of it in his colonial settlement, but also wholly inconsistent with the development of a country where vast tracts of uncultivated land seemed to call for unlimited individual energy. Consequently the stream of immigration had swept beyond the French settlements, and spread itself over the unoccupied country more to the westward.

Under these circumstances, and with the best intentions, Mr. Pitt's remedy. Pitt had introduced, in 1791, the Quebec Government 1791. Bill. It proposed to separate the English from the French settlers, and to establish two provinces, known as Upper and Lower Canada. The error of the proceeding was strongly pointed out by Fox. With a far truer insight than his rival into the real object to be aimed at, he urged that "the most desirable circumstance was that the French and English inhabitants of Canada should unite and coalesce as it were into one body, and that the different distinctions of the people should be extinguished for ever." His representations were in vain, the division was carried out; the races were thrown into inevitable antagonism, rendered the more marked by the unfortunate geographical position of the Upper Province, cut off from access to the sea by the unimproving community which occupied the Lower St. Lawrence. But the Bill went

even further. With that curious belief in the universal applicability of their own constitution which characterises English statesmen, Pitt, in his Bill, proceeded to erect in each Province what he considered a close imitation of the constitution of England. Again, no doubt, the intention was excellent. Yet, looking at the conditions of the case, the project was little short of ridiculous. In Lower Canada the House of Assembly, which was to represent the House of Commons, became filled with men who made politics their business, and who, instead of representing, created the opinions of their constituents. For the French Canadians, unused to self-government, fell an easy prey to such among them (for the most part lawyers) as possessed any education, and were unable or unwilling to exercise that control over their representatives which is necessary for the true working of a constitution like that of England. Nor could the Legislative Council, which was to represent the House of Lords, have anything but a forced and unwholesome existence. Whatever may be said of the advantages of an aristocracy, it cannot appear to be an act of political wisdom suddenly to create one when the natural materials do not exist. There was nothing at all in Lower Canada to represent an aristocracy. The French habit of division of property precluded the possibility of large landowners. An aristocracy of wealth had not yet been formed, and any superiority in that respect which had arisen was in the hands of the few English in the colony. The Legislative Council consisted therefore, in fact, almost entirely of English placemen, whose interests were in direct opposition to those of the French leaders of the Assembly. The Governor was to represent the Crown, and his Executive Council might be regarded as the counterpart of the Privy Council, or the Ministry. But the very nature of his position as an agent of the Imperial Government prevented him from exercising any of the real powers of the Crown, while the necessity of maintaining the predominance of English rule seemed to preclude the idea of making the Ministry responsible to the Assembly in the way in which an English Ministry is responsible to the Parliament. No scheme could well have been devised more certain to bring into prominence the rivalry of race, or better adapted, by the shadowy forms of liberty with which it deluded the colony, to afford opportunities for the exhibition of that rivalry under the form of constitutional dispute. In the Upper Colony the absence of the rivalry of race mitigated the evils. There it was the difference of constitutional view, bad administration, the heaping of place and influence upon a small class, and the endowment of that class with the

Grievances of  
the Colonists.

political privileges of a constitutional aristocracy, which chiefly produced discord.

In Lower Canada there could be no doubt that (although the division of races lay at the bottom of the difficulty) there was also abundant ground for constitutional complaint. The grievances of the colonists were gradually formulated into a certain number of distinct demands. The complete command of the appropriation of the taxes, certain portions of which had hitherto been applied, without the cognisance of the Assembly, to the maintenance of the public service ; the change of the Legislative Council from a nominated to an elected body ; and the responsibility of the Executive, with the exception of the Governor, to the Provincial Parliament. Such were the chief objects of the Canadian malcontents. To these were added complaints as to the action of a great land company which had been established under the sanction of the Imperial Parliament, and whose interests it was believed were exclusively English. The important events which were taking place in England, the predominant interest excited by the Reform Bill, and the changes which followed it, had prevented proper attention being given to the Canadian question, and it is probable that Lord Glenelg, the Colonial Minister, was of too dilatory a character to handle such a crisis successfully. In 1831 a slight concession had been made to the colonists, but it by no means satisfied them. They still continued to press for the whole of their programme, and either to refuse Bills of Supply, or to draw them in such a way and with such conditions that the Governor thought fit to reject them. In 1835 a change of Governors was determined on. Major Head

**New Governors** (subsequently Sir Francis) was appointed to the Upper  
**sent out.** Province ; Lord Gosford, who was at the same time  
**Gosford and** placed at the head of a new Commission of Inquiry, to  
**Head. 1835.** the Lower. Lord Gosford's views were undoubtedly conciliatory, but he took with him instructions which compelled him practically to refuse the colonial demands. Head, a man of eccentric character, immediately on his arrival divulged these instructions, which were intended to be kept secret ; the consequence was the rejection of all conciliation, and a renewed declaration on the part of the Assembly that supplies should not be granted unless the fundamental changes which they required in the Constitution should be carried out. The consequent deadlock, and the threatening attitude of the colonists (who had found a formidable leader in Monsieur Papineau, a well-educated and intelligent man, Speaker of the House of Assembly), obliged the Ministry, on the receipt, in March 1837, of the report of



the Commission of Inquiry, to take some decided action. On the 17th of that month Lord John Russell produced a series of resolutions on which a Bill was to be based. The tone of his speech was conciliatory, and the existence of extensive evils was allowed. But the colonial policy of England was not yet sufficiently advanced to allow a Minister of the Crown to support an arrangement so closely resembling complete autonomy as that suggested by the colonists. The resolutions therefore re-affirmed the impossibility of allowing the Executive to be responsible to the Colonial Legislature, or the Legislative Council to be merely elective ; and proceeded further to authorise the Governor, regardless of constitutional forms, to pay from the public money in his hands the arrears due to the judicial and executive officers. In fact, while allowing that the colonists were partially in the right, the resolutions refused them those safeguards which they required, and amounted to a distinct rejection of their demands.

Russell's  
Canada Bill.  
March 1837.

The promulgation of these resolutions, and the Bill which accompanied them, brought matters to a crisis. The Assembly suspended its deliberations till it could judge of the effect of the reforms announced. The Governor, on the other hand, declared that the Assembly, by thus throwing up its functions, had virtually abrogated the Constitution. The question had drifted beyond the range of Parliamentary action ; both parties, openly and secretly, prepared to decide it by force of arms. Some of the factious leaders were apprehended. The attempt to carry out the apprehension of others, especially of Papineau, brought about an actual collision. As a military effort the insurrection was insignificant. South of the St. Lawrence it was speedily suppressed by the victory of the royal troops at St. Charles ; and in the north, by the victories of St. Eustace and St. Benoit, Sir John Colborne, the commander-in-chief, completed the defeat of the insurgents. Nor were their efforts in the Upper Province more successful. There Mr. M'Kenzie was the most prominent leader ; but the failure of his attack upon Toronto, and his defeat at Montgomery's Tavern, proved the hopelessness of his cause. The conditions, indeed, of the Upper Province were such that the danger there from armed insurrection was but slight. The hostility of races was wanting, and the influence of the loyal or conservative party was strong ; and Major Head, though at first inclined to rule in a conciliatory manner, had speedily made common cause with the small and compact party who virtually monopolised the government. But there existed at the time a well-

Open rebellion.  
Nov. 1837.

grounded fear that the citizens, if not the government of the United States, would make use of the troubles of their neighbours to attack Canada. Party hostility between the Southern or slave-holding States of the Union and the Northern abolitionists ran very high. The late annexation of Texas threatened to increase the power of the South; it was by no means improbable that the Northerners would seek compensation by a corresponding annexation of the English Provinces. Making full use of this fear, Head was enabled to dissolve the hostile Assembly, and to collect a new one thoroughly in harmony with the Government. He could even venture upon a strange course of action, which, had it not been successful, must have been regarded as highly reprehensible. Laying down as an axiom that in civil wars the preponderance must be moral and not physical, he stripped his province of troops, sending them to the aid of the Government in Lower Canada, and allowing (apparently without any attempt at preventing it) the insurrection to come to a head, awaited it, as he said, with folded arms. The experiment proved a successful one; the loyalists rallied in large numbers round the Government, and it was by the native forces alone that Toronto was saved, and the battle of Montgomery's Tavern won. Successful though he had been, the wisdom—even the rightfulness—of his policy was open to question. It might well be asked whether he had not, by a show of inactivity, really produced the rebellion. Such appears to have been the view of the English Ministry, for he was at once recalled. Before leaving the country he received addresses from the Legislature, expressing its confidence in him. As these Canadian difficulties form a starting-point in our colonial history, it is worth pointing out that we may gather from the wording of these addresses that the idea of a federation of all the States of British America, and even the representation of the colonists in the Imperial Parliament, was already in existence.

The insurrection, foiled in Canada itself, assumed a different, per-  
Danger of war  
with America.
haps more dangerous character. It seemed likely that the fears of Sir Francis Head would be realised. The banks of the St. Lawrence and the lakes swarmed with American sympathisers. The American Government appeared but lukewarm in its efforts to repress them. Supplies and artillery were almost openly taken from the State arsenals, and a frontier war, in which the majority of the assailants were American citizens, was carried on. An incident in this irregular contest threatened even to embroil England with the United States. Navy Island, in the Niagara River, was occupied by the Americans, who drew their supplies

from the mainland, using for the purpose a steamer called the *Caroline*. The English commander seized this vessel, set fire to her, and sent her in flames over the Niagara Falls. She was an American ship, and had been seized in American territory. Fortunately her character was too evident, the breaches of international law in which she had been engaged too flagrant to be justified, and the American Government thought it prudent to raise no formal complaint.

When the news of the Canadian insurrection was laid before the hastily summoned Parliament in January 1838, Lord John Russell proposed to meet the difficulty by a measure almost unprecedented, but which, in its principles, seemed to commend itself to all parties. The Constitution of Canada was to be suspended, and a person of first-rate importance, endowed with almost unlimited powers—with the double title of Governor-in-Chief and High Commissioner—was to be despatched to rule during the constitutional interregnum, and to devise a permanent and satisfactory Constitution for the Provinces. There were, undoubtedly, errors in the form of the Bill, and inevitable complications arising from the conflicting powers of the Imperial and Provincial Legislatures. Bent, as usual, rather on party victory than on national advantage, the Opposition made the most of these weaknesses. Peel triumphantly obliged Lord John Russell entirely to withdraw his preamble, and amendments were introduced which virtually deprived the new Governor of that unlimited authority which was probably necessary for the success of the plan. Though vested with the power of doing any act which the Legislature of Lower Canada could constitutionally do, he was restricted from repealing or altering any Act of the Imperial Parliament, or any Act of the Provincial Parliament which had in any way modified an Act of the Imperial Parliament. It was certainly not understood at the time how far-reaching that restriction was.

Russell's proposal.  
Jan. 1838.

The Commissioner selected was Lord Durham, a man of great abilities and advanced Liberal views, but of an impulsive and self-asserting character. He took with him two men well fitted to assist him, Mr. Charles Buller and Mr. Wakefield.

Durham sent out.  
May 1838.

He ought, no doubt, to have understood from the tone of Parliament before he started, that the greatest care would be requisite in exercising his powers, and that those powers themselves were a good deal limited. He appears, on the other hand, to have believed that he was sent out as dictator, charged with the duty and responsibility of settling the great questions at issue single-handed. Immediately

on his arrival the treatment of the political prisoners presented itself as a difficulty. To try them by the ordinary forms of law would have been but to court failure. To bring them to justice in any way must have entailed a severity of punishment certain to thwart the success of the fair and conciliatory measures with which he held himself charged. He therefore found means to persuade the prisoners to confess their guilt, or rather to acknowledge their participation in the late rebellion. With the aid of his Special Council (which, in accordance with the provisions of the Bill, was able to perform any act for which the old Legislative Assembly had been competent), he issued an ordinance banishing from the country those prisoners who were in his power, and ordering their transportation to the Bermudas. A list of insurgent leaders who had escaped to America was added to those whom he thus deported, and the whole were forbidden to return to the Canadas, under pain of death, till leave should be given them to do so. Lord Durham believed that in this way he had cleared the ground for the work he had to do. Without failure of justice, without the exercise of vengeance, without attaching to a political crime the stigma of criminal punishment (for the Bermudas was not a criminal settlement), he had rid himself, for the time being, of those whose influence would have interfered with the settlement of the country. Unfortunately he had gone beyond his powers. It was clear, at all events—and he himself subsequently allowed it—that he had no power to insist upon the retention of his prisoners in the Bermudas, which lay entirely beyond his jurisdiction. It was also open to great question whether the creation of a new crime punishable by death did not entirely contravene the clause which had forbidden him to tamper with the Acts of the Imperial Parliament. It was certain, at least, that a powerful Opposition—bent on employing every means of assaulting and hampering the Ministry, would fasten on such points, and, supporting them with the cry against despotism and unconstitutional government, which is always listened to in England—would use them as a terrible weapon. The Government, with a small majority in one House only, and that majority consisting of discordant elements, and in a permanent minority in the other House, was too weak to resist the assaults made upon it, and was compelled to disallow the ordinance. (A fresh proof was afforded of the extreme difficulty, nay, impossibility, of employing with success the ability and energy of a single man, however well adapted for the purpose, in a country where the executive is paralysed by party interests and the ties of constitutional prejudice. Thus

The Opposition  
demand his  
recall,  
Aug. 1838.



crossed at the very threshold of his reforms, Lord Durham, who was wholly deficient in that patience which enables a man to sink himself in his cause, and pursue his object regardless of temporary repulse, at once ~~threw~~ up his office. In this he did but anticipate his recall, which crossed his resignation on its way to England. His retirement was not dignified. He thought it necessary in intimating it to the Canadians to accompany it with a long proclamation, which was in fact an attack upon the home Government, and an appeal to the people against its authority. The feeling which it excited in England was such that the *Times* newspaper allowed itself to speak of him as "the Lord High Seditious." But the interval between his arrival and his resignation, short though it was, had been by no means wasted. He had made a progress through the country, which, though perhaps too ostentatious, seems to have afforded him an opportunity of learning much. With the aid of Mr. Charles Buller, and some assistance from Mr. Wakefield, he prepared a report on the condition and prospects of Canada, the value of which it is difficult to overstate. On his return he was greeted by the extreme Liberal party with great enthusiasm, but before long found that the general feeling was disapproval of what he had done ; and although he resumed his place in Parliament, he had practically ruined his career, and two years afterwards he died, still in the prime of life. Before he had been many weeks in England, and while he was still congratulating himself at meetings which were held in his favour on his perfect success in restoring peace in the Colonies, news of a fresh insurrection arrived. Sir John Colborne, on whom the care of the Colonies had devolved, and who subsequently succeeded to the vacant governorship, proved himself capable of meeting the difficulty, although complicated with an invasion from America ; and in his hands, armed as he was with extraordinary powers, the colony awaited the restitution of its Constitution.

Second outbreak suppressed by Colborne. Nov. 1838.

The Government at first appeared inclined to proceed at once to legislation based upon the recommendations of Lord Durham's report. But the personal interests connected with the question, the weakness of the Government, and its apparent dread of encountering opposition, induced it to withdraw the Bill and to postpone the settlement till 1842. But the extraordinary powers vested in the Governor, without which no government could be carried on, lapsed in 1840 ; it became necessary, therefore, in that year to take some definite step. In the interval the principles of the Bill had been discussed in Canada itself, and although they had encountered some opposition, there seemed

upon the whole to be sufficient willingness on the part of the colony to leave the question in the hands of the Imperial Government to render legislation possible. A new Bill was therefore introduced early in the session, and passed without any material opposition or amendment. It was based entirely upon the recommendations of Lord Durham. That statesman had been clear-sighted enough to observe that it was not the form or principles of the Constitution which were the real grievance of the colonists, but that the mischief lay in the hostility of race, in the perversion of the principles of the Constitution, and in mal-administration, and further, in the extreme ignorance existing among the French population. He therefore advised that a national, as contrasted with a local, feeling should be fostered by the union of the two Provinces; that the principles of self-government should be supported by placing in the hands of the Colonial Parliament everything except a few points of Imperial interest; that, a Civil List being secured for the maintenance of officials, all other financial questions should be left to the Assembly; that the Legislative Council, though still consisting of nominees, should be rendered more representative by the increase of its numbers; and that the Executive, with the exception of the Governor, should be responsible to the local Parliament. At the same time, for the purpose of increasing political life, he recommended the introduction of a good form of municipal government. The Bill, which was passed in July, incorporated these reforms, with the exception of the responsibility of ministers—which, however, from this time onwards was in practice always admitted. There was thus created a Government as nearly as possible independent, with the effect that the Canadians at once turned their attention to their own improvement, and agitation practically ceased. Durham's report, in fact, laid down the lines which have been consistently followed in the government of our Colonies, and set on foot a system to which we probably owe the maintenance of our connection with them. The restoration of the Constitution was carried out with complete success by Mr. Poulett Thomson, who had been made Governor of Canada in August 1839.

Next to the violent outbreak in Canada, which could brook no delay, the state of Ireland seemed to call for the first attention of Parliament. The part played by Irish politics in later English history has been a just retribution for the centuries of neglect and misrule to which that country had been subjected. It has been a constant weapon in the hands of

Canada Bill  
based on  
Durham's  
report.  
July 1840.

Ireland the  
victim of  
Party  
Government.

the Opposition, a constant and apparently incurable sore in every Administration. That it is the victim of Party Government is of itself sufficient to explain the evils from which Ireland suffers. It matters not whether the Government is inclined to leniency or to coercion, the Opposition has at once adopted the opposite line of politics ; every measure has been thwarted and weakened, or delayed until its virtue has gone out of it. A country conquered, and practically occupied by a foreign and dominant race, torn asunder by the most violent differences of religion, with a population whose character and habits its conqueror could scarcely understand, and which maintained characteristics of an earlier and more barbarous civilisation, presented difficulties which it would have required the united liberal and patriotic efforts of all parties to bring to a settlement. Instead of meeting with any such large and generous treatment, the interests of the country have been again and again selfishly subordinated to party success ; and every recognition of its reasonable demands has assumed the form of a concession wrung from the Government of the day under the influence of party pressure. Even Fox, whose wide liberality saw what was the necessity of the case, spoilt his noble advocacy of a proper treatment of the country by speaking of it under the odious word *concession*. "Concession," he said, "and again concession." It appears not to have occurred, even to his large mind, that it was not concession which was wanted, but a wise and just Government. It is this miserable view, fostering, as it inevitably does, the idea that everything was to be gained by outrage and clamour, which has prevented any happy settlement of Irish questions. Of the statesmen of importance in 1837 Lord Durham alone appears to have had a true view of the policy which should have been pursued in Ireland. He alone seems to have seen, as he saw in Canada, that the amalgamation of races, by allowing to the Irish a perfect equality with their more powerful neighbour, was the right course to pursue. With all others the object appeared to be the minimum of concession which would secure tranquillity. That there were evils to be cured no one denied ; but while the Liberal party would have met them with very considerable measures of reform, the Conservatives were still determined to govern with as high a hand as was at all consistent with peace. The Ministers were more especially pledged to a liberal course by the support which O'Connell and his Irish friends was affording them in Parliament. It had been with their assistance that the Conservative Government in 1834 had been driven to resign ; in the present close balance of parties it was their support which alone

secured the Ministerial majority. Full of personal dislike for O'Connell, the Conservatives had found in this alliance their readiest weapon for assaulting the Ministry. The conciliatory government of Lord Mulgrave was spoken of as a mere truckling to the Irish liberator; the ministers were constantly charged with supporting, on party grounds, the great Association which he had formed, because they believed that its influence would, on the whole, be used to uphold their policy. The Irish Tories and Orangemen filled the ears of the public with their complaints of Government partiality.

Concession to Ireland had become a necessary item in the party programme of the Liberals; and three great measures—the Irish Poor Law Act; the Irish Tithe Act, directed to the alleviation of the permanent condition of disorder which attended the collection of tithes; and the Irish Municipal Act, for the purpose of allowing to the Irish many of the advantages of self-government which the English Municipal Act had already secured to their fellow-subjects—were directed severally against the crying evils which formed the chief complaints of Irish patriots, the devouring plague of poverty and mendicancy, the anomalous supremacy of a State Church of the minority, and the sole predominance of the English and Protestant party in local government. Again and again, though with much opposition, these Bills had been got through the Lower House only to be rejected by the sturdy Conservatives in the Lords. But Peel and his friends saw clearly enough that the Government was becoming discredited, and that before long it was inevitable that they would be recalled to power. That the much-disputed Irish measures should be settled before that day arrived would be an obvious advantage to them. Their theory of Conservatism allowed of the acceptance of what had been done, while they would have avoided the responsibility of doing it themselves. On the other hand, the Government were naturally disinclined to allow their legislation to be absolutely thwarted, and were eager, in some way at least, to redeem their pledge to Ireland. Under these circumstances thoughts of compromise began to arise.

Of these three measures, the introduction of some Poor Law offered the least ground for party fight, and was therefore the first to be produced; for there was a pretty general consensus that something must be done, and that the permanent burden of relief should be thrown upon the owners of real property. There was, indeed, the greatest necessity for some such measure. A Commission had reported in 1836, disclosing a terrible

Desire of both  
Parties to settle  
Irish questions.

Revision of  
the Irish  
Poor Law.



condition of poverty. The average wages of the agricultural labourers were estimated at under 2s. 6d. a week, as contrasted with 9s. or 10s. which were the average wages in England. This was the natural result of the state of the population. The agricultural labourers in Ireland were in the ratio of one to every fourteen cultivated acres—in England, of one to thirty-four. Nor was the produce of these acres the same; while in England it was estimated that an acre returned about £4, 10s., in Ireland, the average produce was only £2, 10s. The insufficient wage was eked out by small holdings; nearly one-third of the people depended only upon little plots around their cabins. For many weeks in every year these cottiers could not draw from their land even a sufficiency of potatoes. They crowded over to England in the summer months, and undersold English labour in all directions. Mendicancy was universal, and not considered in the smallest degree disgraceful. The Commissioners by whom this report was issued, including among their numbers Archbishop Whately and Archbishop Murray, the heads of the Protestant and Roman Catholic Churches of Ireland, were men on whom every reliance could be placed. Their recommendations, however, seemed wholly inadequate. The amount of destitution was so great, the income of Ireland comparatively so small, that it appeared impossible to the Commissioners to lay so vast a burden upon it as the complete support of the poor. They wished, therefore, to confine parochial relief to the aged and infirm, and to those physically incapacitated from work. The Government, on the other hand, believed that the principle of the English Poor Law might be fully introduced into Ireland. In its amended form, though it had excited considerable discontent, it had on the whole worked well in England. Mr. Nicholls, one of the English Poor Law Commissioners, was sent over to report. In a six weeks' journey (the brevity of which was frequently alleged against its efficiency), he came to very definite conclusions. He urged the division of Ireland into large unions, and the erection in each of a workhouse. He recommended that destitution should form the claim to relief, and that willingness to enter the workhouse should be the test of destitution. In fact, with the exception of parochial settlement, which the migratory habits of the Irish rendered inadvisable, he reported in favour of the strict application of the new English law, the working of which was to be placed in the hands of the English Commissioners.

Report of Mr.  
Nicholls.  
1836.

He can scarcely have been correct in asserting that the feeling of the Irish was in favour of any Bill embodying this opinion;

such an assertion must be limited to the upper and middle classes. O'Connell was a truer representative of the real popular feeling.

**Opposition of O'Connell.** He opposed the scheme, both on economical and sentimental grounds. The expenditure on supporting the vast mass of destitution must seriously cripple capital, yet it was the want of capital which caused the destitution; the remedy made the evil worse. He even urged higher economic grounds, and spoke of the ruin of self-dependence and thrift caused by such a Bill; points no doubt of great weight and cogency, but somewhat inapplicable to a people with whom dependence and beggary were quite habitual. His sentimental arguments were those common to all opponents of organised relief; the closing of the gates of charity, the chilling effect which must be produced when the only answer to be given to the man who asked for help was "Go to the workhouse." The Government however persisted in bringing in their Bill upon the lines recommended by Mr. Nicholls, and, in spite of the high authority of the Commissioners of 1836, in spite of the combined opposition of all sections of the Irish members (for Mr. Shaw, the leader of the

**Poor Law Bill  
passed.  
July 1838.**

Orangemen, joined on this point with O'Connell), they succeeded in carrying the measure. Nor was it seriously opposed in the Upper House, and it became law. There is some reason to question the wisdom of inflicting, in all its strictness, the English Poor Law upon a country such as Ireland, where the conditions of life were very different. The rejection of all outdoor relief must be based upon the supposition that work is, on the whole, to be found by every one who desires it. This, which was probably on the whole true of England, was notoriously untrue of Ireland. Again, by the theory of the Poor Law, the relief which an able-bodied man can claim must be so adjusted that it shall be less desirable than even the lowest form of self-earned maintenance. It was impossible in Ireland for the State to arrange a form of life lower than that led by the extreme poor. The only deterrent element in the Poor Law scheme was the incarceration of the recipient of relief—very irksome, no doubt, to a people so intolerant of restraint as the Irish, yet not to be hastily assumed as a sufficiently powerful motive to keep men from the workhouse. It seemed, in fact, almost impossible that the law should be successful, unless it went hand in hand, as was pointed out by Lord Devon, with other measures for the relief of the poor class, such as the establishment of large public works; the increase, by reclamation of waste lands, of the cultivable area of the country; and legislation which should restrain the tendency towards inordinate

rents, which were eating up whatever little capital the small farmers might possess.

It was not, perhaps, altogether a comfortable triumph to have forced the Poor Law upon an unwilling people. But the Government had, at all events, passed its measure without much serious opposition from its English opponents. It remained to be seen how the other two Bills, which in the course of the last five years had become the rallying-points of party fight, could be got through Parliament. Language had however been used by both the Duke of Wellington and Peel as early as the year 1837, which implied the desire of the Conservatives that the questions at issue should be brought to a settlement ; and the Government, through Lord John Russell, put itself into communication with its opponents for the purpose of arriving at some compromise. It was found that a little mutual concession would render an arrangement possible. Each of the two Bills had in it a point round which the opposition had centred. With regard to the Municipal Bill the Conservatives had shown themselves ready to confess the evils of the existing system (in which municipal office and power were confined to a very small number of Protestant townsmen), and had expressed their willingness to assist in removing them ; but they regarded the substitution of corporations freely elected by constituencies with a low franchise as undesirable and dangerous in the present state of Ireland. They preferred some form of nomination which would virtually have robbed the inhabitants of the advantages of self-government. In the Tithe Act it was the appropriation clause, and the resolutions passed in 1835 as to the use to be made of any surplus arising from a rearrangement of Church property, which excited their anger. Even many moderate Liberals looked with some displeasure at the obstinacy of their leaders, which perpetuated the anarchy and disorder arising from the collection of the tithes, and thought the appropriation clause might well be dropped. Under these circumstances an understanding was arrived at that no opposition should be offered to the passage of some form of Tithe Bill, if the appropriation clause was not insisted upon, and that, in return for such a concession, corporations on the elective principle should be allowed.

It would seem that in consequence of this arrangement Lord John Russell had intended to proceed by way of resolution—that is to say, he intended to ask the assent of the House to certain principles on which a Bill might then be formed, in the full expectation that it would meet with no resistance till the details

Party difficulties  
as to the other  
two Irish Bills.

The Tithe Bill.

were discussed in Committee. But the Conservatives, carrying their cautious leader further probably than he cared to go, determined to have one more trial of strength. When, therefore, Lord John Russell had explained the principle of the forthcoming Bill, Sir Thomas Acland at once moved that the Resolution come to by the House in 1835 should be rescinded. This seemed to imply that in the Bill, as sketched by Lord John Russell, there was still some trace of the obnoxious appropriation clause, and of an intention to appropriate Church property to other than Church purposes. The motion was indeed lost; but the division disclosed an opposition of formidable strength, for while the majority numbered 307, there was a minority of 298. In the face of so close a division, Lord John Russell thought it prudent to yield, and to give a distinct promise that his Tithe Bill should be simply restricted to the conversion of the tithes into a rent-charge.

To understand exactly the effect of Sir Thomas Acland's motion, it is necessary to recollect that this question of tithes had long occupied Parliament, and that every successive Government had tried its hand at it in vain. It had been generally accepted that the best way of handling the tithes was to change them into a rent-charge—that is to say, the landowners were to pay the tithes instead of the tenants. For the trouble thus laid upon them, they were to be remunerated by a deduction, varying in different Bills, of from 40 to 25 per cent., while the Church was to be compensated for the diminution of its receipts by the certainty of their payment. But the Whigs, at the close of the short administration of Sir Robert Peel (April 1835), had driven him from office by insisting upon an addition to this simple measure. A Resolution had been passed that “no measure upon the subject of tithes in Ireland could lead to a satisfactory and final adjustment which did not embody the principle that any surplus remaining after providing for the Established Church should be applied locally to the general education of all classes of Christians.” It was this Resolution which had frustrated the efforts of Morpeth to settle the question in July 1835. He too proposed a rent-charge in lieu of tithes, and in this all parties were agreed. But with the Resolution freshly carried, it was impossible not to act in accordance with it; and he was compelled to introduce as part of his measure some provisions for re-arranging the revenues of the Church. There was indeed abundant room for reform; in 199 parishes there was no single churchman, in 860 there were less than fifty. But the effort of

Previous efforts  
to settle the  
tithe question.



Morpeth to get rid of this glaring anomaly, to suppress useless parishes, and to adjust on some fair principle the payments of those which remained, proved destructive to his measure. A surplus of some £60,000 would have been left, and the Lords, refusing to allow sacrilegious hands to touch in any way Church property, threw out the Bill. It was indeed impossible to arrive at any amicable arrangement so long as this Resolution was in force. Peel had probably intended to allow it to be silently disregarded. His more eager partisans, with Sir Thomas Acland at their head, determined to emphasise the Conservative victory, and to insist upon its repeal; and though their motion failed, Lord John Russell, as has been seen, was compelled to surrender it. The Bill, which was brought in in May and carried in August 1838, was nearly identical with the Conservative Bill of 1835. It fixed the rent-charge at the rate of £75 (that is, a reduction of 25 per cent.), and surrendered as a free gift the whole of the million which had been lent to the clergy by Government. The impotence of the Ministry could scarcely have received a more striking proof. It was plain that the Conservatives were in fact governing England.

The Tithe Bill  
carried.  
Aug. 1838.

To make the humiliation of the Whigs even more evident, it was only necessary that they should lose the reward of the compromise and submission they had made. They were to have been repaid by the quiet passage of their Municipal Corporation Bill. It was accordingly produced. By this Bill certain towns were to be given corporations elective in character, and certain smaller towns might if they pleased be incorporated, if a majority of the electors desired it. Thus far the proposition was accepted. But on the franchise of the elector a quarrel arose. While the Conservatives demanded that it should be fixed at £10 a year clear rental, the Ministerial Party, regarding this as too high—as higher in fact than the franchise in England—insisted upon a £5 franchise. As neither party would yield, the matter was brought to the vote, and in the Lower House the Government was victorious. But as usual victory in the Commons was of but little avail; the Lords amended the franchise clause in accordance with the Conservative wishes. The Bill thus amended was brought back to the Lower House, but, as all compromise proved impossible, the amendment was refused and the Bill dropped. In the following year another attempt was made, but with exactly the same result. Again, early in 1840, Lord Morpeth introduced the Bill, proposing a franchise of £10 for the larger towns and £8

Failure of the  
Corpora-  
tion Bill.  
May 1838.

Corporation  
Bill passed.  
March 1840.

for the smaller. The Lords as before rejected the lower franchise, and the Government, hopeless of success, accepted their defeat and allowed the mutilated measure to pass. The Irish measures of the Government had thus resulted in an unpopular Poor Law of questionable efficacy, and in an arrangement of the tithes and a Municipal Corporation Bill dictated to them by the Opposition.

As the great power of the Conservative Opposition had rendered the legislation of the Whig ministers with regard to Ireland somewhat stunted and abortive, it is by their administration of the country that they must be judged. Ireland was, during their ministry—as it had been almost uninterruptedly since the Act of Union—a scene of much confusion, and the same question which every party has had to ask itself had been placed before the Ministry of Lord Melbourne,—was tranquillity to be obtained without the employment of extraordinary coercive measures? Lord John Russell had asserted that concession was the necessary key to the difficulty. The history of Lord Grey's administration, and the final withdrawal of Lord Stanley and his associates from the Liberal ranks, had pledged Lord Melbourne (the representative of the more Liberal party of that administration) to pursue the policy of conciliation. The government of Ireland had been intrusted to Lord Normanby and Lord Morpeth as Lord Lieutenant and Chief Secretary. They had carried out to the full the policy indicated. Normanby's arrival in Ireland had given occasion to a demonstration of popular approval on the part of the followers of O'Connell; and this somewhat clap-trap commencement had been followed up in 1836 by a Viceregal progress, in the course of which a considerable number of men who were in prison for offences of a political or agrarian kind had been liberated by the exercise of the royal prerogative of pardon. The Viceroy had moreover consistently attempted to make use only of the ordinary legal weapons at his disposal, and had avoided the employment of extraordinary powers or the demand for any increase of coercive jurisdiction.

The Permanent Under Secretary for Ireland was a man of the name of Drummond, who had been an Engineer officer. His views, which as permanent official he had every opportunity of enforcing upon the Viceroy and Secretary, were much more comprehensive than at that time was usual. He saw—what all subsequent history has tended to prove—that the sores of Ireland were social rather than political. A false system of 300 years' standing could not be cured by any single act of legislation.

Normanby's  
Irish Ad-  
ministration.

Opposition of  
the Tory Irish  
to Drummond's  
views.

The gradual removal of such evils as the excessive enforcement of the landlord's rights ; as the want of employment incident to deficient capital, to small and one-sided outlets for industry, and to overgrown population, were of more importance than the equalisation of political rights. Political demands must receive due attention ; obvious political wrongs and inequalities, forming centres around which discontent might easily gather, must be removed ; but it was useless to expect any real tranquillity till time and gradual amelioration had softened the deeply-seated social antagonism which lay at the bottom of Irish discontent. Such views as these, coupled as they were with the open support given to the Ministry by O'Connell, excited a most hostile feeling in the minds of the Tory landowners and of the old Protestant and Orange connection, which had not forgotten the time of its exclusive predominance. There was a constant and bitter expression among them, both in Parliament and outside, of their belief that the Government was fomenting disorder, supporting O'Connell's Associations, and exciting at once by its weakness of repression and by its flattering words the excesses which it was its chief business to control. As a matter of course there were grounds on which such charges could be based. It was true that the Government had not attacked the General Association, which was a sort of counterpart of the old Catholic Association ; nay, more, it had appointed a member of that Association to the office of legal adviser to the Government. In its efforts to be just between the various religions it had ordered that no juryman should be set aside on account of his religious creed, thus endangering, it was urged, the chance of honest conviction. Nor could it be questioned that the amount of crime was still very terrible. The anger of the Irish Tories reached a climax when, at the beginning of the year 1839, Lord Norbury, an inoffensive and respected nobleman, was shot in his own grounds—a murder for which no adequate cause could be discovered, and the perpetrators of which escaped detection. A meeting of magistrates assembled a few days after it at Tullymore to consider what was to be done. As was to be expected, the opportunity was taken to give vent to all the charges against the Government in their full bitterness. The existence of a far-spread conspiracy for the abolition of rent, rendered more terrible by the determination of every peasant to shelter the offender, was brought out and emphasised, and it was distinctly asserted by Lord Oxmantown that this organisation had derived its chief power from the events of 1835, and the belief that the Government had formed a compact with the agitators in Ireland. An expression, used by Secretary

Drummond in his answer some time previous to an angry petition from the Magistrates of Tipperary, to the effect that "property had its duties as well as its rights" was declared to be a mere insult, and to have had the effect of increasing the animosity felt against the owners of the soil, while it emboldened the disturbers of the public peace. In the opinion of the meeting it was hopeless to appeal to the Irish Executive, they must call upon the people of England, the legislature and the throne, for protection.

Irish Debates  
in Parliament.  
March 1839.

The spokesmen of the Irish Tories in both Houses at once proceeded to act on this suggestion. In the Lower House Mr. Shaw moved for the production of papers between the years 1835 and 1839, in order to prove from the statistics of committals and convictions the constant increase of anarchy during the present Viceroy's tenure of office. Agrarian outrages, he declared, in the last six months of 1836 had been 843, in the next six months 904, and in the third period had risen to 1086. Of eight new Protestant tenants upon the land of Lord Lorton, who had been carrying on the system of eviction for the purpose as it was stated of introducing men of more capital and intelligence, two had had their cattle killed, two had been assaulted and left for dead, and the four others had been actually murdered; while the land-owners were struggling to make good their position against these overwhelming difficulties, the Under Secretary had taken the opportunity of insulting them by calling their attention to their duties; and, in the presence of the secret Ribbon Society, Government had chosen for its legal adviser a member of the great Association in Dublin now known by the name of the Precursors. It was plain that this was a covert attack upon the Viceroy and Secretary. Lord Morpeth, after proving the error of the statistics produced, and taking credit rather than shame to himself for the increased number of committals, which only showed the vigilance of the police, turned the tables upon his accusers, and upheld the incriminated words of Mr. Drummond by a terrible list of evictions. In seven counties in the course of six years there had been upwards of 1800 ejectments, each ejectment on an average involving four families. If this was true it would mean that no less than 36,000 people had been turned out of their homes in six years. Such proceedings justified Mr. Drummond's words, and as long as they continued they would certainly generate resistance. The assault, thus met, produced no result. Taking the sting out of the motion by extending its action beyond the period of Lord Normanby's administration, Morpeth allowed the production of the



papers demanded, which could after all only prove the existence of what was already known—the terrible amount of agrarian crime. In the Upper House Lord Roden headed the attack, and gave it a more definite form by moving for a Select Committee to inquire into the state of Ireland since 1835. The personal character of the motion was rendered more pronounced by the distinct assertion that the evils had been either created by the Lord Lieutenant or aggravated by his unscrupulous encouragement of agitation for his own purposes. Upon this Lord Normanby entered into a full defence of his administration; insisted that there was a real diminution of crime; pointed out that in every case of murder, except Lord Norbury's, the criminals had been committed and were now awaiting trial; brushed away all the exaggerations which had surrounded the large exercise of the royal prerogative of pardon in 1836; and as to the charge of laxity in the administration of the law, pointed out that he had established local solicitors as public prosecutors throughout Ireland, and had brought the very scattered and inefficient police he had found there into the great organisation of the Irish Constabulary. His defence did not, however, convince the hostile House, and Lord Roden's motion was carried against the Government by a majority of five.

**Government  
successful in  
the Commons,  
defeated in  
the Lords.**

As their management of Ireland had formed perhaps the most important part of the policy of the Ministers, as it was there alone that they had really maintained to the full the liberality of their principles, they thought it impossible to allow this hostile division to pass without further notice, and Lord John Russell at once declared his intention of bringing in a resolution, which was in fact a vote of confidence in the Ministry. It declared that it was the determination of the House to persevere in those principles which had guided the Executive Government of Ireland for the last eight years. Apart from the necessity of assuring its position against the hostile House of Lords, as a mere party move the introduction of some such resolution was desirable. It was certain to rally round the Government not only their own immediate supporters but the Radicals and the Irish. It moreover put the Conservative leader in a very difficult position. His views on the Government of Ireland were either less wise than might have been expected from him, or he was blinded by the requirements of party. It has been seen how he had systematically weakened the legislation introduced by the Ministry; how in the name of the Protestant Church he had for years prevented the settlement of the

**Russell's Vote  
of Confidence  
places Peel in  
a dilemma.**

tithe difficulty and successfully opposed the Municipal Corporation Act. He had done a worse injury to Ireland by thwarting a wide plan for the establishment of railway communication. Drummond, whose favourite scheme this was, believed that some Government money would be well employed in opening up the resources of Ireland and encouraging the investment of capital in industrial undertakings, and that at the same time such great public works would afford occupation to the redundant population. It was intended that the Government should both advance money and give a guarantee for a certain rate of profit—that it should, in fact, act as the Indian Government has successfully acted. But Peel, who saw no objection to keeping up the differences of the two kingdoms in such matters as local government, was unable to see that the difference of the condition of England and Ireland might allow some relaxation of the laws of political economy. He at once advanced the well-known arguments in favour of *laissez-faire*. Railways would come where railways would pay; a country had no right to pledge its credit to support a concern which must avowedly begin in a loss. His authority as a financier, and a fatal reverence for economic rules without regard to the conditions of their application, were sufficient to shelve the plan. Yet he was fully conscious that if called to the Government he would find it quite impossible to adopt an open policy of repression. He did not choose to pledge himself to any change in the principles of which Lord John's resolution was asking Parliament to approve. He could not therefore negative the resolution, but found it necessary to propose a long counter-resolution declaring that it was uncalled for, and sought to give an air of constitutional wisdom to it by emphasising the apparent attempt of the Ministry to produce a collision between the Houses. The rival parties met in their full force over these resolutions, and the Government was victorious by a majority of twenty-two, which may be regarded as the full strength of its superiority. It was enough to go on with, but showed plainly how easily the slight superiority might be forfeited.

Slight Government majority.  
April 16, 1839.

Such a loss of strength speedily occurred upon the occasion of a question of Colonial policy. In its management of Canada—however good its intentions may have been—the Government had certainly, either in itself or in its agents, undergone a good deal of discredit. The difficulties in Jamaica were destined to be fatal to it.

The question of slavery proved to have been but partially settled

in spite of the munificent gift with which England had compensated the slave-owners by the Emancipation Bill of 1833. The efforts for the repression of the trade had in some points merely aggravated its evils; the postponement of complete emancipation, and the introduction of a temporary system of apprenticeship had proved a failure. Lord Brougham, who brought the question before the House in January 1838, on presenting a petition for immediate emancipation, pointed out the terrible horrors of the slave-carrying trade which still existed. All the measures taken for putting an end to the trade had only resulted in a slight diminution of the number of slaves carried, and in a very great increase of their misery. Treaties had been entered into with most of the European Powers which enabled English cruisers to prevent the shipment of slaves, but in the case of Portugal it was not until the slaves were actually on board that the right of search or seizure accrued. Again, the prize-money for the capture of slavers was given in proportion to the number of slaves. In some cases therefore inevitably, in others probably for interested motives, it was usual to allow the slaves to be placed on board and to attempt to capture the ship when laden. As the success of the trader therefore depended on the speed of his ship, the slavers were built entirely for speed without regard to accommodation. As long as the trade had been a lawful one it had been regulated, and a certain amount of air and food apportioned to each slave; these arrangements had now disappeared, the slaves were packed as close as possible in narrow inconvenient vessels, and when pursued the living cargo was thrown overboard without compunction to lighten the ship. Under these conditions the trade was still profitable, and was still so largely pursued that in one year (1835), eighty ships, with a freight of 28,000 slaves, had entered the port of Havana. The effect of the modified emancipation, which had allowed forced apprenticeship to last till the year 1840, had been equally ineffectual in improving the condition of the blacks after they were landed. Even from selfish motives the slave-owner generally takes the same care of his human property as a farmer does of his cattle. But as apprentices the negroes had ceased to be the property of the planter. It was the interest of the master to wring from them as much as possible during their apprenticeship, while they were still within his grasp. With insufficient food, overworked, and subjected to the severest punishments, sometimes illegal, sometimes inflicted under the guise of law, the apprentice was worse off than the slave had been. Basing his

The Jamaica difficulty.

The evils of modified emancipation.

arguments on such facts as these, Lord Brougham moved resolutions, the most important of which was one which recommended immediate emancipation. Great philanthropic movements are almost inevitably mingled with a certain amount of charlatanry, and the Government, carefully guarding itself and perhaps rightly against sentimental enthusiasm, opposed Lord Brougham's suggestions upon the ground that immediate abolition would be a breach of faith. England had entered, they urged, into a distinct contract with the planters, the essential point of which was the gradual and not immediate abolition of slavery. The stipulations of that contract had indeed been strained and broken by the planters, but it was inconsistent with the honour of the nation to go back from its bargain. The House of Lords on this occasion agreed with the ministerial view, and Lord Brougham's resolutions were lost. A great debate of the same character in the House of Commons terminated in the same manner. It was held that, whatever the consequences, the pledged word of Parliament could not be broken.

Yet it was thought necessary to introduce two Bills to restrict the unjust violence of the planters. It was upon these two Bills that the grave difficulties with the Jamaica colonists hung—difficulties which involved the resignation of Lord Melbourne's Government. One of these Acts, known as "the Act to amend the Abolition of Slavery Act," attempted to find some remedies for the evil of the apprenticeship system. The other was aimed at the abuses—fully recognised and of long standing—which had arisen in the management of the prisons in the West Indies. Domestic punishment and imprisonment had been made unlawful; the public prisons became therefore of great importance, and their unrestricted management by the planters and their agents had turned them in many cases into torture chambers. The Bill placed them directly in the hands of the Queen and Council—that is, of the Imperial Government. The evils of the apprenticeship system—the inevitable evils, arising from the existence of a class at once slaves and not slaves; the difficulty of exacting work—without the reward offered by wages, and with coercion of a restricted character—from men used to labour upon compulsion only; and the danger, nay, almost the certainty of the undue use of power by the master class smarting under the losses which emancipation entailed upon them had been obvious not only in Jamaica but in the other West India colonies. Less irritated by what had happened, and perhaps more wisely governed, several of

Brougham's  
proposal for  
immediate  
emancipation  
rejected.

Two Bills to  
amend the  
evils.



these colonies had thought it better to proceed to immediate and complete emancipation. Thus when Sir Lionel Smith, the Governor of Jamaica, promulgated the "Act of Amendment" (June 1st, 1838), he accompanied it with a strong recommendation to the Assembly to follow the same course, emphasising his advice by pointing out the great difficulty of supporting apprenticeship in the face of the action of the other colonies. Much against their will, and with extreme irritation against the Imperial Government, the Colonists thought it wise to yield to public opinion in England, and to listen to the advice thus pressed upon them. They agreed to immediate abolition. But while yielding they could not forbear to show the bitterness of their anger at being forced, as they chose to believe unconstitutionally, to give their consent. "In consequence of the Act recently passed by the Parliament of the United Kingdom," they said, "a Parliament wherein we are in no way represented, we have been constrained to abandon the remaining term of the apprenticeship."

Consequent  
disaffection in  
Jamaica.

While their masters were in this sulky temper, on the 1st of August the blacks became absolutely free. There had been dread of outbreak and outrage, and of a permanent disinclination on the part of the blacks to work for wages.

The slaves  
emancipated.  
August 1838.

According to the evidence of the Governor and the Bishop the fear was groundless. They declared "that the moment of freedom was one of orderly and solemn thankfulness, and that the churches and chapels were everywhere filled with these happy people, in humble gratitude for the great blessing conferred upon them." And at first the Governor reported that everywhere there was visible a fair amount of readiness to accept wage labour. Any difficulty which arose came from the side of the planters. They were too angry to allow fair play to the change which had been made, or to refrain from using tyrannically the advantages in their hands. By every means in their power, by demanding enormous rents and by wholesale evictions, they strove to beat down the wages they would have to pay, and to impose upon the helplessness of the black labourers. The missionaries, the stipendiary magistrates, and the Governor himself, found it necessary to support the cause of the oppressed blacks. Considerable excitement was the consequence, and the Governor entirely lost the popularity he had once enjoyed. In the midst of this excitement the second Bill, the "Jamaica Prisons Bill," was somewhat hastily promulgated. There could be no doubt as to the malpractices prevalent in the prisons, but

Reception of  
the Prisons  
Bill.

the circumstances attending the production of the Bill were perhaps needlessly irritating. A commissioner, Captain Pringle, had been appointed to examine and report upon the prisons. Without in any way mentioning the results of his inquiries to the Colonial Parliament, he had returned direct to England and given in the report on which the new Bill was based. And as it happened on the very day that the news had been received in England that the colonists had consented to immediate emancipation, the Prisons Bill—overriding the constitutional power of supervision belonging to the Colonial Parliament—placed in the hands of the Governor, checked only by his responsibility to the Queen in Council, the entire management of the prisons; a very poor return, in the opinion of the planters, for their acquiescence in the wishes of the English public. Irritating in itself, the Bill was not produced in a conciliatory manner. A friendly and argumentative despatch intended to soften its effect had accompanied it, but was kept back by the Governor till the Assembly should meet. An outburst of anger was the result. When in November the Assembly met, it at once passed resolutions declaring the Bill to be a violation of the constitutional rights of the colonists, and expressing its determination to “abstain from the exercise of any legislative functions, except those necessary to preserve the public credit, till they knew whether they were to be treated as free subjects . . . or as a conquered Colony.” This determination implied the most serious inconvenience. A number of annual laws were approaching the time of their expiration, and could not be renewed. Yet as they related to such matters as vagrancy, squatting, and contracts, they were of more than usual importance at the present conjuncture. But the Legislature clung to its resolutions, and was dissolved. As the Governor had foreseen, the Assembly which took its place displayed the same temper, refused to modify the resolutions, and was permanently prorogued.

The political deadlock resembled that which had preceded the Canadian rebellion, but with this important difference: in Canada the Assembly expressed the voice of the bulk of the people—unwise, perhaps, but claiming what they believed to be their rights against the encroachments of the dominant class,—while in Jamaica it represented a constituency of at most 2000 of a dominant class claiming their privileges against the mass of newly emancipated citizens. It was not unnatural however under the circumstances that the Government should pursue a similar course to that they had adopted in Canada. Though their

Proposal to  
suspend the  
Jamaica  
constitution.

agent there, hampered by party influences at home and misled by his own impulsive character, had committed grave errors, the wisdom of establishing a temporary despotism, under the shadow of which a new constitution might be established, was scarcely to be questioned. If it was wise in Canada, it was surely wiser in Jamaica, where the whole framework of society was undergoing a violent change. The Government accordingly introduced a Bill, the principle of which was that the constitution of Jamaica should be suspended for five years, and the government placed in the hands of the Governor and a council of three commissioners charged with the duty of making such laws as the state of the Colony required. At the expiration of that time the constitution was to be restored. But as usual in English politics, the wisdom of the principle went for little in the heat of party strife. Questionable points in the detail of the Bill, and the management on the part of the Government of the circumstances which had rendered the Bill necessary, were fixed upon with avidity by the Opposition. The grounds set forth in the preamble for the action taken were declared to be inadequate. The promulgation of the Prisons Act without its accompanying despatch was regarded as a needless aggravation of its severity. The Government was charged with hastily snatching at an opportunity for abrogating the constitution. Sir Robert Peel, who led the attack, declared his wish that efforts at compromise should be made, and an opportunity given to the Assembly to withdraw from its false position. On this ground he opposed the Bill as it was going into committee after the second reading, and a division taken at this point showed a majority in favour of the Ministry of five only. A Government in a perpetual minority in the Lords, and able to rely upon a superiority of little more than twenty votes in the Commons, could not bear up against such a diminution of its narrow majority. Least of all, as Lord John Russell urged, could a Government thus slightly supported carry out with advantage to the public interest a struggle between the mother country and a contumacious Colony. The Ministry of Lord Melbourne thought it right to resign.

There could be little doubt that their position was not a dignified one. The vehemence with which every now and then they declared that they would not exist on sufferance shows how fully they recognised that they really did so exist, and the soreness which the position caused them. Probably they would all have been glad enough to have seen their opponents surrounded by the difficulties under which they had been

Resignation  
of Ministry.  
May 7th, 1839.

Peel declines  
the Ministry  
unless the  
Queen's ladies  
are changed.

themselves labouring. But it was not to be. A curious episode forced them back to their unenviable position of power. According to the forms of the Constitution, the Premier advised the Queen to send for the Duke of Wellington, who in his turn advised her to intrust the formation of the new Ministry to Sir Robert Peel. Peel undertook the duty ; found adherents willing to serve with him ; and laid the list before the Queen. But at the same time he told her that he thought it would be necessary to change some of the chief ladies of her household. The young Queen probably misunderstood the amount of the change intended. She had grown attached to those who had surrounded her since her accession to the Throne, and on whose friendship she could rely. She took fright at the idea of being left alone in the midst of strange surroundings, and consulted the outgoing Ministry as to the constitutional necessity of the change. They advised her that it was not necessary. She therefore wrote to Sir Robert Peel that, "having considered the proposal made by him to remove the ladies of her bedchamber, she could not consent to adopt a course which she considered to be contrary to usage, and which was repugnant to her feelings." Sir Robert Peel immediately wrote in answer that his sense of public duty compelled him to adhere to the opinion he had expressed, and that on this condition only would he accept office. The Queen again sought advice of her late Ministers on the subject ; a Cabinet council was held, and their opinion was thrown into the shape of a formal minute, in which, after saying that "it was reasonable that the great offices in the Court and situations in the household held by members of Parliament should be included in political arrangements," they went on to state that they were "not of opinion that a similar principle should be extended to offices held by ladies in Her Majesty's household."

So strange an incident, so sudden a disappearance of the hopes of office felt by the Tories, naturally caused great party excitement. The matter was discussed from all points of view. To some it seemed a question of grave constitutional importance that the personal wish of the sovereign should override great party combinations ; to some the position taken by the outgoing Ministry of acting as a united Cabinet after their resignation, and while the Queen was in correspondence with the leader of their opponents, seemed most questionable. And there was no lack among the disappointed Conservatives, outside the circle of the immediate leaders, of those who regarded the whole matter as a preconcerted trick of the Liberals to retain office. The very simple and straight-

Discussion of  
the question.



forward assertion of Lord Melbourne that this was not so disposes of this suspicion. The action of the outgoing Ministers was defended on the ground that, on the receipt of Peel's answer, negotiations with him had in fact ceased, and that they were the only advisers left to the Crown. The reasonableness of the Queen's opposition to the suggested changes is generally allowed; and the correctness of the constitutional principle upheld by Melbourne appears to be proved by its subsequent general acceptance, and by the fact that from this time onwards the Ladies of the Household (with the exception of the Mistress of the Robes) have been exempted from the alternations of political party.

In all probability there was a misconception at the bottom of the affair. Peel had not intended to remove any great number of the ladies. Nor was he probably very anxious to accept the difficulties which at that time surrounded the position of the Government. At all events, he was determined that he would not accept office unless he could occupy a commanding position. As a dissolution was regarded as a thing to be avoided, he would have had at once to face a majority in opposition. That majority, though small, had declared very lately its opinion in favour of the policy of two Ministers, Normanby and Morpeth. The wife of one of these and the sister of the other were among the Queen's ladies, and Peel did not think that he could possibly have carried out his government with any success unless he received some open sign of support from the Crown, such as the removal of the ladies would have given him.

The incident resulted in the restitution of the Whig Government, and its maintenance in office for two years longer, during which it dragged on its wearisome and inefficient career. Some slight alterations had been made in the ministerial arrangements. Lord Mulgrave had returned from Ireland in February, and had been called to the Upper House as Lord Normanby. His place was taken by Lord Ebrington, a man of equally liberal views. The retirement of Lord Glenelg, an able though somewhat dilatory statesman, allowed of a change of offices which finally resulted in the appointment of Lord Normanby to the Home Office, while the Colonies were intrusted to Lord John Russell. In the Lower House a change of some importance took place. Abercrombie, the Speaker, had not proved thoroughly efficient. Somewhat too irritable, and prone to take personal offence, he had not succeeded in establishing his authority; and, believing himself ill-used by the Government, he had resigned. Although Mr. Spring Rice, the Chancellor of

Melbourne  
returns to  
power.  
May 11.

the Exchequer, had long coveted the post, the uncertainty of his election induced the Ministry to prefer as their nominee Mr. Shaw Lefevre, a man in every way well fitted for the office, and likely as a popular county gentleman to be accepted by the Opposition.

The new Colonial Minister was at once forced into prominence by the introduction under a new form of the Jamaica Bill, which had caused the late crisis. It adopted the principle on which Sir Robert Peel had insisted, and offered a *locus penitentie* to the Assembly. The crime of that Assembly had been its refusal to pass the necessary Bills. Those Bills were of two classes. The one consisted of Bills rendered necessary by the changed state of the country after the Emancipation—to regulate the unoccupied lands, the vagrant laws, the relations between master and servant, the militia, and the electoral qualification, touching in fact those questions which were brought to the front by the sudden creation, by the Emancipation Act, of a large body of new black citizens. The other class consisted of old Bills, which had always been considered necessary in the Colony, but which, being re-enacted yearly, had come to a natural conclusion, and required to be re-made. The Bill, instead of suspending the Constitution, referred these two classes of Bills under two clauses to the Assembly. If it refused with regard to the first class to make satisfactory arrangements, similar in principle to those made in Crown Colonies after emancipation, the Governor and the Council were to be authorised to enact the required laws. With regard to the second class, if the Assembly refused to renew the expired Acts within a certain limited time, the Governor and his Council might renew them by their own authority. Although the Bill nearly resembled the propositions of Sir Robert Peel, it did not pass without considerable opposition; and in the House of Lords its most important enactment, the first clause, was omitted. Hopeless of carrying out a firmer policy, Lord John Russell recommended the Commons to accept the remainder of the Bill rather than get no Bill at all. It therefore became law almost exactly as Sir Robert Peel had proposed two months previously. Whether the conduct of the Conservatives arose, as Sir Robert Peel asserted, from *bona fide* objections to the Bill, or whether it was a factious desire to catch for party purposes a few Radical votes which induced them to support the rights of the Jamaica Assembly, there is no doubt that the effect of the rejection of the more stringent clauses of the Bill was to perpetuate for many years the misgovernment of Jamaica.

Factionous  
opposition of  
Peel to the  
Second  
Jamaica Bill.

The Bill  
mutilated and  
passed.  
July 1839.

The balance of political parties almost inevitably prevented the completion of any great measure of legislation, and the history of the remaining two years of Whig rule is occupied chiefly with matters of administration, and with abortive attempts on the part of the Ministers themselves and of their Radical supporters to advance measures which have subsequently been accepted as necessary by all parties. Little fault could be found with their administration; but their difficulties were gradually increasing on all sides, and a general feeling sprang up that they must give place to a more powerful government. The skill of Sir Robert Peel, who (while keeping his party together, and waging a very efficient party war) kept in check the violence of the old Tory element, and took care to declare the liberality of his own views, tended largely to this reaction.

Desire for a  
change of  
Ministry.

It is probable also that the marriage of the Queen rendered a change of Ministry more possible. The Government had from the first taken up the position of the Queen's Government, and it was distinctly as the protectors of her personal wishes that they returned to power; and although Lord Melbourne behaved in all respects most honourably in his position of close friend and constant companion of the young Queen, it was undoubtedly true that her affection for him, and her dread of losing his unrestrained and fatherly friendship, was a great obstacle in the way of change. But at the close of the year 1839 she made up her mind to marry Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg Gotha. He had been invited to Windsor at the suggestion of Melbourne himself and King Leopold of Belgium, who foresaw what was likely to be the result. The Queen became deeply attached to him, and her marriage with him was at once decided upon. It is not the least among the virtues of Melbourne, not the least among the many proofs he gave of his sincere and high-minded affection for the Queen, that he thus supplied her with a husband who might permanently occupy the place of adviser he had himself hitherto held, and give her the support which her sex and years required. With what self-denying devotion Prince Albert effaced himself from political life, and gave himself up to the support and assistance of the Queen, is visible in every page of the future history of his career. The marriage removed the necessity for Melbourne's presence, and allowed the Queen to assume a more truly constitutional position than she had yet held. She could henceforward repose her confidence equally in the leader of either party, who might be the Minister of

Made possible  
by the Queen's  
marriage.

Character and  
position of  
Prince Albert.

the people's choice. Some mistakes were made which tended at first to injure Prince Albert's popularity. A demand for £50,000 a year for his support could not but be regarded as exorbitant; the attempt to give him precedence over all the royal family by an Act of Parliament was injudicious. Nor was it, perhaps, prudent to omit all mention of the Protestantism of the Prince when the engagement was announced. The errors were, no doubt, caused by a somewhat undue friendship for the Queen. On all points the Ministry had to give way. The income was settled at £30,000; precedence at the Court was given to the Prince by the Queen's prerogative only, and a public declaration of Protestantism was elicited. Nor was it possible at first that the real worth of the Prince should be known. He was very young—a few months younger than the Queen—and it was not without some difficulty, and some occasional ridicule at his literary and artistic culture, which belonged rather to German than to English manners, that he succeeded in securing his position.

Causes of  
social  
agitation.

But it is not in a course of somewhat stunted legislation, or in the strife of parties within the walls of Parliament, that the real interest of the time is to be sought. It lies rather in this, that in it we can trace in all directions, disordered and shapeless, the continuation of the strenuous movements of popular life originated at the Reform Bill of 1832. Though at first they appeared to produce but little result, they gradually exerted a power on the public mind which forced even the Conservatives to accept and further them. Veiled as it was in many respects under the form of political aspiration, the popular movement was at bottom a social one. Though frequently regarded as a revolution, and though, in fact, it was a first step in a revolution, the Reform Bill had been the work of men trained in old political theories, and themselves belonging to the propertied class. The constituencies had indeed been largely increased, and the rearrangement of political power as between town and country had been considerable, but it was still in virtue of their property that the newly admitted electors enjoyed the advantages that had been given them. The measure in fact did little more than give a wide extension to the propertied class. But the movement which had resulted in the Bill was too deep to be thus limited. The desire for admission to some share in the national government was not merely political ambition; its object was thoroughly practical. To direct legislation into a course advantageous to themselves, and therefore as they believed to the country, was the desire of those who had been admitted to a share of political power. It was inevitable that



the same desire should exist in the classes still excluded, and that they in their turn should seek for the realisation of their wishes by similar means. It was thus that social and political questions were intermingled, although they assumed at first for the most part a political shape. The feeling in favour of continuing the work of the Reform Bill was represented in the House by the small body of men then known as Radicals; outside the House, by the large body of new voters. There was a constant pressure in Parliament from such men as Roebuck, Leader, and Grote, for still further extension of the franchise. They believed also that the influence of wealth, especially of territorial wealth, prevented the true expression of the will of the poorer voters. To check this influence, which they regarded as the chief blot in the representative system of England, they yearly produced a motion in favour of ballot at elections. The name of Grote the historian is indissolubly connected with the Bill. At first the effect of the efforts of the Radical party was to emphasise the divergence of views existing among the Liberals, and to drive the more influential and wealthy among them, with Lord John Russell at their head, to take up a Conservative attitude they were totally unable to maintain. Lord John even went so far as to declare "the finality" of the Reform Bill, and to say that he should consider himself guilty of a breach of faith if he took any part in large measures of reconstruction. Both the dominant parties in the House had thus declared their determination to listen to no further increase of the political power of the masses. It was consequently outside Parliament that the agitation was chiefly carried on.

Ever since 1836 the trade of the country had been depressed. As a necessary consequence, there was considerable suffering among the working classes. Added to this, the frost of the winter of 1837-38 was of unprecedented severity, the Thames being frozen over in London. The hardship attending such a state of things was increased by the high price of food. The duty on corn kept up its price, which ranged during the year 1838 from 69s. to 79s. a quarter. Nor was the price of meat low. It is mentioned in public estimates at the general average of 5s. a stone of 8 lbs.; sold at retail prices, this would probably give an average of 8d. Cold, hunger, and want of employment were all at work among the people. The severe system of the new Poor Law, as yet only four years old, naturally offered itself as an object of bitter complaint to the suffering multitude. The cessation of outdoor relief and of grants in aid of wages were regarded as instances of cruel and tyrannous oppression.

Sufferings of  
the poor.

It was not only the poor themselves, or the agitators who were making use of them, who joined in this unreasonable attack. Losing sight of the general and natural causes at work to produce misery, many well-intentioned and educated men believed that it might be traced chiefly to the action of the new Poor Law. This feeling found expression in the House of Commons; and in the Upper House Lord Stanhope and the Bishop of Exeter combined in heaping abuse upon the Law. Yet the annual report of the Commissioners continued to speak with full confidence of the success attained. And although no doubt the facts which they adduced were selected for the purpose of putting their case in its best light, they afford sufficiently striking and sound proofs of the real value of the new law. In districts where fifty or sixty able-bodied men had habitually been relieved during the winter, no single case of such relief was now to be found, yet the strictest inquiry in certain districts in Kent failed to produce any cases of unrelieved distress. The clergy, originally much opposed to the restriction of charity, were gradually coming round to confess the utility of the change, and the Commissioners boasted, apparently with truth, that there was already a saving of between £2,000,000 and £3,000,000 on the rates. None the less did demagogues find in the new arrangements a ready means of exciting the anger of the people.

In the towns other general causes of suffering were at work. The introduction of machinery had produced the effect which, when it is combined with depression of trade, must necessarily follow it. In the competition for such trade as there was, the hand-worker was driven to ruin, and cheap mechanical processes superseded human labour. With the want of an abundant supply of work wages began to fall, and in their attempt to keep them up the workmen fell into habits of combination. In nearly every manufacturing town Trades Unions made their appearance. The objects of these organisations were: first, to enable the workman to cope on equal terms with the capitalist by means of "strikes," compelling the master to forfeit his contracts or to raise wages, and of "turn-outs," which were strikes, not for the purpose of raising wages, but for inflicting punishment upon the masters who happened to have broken any of the laws of the Unions; secondly, to produce an equality of receipts among the workmen, regardless of the superior gifts or industry possessed by any individual among them; thirdly, the repression of piecework, which was regarded as mere robbery. "Every man," said one of the Trades Union orators, "who, by work-

Rise of Trades  
Unions.

ing at piecework, earns 40s. a week, when the ordinary wage is 20s., is robbing his neighbour of a sovereign." These combinations, though in themselves they were not at this time regarded as illegal, were constantly tempted to have recourse to violence. They were governed each by its body of delegates, paid pretty highly at the cost of the members. The ordinary members of the Unions were under promise to obey their leaders' commands, which frequently took the form of orders to "picket,"—that is, to watch and ill-use men who broke their rules,—or to execute the vengeance of the Society upon interloping workmen employed by the masters during a strike. There can be little doubt that Trades Unions, affording as they do organised centres round which the political and social aspirations of the lower classes can easily gather, have been of great advantage to the working men. But their first effect was to increase the evils of poverty. At a time of depression of trade they offered a fresh difficulty to the employment of capital; and some of the greatest and most complete inventions in machinery, inventions which still further lessened the demand for labour, can be traced to them.

The evils of competition were however so obvious, and in some cases so repulsive, that it was not the working classes alone who sought means to remedy them. The attention of philanthropists had been already attracted to the evils attending the large employment of children in factories. They suffered both in body and mind. They were weakened by the long hours of labour passed in an unwholesome atmosphere, and kept in ignorance by the constant occupation which debarred them from all opportunities of education. Lord Ashley came forward as the chief advocate of their cause. As early as the year 1833 a Bill had been passed for the protection of factory children. Nine hours a day was fixed as their working time when engaged in factory labour, from which children under nine years of age were entirely excluded. It was a law which clashed with the principle of free competition, and excited opposition on both sides. The employers desired cheap labour and long hours; the parents of the children were not as yet sufficiently educated to see the advantages secured to them by the Bill, and were desirous of getting all they could from their children's labour. The law was therefore evaded; and in 1838 Lord Ashley found it necessary to bring in a Bill for the more efficient carrying out of the regulation of factories. It was however lost by a large majority. Political economy, regarded not as a statement of results from certain causes but as a code of laws to be carefully followed, was at that time

Failure of  
Lord Ashley's  
Factory Act.  
1838.

triumphant in the House. So entirely was the success and happiness of the country held to depend upon the success of the capitalist that the view stated by Sir Robert Peel, that to limit the hours of child-labour was a restriction upon trade which would tend to drive capital from England, was at once accepted as a final argument against the Bill. Yet, while a serious injury was inflicted upon the youth of the nation in the name of political economy, its laws, as the Radicals pointed out, were flagrantly broken by the maintenance of the protective duty upon corn which obliged the already suffering poor to pay an undue price for the most necessary article of subsistence.

The question of Education, emphasised by Lord Ashley's efforts to restrain the employment of factory children, was gradually becoming important. Lord Brougham, with the fervid activity which marked his partisanship, had for years been impressing on the Parliament and people the necessity of removing from England the stigma of being the worst educated country in Northern Europe. He had succeeded, even as early as 1818, in obtaining returns clearly exhibiting the state of the facts. It was however not till fifteen years later that the Government of the country deigned to take any notice of the question. In 1833 the Reformed Parliament went so far as to grant the pitiful sum of £20,000 for the maintenance of education. This sum was distributed through the agency of two Societies—the National Society, in exclusive connection with the English Church, and the British and Foreign School Society upon a somewhat broader basis. It was employed to encourage the building of schools, upon the condition that the grant should be met by considerable local subscription. A few more schools were thus no doubt called into existence, but the very conditions of the grant secured that they should be chiefly in wealthy districts; just where schools were most wanted they could not be obtained. By both Societies the Roman Catholic poor—and they were numerous—were entirely excluded from education. From that time onwards repeated efforts had been made, and committees appointed on the subject, and a good deal of increase of education had taken place.

In December 1837 Lord Brougham suggested a plan for national education. He expressed his wish that the interference of Government should be as limited as possible, but he believed that by a system of incentives and encouragements the principles of education could be generally introduced, and a school put within the reach of all. His reason for objecting to any set scheme was the number of schools already existing. There were

Necessity for attempting national education.

Lord Brougham's plan. 1837.



about 50,000, of which 40,000 were voluntary without endowment. Since 1820 the number of children attending school had grown from 600,000 to 1,120,000—730,000 of whom were paying for their education. He in no sense wished to acknowledge the right of every individual to education. His plan was the establishment of an Education Board of commissioners, among whom should be some of the Ministers of the Crown. To them should be intrusted the duty of distributing Parliamentary grants and charitable funds. All grants were to be refused to schools of an exclusive character, where no churchman or no dissenter, as the case might be, could act as teacher. Any parish might form for itself a school committee, composed of ratepayers, with the right to levy a rate for school purposes. Religious teaching, while unsectarian, was to be maintained. The shortness of the session prevented the full consideration of the Bill. In June Mr. Wise, Chairman of the Central Society for Education, moved in the Lower House for an address to the Queen, asking her to appoint commissioners, with the same sort of powers as those above mentioned. The debate brought out the inefficiency of the existing system. In five towns of Lancashire, in a population of 841,000, only 27,000 children went to school. In Bethnal Green, where there were 14,000 children between five and fourteen, only 2000 received any education. Lord John Russell did not consider the time arrived for any general scheme, and therefore opposed Mr. Wise. The motion was negatived, but by a majority of four only.

Mr. Wise's  
plan.  
1838.

So close a division induced Lord John Russell himself in the next session to produce a scheme. Although it came definitely before the House only when an increase of £10,000 to the education grant was demanded, the plan had already been explained in Parliament, and formulated in an order of Council to which publicity had been given, and which had already roused the opposition of the Church, and called forth very numerous adverse petitions. The plan consisted in the first place, like Brougham's, of the establishment of a Committee of Council, consisting of members of the Government, who were to be an Education Board. The Board was to be intrusted with the distribution of the Parliamentary grant. Of this £10,000 was confined to the two Societies which had already received it; but in the distribution of the residue the hands of the Committee were not tied. They were neither compelled to follow the existing custom of making grants only to meet local subscriptions, nor to give only through the medium of the two great Societies. No school

Lord John  
Russell's plan.  
1839.

was to receive any share unless it submitted to inspection. For the supply of teachers a Normal School, under Government, was to be established, where children and teachers were to be trained in the principles of Christianity, but the rights of conscience were to be respected.

When the matter came before the House it at once encountered a storm of opposition. It placed, it was urged, control over the religious education of the people in the hands of a political Board. It allowed that Board to give grants to

Opposition to  
it in both  
Houses.

all sorts of schools; it withdrew from the Church what had been something like a monopoly, for the grants to meet subscriptions had naturally fallen principally to the wealthiest body. Lord Stanley, though he had himself originated a similar plan in Ireland, led the Opposition. According to him (and he supported it by statistics), the present system was working extraordinarily well. Even Lord Ashley, actuated by Protestant enthusiasm, opposed the scheme. It was well supported by Ministers and their followers, and the need of education was placed in a very glaring light. The statistics of ignorance were gloomy, and a great proportion of the returned scholars proved on inquiry to be Sunday scholars only. At Newcastle 49 out of every 100 children received no instruction. At Gateshead 13 per cent. only attended schools, and in seventeen large towns the average was only 1 in 12. In Manchester it was only 1 in 35. Of the 3,000,000 children in England half were in a state of complete ignorance. But the dread of touching the monopoly of the Church was such that it was only by a majority of five that the Government was allowed to bring in its Bill. When £30,000 was demanded for education a fresh opposition was raised, and Lord Mahon went so far as to attempt to prove that education out of the hands of the clergy was a direct cause of crime. A division showed a majority of only two in favour of the grant. Of course the Opposition in the Lords was still more decided. It was led by the Archbishop of Canterbury, who produced resolutions of great length stating that the ministerial scheme was open to objections with reference to the arrangements made for the religious instruction of children and other important details, and that the House of Lords therefore found itself obliged to present a humble address to the Queen to put an end to all immediate steps with respect to the establishment of general education. One Bishop alone, the Bishop of Norwich, supported the Bill. As usual in the Upper House, the Conservatives had it all their own way; the resolutions of the Archbishop were carried by a majority of 111.

The Ministry, however, did not quite give way. They dropped their Normal School, but retained their Committee of Council; induced the Queen to express her disapproval of the Lords' address; and proceeded to carry out their system of grants. The indignant clergy at first refused to accept any share, but the process of self-denial did not long continue; they shortly contrived to absorb nearly the whole of it, and the dissenters were still left unprovided for.

Small though this beginning of national education is, it at least shows the advance of social interest in the country, at the same time that it reveals the mass of ignorance which was ready to lend itself to the plausible harangues of discontented demagogues. It is difficult to find a more complete proof

Illustration of  
the ignorance  
of the people.

of ignorance, at all events in the case of the agricultural poor, than an incident which occurred at Boughton, near Canterbury, in the spring of 1838. A certain John Thom, a Cornishman, had some years before made himself notorious by marching about in rich dresses, and calling himself Sir William Courtney, Knight of Malta. His personal presence, which was striking, and a certain gift of eloquence had given him some influence in the neighbourhood. He was subsequently found to be mad, and was placed in confinement, but on proving harmless had been intrusted to the care of his own family. He escaped from them and reappeared in Kent, resumed his old position, persuaded the farmers that he was by right a very wealthy man, that he would shortly enter into his property and give them their land rent free. He proceeded to inveigh against all laws, more particularly the new Poor Law, collected a band of followers, and marched about asking the labourers to join him. He then went a step further, and declared that he was the Messiah. His strange pretensions received a certain support, and the increase of his fanatical followers appeared so dangerous that it was thought necessary to attempt his apprehension. He shot the constable who tried to take him. Soldiers were summoned from Canterbury. He called upon his followers to behave like men, and at once stepped before them and shot the officer in command. The soldiers then fired, and eight or ten of the rioters, with Thom among them, were killed. The legal proceedings which followed this little riot exhibit the most extraordinary credulity on the part of the people, who had believed in the miracles of Thom, had received the Eucharist from his hands, had worshipped him, and fully believed that he and they were rendered invulnerable.

Suffering, ignorant, organised for definite opposition to their capi-

talist masters, irritated by the unavoidable harshness which attended the honest working of the new Poor Law, driven to despair by a system of competition which seemed to demand from them all the toil while the capitalists got all the profits,—the people listened willingly to pictures of an ideal state of society, freed alike from restrictive corn-laws, over competition and grasping capitalists. Previous events had led them to believe that political power was the road by which they might reach such a happy state, and the result was Chartism. In the course of 1838 the discontent began to assume dangerous proportions, and found means to express itself in a formula known as the People's Charter, which claimed five political points—universal suffrage, vote by ballot, annual Parliaments, abolition of a property qualification for a seat in Parliament, and payment of members. The Legislature was thus to be at once under the immediate supervision of the constituencies, and open to working men. The movement, composite in character, was very widespread and very threatening. It found local leaders in all parts of England. The more prominent were a Dissenting minister of the name of Stephens ; Vincent, a working man ; Oastler, who confined his attacks chiefly to the Poor Law ; and Feargus O'Connor, a man of fine gifts and presence, but with a taint of madness which ultimately destroyed his mind. Riotous meetings were held in all directions, and their effect was heightened by their being frequently held at night with torchlight processions. The speeches made at them were marked by wild assertions of the objects and advantages of the Charter, and scarcely veiled suggestions of an appeal to physical force. "Universal suffrage," said Mr. Stephens at one of these meetings, a great assembly of 200,000 men on Kersal Moor, near Manchester—"the meaning of universal suffrage is that every working man in the land has a right to a good coat, a good hat, a good roof, a good dinner, no more work than will keep him in health, and as much wages as will keep him in plenty. If," he went on to say, "the authorities in Manchester had not declared confidence in the peaceable character of the people, he would have brought 10,000 armed men with him, and would have exhorted every man capable of bearing arms to flock to the standard and fight the battles of the Constitution." It was not in the north country only that the disturbances made their appearance. Devizes, Llanidloes, Sheffield, Bolton, Newcastle, the Potteries, and London itself, were all disturbed, more or less, with riots ; and it was not only in tumultuous assemblies that the claims of the Chartists were heard. In 1839 delegates were chosen, and a national Convention



usually holding its sittings in London was formed ; and the People's Charter grew into a great national petition, signed by 1,200,000 men. When it was brought into the House of Commons by Mr. Attwood (June 14), it was at once rejected. On the 12th of July Mr. Attwood moved that the petition should be referred to a Select Committee. As a matter of course his motion was lost by a large majority.

The People's  
Charter  
rejected.

The petition had been already discredited by a riot which had taken place on the 4th of July in Birmingham, and which had only been suppressed with difficulty by the military. The temper of the organisation had been displayed in a proclamation in which the Convention spoke of the action of the police as "an unjust and wanton outrage committed by a bloodthirsty and unconstitutional force from London." The rejection of the petition was followed by a still worse riot (July 15). For some hours,

Riots at  
Birmingham  
and Newport.

almost unchecked by the police, the populace held possession of Birmingham, and employed themselves in the wanton destruction of property. The Duke of Wellington declared he had never seen a stormed and sacked town in so bad a plight. This great outbreak was followed almost immediately by an even more open outrage at Newport, in Monmouthshire. It was the centre of a hilly district occupied by a mining population. The Chartist doctrines had been disseminated among the miners principally through the agency of a Mr. Frost, a linen-draper in Newport. Created a magistrate of the town at the recommendation of the townsfolk, he had continued his seditious behaviour, and had been removed from the magistracy by Lord John Russell. In conjunction with Zephaniah Williams, who kept a beer-shop in Colebrookdale, and William Jones, a watchmaker of Pontypool, he seems to have determined to assault Newport on the night of Sunday, the 4th of November. The insurgents were to march on the town in three divisions, break down the bridge over the Usk, attack the troops stationed in the town, and stop the mail, the non-arrival of which at Birmingham was to be a signal for some sort of general rising in the north of England. The junction of the three parties failed, and Frost with his division marched single-handed upon the town. He was there encountered with great courage and skill by Mr. Philips, the Mayor, who garrisoned the chief inn in the place, and beat off the assailants not without some loss of life. The three leaders were captured and brought to trial, while Philips, who had been wounded in the encounter, was invited to Windsor, treated with all honour, and made a knight. These disorders were of necessity

met by active measures of repression, and by frequent Government prosecutions. But the Administration did not find it necessary to have recourse to extreme methods ; the constabulary in some of the larger towns was reorganised, and a small addition of troops asked for and obtained from Parliament ; but in other respects the existing laws were found sufficient to meet the evil.

The weakness of the Ministry in Parliament and the disturbed state of the country induced the Conservatives at the beginning of 1840 to move a vote of want of confidence. The ground on which it rested was the inability of the Ministry to secure that peace at home and abroad which it was its duty to secure ; and the cause of this failure, according to the assertion of their opponents, was to be traced to their weakness in tampering with disturbances both in England and in Ireland, and to the meddling policy they pursued abroad. They were however able to make out a case good enough to secure the support of the House ; and the motion of want of confidence was lost by twenty-one votes. By a narrow majority of nine they also succeeded in saving their policy with regard to China from an adverse motion of Sir James Graham. Yet every division displayed their real weakness, and their position was rendered worse by the growing indignation at the undisguised tenacity with which they clung to office.

The great party battle-field, both this year and the next, was Ireland. It has been already mentioned that the Government had succeeded in passing the Irish Municipal Corporation Bill through both Houses only by accepting the adverse amendment of the Lords. This virtual victory of the Opposition was followed up by the introduction by Lord Stanley of a Bill for regulating the registration of voters in Ireland. A system of registration had existed there before the passing of the Reform Bill. A new system had been introduced in England ; but, before assimilating the process in the two countries, it was thought desirable to see how the experiment would work. It had proved successful ; and as there were some palpable deficiencies in the registration arrangements in Ireland, it was understood that the time had arrived for bringing the two into harmony. But Government, although it appeared to recognise the duty, had neglected to produce any Bill for the purpose. That duty the Opposition, represented by Lord Stanley, now undertook. By the existing system the registration in Ireland was revised before permanent officials (assistant barristers), as a part of the quarter sessions work at the assize towns. There was no appeal,

Vote of want  
of confidence  
defeated.  
Jan. 31, 1840.

Failure of  
Stanley's Irish  
Registration  
Bill.  
May 1840.



and each claimant had to make good his claim, which was objected to as a matter of course. Having succeeded in making it good, he was given a certificate, available for eight years; but, as he might procure such a certificate every half-year, an easy opening was given for the creation of fraudulent votes by the dishonest distribution of these certificates at election time. Stanley proposed to bring the systems of the two countries into harmony; to make registration annual; to allow names to stand on the register without production of fresh proof unless objected to, and to give an appeal from the revising barrister to the judges. It is difficult to understand the objection to the Bill, but it seems to have been regarded as a covert method of excluding a number of voters from the constituency, and as such was vehemently opposed by the Government and by O'Connell. Morpeth declared that it would obstruct the legitimate use of the franchise. O'Connell regarded it as a Bill which would entirely disfranchise Ireland by enormously increasing the difficulties in the way of keeping a vote. The register was to be opened every year, and, as the Tories would dispute every Liberal or peasant vote and carry the matter if decided against them before the judges, the peasant would have to walk fifty or sixty miles to the assize town twice every year to make good his claim. Stanley, who had originally parted from the Reformers on disapproving of their weak and conciliatory action in Ireland, and who was therefore the declared enemy of O'Connell and his friends, found himself at once assaulted with extreme violence. O'Connell, with his usual want of self-restraint, spoke of him as "scorpion Stanley" outside the House, and within the House heaped every sort of abuse upon him. Although frequently beaten in division—for the virulence of O'Connell's partisanship, and the apparent reasonableness of the Bill they were opposing, had withdrawn some support from the Ministers—the Government threw every form and sort of obstacle in the way of the measure. No less than ten divisions were taken on it, in only one of which did the Government secure a majority. Yet the interposition of every form of delay was so successful that Stanley, drawing attention to the unusual and obstinate opposition he had encountered, and to the lateness of the season, prudently withdrew his Bill, promising however to re-introduce it in the next session.

This he accordingly did; but on this occasion the Government attempted a new method of thwarting him. Lord Morpeth introduced a counter proposition, which, while it contained nearly the same provisions as the uncompleted Bill of the previous year, had tacked to it a provision

Failure of  
Morpeth's Irish  
Registration  
Bill.  
April 1841.

intended to make it attractive to the Irish party in the House, and thus to outbid Stanley. This provision was a definition of the franchise, which was, by Lord Morpeth's proposition, to be given to every man rated at £5 to the poor-rate. The outcry against this Bill on the part of the Conservatives was very great. Much had been said by the Government of the finality of the old Reform Bill, and here there appeared to be a distinct alteration and lowering of the franchise. It was urged that the Bill was nothing but a new Reform Bill in disguise. Many of the more conservative Liberals were themselves alarmed at it; and the Government, who appeared really to have no opinion but what was supplied them by others, made no difficulty in raising the proposed franchise to £8. For four nights a bitter discussion was carried on, terminating in the passage of the second reading by a majority of five only. In committee the Government encountered fresh embarrassments. Lord Howick, who had seceded from the Ministry, introduced an amendment of no great importance in itself, but which was carried against Government by a majority of twenty-one. Defeat however produced no result; they accepted the amendment, and proceeded with their measure. Even the final destruction of the Bill, which was thrown out by eleven votes, failed to loosen the hold with which they clung to office.

Defeat of  
Ministry.  
April 26, 1841.

A still more complete defeat was necessary, and room for such a defeat was found in their financial policy. Mr. Spring Rice, who had been Chancellor of the Exchequer since the retirement of Lord Spencer in 1835, was not a careful financier. As a rule, neither the actual receipts nor the expenditure corresponded with his estimates. But he had no doubt laboured under much difficulty; the depression of trade and of agriculture prevalent at the time and the difficulties in Canada had both limited the revenue and increased the expenses. A certain number of taxes had also been taken off, and the result for the last few years had been a constantly increasing deficit. In pursuance of some changes which had taken place in the Ministry in 1839, Mr. Spring Rice had retired from office. Room was found for him in the Upper House as Lord Montague, and Mr. Francis Baring was appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer. The new Chancellor proved no more successful than his predecessor. Though he honestly attempted to meet his difficulties, events had proved too strong for him. Trade did not improve; the Canadian expenses continued; and, in addition, a war had broken out in China.

Financial  
difficulties.

The revenue had also been very largely decreased by the somewhat reckless adoption of a very excellent reform. The condition of the post-office had for some years occupied public attention. The arrangements were in many respects very inconvenient, and in spite or rather perhaps in consequence of the high rates charged, though the trade of the country was increasing the receipts of the department were falling off. The expense of postage pressed heavily upon the poor and on the mercantile classes, an inordinate amount of office-work was required to settle the sum chargeable upon each letter, which varied according to its weight, the distance it had to travel, and the means of carriage to be employed. A great waste of time attended the distribution and rendered frequent deliveries impossible; it was calculated that on an average two minutes were employed in delivering and receiving the payment for each letter in London. Mr. Rowland Hill has the credit of suggesting in a pamphlet a method of removing these inconveniences. He advocated the application to the post-office of a principle which was gradually making its way with regard to taxation, and urged that a low rate of postage would, by the increase of correspondence thus secured, render the post-office more profitable; that a uniform postage would get rid of much useless clerks' work, and that the prepayment of letters would render their distribution easy, and give opportunity for frequent deliveries. His suggestions were adopted, and a uniform prepaid postage of a penny upon the half-ounce substituted for the old rates. Much opposition was offered to the plan. The Postmaster-General pointed out that it would require no less than 480,000,000 letters at the reduced rate to produce the revenue derived from 24,000,000, which was the number then delivered yearly. No apparatus, he declared, could be devised for carrying on so enormous a business, no building would be large enough to contain it. In spite of the threatened diminution of revenue the Government boldly determined to risk the change, and the result in the first year was a loss to the country of £1,000,000. Though the wisdom of making the change at the moment may have been questionable, the soundness of the principle has been thoroughly vindicated. The number of letters has risen to more than three times the figure which caused the despair of Lord Lichfield, not the slightest difficulty has been found in carrying on the business, and the clear revenue derived from the Office is considerably more than £3,000,000.

There already existed a deficit of £2,678,000 on the last three Budgets. If the loss on the post-office should prove to be as great as

was expected, it seemed likely that at the end of 1840 there would be an arrear of nearly £6,000,000. For, while Mr. Baring's Budget. Baring estimated the expenditure of the year 1840-41 May 15, 1840. at £49,432,000, he was afraid to put the income at more than £46,700,000. To meet the alarming deficiency there was no resource according to the existing system of finance but increased taxation; and, as taxes once removed could scarcely be reimposed, the only course left open to the Chancellor of the Exchequer was to suggest that a percentage should be added to the existing taxes. The expedient did not prove successful; the revenue fell short of the

estimate, and at the beginning of the financial year 1841 there proved to be a deficit of not less than £1,800,000. Baring's Budget. May 1841. Nor could the Chancellor of the Exchequer honestly

speak of the coming year except as one of increased expenditure. He estimated his requirements at £50,700,000, and expected at the close to find himself with a deficit of £2,400,000. The want of elasticity in the revenue was capable of easy explanation. The diminution had arisen chiefly on molasses, sugar, wine, spirits, tea, and the post-office. High differential duties restricted the use of the two first articles; the prospect of a commercial treaty with France naturally checked for a time the importation of wine; the extraordinary spread of the temperance movement in Ireland under the influence of Father Mathew explained the diminution of the spirit duties; while the tea-trade was hampered by the war with China; and the new arrangements of the post-office entailed great initial expenses. Under these circumstances, since honest and careful endeavours to balance the Budget on the old system had proved an entire failure, Mr. Baring and his colleagues determined to have recourse to a large application of the Free-trade principle. Two commodities, timber and sugar, especially lent themselves to this treatment. In the case of both of them large differential duties protected Colonial production. While the duty on Colonial timber was 10s. a load, the duty on Baltic timber was 55s. a load; while Colonial sugar paid 24s. a cwt., foreign sugar paid 63s. Baring proposed, in each case, very largely to destroy this difference. With regard to timber, he suggested that the 10s. should be raised to 20s. on Colonial timber; the 55s. reduced to 50s. on Baltic timber. With regard to sugar, while the 24s. a cwt. on Colonial sugar was left unaltered, the duty of 63s. on foreign sugar was to be reduced to 36s. According to the Free-trade view this partial opening of the market would produce such an increase of importation that it would be safe to estimate



the produce of the timber duty at £650,000, and of the sugar duty at £700,000, in advance of their ordinary return.

Even this increase still left a considerable deficit to be made up ; and the Chancellor of the Exchequer intimated that the House need be under no fear as to its inability to supply what was wanted, if a measure was carried which the Government had in contemplation, and which Lord John Russell had already suggested in a motion he had made that the House should form itself into a committee to consider the Corn Laws. As it was plain that without a declaration of Lord John Russell's intention the Budget was imperfect, it became necessary to state that he had in view the substitution of a fixed duty of 8s. a quarter for the existing duties on wheat. The great war with France had proved extraordinarily advantageous to the landlords and farmers ; the price of corn had become enormous, very inferior classes of land had been forced into cultivation, and rents were very high. The Corn Laws adopted since the cessation of the war had been calculated, as far as possible, to continue this prosperity. By the last settlement of these laws in 1828, the duty on corn had been arranged on what was called a sliding-scale—that is to say, it increased as the price of corn declined—with the intention of keeping up the price, and as far as possible equalising it. When wheat was at 64s. a quarter, the duty on importation was 23s. 8d. a quarter ; at 69s. the duty fell to 16s. 8d. ; at 73s. and upwards it became 1s. only. Two evil effects arose from this : the one inherent in all protective duties, the increase of price ; the other connected with the uncertainty of the duty, which either checked the legitimate corn trade by rendering the calculations of traders nugatory, or made it entirely speculative. The good harvests which followed the Reform Bill had allowed interest in the Corn Laws to flag ; but when, in 1837, a cycle of bad years set in, they again rose to great importance, and the merchants and manufacturers, seeing that conditions were changed and that they no longer had so exclusive a command of the trade of the world as had been the case during the war, were no longer willing to bear with indifference the injury which the Corn Laws inflicted on them, and began to clamour for their complete abolition. In 1837 the Anti-Corn Law League sprang into existence in Lancashire. Cheap bread by degrees became a popular demand ; but, as a first instalment, a fixed duty, avoiding at all events some of the present evils, would have been thankfully received.

Russell's proposal on the Corn Laws.

It was a very bold and a very wise Budget ; but it touched on burning

questions, and laid the Government open to assault on several sides.

Attack on  
the Budget.

Before the question of the Corn Laws was brought forward, the Conservatives, headed by Lord Sandon, attacked the alteration in the sugar duties. In this assault the supporters of Protection as an economical system found assistance in the enthusiasm of the slave-trade abolitionists. Not only was the alteration of the differential duties a step towards Free-trade, but it brought the slave-grown sugar of foreign countries into competition with the products of free colonial industry. It was in vain to point out that other slave-grown commodities were not excluded from the English market; that the establishment of commercial friendship with the Brazils might afford a means of checking slavery there; or that so

The Ministry  
defeated.  
May 18, 1841.

much had been done already for the sake of slaves that it was hard to burden the English consumer further for their benefit. The combined influence of party spirit

and philanthropy proved too strong for the Government, and their Budget was rejected. Even this defeat failed to drive the Ministry from office. They determined to risk a dissolution, and to go to the country with the cry of Free-trade and cheap bread. Meanwhile they proceeded as if nothing had happened; brought in the Bill for the sugar duties at the old rates, and fixed the 4th of June for the introduction of the resolutions with regard to the Corn Laws. But Peel and the Conservatives were determined to frustrate the tactics of the Ministry, and to drive them from the offices to which they appeared so attached. He therefore gave notice that he would move a vote of want of confidence on the 27th of May, thus forestalling Lord John Russell's resolutions. Thus, uncommitted with regard to Free-trade, he could point out that the Government, unable to pass any important measure in the Commons, and in a perpetual minority in the Lords, had not the confidence of the nation. At last, in a full House of 624 members, the vote of want of confidence was passed by a majority of one. Such a vote should imply, and has nearly always implied, the immediate resignation of Ministers. But, consistent to the end in their questionable love of office, the Whigs still determined to risk a dissolution. Peel had however known what he was about when he struck the blow. He knew how entirely discredited

Dissolution.  
Fall of Mel-  
bourne's  
Ministry.  
Aug. 30, 1841.

the Ministry was; he knew that the appeal to Free-trade would be regarded merely as a party move. As such it was apparently taken by the nation, and the new elections placed in the hands of the Conservative leader a majority of ninety. The meeting of Parliament was immediately followed by a



fresh declaration of want of confidence, and the Ministry had at length to succumb.

While the weakness of their domestic administration was thus driving the Whigs from office, their foreign policy had met with considerable success. The foreign affairs of <sup>Foreign affairs.</sup> Great Britain, important though they were, had been allowed to fall almost entirely into the management of one man ; and the policy of England, during the Whig Ministry from 1835 onwards, may without exaggeration be spoken of as the policy of Lord Palmerston. The Treaties of Vienna had left Austria, Russia, and Prussia in a position of great power. Their subsequent union in what is called the Holy Alliance was an attempt to make that power paramount over the whole of Europe. The maintenance of their influence required, as they believed, the maintenance of despotic principles of government. Against these principles and this influence England had set its face from the time of Canning. And though the French under the Kings of the Restoration were no lovers or supporters of liberty, the Revolution of July, putting Louis Philippe a popular monarch upon the throne, had naturally brought France into a close community of view with England. Lord Palmerston was the inheritor and earnest supporter of the policy of Canning. In alliance with France, <sup>Palmerston's policy.</sup> he had supported the Queens of Portugal and Spain for the purpose of establishing in those countries constitutional principles, and thus forming an alliance of Western States, freely governed by constitutional monarchs, as a counterpoise to the alliance of the Eastern despots. It was with the same object, or more properly speaking with the object of restraining the overweening ambition of the Czar, the greatest of these three potentates, that he plunged into the intricacies of the Eastern Question. Peaceful in pretension, theoretically a supporter of the principle of non-intervention, his incessant busy activity, his audacity and determination to carry through the plans he had conceived, drove him to intervene frequently in the affairs of other countries, and brought England more than once to the verge of war. But the brilliant success which attended most of his plans, the unquestionable importance which he acquired personally in Europe, and the high position he won for England, secured his pardon for such inconsistency. Disliked and mistrusted by many, attacked by the intrigues of his own colleagues in the Cabinet, he was yet the only member of the Cabinet who, upon the close of the Ministry, could be regarded as having constantly risen in reputation and secured the general approbation of the people.

On the accession of the Queen, the interest of the affairs of Spain and Portugal had nearly come to an end. Although no brilliant success had attended the cause of the constitutional Queens, although the English legion after much useful work had been disbanded in disaster, it was obvious that the despotic party was constantly losing ground. It was plain that the party in favour of constitutional government would be subject for a while to division within itself, to intrigue, and many forms of weakness, but it was certain sooner or later to be triumphant. In the light of subsequent events, perhaps the most important point to be mentioned in the affairs of Spain is the gradual growth of mistrust between the English and French Governments. Palmerston could never bring himself to see that the French were honourably carrying out the principles of the Quadruple Alliance, and conceived a disbelief in the honesty of French professions fruitful of future quarrels. In fact the close approximation to France which had followed upon the events of the years 1830-32 was somewhat unreal; except in the one point, that both countries were in their domestic policy inclined to liberal and constitutional courses, there was no real identity of interest between them. There was no exact opposition in their interests, but each had objects of its own. Almost immediately upon the appearance of difficulties in the East this divergence of view became apparent.

✓ The chief factor at this time in the Eastern Question was Egypt. Mehemet Ali, an Albanian by birth, had, by his ability and determination, raised himself to a position in Egypt which seemed to threaten the Turkish empire. The Treaty of Unkiar-Skelessi (in 1833) had placed Russia in the position of sole defender of the Porte. The gradual advances of Russia, both in Europe and in Asia, had begun to excite the attention of English statesmen. To restrict its further aggrandisement became a chief object of the policy of Lord Palmerston; and, in order to put some obstacle in the way of its advance in Europe, he was determined to withdraw Turkey from its state of dependence—if possible to call the apparently dying empire to fresh life, and to secure its integrity by European guarantees. Mahmoud II., now an old man but still full of vigour, had done much in the way of reconstitution. He had seen the necessity of making Turkey more European in its form of civilisation if it was to be a European power; and Palmerston appears to have had strong hopes that such a course might be successfully pursued and the empire revived. It was in accordance with this view that in 1838 he negotiated a Commercial Treaty which re-

Spain and  
Portugal.

The Eastern  
Question.

Palmerston's  
efforts to  
revivify  
Turkey.

moved some of the chief obstacles to the mercantile intercourse between Turkey and the other nations of Europe. Although treaties existed by which English goods were imported into Turkey on payment of a duty of 3 per cent., and Turkish goods exported at the same rate, practically the imposts laid on trade were so heavy that commerce was nearly impossible. The treaties were kept to the letter at the place of landing and embarkation, but the goods were so loaded with internal duties that the merchants paid often as much as 60 per cent. The influence and skill of Lord Ponsonby, the Minister at Constantinople, and Henry Bulwer, subsequently Lord Dalling, Secretary to the Embassy, were successfully used to obtain a treaty by which, on a certain definite small increase of export and import duties, all internal duties together with monopolies were got rid of. Originally contracted between England and Turkey alone, this arrangement was soon accepted by all the Governments of Europe, even by Russia. As far as commerce went, the exclusiveness of Russian influence was thus broken through, while larger intercourse with Europe was secured to Turkey.

It was probably the fear of Mehemet Ali which induced the Porte to make this concession, for the Viceroy of Egypt, in 1838, had refused to pay his tribute to Turkey, and had taken steps to establish himself as an independent monarch. He also interfered with the administration of the holy cities, thus trenching upon the duties belonging to the Kaliph as Commander of the Faithful. In the spring of 1839 Mahmoud II. determined upon active measures against his rebellious Pasha. He collected a powerful army on the Euphrates, while the Egyptians under Ibrahim Pasha son of Mehemet occupied Syria, having their headquarters at Aleppo. It was the general feeling among European statesmen that if the question was brought to the trial of battle the Egyptians would undoubtedly be victorious; Constantinople would be in danger, the Treaty of Unkiar-Skelessi would come into force, the Russians would be summoned to protect the Porte, while the fleets of France and England would be excluded from the Dardanelles. It was of equal importance, both to France and England, that such a complete triumph of Russian influence should be avoided: and Palmerston at once put himself into communication with M. Molé, the French Prime Minister, for the purpose of concerting measures to prevent it. As early as June 1838 Palmerston had suggested the necessity of a common action with France, a view which in the course of a month appears to have widened into an idea of the

Difficulties  
between  
Turkey and  
Egypt.

Danger to  
Europe from  
Turkish defeat.

joint action of the five great European powers. Could such a co-operation be secured, the separate importance of Russia would be destroyed, and that country would be bound to join in what has subsequently been called the European Concert. It was hoped that such action might prevent war. It did not do so. In June 1839 Mahmoud declared war against the Egyptians, and on the 24th of that month the battle of Nezib was fought and the Turks wholly defeated. Within a few days Mahmoud, a man of considerable ability and strength, died, and was succeeded by his young son, Abdul Medjid. The new Sultan found himself on his accession in a very dangerous situation, rendered worse by the defection, on the 13th of July, of the whole of his fleet, which passed over to the Egyptian Viceroy. The

Success of  
Palmerston's  
negotiations.

negotiations between the courts of Europe had made considerable advance; for, on the 27th of July, the Ambassadors of the five Powers in Constantinople, acting apparently upon orders from home, presented a collective note declaring that the five Powers had agreed to discuss together and settle the Eastern Question; and they accordingly invited the Divan to suspend a definitive arrangement which it was on the point of making, and to confide in the mediating Powers. Even before this, on the 17th of July, Marshal Soult, the French Minister of Foreign Affairs, had issued a circular to the French Ambassadors abroad, stating that a union of Powers was necessary, and Palmerston on the part of England, and Metternich on the part of Austria, had given their unqualified adhesion to this project of united action.

Up to this point the views of France and England were sufficiently similar. To neither was it advantageous that Russia should be exclusive master in Turkish affairs. But from the first M. Molé had made no secret of a possible difference of opinion which might easily arise between the two countries. As long as the efforts of Europe were directed to prevent war, to allow Turkey and Egypt to remain in their existing position, France was well satisfied. But the traditional policy of that country was to maintain, as far as possible, its influence in Egypt. There was a constant uneasy jealousy of England on that point, arising from the supposition that England desired, either by means of influence or by means of actual possession, to secure Egypt as the direct road to India. When therefore war broke out, and the question was no longer the maintenance of the existing position, but the settlement of the terms of peace between Egypt and Turkey, the Governments of France and England began to have different views. To Palmerston it

Difference of  
opinion  
between France  
and England.



appeared that armed interference, for the purpose of re-establishing the integrity of the Turkish Empire as a counterpoise to Russia, was necessary. The French Minister, while allowing that the maintenance of some Mohammedan Power was desirable, thought it better that that Power should be Egypt in the hands of Mehemet Ali, whose ability and success he probably overrated. Consequently at the Conference, France persistently—whether under the government of Soult or of his successor, Thiers—advocated the cause of Mehemet Ali, and urged that he should be established in an hereditary kingdom, including Syria as well as Egypt. The Russian ambassador attended the Conference, and was very reasonable in his demands. His first suggestion was indeed inadmissible. Acknowledging that immediate action was desirable, he proposed that England should confine itself to the Levant, leaving to Russia the protection of Constantinople and the Dardanelles. In accepting Palmerston's view in preference to that of France, the Russian Government no doubt wished to foment the differences which were arising between the two western countries. It was, as has been seen, their junction which had thwarted in the west of Europe the objects of the Holy Alliance. By suggesting the division of work just mentioned, it hoped at the same time to render the Powers of Europe practically partners in the great Treaty of Unkiar-Skelessi, by leading them to give their consent to the sole action of Russia. But Palmerston saw through this design, and insisted that if Russian ships entered the Sea of Marmora the ships of other countries should do so likewise. These terms the Russians accepted, and the concert of four of the Powers was therefore perfect. France, meanwhile, was not only trying to press the claims of Egypt in the Conference, but was establishing independent negotiations with Mehemet. Weary of waiting, Palmerston at length, having heard of this action on the part of France, and having freed his connection with Russia from danger, suddenly contracted on the 15th July 1840 a Convention with the three other Powers for armed interference in the Eastern Question, thus leaving France isolated and without allies. Anger in France had been long simmering; the news of the Convention produced an ebullition of fury. Though Louis Philippe was at heart thoroughly peaceful, he was obliged to give some show of yielding to the wishes of his ministers, and the country rang with preparations for war.

Palmerston's  
Convention of  
July 1840.

The ultimatum of the Powers was despatched to Mehemet Ali. He was offered the Pashalic of Egypt and of Acre for life; but if the

terms were not accepted within ten days he was to be offered Egypt alone. If he still persisted the Powers would use force. Trusting no doubt that France would help him, he refused the ultimatum, and tried direct negotiations with the Porte. That court went beyond the intentions of the Powers ; it not only refused to negotiate, but declared the deposition of the Pasha. French anger rose still higher at this. Palmerston was able to clear himself of all complicity in the action of Turkey, but in continuation of his former policy, at the expiration of the given time at once proceeded to war. Admiral Stopford, in command of the English ships and some Austrian frigates (an emblem of union with Austria rather than a real support), bombarded Beyrout, and drove out the Egyptian troops. Commodore Napier stormed Sidon, landed forces, and defeated Ibrahim Pasha in the mountains of Lebanon. The strength of the Viceroy, on which France had relied, was evidently crumbling away. A final blow was given to it when the fortress of St. Jean d'Acre—held to be impregnable, and which indeed Napolcon himself had been unable to take—was captured by the British fleet after a bombardment of three hours. Single-handed, and without the aid of Russia, whose fleet had remained quiescent at Sebastopol, England had proved sufficient to save Turkey and destroy the overrated power of Egypt.

The policy of Palmerston had been open to assault on all sides. He was charged with undue meddling, and with risking with very inadequate means the chances of war. His own colleagues, disciples of Fox, were indignant at anything which would slacken the friendship with France, which was a part of their political creed. It was urged that he was recklessly driving England not only to quarrel but actually to fight with France. But the Foreign Secretary had gifts which carried him successfully through the difficult time ; he knew his own mind thoroughly ; he entirely disbelieved (and as it proved correctly) in the strength of Egypt ; he was characterised by a rare pertinacity and courage. It remained to be seen how far he had been correct in his estimation of the warlike energy of France. Here again his forecast proved true. Again and again in his despatches he had declared his certainty that the French King would insist upon peace ; and when the critical time arrived, when, after the fall of Acre, Thiers full of warlike fury attempted to drag Louis Philippe with him, and called for the completion of the armament and the equipment of a large fleet, it appeared that Palmerston had not trusted in vain to the King. Louis Philippe refused to listen

Defeat of  
Egypt.  
Nov. 1840.

Triumph of  
Palmerston.



to his ministers' demands, and the government of Thiers fell. His place was taken by Guizot, who entered upon office pledged to maintain peace, and able to oppose to the assaults of his enemies the unanswerable argument that, the fall of Mehemet Ali being already an accomplished fact, true wisdom lay in making the best of existing circumstances. It was subsequently proved that Palmerston was as correct in his mistrust of the late French Ministry as in his estimate of the French King. A discussion which followed the fall of Thiers disclosed the intention of that minister to seize the Balearic Islands, and, had he not been forestalled by the fall of Acre, to support the Egyptian Viceroy against England. The fall of Acre had taken place in November; little more than a month elapsed before Mehemet Ali was completely reduced to submission. On January 1, 1841, he restored the Turkish fleet to the Sultan, and in the following month he received a firman of investiture, securing to him the government of Egypt upon certain conditions implying his dependence on the Porte. A triumphant close was put to the diplomacy of Palmerston by a Treaty in July 1841, by which the Dardanelles were closed to ships of war belonging to any of the five Powers, and Turkey was formally put under the general protection of Europe. The admission of France to this Treaty served as a means of reconciliation with that country, while Turkey was withdrawn from its dangerous dependence upon Russia alone.

But the difficulties in the east of Europe were by no means the only field of Palmerston's action. On December 8, 1840, he wrote to our Ambassador in Paris: "This day has brought us a flight of good news—Mehemet's submission, Dost Mohamed's defeat, and the occupation of Chusan." In the far East, as well as upon the shores of the Black Sea, the influence of Russia had to be checked. Slowly, but with certainty, the Czar had been extending his influence over Central Asia; our statesmen, both at home and in India, began to dread the time when his advance might threaten our Indian Empire. According to its usual habit, it was by influence rather than by force that the Russian Government was intent upon making its way; and as in Turkey, so in Persia, its agents were engaged in a diplomatic battle with their English rivals. The Shah of Persia had been placed on his throne by English aid; English officers were employed in drilling his army. But, in spite of this, the greatness of Russia and its near neighbourhood led the Shah to prefer her alliance to that of England; and the Russian envoy was able so to excite and direct this ambition as to carry on the designs

Danger of  
Russian  
advance in  
Asia.

of his own country by means of Persian arms. The English dominion had not yet passed the Sutlej. The Punjab still owned the sway of Runjeet Singh, the founder of the Sikh Empire, and a firm friend of England. But the interposition of this power was not regarded as a sufficient safeguard to British India; it was supposed that Afghanistan, the mountainous country lying between the Punjab and Persia, was the really efficient obstacle in the way of Russian advance; and it became a matter of paramount policy to secure the English position there. The country at this time was broken into three principalities, the most important of which was that of Cabul, owning the sovereignty of Dost Mohamed. Under the dynasty of the Suddozys it had been a united empire, which by its threatening power had caused some alarm to the English. At that time, under the rule of Zemaun Shah, it had reached from Herat to Cashmere, and included a portion of Sindh below the mountains. But a domestic revolution had removed this dynasty. Zemaun Shah and his brother, Shah Soojah, had fled and taken refuge with the English. Cashmere and Peshawur had fallen to the Sikhs; the Ameers of Sindh had asserted their independence; and the family of the Barrukzyes—of which Futteh Khan was the founder, and his brother, Dost Mohamed, the chief representative—ruled what remained of the empire in the two principalities of Cabul and Candahar, while the city and district of Herat still remained in the hands of a Suddozye prince of the name of Kamran.

It was towards this broken sovereignty that the eyes both of Russia and of England were directed, and it was without much difficulty that Simonich, the Russian envoy, persuaded the Persian Shah to advance against Herat. Herat commands the only pass through which a fully equipped army can well advance into India from the north-west; there are no important obstacles between it and Candahar, from whence through Quetta and the Bolan Pass a force may reach the plains of the Indus. It seemed necessary to the English to preserve Herat. Yet, as it was in the hands of a Suddozye prince, it appeared likely that Dost Mohamed of Cabul, and his brothers of Candahar, might be easily persuaded to join a Persian assault upon this last remnant of the hostile dynasty. To prevent the realisation of this possibility, and to save Herat, was the first object of the English Government in India. And for this purpose Captain Burnes was sent upon an embassy—ostensibly commercial, but really of a political character—to the Court of Dost Mohamed. At first the Ameer, a man of many high and noble quali-

Herat besieged  
by Russia and  
Persia.

ties, showed every wish to continue close fricuds with the English; while receiving Burnes with much cordiality, he kept a Russian agent who had appeared in his country at arm's-length. But he demanded something in exchange for his friendship. The restoration of Peshawur by the Sikhs would have satisfied him, while his brothers of Candahar might have been won over by a promise of pecuniary aid. But Burnes was not authorised to give anything. All the advantage was apparently to come to the English; and Dost Mohamed was asked to exclude all foreign agents and to admit an English resident, while receiving in exchange nothing but empty promises of friendship. It was not to be expected that so one-sided an arrangement could withstand the more tangible advantages freely promised by the Russian envoy. He was no longer excluded from the Court, and it became gradually evident that the influence of the English was on the wane. Meanwhile, however, the Persian assault upon Herat had been thwarted. Aided by the skill and bravery of Major Pottinger, an English officer, Kamran and his ministers made a long defence; and at length the formal withdrawal of the English envoy from the Court of the Shah, and the appearance of a small force in the Persian Gulf, induced the Persians to raise the siege, and Herat was saved.

Failure of  
Burnes's  
Embassy  
to Dost  
Mohamed.

But although the main object of English diplomacy had been thus obtained, Lord Auckland and his advisers—not satisfied with leaving things alone, and angered by the change of attitude perceptible in Dost Mohamed's conduct—determined that the safety of India required the establishment of a friendly or rather a dependent sovereign in Afghanistan, and saw in their pensioner the exiled Suddozye Prince, Shah Soojah, an instrument ready for their project. To approach Afghanistan it was necessary to secure the friendship of the Sikhs, who were, indeed, ready enough to join against their old enemies; and a threefold treaty was contracted between Runjeet Singh, the English, and Shah Soojah for the restoration of the banished house. The expedition—which according to the original intention was to have been carried out chiefly by means of troops in the pay of Shah Soojah and the Sikhs—rapidly grew into an English invasion of Afghanistan. A considerable force was gathered on the Sikh frontier from Bengal; a second army, under General Keane, was to come up from Kurrachee through Sindh. Both of these armies, and the troops of Shah Soojah, were to enter the highlands of Afghanistan by the Bolan Pass. As the Sikhs would not willingly allow the free passage

Expedition  
to depose  
Dost Mohamed.

of our troops through their country, an additional burden was laid upon the armies,—the independent Amcers of Sindh had to be coerced. At length, with much trouble from the difficulties of the country and the loss of the commissariat animals, the forces were all collected under the command of Keane beyond the passes. The want of food permitted of no delay; the army pushed on to Candahar. Shah Soojah was declared Monarch of the southern Principality. Thence the troops moved rapidly onwards towards the more important and difficult conquest of Cabul. Ghuznee, a fortress of great strength, lay in the way. In their hasty movements the English had left their battering train behind, but the gates of the fortress were blown in with gunpowder, and by a brilliant feat of arms the fortress was stormed. Nor did the English army encounter any important resistance subsequently. Dost Mohamed found his followers deserting him, and withdrew northwards into the mountains of the Hindoo Koosh. With all the splendour that could be collected, Shah Soojah was brought back to his throne in the Bala Hissar, the fortress Palace of Cabul.

Regardless of the wishes of a people, in the fond belief that there was no feeling of nationality among the Afghans, and forgetful of the religious horror likely to be excited by a king whose power rested upon infidel bayonets, the English had succeeded in placing their nominee on the throne. For the moment the policy seemed thoroughly successful. The English Ministry could feel that a fresh check had been placed upon its Russian rival, and no one dreamt of the terrible retribution that was in store for the unjust violence done to the feelings of a people. Yet even now, far-sighted statesmen (such as the Duke of Wellington) were pointing out that the difficulty of England would only begin when the military operations ceased. Their success seemed complete, when, as a consequence of some operations in the mountainous country to the north, Dost Mohamed thought it prudent to surrender himself to the English envoy, Sir William Macnaghten, and to withdraw with his family to the English provinces of Hindostan. He was there well received and treated with liberality; for, as both the Governor-General and his chief adviser Macnaghten felt, he had not in fact in any way offended us, but had fallen a victim to our policy.

Apparent  
success.

Dost Mahomed  
withdraws to  
India.  
Nov. 12, 1840.

It was in the full belief that their policy in India had been crowned with permanent success that the Whig Ministers withdrew from office, leaving their successors to encounter the terrible results to



which it led. For while the English officials were blindly congratulating themselves upon the happy completion of their enterprise, to an observant eye signs of approaching difficulty were on all sides visible. When the character of the Afghan people is remembered, it must be seen that it could scarcely be otherwise. The mixed population was not only of different races, but was broken up, as highland countries frequently are, among various tribes with conflicting interests. The removal of the strong rule of the Barrukzyes opened a door for undefined hopes to many of the other families and tribes. The whole country was full of intrigues and of diplomatic bargaining, carried on by the English political agents with the various chiefs and leaders. But they soon found that the hopes excited by these negotiations were illusory. The allowances for which they had bargained were reduced, for the English envoy began to be disquieted at the vast expenses of the Government. They did not find that they derived any advantages from the establishment of the new puppet King, Soojah Dowlah; and every Mahomedan, even the very king himself, felt disgraced at the predominance of the English infidels. But as no actual insurrection broke out, Maenaghten, a man of sanguine temperament and anxious to believe what he wished, in spite of unmistakable warnings as to the real feeling of the people, clung with almost angry vehemence to the persuasion that all was going well, and that the new King had a real hold upon the people's affection. So completely had he deceived himself on this point, that he had decided to send back a portion of the English army, under General Sale, into Hindostan. He even intended to accompany it himself to enjoy the peaceful post of Governor of Bombay, with which his successful policy had been rewarded. His place was to be taken by Sir Alexander Burnes, whose view of the troubled condition of the country underlying the comparative calm of the surface was much truer than that of Maenaghten, but who, perhaps from that very fact, was far less popular among the chiefs. The army which was to remain at Candahar was under the command of General Nott, an able and decided if somewhat irascible man. But General Elphinstone, the commander of the troops at Cabul, was of quite a different stamp. He was much respected and liked for his honourable character and social qualities, but was advanced in years, a confirmed invalid, and wholly wanting in the vigour and decision which his critical position was likely to require.

False confidence  
of the English  
at Cabul.

The fool's paradise with which the English Envoy had surrounded

himself was rudely destroyed. He had persuaded himself that the frequently recurring disturbances, and especially the insurrection of the Ghilzyes between Cabul and Jellalabad, were mere local outbreaks. But in fact a great conspiracy was on foot in which the chiefs of nearly every important tribe in the country were implicated. On the evening of the 1st of November a meeting of the chiefs was held, and it was decided that an immediate attack should be made on the house of Sir Alexander Burnes. The following morning an angry crowd of assailants stormed the houses of Sir Alexander Burnes and Captain Johnson, murdering the inmates, and rifling the treasure-chests belonging to Soojah Dowlah's army. Soon the whole city was in wild insurrection. The evidence is nearly irresistible that a little decision and rapidity of action on the part of the military would have at once crushed the outbreak. But although the attack on Burnes's house was known, no troops were sent to his assistance. Indeed, that unbroken course of folly and mismanagement which marked the conduct of our military affairs throughout this crisis had already begun. Instead of occupying the fortress of the Bala Hissar, where the army would have been in comparative security, Elphinstone had placed his troops in cantonments far too extensive to be properly defended, surrounded by an entrenchment of the most insignificant character, commanded on almost all sides by higher ground. To complete the unfitness of the position, the commissariat supplies were not stored within the cantonments, but were placed in an isolated fort at some little distance. An ill-sustained and futile assault was made upon the town on the 3d of November, but from that time onwards the British troops lay with incomprehensible supineness awaiting their fate in their defenceless position. The commissariat fort soon fell into the hands of the enemy and rendered their situation still more deplorable. Some flashes of bravery now and then lighted up the sombre scene of helpless misfortune, and served to show that destruction might even yet have been averted by a little firmness. The energy of individual officers in securing food repaired to some extent the terrible loss of the commissariat fort.

But the commander had already begun to despair, and before many days had passed he was thinking of making terms with the enemy. Macnaghten had no course open to him under such circumstances but to adopt the suggestion of the general, and attempt as well as he could by bribes, cajolery, and intrigue, to divide the chiefs and secure a safe retreat for the English. Akbar Khan, the son of Dost Mohamed,



though not present at the beginning of the insurrection, had arrived from the northern mountains, and at once asserted a pre-dominant influence in the insurgent councils. With him and with the other insurgent chiefs Macnaghten entered into an arrangement by which he promised to withdraw the English entirely from the country if a safe passage were secured for the army through the passes. But not unnaturally he felt bitterly the want of energy displayed by the military commanders, of whom he allowed himself to speak as "despicable cowards." It was only after many suggestions of a bolder and more worthy line of conduct that he had brought himself to treat; and the blow to his self-respect in the total and disgraceful annihilation of a line of policy of which he had been the chief author appears to have made him almost reckless. While ostensibly treating with the Barrukzye chiefs, he intrigued on all sides with the rival tribes. His double dealing was taken advantage of by Akbar Khan. He sent messengers to Macnaghten proposing that the English should make a separate treaty with himself and support him with their troops in an assault upon some of his rivals. The proposition was a mere trap, and the envoy fell into it. Ordering troops to be got ready, he hurried to a meeting with Akbar to complete the arrangement. There he found himself in the presence of the brother and relatives of the very men against whom he was plotting, and was seized and murdered by Akbar's own hand.

Negotiations  
for retreat.

Murder of  
Macnaghten  
Dec. 23.

Still the General thought of nothing but surrender. The negotiations were entrusted to Major Pottinger. The terms of the chiefs gradually rose, and at length with much confusion the wretched army marched out of the cantonments, leaving behind nearly all the cannon and superfluous military stores. An Afghan escort to secure the safety of the troops on their perilous journey had been promised, but the promise was not kept. The horrors of the retreat form one of the darkest passages in English military history. In bitter cold and snow, which took all life out of the wretched Sepoys, without proper clothing or shelter, and hampered by a disorderly mass of thousands of camp-followers, the army entered the terrible defiles which lie between Cabul and Jellalabad. Whether Akbar Khan could, had he wished it, have restrained his fanatical followers is uncertain. As a fact the retiring crowd—it can scarcely be called an army—was a mere unresisting prey to the assaults of the mountaineers. Constant communication was kept up with Akbar; on the third day all the ladies and children with the married men were placed in his hands, and finally even the two generals gave themselves up as hostages, always in the hope that the remnant of the

Retreat from  
Cabul.  
Jan. 6, 1842.

army might be allowed to escape. All humiliations were in vain. Of the whole retreating mass, consisting of 4,500 troops, and 12,000 camp followers, one single man survived to reach Jellalabad, on the 13th of January. He there found safety, for Sir Robert Sale had refused to obey the order to withdraw which Macnaghten had sent him at the beginning of the negotiations. The little garrison had re-established the fortifications and defended themselves against the enemy which had crowded round them. They thus still occupied an advanced position of

**Conduct of the  
garrisons of  
Jellalabad and  
Candahar.**

incalculable value in view of the return of the English forces from Cabul. Similarly, at Candahar in the south, General Nott had kept a firm hold of his position. He too had disregarded the order sent him to withdraw, and in spite of the insurrection which was spreading all around him, and in spite of the failure of Brigadier England to relieve him, had resolutely maintained his ground.

It remained to the Supreme Government of India to decide to what use these advanced forces should be put, whether there should be a complete and instant withdrawal—a disastrous confession of the folly and impotence of the late attempt to establish English influence at Cabul—or a fresh expedition, not indeed with the intention of carrying out the former policy which was now condemned on all sides, but to vindicate the honour of the English arms, and to re-establish that prestige on which our position in the East so largely depended. The moment was particularly critical; a change of Ministry had taken place at home, and a change of governors at Calcutta. Lord Auckland had been succeeded by Lord Ellenborough. But before the arrival of the new governor it was upon Lord Auckland that the responsibility of acting still rested. Feeling that the new Ministry disapproved of the policy he had pursued, and of which he himself now repented, and honestly desirous to do nothing which might compromise the action of his successor, the Governor-General acted almost of necessity without decision or vigour. On the receipt of the news of the revolt and of the difficulties of the Cabul force, he began to think of nothing short of an entire withdrawal from Afghanistan. The terrible tidings of the massacre in the passes roused him for a moment, and induced him to write a general order which spoke of the necessity of chastisement and reconquest; but almost immediately after he seems to have fallen back to his old despairing view that the most that could be done was to bring off the garrisons and concentrate the force on the Indian side of the passes in the neighbourhood of Peshawur. The Commander-in-Chief, Sir Jasper Nicholls, went even further in his views with regard to the necessity of withdrawal. He had disliked the expedition

**Auckland's  
Policy.**

from the first, and trembled for the safety of our Indian Provinces if further denuded of soldiery. Neither of the chief authorities appears to have participated in the general feeling of the more active and experienced members of the Civil and Political Service, that our position in India was more likely to be jeopardised by a disastrous confession of weakness in Afghanistan than by anything else.

The eager efforts of the local administration, and the Governor-General's wish that an army of some strength should be collected at Peshawur, worked together at all events so far, that troops began to assemble in that neighbourhood, and that an able and steady officer, General George Pollock, was placed in command. It was not however till the 5th of February that the new general took over his command. Already, before that time, an inefficient and disastrous attempt had been made, under Brigadier Wild, to force the Khyber Pass; and it was to an army thoroughly dispirited, robbed of nearly half its numbers by sickness, and tied to Sikh allies on the verge of mutiny, that Pollock came. To move at once was out of the question. Eager as he must have been to push on to restore the honour of English arms, and to save the hard-pressed garrison which, under Sir Robert Sale, was making so gallant a resistance at Jellalabad, Pollock had firmness enough to resist all temptations and all pressure till he had restored the temper and health of his army, and received reinforcements sufficient to make its success tolerably certain. It was not till the beginning of April that he felt justified in moving.

Pollock at  
Peshawur.  
Feb. 1842.

Meanwhile, ever since the 15th of November 1841, Sir Robert Sale had been holding his own in Jellalabad. The history of the siege shows a succession of momentous decisions, an unbroken course of energetic and successful action. In the first place it was decided—and the propriety of this is, perhaps, alone open to question—that it was impossible to advance with success to the rescue of the Cabul troops. It was then determined to occupy the whole of the town, and not the citadel only, though the walls were almost useless, and built in among houses and enclosures affording abundance of shelter to an attacking force. The first work was to clear and remodel the defences. The work was almost completed when a terrible earthquake demolished a large portion of it, and it had to be done all over again. More than a hundred shocks are said to have been felt during the winter. But after the position had been secured, there arose the still more difficult question as to whether the orders received from Macnaghten to withdraw were to be obeyed or not. After long and stormy discussions, and almost in spite of the general's own wishes, the bolder counsel prevailed, and on the 26th of January the great

Sale in  
Jellalabad.

decision was arrived at that the town should be held. The anarchy prevailing in Cabul, the murder of Shah Soojah (April 5), and the political necessities of the time no doubt somewhat slackened the efforts of Akbar against the town. The garrison became more and more confident; successful skirmishes, sorties, and foraging expeditions kept up their spirits and supplied their commissariat; and when—as Pollock still delayed, and rumours were spread that his efforts were unsuccessful—in the beginning of April Akbar Khan came down upon the town in force, the garrison found itself strong enough to act without assistance, and to fight and win a pitched battle with its assailants. It was no beaten and starving remnant, but a well-supplied, victorious, and confident body of troops, that welcomed the arrival of General Pollock. By soldierly arrangements, by occupying the heights on either side, and thus turning the flank of any important opposition, he had forced his way through the dangerous passes, and on the 16th of April joined hands with Sale.

Difficulties of the same character as those which Sale had encountered had come upon Nott at Candahar. Around that town also the insurgents had swarmed. Nott also had thought of assisting the Cabul army, he had even despatched a force in November for its relief under Colonel Maclaren. But probably, even when despatching it, he was conscious that it could be of no use; the advance was not very warmly pressed, and Maclaren returned. General Nott too had received orders to withdraw and had refused to comply. In January he had won a victory over the insurgents; in March he had led out his army again, leaving as he believed the city in safety behind him; but the enemy slipped round his flank, and a desperate attack was made upon the Herat gate of the city. It was however unsuccessful, and Nott on his return was able thoroughly to secure his position. To the Candahar garrison too reinforcements had been sent from Quetta only to be beaten back, while the capture of Ghuznee (March 6), the surrender of the officers, and the general massacre of nearly the whole of the British troops which had garrisoned the place, formed a sort of counterpart to the horrors of the retreat from Cabul.

It still remained to be decided by the new Governor-General whether the garrisons of Candahar and Jellalabad, now that their safety was secured, were to be merely withdrawn from Afghanistan or to be previously used in some forward movement. Lord Ellenborough had come out with peaceful intentions. Left to himself he would probably have merely withdrawn the troops, but the feeling of the English in India, roused especially by the recollection that many officers and ladies were still

Nott at  
Candahar.

The two  
garrisons  
ordered to  
retire through  
Cabul.



captives in the hands of Akbar Khan, was too strong for him. He hit upon the somewhat strange plan of adhering to his determination to withdraw the troops, but instructing them to retire through Cabul. He also thought it wise to direct General Nott on his approach to Ghuznee to take from the reputed tomb of Sultan Mahmoud the gates of Somnauth, or what were traditionally so considered, which that conqueror had carried off from India about the year 1020, and to bring them back with him as a trophy. These arrangements were followed out, and in the earlier part of August General Nott left Candahar. About a week later Pollock, having with some difficulty opened correspondence with Candahar, and being assured of the co-operation of the army there, set out from Jellalabad. The two armies were thus at once moving upon Cabul. Both of them encountered resistance. On the south-west Ghuznee was indeed evacuated in the night; but between that town and Cabul the Pass of Mydan was occupied, and bravely defended by two of the Afghan chiefs; and the resistance would probably have been even more severe had not news been brought that Pollock on the other side had won a great victory over Akbar at Tezeen. The difficulties of the approach to Cabul from the east are very great. The gorges among the hills which have to be passed are in some places not more than from six to ten feet broad. The road, just beyond the valley of Tezeen, crosses seven ridges known as the Huft Cotal, to the left of the pass. In the valley of Tezeen, before entering upon this passage, Akbar Khan having occupied the heights gave battle to the English. The greater part of the day the battle continued; but at length the Huft Cotal was surmounted, and the enemy entirely routed. The success was decisive; and when the Candahar troops arrived at Cabul on the 17th, they found Pollock already encamped upon the race-course. A part of the long time during which Pollock had been obliged to delay at Jellalabad had been employed in negotiations for the release of the prisoners, those ladies and officers who had been surrendered upon the retreat from Cabul. They had been on the whole well treated. Moved about from fort to fort, they had lately been residing with some comfort in the immediate neighbourhood of Cabul. The negotiations for their liberation had however failed; and before Akbar had advanced to Tezeen he had hurried them away to the mountain district of Bamean, with the intention of placing them for security among the Usbegs of the Afghan frontier. To rescue them was the first duty of the English upon their success. Sir Richmond

Successful  
 arrival at  
 Cabul.  
 Sep. 15 and 17,  
 1842.

Rescue of the  
 prisoners.  
 Sep. 17.

Shakespear, with a detachment of irregular horse, was despatched at



once to Bamean, followed by a more regularly organised detachment in support, the command of which was given to Sir Robert Sale, whose wife was among the prisoners. Shakespear had not to go to Bamean. The prisoners had effected their own escape, and met him on his way. They had succeeded in purchasing the friendship of the leader of their escort, who with his followers deserted the national cause, and was accompanying them to Cabul when Shakespear met them.

It remained for the English generals, according to the instructions from the Governor-General, to leave some mark of their power in Afghanistan. A force under M'Caskill was pushed up northwards, where there seemed a chance of some further opposition. The town of Istaliff was taken and partly destroyed, and a good deal of destruction wrought, especially among the fruit-trees. In Cabul itself the great bazaar, the chief architectural monument of the place, was blown up with gunpowder, and—though without sanction from the generals—the soldiery, naturally excited by the signs of the late terrible catastrophe which they frequently encountered, did much damage to the city. Upon the whole however considering the provocation the amount of destruction whether in Cabul itself or upon the march was not very great. According to the policy which Lord Ellenborough

Withdrawal of  
the English.  
Oct. 11.

was adopting the armies had now only to withdraw, and a short time saw them clear of the dangerous passes and safely collected in the plains below. The policy of the

Return of Dost  
Mahomed to  
Cabul.  
Feb. 1843

late governor-general was acknowledged to have been wholly wrong; Afghanistan was left to itself, free to choose its own governor, and as a necessary consequence Dost Mahomed was liberated from India, and before long found means to seat himself afresh upon the throne of Cabul. Lord Ellenborough, who seems to have had a turn for theatrical ceremonies, received the returning armies at a splendid meeting at Ferozepore, and issued a bombastic address, entrusting the gates of Somnauth to the chiefs of Sirhind in what the Duke of Wellington stigmatised as a "song of triumph." "Brothers and friends," he said, "the insult of eight hundred years is at length avenged, the gates of the temple of Somnauth, so long the memorial of your humiliation, are become the proudest record of your national glory, the proof of your superiority in arms over the nations beyond the Indus." He did not see that in speaking of his friends and brothers he was addressing Mahomedans and Hindoos alike; that to the Mahomedans the restoration of the gates was an open insult, and that the polluted trophies of a Mahomedan temple were of little or no value to the Hindoos. The address served only to cover the Governor-General

with ridicule. Yet on the whole the right thing had been done, and the attempt at direct influence in Afghanistan, which could scarcely lead to anything except either disaster or annexation, was given up. The sounder view that the cultivation of the friendship of the native rulers formed the surest means of preserving the difficult and mountainous territory as an intervening obstacle between the Russian and English empires was henceforward for many years accepted. At the same time the late military operations, though they had no doubt rendered the securing of that friendship a work of time, had vindicated the superiority of our arms.

End of the  
Afghan War.  
Dec. 1842.

The third point on which Lord Palmerston had congratulated himself was the capture of Chusan. Though the affairs of China can scarcely be reckoned as a part of his general policy, they were closely connected with that exaggerated view of the importance of English interests which is its chief characteristic. It may be an open question how far a nation has a right to close its doors against all strangers, and to deprive both itself and the world of the advantages of commercial intercourse. It is not perhaps to be expected that a great civilised nation will calmly put up with a self-complacent assertion of superiority on the part of a people whom it regards as half barbaric. Yet, in spite of every protest, in spite of every form of local and municipal opposition, to force a people to accept and purchase largely a noxious and poisonous drug, from the miserable effects of which the government is anxious to preserve its subjects, can scarcely be defended even by the plea of British interests. Yet such appears to have been the conduct of the English government in what is known as the opium war. Unfortunately in the course of the dispute the Chinese put themselves in the wrong. The insulting language and high-handed conduct of their officials afforded plausible ground for the prosecution of a quarrel in itself unjustifiable, and the original cause of dispute was hidden under the secondary questions which arose from it.

The opium war.

The consistent policy of China was one of isolation. Had it been possible it would have avoided even mercantile intercourse with the outside world ; against the establishment of diplomatic relations with foreign powers it steadfastly set its face. It had found it impossible entirely to exclude commerce ; and trade had sprung up chiefly in the hands of a body of foreign traders in Canton, known as the Hong merchants. Entrance to the city itself was forbidden, except to a few licensed traders occupying factories ; it was in the estuary of the river that the foreign ships lay ; the forts of the Bocca Tigris or Boguc guarded the approaches to the city. Up to 1834 the English share of

this restricted commerce had been in the hands of the East India Company, and side by side with the legitimate trade had arisen a considerable traffic in opium, the importation of which was forbidden by the Chinese Government. In the hands of a large and responsible corporation such as the East India Company, both the legitimate and illegitimate trade had been kept under reasonable management. But when the destruction of its monopoly induced the Company to withdraw altogether from the Chinese trade, and when, in the hands of individual speculators, opium smuggling largely increased, the English Government thought it necessary to appoint official superintendents to regulate the commerce, and if possible to put some check upon the contraband trade. That these superintendents were the agents of a foreign government was however sufficient to set the Chinese authorities against them, and they were subjected to treatment to which the representatives of a great power could scarcely submit. Arrangements for the admission of legitimate business, and for the exclusion or regulation of illicit trade became impossible. The Chinese adopted therefore the summary method of entirely closing all trade with England. This produced the first collision between the nations. Lord Napier, the superintendent, summoned a naval force to his aid, silenced the Bogue forts, and compelled the government of Canton to consent to the re-establishment of commercial relations. For several years matters continued in a dangerous and unsettled state. The Chinese, insisting that the direction of the English trade should be entrusted to a superintendent who should not be a Government official, encountered the equally firm determination of the English Government to be recognised, and to refuse any negotiations except through their proper representatives. Almost as a matter of course things went from bad to worse. The opium smuggling increased ; it began to extend along the coast of China ; it found its way up the Canton river itself. The English Government with culpable negligence took no notice of the rising difficulties, till in July 1838 it became necessary again to send two English ships to the river, and again to demand satisfaction from the Canton mandarins.

Increase of  
opium  
smuggling.

At length the Chinese Government, alarmed perhaps by the drain of silver which the opium trade was creating, and not unnaturally much irritated at the unrestrained infraction of their revenue laws, determined upon strong measures. A Chinese commissioner of the name of Lin was appointed, and armed with full powers for the suppression of smuggling. He acted with vigour, and demanded that English traders should enter into a bond, pledging them under

penalty of forfeiture of goods and even of death that they would not henceforth import opium. He insisted by a show of force (to which Captain Elliott, the superintendent, was obliged for the time to yield) upon the surrender and destruction of all the opium, amounting to upwards of 20,000 chests, at that time on board the ships in the river. But Captain Elliot seems to have arrived at the conclusion that it was inconsistent with the position of England and destructive of the entire trade with China to put up with such violent treatment. He summoned to his aid a considerable fleet from India. Outbreak of the war. Before its arrival fresh causes of dispute had arisen. A Chinese fleet had been roughly handled by two English frigates; an English vessel called "The Black Joke" had been taken and destroyed by Chinese pirates; a Chinaman had been murdered in a scuffle at Macao; the murderer, when demanded by the Chinese authorities, had been refused; and just as the English squadron began to arrive a formidable effort was made to burn all the English shipping in the river by means of fire-ships. The countries had practically drifted into war. Commodore Brewer upon his arrival declared Canton in a state of blockade, but thinking that the power of England would be more effectually displayed by larger operations passed northward and inflicted a heavy blow upon the self-sufficiency of the Chinese by capturing Capture of Chusan. July 5, 1840. and occupying a portion of their empire, the island of Chusan. The victorious fleet then proceeded to the mouth of the Pekin river in order to insist upon direct negotiations with the Chinese court. The negotiations were however on the 10th of September transferred to Canton, and here, withdrawn from the immediate pressure of the English fleet, the Chinese Commissioners interposed much delay. It was only under threat of renewed hostilities on the part of Commodore Brewer that a preliminary arrangement was arrived at on the 20th of January.

The treaty was in itself satisfactory enough, but as it had been contracted without the actual application of force the Chinese were able to regard it as an act of concession on their part; and the English government, knowing the self-asserting character of the people with whom they had to deal, saw a danger of renewed insults and renewed hostility. They therefore disallowed the treaty and sent out Sir Henry Pottinger to supersede Elliot as plenipotentiary. The dissatisfaction of the English Ministry was justified. The Chinese appear to have had no intention of fulfilling their engagements. A month had scarcely elapsed since the signature of the treaty, when an assault upon an English boat rendered it necessary to destroy the Bogue forts, and to bring the fleet up to the very walls

Preliminary treaty. Jan. 1841.



of Canton. Further action was for a while delayed till full proof could be obtained as to the hostile disposition of the Chinese. But when it was ascertained that the authorities of Peking had disowned the action of their plenipotentiaries, when a violent and insulting edict stigmatising the English as dogs and sheep had been issued, and when the continued arrival of fresh troops made it evident that war was intended, the general, Sir Hugh Gough, delayed no longer. He landed a force and attacked the walls of the city. Successful in his preliminary operations, he had ordered a final assault to be made

Attack on  
Canton.  
Aug. 1841.

within an hour, when the crisis was again averted by offers of negotiation. It was in the midst of this unsatisfactory state of things—constantly recurring war not pushed to a conclusion and preliminary negotiations the ratification of which was refused—that Sir Henry Pottinger arrived on the 9th of August.

The change of Ministry which occurred at this time did not alter the course pursued by England. Although the primary object of Pottinger's mission was to procure an advantageous treaty, it was evident that to reach this end a further display of force would be required. As on the previous occasion, so now it was considered that more effect would be produced by extending the operations of the fleet along the coast than by confining them to the Canton river. The forces passing northward undertook a series of enterprises against the large fortified towns upon the sea or upon the mouths of the rivers. At the end of August Amoy was taken. In September Chusan, which had been evacuated, again fell into the hands of the English, as well as the important cities of Chin-Hi and Ningpo. Although at times the Chinese proved capable of vigorous resistance, and in the spring of 1842 attempted to recapture some of the towns they had lost, they were thoroughly overmatched and defeated without difficulty. At length the great river Yang-Tze-Kiang was entered, the forts with which it was lined, and not less that 360 good pieces of ordnance, fell into the hands of the English. Shanghai and Chin-Kiang-Foo were taken, and an assault upon the great capital, Nankin, was imminent when a despatch from Sir Henry Pottinger stating that the Chinese Government had yielded and had consented to make peace checked

Treaty of  
Nankin.  
Aug. 1842.

further operations. The Treaty of Nankin was signed on the 26th of August. Five ports—Canton, Amoy, Foo-Chow-Foo, Ningpo, and Shanghai—were to be open to British trade, a large sum was to be paid for the opium destroyed in 1839, a second sum for debts due to British subjects by the Hong merchants, and a considerable war indemnity, in all 21,000,000 dollars. The island of Hong-Kong was to be ceded to England.





On one point the Chinese were firm ; they positively refused to sanction the legalisation of the opium trade. They listened respectfully to the argument of the English negotiators, who urged that the legalisation of the trade would improve the revenue and avoid the difficulties which arose from smuggling. But while owning its truth, they declined as they said "to put a value upon riches and to slight men's lives." Opium therefore remained a contraband article, but the Chinese were afraid to put their laws against it in force. The illicit traffic revived and spread ; it attracted the scum of the Chinese and of the European population of the seaport towns, who found a refuge in the English island of Hong-Kong, which thus became a nest of pirates and smugglers. The opium traffic, then as now, gave rise to serious questions. The difficulty which has always beset the subject lies in the fact that the monopoly of opium is one of the chief sources of the Indian revenue. The poverty of the Indian people renders taxation a matter of great difficulty, and the Government has never seen its way to replace this questionable source of wealth. Indeed, plausible arguments have been alleged for its maintenance. It must be remembered that the Chinese are not the only people who would gladly use opium. The effect of the Government monopoly is to keep up the price and to limit the quantity of the drug produced. It is thus prevented from becoming an article of common use among our own Indian subjects. Again, its cultivation is so lucrative, that were the trade free the independent Indian governments would at once undertake its production, and an unregulated trade would arise, and the evil be increased.

If the moral question involved in the origin of the war is left out of sight, there is no doubt that its results were very advantageous. As Canton, the only port previously open to English trade, lies in a district which neither grows tea nor purchases woollen goods, the interchange between those articles had been difficult and expensive. The opening of the more northern ports allowed of a more direct exchange of the chief products of the respective countries to the manifest advantage of both. A source of constant dispute between the nations was also removed. It had always been felt to be impossible to surrender an Englishman, of whatever crime he may have been guilty, to be tried by the Chinese. A clause in the treaty now stipulated that culprits of either nation should be tried by their own law. Unfortunately, enough was left in the unsettled opium question, and in the animosity felt by the defeated Chinese, to render a subsequent renewal of hostilities only too probable.

## CHAPTER II.

SIR ROBERT PEEL'S MINISTRY, September 3, 1841.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	Sir Robert Peel.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Lyndhurst.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Lord Wharncliffe.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Duke of Buckingham.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Mr. Henry Goulburn.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Sir James Graham.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Stanley.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Aberdeen.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	Sir Henry Hardinge.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Lord Haddington.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	Lord Ellenborough.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Lord Ripon.
<i>(In the Cabinet, without office),</i>	Duke of Wellington.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	Earl de Grey.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Sir Edward Sugden.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	Lord Eliot.

The following changes took place subsequently :—

<i>Board of Control,</i>	{ Lord Fitzgerald, October 1841.
	{ Lord Ripon, May 1843.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	{ Duke of Buccleuch, January 1842.
	{ Lord Haddington, December 1845.
<i>Board of Trade,</i>	{ Mr. Gladstone, June 1843.
	{ Lord Dalhousie, February 1845.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	{ Sir Thomas Fremantle, May 1844.
	{ Mr. Sidney Herbert, February 1845.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Duke of Buccleuch, December 1845.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Lord Ellenborough, December 1845.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Mr. Gladstone, December 1845.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	Lord Heytesbury, July 1844.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	{ Sir Thomas Fremantle, February 1845.
	{ Lord Lincoln, May 1846.

ON the 30th of August Lord Melbourne gave notice in the House of Lords that the Queen had accepted his resignation. The same notice was given in the Commons by Lord John Russell, who

claimed that his Ministry had begun and had concluded with large and important measures. "In pursuance of great objects we triumphed, and in pursuance of great objects we have fallen." By the 3d of September Sir Robert Peel and the Duke of Wellington had succeeded in forming a Ministry. The Duke himself took no office. Lord Lyndhurst became Lord Chancellor; Mr. Goulburn Chancellor of the Exchequer. The three Secretaries for Home, Foreign, and Colonial affairs were respectively Sir James Graham, Lord Aberdeen, and Lord Stanley. The presence in the Cabinet of the Duke of Buckingham, as Lord Privy Seal, was regarded at first as a proof that no important change was contemplated in the arrangement of the Corn Laws. Among the lesser members of the Government, without Cabinet rank, were the younger men destined subsequently to fill the most important places in English history—Gladstone was Vice-President of the Board of Trade; Sidney Herbert Secretary to the Admiralty; Lord Canning Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs. The difficulty which had caused the failure of the Conservative party to form a Ministry in 1839 was got over by tacit agreement. Before the dissolution, and probably in view of the coming change, on the advice of Lord Melbourne some ladies of the Conservative party had been admitted to the Household. The resignation of the Duchess of Sutherland, and the appointment of the Duchess of Buccleuch as Mistress of the Robes, was therefore regarded as a sufficient sacrifice to the exigencies of party.

After a short adjournment for the re-election of the members of Government, the House reassembled on the 16th of September. Nothing worthy of note was done, the few remaining weeks of the session being wasted in futile party discussions. The efforts of the Liberals to draw from Sir Robert Peel any distinct declaration of his policy, especially on the subject of the Corn Laws, proved vain. Although it had been the disturbed state of the country, the miserable poverty which was breeding discontent in all the manufacturing districts, and the diminution of the revenue traceable to the diminished consumption of the impoverished masses, which had driven the outgoing Ministry to bring in the financial measures on which they fell, Peel refused, and succeeded in making good his refusal, to be hurried into any disclosures as to his intended measures. The country had to be content with the general assertion that he still regarded the principle of the sliding scale as the only prudent one to adopt in the matter of corn; nor did he feel himself pledged to the exact maintenance of the present

The new  
Ministry.  
Sept. 3, 1841.

Peel refuses to  
announce his  
measures.  
Sept. 1841.

system in all its details, although he was not averse to the removal of restraints on trade which produced but little revenue, and were merely irksome.

The new session of Parliament was opened on the 4th of February. Seldom has it met under circumstances of greater excitement, seldom has a Ministry begun its career amid greater difficulties. The full extent of the disasters in Afghanistan were indeed not yet known; but the news of the insurrection at Cabul, and the extreme dangers besetting our forces there, had just reached England. The war with China, successful though it was, had caused a constant drain upon the national resources, and there seemed every prospect of a continued deficit in the revenue. Yet this was but the lightest part of the difficulty which the Ministers were called upon to meet. The cause of the reaction which placed Peel at the head of his powerful majority was the desire of the constituencies for strong government. It was felt that however good the projects of the Liberals might have been, however able the individual members of their party, they had lacked the capacity to carry out their plans with vigour, had clung to office for two years after they had themselves confessed that they ought to leave it, and had failed in that prime duty of all governments, the establishment of order. It remained to be seen whether Peel and his followers, with their hands now strengthened by the large and willing support of the constituencies and with overwhelming majorities in both Houses, could satisfy the expectations they had raised; whether a less conciliatory policy would tend to the extinction of the constantly increasing discontent in Ireland; whether freedom from the dependence on the support of extreme Liberals would enable the Ministry to handle with greater freedom and success the disorders of Chartism; whether the financial wisdom with which Peel was credited would prove sufficient to devise some means of at once re-establishing the finances and restoring life to trade, of which the depression seemed the fruitful cause of the existing misery.

For the moment all interest was directed to this financial question. Wild hopes were indeed afloat that heroic remedies would be applied to cure the prevalent social disorder. Some talked of vast emigration schemes, some of the repeal of the new Poor Law, an idea which gained the more credit because a dislike of that law was common both to the Chartists and to one section of the Tories. But the deficiency in the revenue seemed to forbid the one attempt; the late appointment of a new Commissioner

Excitement at  
opening of  
Parliament of  
Feb. 1842.

Difficulties to  
be met.

Importance of  
the Anti-Corn-  
Law League.



under the Poor Law Act seemed to show that the Government had no idea of adopting the other. Indeed the more thinking men among the Reformers had come to the conclusion that the protective duties on corn, if not the sole cause, were at least chiefly answerable for the depression of trade, and that the prevailing misery could be largely traced to the enhanced price of bread which was the necessary effect of protection. The increasing strength of this opinion gave rise to the wide-spread agitation of which the Anti-Corn-Law League was the centre, and of which Mr. Villiers and Mr. Cobden were the chief spokesmen. It was this agitation with which the Government had chiefly to deal, for its prominence had gone far to weaken the danger of the Chartist movement. It was an agitation of political economists, of men who looked for means to promote the welfare of the people, not primarily either in their possession of political power or in changes of a social character, but in the liberty of trade—a liberty which as they believed would open fresh markets to our manufacturers, would thereby cause more employment, and at the same time lower the price of the prime necessities of life. The movement was thus regarded by the Chartists with great dislike, as being directed chiefly to the advantage of the capitalists, and to the maintenance of those principles of competition which they fancied were acting so injuriously upon themselves; while the more educated and wealthier classes, losing sympathy with the Chartist movement, turned their attention chiefly towards financial reform.

The opening of Parliament, when the well-preserved secret of the financial policy of the Government was to be declared, was therefore awaited with intense interest. The only indication of it as yet given to the public was the withdrawal of the Duke of Buckingham from the Ministry, which seemed at all events to foreshadow some diminution in the amount of the protection afforded to agriculture. On the 9th of February Sir Robert Peel announced that he would make his financial statement. Delegates of the Anti-Corn-Law League came in procession and crowded the lobby. From thence they were with some difficulty driven, and took up their position outside the House to watch the progress of the discussion. Sir Robert Peel began his explanation by enumerating causes other than the Corn Laws which appeared to him to explain the depression of trade and the poverty, the existence of which he could not deny.

Anxiety to  
hear Peel's  
measures.

Peel's explana-  
tion of the  
distress.

He also prudently guarded himself against the supposition that any legislation could immediately mitigate the prevailing distress. He

minimised the effect of the high duties upon corn, and took up the position that England should be as far as possible self-supporting in the matter of food ; that protection was therefore necessary for the agricultural interest ; that the cheapness of bread, although in the abstract no doubt desirable, was of no great use unless the means of purchasing that cheap bread were forthcoming ; that the removal of protection, by damaging the agricultural interest, would reduce the agricultural poor to the same state of impoverishment already existing among the manufacturing classes ; that what was required was such an arrangement of protection as should secure a remunerative price, and by keeping corn at a fairly constant level shut the door to speculation and fraud. These advantages he confessed were not secured by the existing system, where the rapid diminution of duty attending rise in price, and not properly proportioned to it, had a constant tendency to induce traders to hold back their corn till the highest price was reached, and till they could reap at once both the advantages of the diminished duty and the high price. He therefore, somewhat arbitrarily, fixed upon something between 54s. and 58s. as the desirable remunerative price ; beyond these limits he desired that the price should not vary. He proposed to begin with a duty of 20s. as long as corn was under 51s. the quarter. The duty was gradually to diminish, with occasional breaks in the sequence, till at 74s. it should be 1s., and after that altogether cease. Advantages were also to be given to colonial wheat ; when English wheat was under 55s. colonial was to pay a duty of 5s., which was gradually to be reduced, till when wheat stood at 58s. the duty dropped to 1s. He disclaimed the idea of legislating for particular interests, but he said, "I certainly do consider that it is for the interest of all classes that we should be paying occasionally a small additional sum upon our domestic produce, in order that we may thereby establish a security and insurance against those calamities which would ensue if we became altogether or in great part dependent upon foreign corn for our supply."

Peel's sliding-scale.

Notice was given that three amendments would be moved in Committee. Lord John Russell, as the spokesman for the outgoing Ministry, upheld the advantages of a fixed duty ; Mr. Villiers, representing the Anti-Corn-Law League, moved the total abolition of duty ; while Mr. Christopher, on behalf of the landed gentry and protectionist section of the Ministerialists, moved for a higher and more stringent scale than that proposed. Four nights were passed in discussing Lord John Russell's resolutions, and they

Three Amendments rejected.

were defeated by a majority of 123. But although the House thus seemed to have arrived at a conclusion in favour of a sliding-scale, Mr. Villiers determined to proceed with his more trenchant motion, and for five days the question was again discussed in every possible light. It is plain that the great body of the Liberals had as yet only partially grasped the true bearings of the case. Indications were given that their eyes were being gradually opened, but they were too fully committed to the fixed duty which they had proposed during their tenure of office to feel themselves at liberty to support a measure of total abolition. Mr. Villiers' amendment was therefore rejected by a majority of more than 300. Nor did Mr. Christopher's interference on the opposite side fare better. His scale of duties was rejected by a majority almost identical in number. In the House of Lords the question followed the same course. There too Lord Melbourne's amendment in favour of a fixed duty was lost by 68, while resolutions condemnatory of all duties on foreign corn, produced by Lord Brougham, were lost by 87 votes to 6.

Reception of  
the measure in  
the country.

The frustration of the hopes of the Leaguers, which had been raised by the withdrawal of the Duke of Buckingham from the Cabinet, naturally excited a good deal of anger among them. Resolutions were passed in meetings in all the large towns condemnatory of Peel's proposal ; in several places some violence was displayed, and the Prime Minister burnt in effigy. But on the whole, the feeling which the measure excited was that expressed by more than one speaker in both Houses, that the new scale was an improvement on the old, but that it left the main question as far from settlement as ever, and that sooner or later the entire removal of the duties was certain to come. It can scarcely be doubted that this was the Premier's own view. It was the impression of keen observers at the time that he was really speaking against his convictions when defending the sliding-scale ; but it is characteristic of the whole of Peel's political career that while his mind and views were continually growing, and while he was accepting, both as right and necessary, changes he had hitherto opposed, he should permit the change to take place as slowly as possible, and should confine himself to measures which he believed it possible to carry without much opposition. The support of the landed interest was necessary to him ; and he conceded just so much to his own growing convictions as he believed compatible with the retention of the approbation of that party.

The practical postponement of the great question of the Corn Laws

left him at liberty to act more in accordance with his real opinions, and to display his greatness as a finance Minister. The difficulty which he had to face was serious. There had been a persistent deficit for several years, amounting in the last five years to above seven millions and a half. Nor did there seem any chance of its diminishing; on the contrary, it appeared probable that, irrespective of increased outlay for the wars in China and Afghanistan, and for re-establishing of the finances of India, there would be in the coming year, closing in April 1843, a deficiency of about two millions and a half. The late Ministry had tided over their difficulty by the issue of Exchequer Bills, which were subsequently funded and added to the general debt. They had made, as has been mentioned, an honest effort in their last year of office by adding to the customs and excise and to the assessed taxes. But this addition had not produced the results expected. According to the old system there remained nothing but to revive taxes which had been abolished—taxes upon commodities or locomotion or light. Sir Robert Peel believed that further to tax the consumer was both wrong and impossible, and that some great and new resource of taxation must be employed. He therefore boldly proposed an income-tax of not more than 7d. in the pound, or 3 per cent., from which incomes of £150 and under were to be exempted. Land, houses, shares, funded property, the incomes of trade and professions, were all alike to be subjected to it. He considered that it would produce over £3,700,000. It was to be regarded as an exceptional tax, and therefore limited in duration. It might possibly, he said, require to be continued for five years; he suggested at present three years as its limit. Within that time it was to be hoped that a revival of trade would take place, accelerated by the other measures to be introduced. For hand-in-hand with this great general tax was to go a diminution of duties upon a great number of articles—a diminution which might at first lessen the revenue, but which would probably after a time increase it. On about 750 articles an abatement of duty of various amounts was recommended; on about 450 the duty was left untouched. With regard to the two important sources of revenue on which the frustrated budget of the last Ministry had largely depended, sugar and timber, he proposed in the case of sugar to retain the duty. Behind this there lay pretty obviously the idea that by means of it he could wring from Cuba and Brazil some securities in respect to the slave-trade. With regard to timber, the importance of which was very great, he proposed to admit Canadian timber at an almost nominal

Peel's financial measures.

The income-tax.

Diminution of duty on certain imports.



duty of a shilling a load ; but so far continued the system of protection that he retained a duty of 25s. upon foreign timber. The sum of these changes would increase the deficit to rather more than £3,700,000. The new tax would almost exactly cover this. A surplus or reserve for contingencies of about £500,000 was to be secured by laying a duty of a shilling a gallon upon spirits in Ireland, and taxing the exportation of coal in British vessels.

In spite of the evident marks of compromise in the Budget, especially in the part relating to the corn duties, it is impossible not to recognise that it was a far greater and more masterly way of dealing with the financial difficulty than that recommended by the late Government. It had however to undergo the regular course of party criticism from the Opposition, the leaders of which persisted in trumpeting the advantages of their own scheme. But apart from this, there were certain objections of a more genuine character which might be urged. Perhaps the reception given to the plan by Lord Brougham in the Upper House most clearly expresses the mingled acceptance and disapproval with which the scheme was regarded by many thinking men. It had long been a sort of fixed principle that indirect taxation, because it was less obvious in its incidence, was the more prudent form to adopt. Many of the more thorough reformers and economists had indeed recognised that direct taxation had its advantages ; that it was better, for the morality of the people, that they should be appealed to openly for the maintenance of the State to which they belonged ; and that the irksomeness which attended it was itself a powerful check upon its frequent use, and consequently conducive to economy. But the accepted view was that recourse should be had to so powerful an instrument of taxation as an income-tax only at critical times, and amid the expenses of war. Lord Brougham recognised that critical times might exist in peace as well as in war, and that the present, when all other means of filling the deficit appeared to have been tried in vain, was such a time. But he wished to put on record, and moved resolutions for that purpose, that the tax was only an exceptional tax, and open to grave objections. It was inquisitorial ; left somewhat to the taxpayer himself to assess, it gave an opening to fraud ; levied upon professional and mercantile profits, as well as realised property and capital, it pressed unduly upon the worker ; and, capable of indefinite extension and repetition, it afforded too ready an instrument of taxation to be lightly entrusted to the hands of any government. Still Lord Brougham was willing to accept it, moving

Objections to  
the Budget.

Brougham's  
speech.



however that it should be arranged so as to fall differently upon realised capital and upon earnings. Any idea of a graduated tax—that is, of a tax proportionately heavier upon large fortunes than upon small—he stoutly repudiated. His resolutions were not carried. It was indeed generally acknowledged that the effort to produce minute fairness was a vain one. The income-tax has since become an integral part of our system of taxation, but the objections urged against it are still felt to be true, and its defects are submitted to only because they appear incurable, and because in the growth of economic thought direct taxation has met with very general approval. The discussion upon the resolutions with regard to the income-tax and the Bill founded upon them was long and full. The opposition, chiefly based upon the connection of the income-tax with the retention of the sliding-scale, was carried to a somewhat violent extreme by the members of the Anti-Corn-Law League. Conduct almost factious was shown in the House, and a tendency to what is now spoken of as obstruction. Again and again the adjournment of the House was moved merely for the purpose of delaying the Bill, a manœuvre which was so far successful that the decision of the House was deferred till after the Easter recess ; but then, although amendments were moved for the purpose of removing some of the recognised objections to the measure, it passed through all its stages with considerable rapidity and on the 21st of June was read for the third time in the House of Lords and passed by a majority of 71.

The 13th of May had seen the passing of the Income-tax Bill in the Lower House. The alterations in the tariff which Alterations in the tariff. which went hand in hand with it were then brought under notice. It was obvious that the reductions contemplated touched very many interests, removing as they did protective duties from a large number of articles. As was to be expected, there was much argument upon nearly every item. It is obvious also that the only principles on which the reductions could be justified were the exact principles of free-trade ; that is to say, that the interests of the consumer were considered and not the interests of the producer. The inconsistency of introducing a tariff arranged upon these principles, while still retaining the protective duty upon corn, was too glaring to escape notice. For it seemed impossible to attribute to any other cause than the desire to secure the support of the landed interest the determination to maintain the price of the most necessary article of food, while the duty upon other articles of much less importance was lessened with the avowed object of producing a cheaper

supply. The feeling that the Budget was largely influenced by party considerations, and by the necessity of managing the great class interests, was strengthened by the refusal of Government to lessen the sugar duties. An argument for their retention was found in the supposed justice of assisting the planter who had been forbidden the use of slaves, and in the moral duty of discouraging a slave-grown product. It was calculated that the people of England had, during the last year, on account of the differential duties, paid nearly £4,000,000 more than was necessary for the sugar they had consumed. As the greater part of this large sum had passed into the pockets of the planters, the sacrifice demanded appeared so high that it was difficult not to believe that a wish to cultivate the support of the powerful West India influence had something to do with the determination of Government. Peel was however quite strong enough to pass all his financial measures by a considerable majority.

But it was not the inconsistency of the Budget so much as the deplorable condition of the working classes which gave strength to the arguments of the Anti-Corn-Law League. The misery of the people and the depression of trade were indeed obvious, but the cause was open to much question. As is usual in such a case, every conceivable cause was alleged as the principal one and found its partisans. To Peel and his friends it was the increase of machinery and the Whig wars in India and China. To Lord Stanhope, and with him some of the older Tories, it was the introduction of the New Poor Law. To the Protectionists it was the commercial treaties and the reciprocity system of Huskisson. To the Malthusians it was the increase of the population. To one form of rural economists it was the prevalence of large farms ; to another the bad methods of cultivation. No doubt some, or perhaps all, of these influences were at work. But through it all one thing seemed pretty clear, that the removal of the restrictions upon the trade in corn could not but have a beneficial effect. It would supply the workman with cheaper food ; and, inasmuch as corn imported would of necessity be largely paid for by English productions, it would open fresh markets for English manufacture. The same process, it was therefore urged, would both feed the workman more cheaply, and, by increasing the business of the manufacturers, enable them to employ more labour and supply the workman with the means of purchasing his cheapened food. So strong did opinion become on this point that the efforts of those who desired that something should be done to alleviate the distress were

Misery of the  
working  
classes.

Causes, and  
remedies  
proposed.

concentrated upon this measure, almost to the exclusion of all others, and in the parliamentary warfare of the day any movement in behalf of the suffering people was sure, before it ended, to assume the form of an attack upon the Corn Laws.

With the people themselves this was by no means the case. Then as always the indirect and secondary action of economic laws was less apparent and appeared less clearly to the popular mind than more direct measures of relief. And those measures the poorer classes believed to be obtainable if only political power was in their own hands. Once in command of spokesmen in the House of Commons—delegates immediately and frequently answerable to themselves, there was no amount of social legislation which did not seem within their reach. It was upon this idea that the Charter was based. In anger at the interference with their objects caused by the Anti-Corn-Law movement, the Chartists refused even to make use of it. It was in their eyes a middle-class movement, a means of putting money into the pockets of the capitalists. They determined to act without regard to the middle-class, and before the close of the session they made their grievances thoroughly known by presenting a petition to the legislature, and by demanding that they should be heard at the bar of the House. The petition was of unparalleled magnitude; it purported to be signed by 3,000,000 of names, and though some were probably fictitious or duplicate signatures, Thomas Duncombe, the member for Finsbury, declared himself ready to prove that 1,500,000 families were represented in the petition. Its presentation was a curious sight. Carried by 16 men, and followed by a long procession, it proved too large to get in at the door. It was hastily torn to pieces, and the fragments brought in each by two or three men were placed in a pile against the table of the House, which it considerably overtopped. Its contents exhibited the real feelings which were actuating the poor. Besides its immediate object—the five points of the Charter already mentioned, which were political in character—it complained bitterly of the national debt. The people, it urged, were overtaxed to pay the interest of an enormous loan, lavished upon useless and wicked wars, and raised by men who were not real representatives of the people. It then proceeded “respectfully to call attention to the existing monopolies, of the suffrage, of paper money, of machinery, of land, of the public press, of religion, and of the means of travelling and transit—all arising from class legislation.” It is impossible to mistake the meaning of this. When class legislation, as the existing

Opposition of  
the Chartists  
to the Corn-  
Law League.

The Chartist  
Petition pre-  
sented.  
May 2, 1842.

method was called, should be abolished by the adoption of the Charter, the whole form of society was to be changed in the interest of the working classes. A national bankruptcy was to be followed by the destruction of the church, and confiscation, or at least redistribution of capital, whether invested in banks, machinery, or railways. It was not to be expected that Parliament should entertain such a petition. Even Mr. Roebuck, who supported the people's claim to be heard at the bar, was content to urge, what was indeed acknowledged on all sides, the miserable plight of the working class, while admitting that the petition itself was drawn up "by a fierce, malignant, and cowardly demagogue." A majority of 238 declared that the petitioners should not be heard.

But though so sweeping a social reform as that implied in the Chartist petition was at once refused a hearing, it must not be supposed that social legislation was entirely neglected. The increased susceptibility of the national conscience is in fact one of the most striking characteristics of the period which followed the great war; and the passing of the Reform Bill had allowed social questions to become even more prominent than before. The entire ignorance of that small section of society which before that Bill had ruled the country as to the condition of their poorer fellow-subjects had been gradually broken down. The inquiries for sanitary purposes rendered necessary by the cholera in 1832 had thrown much light upon the squalor of the life in the large towns; and the Factory Acts, with the reports which accompanied them, had made public the sufferings which attended the large employment of machinery; and now the voice of the people themselves, speaking in the disorders of Chartism, had still further enforced the lesson. It was almost by acclamation that Lord Ashley's Bill for the improvement of the condition of women and children in mines and collieries was passed.

**Ashley's Col-  
lieries Bill,  
June 3.**

The Bill was based on the report of a commission of inquiry which had been appointed in consequence of the facts brought to light at the time of the Factory Act. The report, largely quoted by Lord Ashley, revealed a state of things too fearful to be quietly contemplated. Children were brought to work in some parts of England and Wales as early as the age of four, in most places at five or six; while the practice of employing females underground was very common, if not universal in Yorkshire, Lancashire, Cheshire, the East of Scotland, and South Wales. All the work which had to be done was of the most terrible description. The mines in the North of England, in Northumberland, Cumberland, and South Dur-

**Awakened in-  
terest in social  
questions.**



ham, were fairly ventilated, and the coal-beds were of tolerable thickness ; but in many other places the coal-seams were not more than 22 to 28 inches in height, the heat was intense, water was constantly dripping, frequently it lay deep over the feet and lower limbs of the workers. Along these terrible passages, for a 100 or 200 yards in length, between the working-places, the children and women had to crawl along on all-fours, with a girdle passing round their waists, and harnessed by a chain between their legs to the carts they were drawing. The men worked absolutely naked, the women and children very nearly so. "I have been in water," said one woman, "up to my thighs ; I go on my hauds and feet, the road is very steep ; when there is no rope we have to catch hold of anything we can ; my clothes are wet through all day long ; I have drawn till I have had the skin off me." "I found a little girl," said a sub-commissioner in Scotland, "six years of age, carrying half a cwt., and making regularly fourteen long journeys a day. The height ascended, and the distance along the road, exceeded in each journey the height of St. Paul's Cathedral." In many cases the work was continued on alternate days for sixteen, eighteen, or twenty hours out of the twenty-four. "I have repeatedly worked," said one girl seventeen years of age, "for twenty-four hours." The effect of such a life was inevitable. Stunted, crippled, misshapen, the workers were condemned inevitably to a premature old age and early death. Even the men, from want of proper ventilation, "died off," says the report, "like rotten sheep, and each generation is commonly extinct soon after fifty." Still worse were the moral effects. Brutal cruelty, a total loss of all sense of decency or modesty, drinking, fighting—in fact complete savagery, marked the collier life. The Bill, as Lord Ashley produced it, provided for the entire exclusion of all females from mines and collieries, and of all boys under thirteen years of age ; secondly, for the employment as engineers of men over twenty-one only, for the purpose of avoiding numerous accidents ; and thirdly, for the abolition of apprenticeships, by which pauper children had been rendered the absolute slaves of their masters till they reached the age of twenty-one. A few murmurs were heard that the report was over-coloured, a few protests against any interference with freedom of employment. But the general feeling was so excited by the revelations produced that the Bill passed without a division amidst the loud cheers of the House. It did not meet with quite so good a reception in the Upper House. It was indeed necessary to make some modifications in it before it was even introduced. A clause which had compelled the employment of boys on alternate days only



was given up, and instead of the total prohibition of apprenticeship its restriction to eight years was introduced. Even thus the Bill met with opposition. Some of the lords objected to any legislative interference with the labour market; others thought it had been hurried without consideration through the Commons, and needed more inquiry; and Lord Brougham took the opportunity of delivering a sort of lecture upon the dangers of social legislation. But in its amended shape the Bill passed, and was accepted under protest by Lord Ashley, who found that the Government were unwilling to alter the amended provisions or restore the clauses which had been omitted.

It had been feared that the Conservative Government might tamper with the new Poor Law, especially as on this point they would have received the support and gratitude of the Chartists. The full employment which the discussion of the financial arrangements had given Parliament prevented the introduction of any very important bill on the subject. But Government showed that it intended honestly to abide by the principles of the existing law, by continuing the commissioners for five years, and by reconstituting those Unions where the older form of poor relief was still in partial use. Protests were raised at the continued refusal of outdoor relief, but Sir James Graham was able to show that there was a large discretionary power still left in the hands of the guardians, and that as a matter of fact the Poor Law was not very rigidly worked. There was no just cause of complaint on this point when during the last year out of £3,884,000 expended on the poor nearly £3,000,000 had been given at the people's own homes. Graham, however, while acknowledging that out-door relief might be desirable under exceptional circumstances, refused to recognise it as a right. For even by the confession of its supporters it would inevitably bring about the payment of a portion of wages out of the poor-rates.

The Session closed with an elaborate assault by Lord Palmerston upon the policy of the Government, and what appeared a triumphant reply by Sir Robert Peel. Indeed there was a very general feeling that Sir Robert Peel's administration had justified the result of the last election. Not that the Government was popular. Peel's personal character was not attractive of popularity, nor was the intermediate line of policy which he had marked out for himself such as to please thoroughly either one party or the other. But his strength was indubitable, not only from the firm majority which he could wield in both Houses, but from the personal superiority recognised in him. And fortune seemed to

**The new Poor  
Law retained.**

**Apparent suc-  
cess of Peel's  
administration.**

favour him. The Irish had been unusually quiet during the Session, and news had now reached England of the favourable termination of the Chinese war, the victories of our arms in India, and the conclusion of a long-unsettled question as to the boundary between Canada and the United States by what is known as the Ashburton Treaty (August 9, 1842). The policy of the Chinese War was indeed questioned, but the late Ministers were answerable for that, and the nation was very glad to have completed with success the inglorious contest. The withdrawal of the English army from Afghanistan, the practical reversal of the course pursued by Palmerston and Lord Auckland, afforded an opening for bitter attack, rendered the more easy by the injudicious proclamations and vacillating policy of Lord Ellenborough; but it was a cause of general congratulation that the prestige of English arms had been re-established; and most men were glad to get rid of a policy which had produced such terrible disasters, and were disposed to allow the wisdom of leaving the Afghans to settle their own affairs. Lord Palmerston too clamoured against the Ashburton Treaty, and called it a capitulation. England had indeed surrendered some of its claims, but as much as could fairly be required of the barren country in dispute had been obtained, and the friendship of America was well worth a little concession.

Yet there were signs on all sides of coming difficulties. The Session was scarcely over before riots of a most dangerous character broke out among the manufacturing population of Staffordshire and Lancashire. On the 6th of August a great meeting had been held on Mottram Moor, near Manchester, and a resolution had been passed that all labour should cease till the People's Charter became law. The fall of wages, which was the immediate cause of the outbreak, has been attributed to the intentional action of the partisans of the Anti-Corn-Law League, who expected to find in popular disturbances a means of furthering their object. The workmen left the mills, pulled up the plugs to prevent the working of the engines, and adopted the resolution just mentioned. The leaders endeavoured to spread the strike in all directions. They were entirely successful for the time in the potteries and at Manchester. A Convention was summoned for the 16th of August at Manchester. Before that time wild and destructive riots had taken place in Staffordshire, requiring the presence of soldiery. At the Manchester Convention there was a division of opinion, and Feargus O'Connor, who was present, raised some objections to the use of physical force. The majority, however, were in favour of it, and a

Serious causes  
of anxiety.

strongly-worded address, which was nothing less than a call to arms, was issued under the signature of the Executive Committee of the Chartists. But the Government was watchful and efficient; troops were poured into the disturbed districts, and arrests were very largely made. In Stafford gaol alone, where a Special Commission was opened in October, there were 800 men imprisoned. Feargus O'Connor was himself arrested in September for the part he had played in the disturbances. But though the movement had been suppressed the causes still remained, and the hope of securing order rested perhaps chiefly upon divisions among the discontented people. While one section still regarded O'Connor as its head, a rival organisation known as the Complete Suffrage party had arisen; the wealthier supporters of the Charter were withdrawing from the working men, and the question as to the use of physical or moral force caused still further division. The Anti-Corn-Law Leaguers also continued their agitation. The late financial measures could not as yet produce effect, and the League could still urge the misery of the country as a chief argument for the acceptance of their plan. They now agreed to collect £50,000 for the express purpose of disseminating their views. There was every prospect of a continued struggle on this point. In India, too, fresh difficulties had arisen. The invasion of Afghanistan had entailed certain after-results

*Danger of fresh  
war in India.*

which seemed to threaten further war, and perhaps annexation. The territory of Sindh, upon the lower Indus, was ruled by three families of chiefs or Ameers, the descendants of Belloochee conquerors. It had once formed a part of the Afghan kingdom, but at the revolution which drove Shah Soojah from the throne of Cabul the Ameers had established their independence. They had been subjected to the regular process of Anglo-Indian encroachment; a Resident had been forced upon them, and treaties in the interest of the English made with them against their will. One branch of the invading army of Afghanistan in 1838 had passed through their territory, and their half-veiled hostility had induced the Indian Government to establish a permanent body of British troops in their dominions, and to wring from them a further treaty by which they engaged to pay a large sum of money annually for the maintenance of this garrison. Sir Charles Napier was at once commander of the troops and political agent to the Ameers, and had received in September 1842 a despatch from the Governor-General of a very threatening character. Lord Ellenborough, while demanding strong proof of the hostility of the Ameers, had declared it to be his intention

to inflict signal punishment upon any of them who should appear to have taken advantage of the late disasters in Afghanistan to exhibit ill-feeling to the English. The situation seemed full of danger. Nor was the temporary lull of agitation in Ireland other than deceptive. The Repeal Association was still in full vigour, and preparing for further exhibitions of its influence. Strong and successful though the Ministry had been, it was clear that the coming year would still try its stability to the uttermost. But beyond the mere management of the difficulties which were pretty certain to arise, the Government would be called upon to exercise its judgment upon a new class of questions. Matters of social interest were everywhere pushing to the surface. Everywhere the awakened conscience of the nation was making itself felt. The moral and physical condition of the people, education, the working of the Poor Law, the management of prisons, were the topics which filled men's minds; while both in England and in Scotland the national Church was passing through a time of critical excitement.

Excitement  
in Ireland.

New social  
questions.

In the coming year all these rising difficulties had to be faced. Sir Robert Peel and his Ministry proved at all events so far sufficient to encounter them, that the close of the Session saw him still in possession of a firm and powerful majority. Every opportunity was taken by the supporters of the Anti-Corn-Law League to introduce their views to public notice in the House, and to press the adoption of what they regarded as the great cure for the national difficulties; and circumstances rendered their position even stronger than before. The Government, in the Queen's Speech (February 2), had been obliged to confess that there was a notable falling off in the receipts of the revenue, and that an analysis showed that the diminution was chiefly such as must arise from the decreased purchase by the mass of the people of articles of comfort, luxury, and even necessity, a sure sign of the continued depression of industry and of the increasing misery of the industrial classes. Yet Peel was firm. Sufficient time had scarcely passed for a true estimate of the effects of his new system of finance. His income-tax enabled him to cover the deficiency. He remained resolute in his maintenance of the Corn Laws, but continued to introduce modifications in other directions, all tending towards free-trade.

Peel overcomes  
the difficulty  
with the  
Corn Leaguers.

With the powerful aid of the Duke of Wellington he succeeded in vindicating the policy of the Indian Government with regard to Afghanistan, and even in obtaining a vote of thanks to Lord Ellenborough and to the officers and men

Peel upholds  
Ellenborough's  
policy.



engaged in the late operations, though Lord Ellenborough's policy was subjected to bitter assault. Indeed, from the correspondence which has since come to light, it appears that on his first arrival in India he had really thought of ordering the immediate retreat of the English forces, with somewhat strange forgetfulness of the prisoners in the hands of Akbar Khan. The firmness of the generals employed and the consequent gradual improvement of our position had enabled him to carry out what was probably the best line of conduct which could have been adopted; and the charges which were brought against him were chiefly directed to his somewhat wanton assault upon the policy of his predecessor, and the ill-judged and theatrical tone of his despatches of triumph. A policy of which retribution and revenge is a part is always open to question, and the army was accused of reckless destruction and plunder. It would seem however that the conduct of the troops had been on the whole singularly moderate, although almost as a matter of course some disorders had arisen. It has been already mentioned that Lord Ellenborough's policy had assumed a somewhat aggressive character after the successful withdrawal of the army from Afghanistan. The threatening despatch of September to Sir Charles Napier in Sindh was followed by instructions to force upon the Ameers a new treaty by which their irregularly

The Sindh War  
ends favourably.  
1843.

paid subsidy should be exchanged for the cession of Kurrachee, and some other towns, with a strip of land on either side of the Indus. Some pressure was necessary to bring the unwilling princes to the point. A very remarkable march across the desert put Sir Charles Napier in possession of the fort of Emaunghur, and Major Outram eventually brought the Ameers both of Hyderabad and Kurpore to affix their seals to the treaty. But it was scarcely signed before the temper of their troops, and probably their own wishes, induced them to make an assault upon Outram in the Residency of Hyderabad. With 100 men Outram succeeded in holding it for a while against 8000 assailants, and ultimately withdrew his little garrison in safety. Napier, although he based his subsequent action upon this breach of faith on the part of the Ameers had in fact already arrived at the conclusion that the use of arms was necessary, and at once upon Outram's arrival advanced against the Ameers. On the 17th of February he came upon them at Meeanee, and there, though the enemy numbered seven to one, completely routed them. On the 20th he entered Hyderabad, and by another great victory known as the battle of Hyderabad, obtained full command of the country. Early in April he wrote to the



Governor-General, "I think I may venture to say Sindh is now subdued."

The year was not however over before hostilities broke out in another direction. The State of Gwalior had been left in the hands of the Mahrattas, an English Resident being stationed at the Court of Scindia, who was virtually under British protection. During the minority of Junkojee Rao Scindia, domestic disturbances had arisen in the State of Gwalior. The Maharanee, the widow of the late ruler, had deposed the Regent appointed by the English and substituted a friend of her own. The English Resident had thought it necessary to withdraw ; and the whole tone of Mahratta government had assumed a character of hostility to the English. By the Treaty of Burhampore in 1804, the English had contracted to keep in readiness a body of troops which, on the requisition of the Mahratta Prince, should be at his service to establish his authority. It was of great importance that a state occupying the central position of Gwalior should be itself well governed, and in the hands of rulers willing and able to maintain order on the frontiers. Lord Ellenborough thought it necessary to intervene ; he took advantage of the Treaty of Burhampore, and declared that he could not allow the minority of the Prince and his consequent inability to make a requisition to act to his detriment. Under pretext, therefore, that the disorders were derogatory to the authority of the young Scindia, he entered the Mahratta territory in December with an army under the command of Sir Hugh Gough. Proclaiming his pacific intentions, he began, as he believed, successful negotiations for the settlement of the government, and was preparing to withdraw when he found that the Mahratta troops had assembled in force at Maharajpore. There an important battle was fought and a complete victory won. A second English army, under Major-General Grey, on the same day won an equally decisive battle at Punniar. The consequence of these victories was the submission of the Mahratta Court ; the fort of Gwalior was surrendered to the English, the Mahratta troops were disbanded, and a British contingent of nine regiments, maintained at the cost of the Gwalior State, substituted.

The Gwalior  
war ends  
favourably.  
1843.

In spite of the prominence of social questions, the session produced but little direct legislation. Men still shrunk from any infringement of that complete personal and individual freedom to which Englishmen are so closely attached. Yet social evils which seemed in some degree traceable to that very freedom were forcing themselves upon the public notice, and, as on

Efforts at social  
legislation.

previous occasions, found a spokesman in Lord Ashley. While other men were seeking for means of alleviating the unquestioned depression of the labouring classes, and tracing it, with its consequences of discontent and riot, to physical and economic causes, to Lord Ashley it seemed that much at all events of the more distressing and dangerous part of the present social disorder was to be found in the moral darkness of the workman. It seemed to him that in the universal haste to appropriate the advantages of improved appliances, and to accumulate wealth, a dense population had been called into existence and left to fight its way with no rule of guidance but the necessities of a fierce competition, and the imperative desire to acquire the necessaries of life. Under this impulse parents lost their natural care for their children, and regarding them only as instruments for obtaining money plunged them from their earliest years, without a shred of education, into the hardships and temptations of the mines, the workshops, and the streets. What could come from such a system but ignorance and crime? It was the duty and the wisdom of a State which by its arrangements had created an ever-increasing population

Ashley's  
address to the  
Queen on  
Education.  
Feb. 28, 1843.

to see at least that the children were educated. For their physical well-being Lord Ashley had already done much and was trying to do more. He now brought forward in Parliament a motion that an Address should be sent to the Queen begging her "to take into her instant and serious consideration the best means of diffusing the benefit and blessings of a moral and religious education among the working classes of her people." He had no difficulty in making out his case. The population of England and Wales in the last forty years showed an increase of more than seven millions. The lowest estimate of those who required education was 3,000,000, and after all deductions had been made for those who were educated privately, and for pauper children, there would still remain 1,800,000 for whose training the public were answerable. In the existing schools, whether of the Established Church or of the Dissenting bodies, somewhat over 800,000 pupils were taught, leaving nearly a million children to whom no education was given. The result was such as might be expected; the statistics of the great towns showed the most terrible youthful depravity. The statistics of the prisons showed an enormous percentage of ignorance; and the working of the existing system was brought into sharp relief when it appeared that the expenditure for the punishment of crime was £600,000 a year, the annual vote for education, which might tend to prevent it, was still only £30,000. As usual, when he laid

bare the shortcomings of English society, Lord Ashley met with respectful hearing and approbation. The Home Secretary, Sir James Graham, declared that not only was he ready to support the Address, but that Government had already had the intention of doing something to further the cause of education. It was preparing a new Factory Bill, containing clauses insuring the compulsory education of pauper and factory children. The Address was agreed to without division, and on the receipt of the Queen's answer on the 8th of March Sir James Graham produced his Bill.

The Home Secretary had in view two distinct objects, the extension and amendment of the existing Factory Acts and the improvement of education. He desired to limit the hours of female labour to twelve, and to reduce the time during which children might be employed to six and a half hours a day. Those hours were to be consecutive, either in the morning or afternoon, and the stipulation already existing that no children should be employed without certificates of school attendance was to be continued. Upon this limitation he made an attempt to found a general system of education. Certificates were only to be received from schools fulfilling certain conditions. Of these, Government inspection was the first, but religious instruction also formed an integral part of the scheme. Upon this rock, as has so often happened, the plan was wrecked. Although great care was taken to avoid any arrangements or restrictions which could be regarded as injurious to perfect liberty of religious creed, the Dissenters and Roman Catholics found in the Bill traces of Church supremacy, and plied the Government with petitions against it, while the Radicals eagerly pressed their favourite scheme of wholly secular education. Sir James Graham, finding that what he had intended to be a general and comprehensive measure winning the approval of all parties afforded only ground for sectarian opposition, yielded to his opponents, and withdrew the Bill.

Sir James  
Graham's  
Factory Bill  
withdrawn.  
June 1843.

In February of the following year he reintroduced it shorn of its educational clauses. But the opposition offered was no less violent. Lord Ashley wished to introduce a clause limiting the working hours of young persons (that is, those between the age of thirteen and eighteen) to ten hours a day. The feeling of the House was curiously divided on the subject. The rigid economists, siding with the Government, regarded the interference with free labour as highly injurious. Several votes, direct and indirect, were taken upon the subject, with such varying results

His second  
Factory Bill  
carried.  
May 1844.

that Sir James Graham declared that inextricable confusion had arisen, and that either a compromise must be effected or leave be given him to withdraw the present and introduce a new Bill. He stated that a compromise appeared to him out of the question. He believed that the restriction of hours would be injurious to the master manufacturers, and through them to the welfare of the country, that it must be followed by a diminution of wages, and would thus be injurious to the workmen also; that consequently he and his colleagues had determined to maintain the twelve hours limit. In the course of his speech he referred to an argument which had been used by his opponents, that a new social condition had come into existence which was to be met by new principles and new schemes of legislation. Legislative interference was to become the general rule. Adopting a phrase which had been used in a paper on this subject, he declared that he did not think it exaggeration to say that this was a commencement of a Jack Cade system of legislation. It was one of those unfortunate expressions which (like the word "aliens" used by Lord Lyndhurst with respect to the Irish) inevitably become a party catch-word, and are permanently affixed as marks for popular disapproval to the statesman who utters them. Sir James Graham was at once regarded as the arch enemy of the labouring classes. The second course as to the Factory Bill was adopted; a new Bill was introduced which did not repeal but only amended the existing Statute. It diminished the working hours of children to six and a half, and insisted upon those hours being consecutive, to allow time for their schooling. It extended the twelve hours limitation to include women as well as young persons. It rendered stricter the certificate of age and health required, and guarded against the use of dangerous machinery. With some difficulty—for the preceding events had heated the Opposition—this Bill was carried, but even at the time it was not regarded as a final settlement of the question. Although Sir James Graham's whole scheme thus failed, it must be laid to his credit that he recognised the necessity of general education, and did not shrink from producing a measure conceived with considerable liberality as a first step towards it.

This was not the only proof the Government gave of its recognition of its moral duties. Sir Robert Peel introduced and carried a plan for the establishment and endowment of Church districts. Leaving the building of the new churches to private liberality, he allowed the Ecclesiastical Commissioners to borrow capital from Queen Anne's Bounty, and to employ it under certain

Peel's Church  
districts.



restrictions for the endowment of the incumbents. By this means the very large and unwieldy parishes which had given rise to much spiritual destitution were gradually broken up.

In acting thus Peel showed his recognition of the great religious movement which went along with the other reforming impulses of the time. It had assumed in England, strangely enough, a shape which is generally connected with a dislike to reform. For it was ostensibly the apprehension of the introduction of liberalism and liberal principles into religion which mainly excited the activity of the leaders of the Oxford movement. But, looked at somewhat more closely, it will appear that the real groundwork of the movement was the recognition of the dangers attending the close connection of Church and State, the risk which lay in that connection of slothful acceptance of worldly position and of State orthodoxy, to the detriment of more real spiritual life. The same impulse is to be traced in the lengthened struggle which had divided the Church of Scotland, and which this year terminated in its violent Disruption. In both cases it was the indignant rejection of the idea that the spiritual interests of the nation can be subordinated to temporal authority, and the Church in its highest functions be other than supreme, which lay at the bottom of the movement. In both cases, too, there was an undercurrent of democratic feeling thoroughly consistent with the impulse of the time.

Religious  
movement of  
the time.

In Scotland a direct quarrel arose as to the limits of the authority of the Church on the one hand, and the State on the other. The question of lay patronage had always been a difficult one in the Scotch Church. The statutes which regulated the relation in which the Church stood to the State had varied on this point in accordance with the views of the Government of the time. But in 1707, at the Union, when the maintenance of the national Church became an integral part of the treaty, doubtful passages with regard to patronage were repealed, and the right was vested in the heritors and elders of the respective parishes. But subsequently, in the tenth year of Queen Anne's reign, the Statute of 1690, chapter v. (that is to say, the part settling the Scotch Church), was repealed, "in so far as relates to the presentation of ministers by heritors and others mentioned therein," and the right of presentation was restored to patrons, Presbyteries being obliged to receive and admit qualified persons when presented by the patron, and on the same conditions as before the making of the statute. Up till 1784 the Church had constantly complained of this,

Position of  
the Scotch  
Church.



but the patrons appear on the whole to have consulted the parishioners, and no very important quarrel arose. From that year the protest of the Church ceased, and the nomination to parishes had fallen entirely into the hands of the patrons. To the more ardent members of the Church this appeared at once to deprive the people of their voice in the appointment of their ministers, which they regarded as a fundamental principle of their ecclesiastical state, and to allow the interposition of secular interests and secular authority in matters of the highest spiritual importance. The General Assembly therefore, or rather the permanent committee of the Assembly, in 1834 passed

**The Veto Act.** what was known as the "Veto Act," by which, upon a  
1834. protest of the male heads of families, being communicants, in any parish, the Presbytery was bound to reject the nominee, and this although no ground of objection was stated. It was this Act of the Assembly which produced the Disruption. The two chief cases in which the conflict between the Church and the Law Courts arose were known as the Auchterarder and Strathbogie cases. Immediately after the passing of the Veto Act, the Earl of Kinnoull, as patron, presented Mr. Young to the parish of Auchterarder. The male heads of families there objected to him, and he was rejected by the Presbytery. The patron and the presentee proceeded against the Presbytery at law. The General Assembly undertook the case of the Presbytery. After a lengthened trial decision was given by the Court of Session, in March 1838, against the Presbytery. Thus the Veto Act was declared illegal. The case was carried to the House of Lords, and the highest Court of justice dismissed the appeal and upheld the judgment of the Court of Session. On this, in the General Assembly, the Church and State party, headed by Dr. Cook, moved that the Veto Act, having been declared illegal, should cease to be enforced. The "Non-intrusionists," as they were called, headed

**The Non-  
intrusionists.**  
May 22, 1839.

by Dr. Chalmers, on the contrary took up the position that the Civil Court could declare to whom the emoluments might go, but could not set aside an ecclesiastical law of the Assembly. A considerable majority upheld Dr. Chalmers's view. In the second case, a Mr. Edwards had been presented by the lawful patron to the parish of Marnoch; the heads of families had exercised their veto; the seven ministers who constituted the Presbytery of Strathbogie, in which Marnoch was, refused to admit him, and Mr Edwards obtained a decree from the Supreme Court against the Presbytery. The seven ministers preferred fulfilling the obvious duty of obeying the law rather than the questionable duty of obeying the

Assembly, and submitted to the Court. For this, in a very high-handed manner, they were summoned to the bar of the General Assembly and deposed from their ministry, while Mr. Edwards, for having resorted to a Civil Court, was deprived of his licence as a minister.

There were thus in fact two points at issue—the one the limit between the right of the patron and the right of the parish, the other the limit between the jurisdiction of the Church Courts and the jurisdiction of the Civil Courts. Lord Melbourne's Ministry had refused to take any measures on the subject. The Prime Minister had declared that the best way of maintaining the law was to allow the law to take care of itself. A private attempt of Lord Aberdeen had come to nothing, the one side regarding it as an assault upon patronage, the other side as a means of permanently riveting patronage on the Church. Thus, left to follow its own course, the quarrel increased in bitterness. The Non-intrusionists assumed all the airs of persecuted Covenanters, apparently forgetful of their own persecuting action with regard to the Strathbogie ministers. High-flown language was employed which, were it not that those who employed it were really so much in earnest, would be little short of ridiculous. The demands of the Non-intrusionists grew into a demand for the absolute destruction of all lay patronage, and preparation was openly made for a secession from the Establishment. At length, in 1842, the General Assembly drew up two addresses to the Crown ; one to call attention to a document already compiled, and known as "The Claim, Declaration, and Protest against the encroachments of the Court of Session ;" the other to ask for the abolition of the Church patronage in Scotland. And along with these a memorial was sent, declaring that if redress were not afforded, the inevitable result would be the disruption of the Established Church. The Government felt it necessary to answer these addresses, and Sir James Graham drew up a long and very able reply, in which, passing in review the statutes and precedents alleged by the Assembly as proofs of their case, and the history of the present struggle, he came to the conclusion that there were ample powers already in the Church to prevent the admission of improper candidates, that the Presbytery had the undoubted right on good cause shown to reject a presentee, but that it was impossible to admit the claims of the Church to be the sole judge of what was or was not an ecclesiastical question, and therefore beyond the competency of the Civil Courts. He concluded by the assertion that "Her Majesty's

Appeal to  
Government.  
June 1, 1842.

Sir James  
Graham's  
answer.

Ministers were bound to declare they could not recommend the total abrogation of the rights of the Crown and other patrons."

The reception of this reply produced, as its writer had foreseen, the Disruption of the Church. There was a striking scene in the General Assembly. The members proceeded from their service in the High Church to their place of meeting in St. Andrew's. The approaches and galleries were crowded; the sympathies of the populace were with the seceders, and as each well-known leader entered he was loudly applauded. Dr. Welsh was Moderator. He should have proceeded to examine the constitution of the Assembly; instead of doing so, he stated that there were legal difficulties in the way of carrying out this duty, and proceeded to read a protest of some length from the ministers and elders of the Non-intrusionist party. He then rose and left the hall, and one after the other, slowly and silently, those who agreed with him rose and followed. To the number of 169 they passed in procession four abreast, and surrounded by a sympathetic crowd, to a hall at Canonmills, which had been prepared for them. There 300 other ministers, not members of the Assembly, awaited them, and there, with Dr. Chalmers as their Moderator, they constituted themselves a Free Presbyterian Church. For several days they proceeded with the necessary business of organisation. Dr. Chalmers was able to say that for the Building Fund £150,000 had already been collected, and upwards of £72,000 for the Sustentation Fund; and on the Sunday following Dr. Candlish preached in the first Free Church. The number of those ministers who signed the protest, or were enrolled in the first list of the secession, was 395. There remained of ministers who did not leave the Church, 835. The Government thought it necessary for the settlement of men's minds to explain the exact condition of the law, and Lord Aberdeen brought in and passed a Bill to the effect that the Veto Act was repealed, that the Presbytery could not refuse to admit to trial a minister duly presented, but that, on objection being raised by the parishioners, they should inquire as to the general fitness of the candidate and his special fitness for the parish, and give their verdict accordingly. From their judgment an appeal lay to the higher Church Court only. The Civil Courts could interfere only if the Presbytery exceeded its jurisdiction.

**The Disruption.**  
**May 18, 1843.**

**Formation of the Free Church.**  
**May 18, 1843.**

There was a determination not to compromise in a matter of conscience, a self-denial in the ready resignation of their benefices, a nobility in the view that the spiritual liberties of the people should be maintained against the rights of property, which compels an admir-

ation and respect for the first leaders of the Free Church movement ; yet it is difficult to feel much sympathy with men who, under the disguise of maintaining popular spiritual rights, sought to destroy that supervision on the part of the lay authorities of the kingdom which has proved to be the sole safeguard against ecclesiastical tyranny.

The movement in England did not reach to the point of disruption. It drove a certain number of those most completely affected by it to separate from the English Church and join the communion of Rome. But the larger portion of them contrived to find in the elasticity of the English formulæ a means of reconciling their conscience to remaining within their own Church, and after a period of trouble and unpopularity succeeded in gradually establishing their position. Their theories were indeed such as to attract to their side almost inevitably a large support among the clergy, and even among such of the laity as were more inclined to be governed by sentiment than by reason. The substitution of dogma for religion ; the desire for certainty resting upon authority, and the consequent relaxation of the trouble of forming opinions ; the idea of Catholic unity, in itself so grand and so capable of attracting minds of a very high order ; the appeal to the senses and to the means of gratifying æsthetic tastes offered by ornate services ; the introduction of the supernatural in the perpetual miracle of the real presence,—all told strongly in their favour. Intellectual idleness, the love of beauty, and the pleasure felt in immediate intercourse with the unseen were all alike gratified ; while to the clergy themselves no theory could be more attractive than one which endows them with special and almost supernatural powers, and sets them apart, irrespective of their own characters or gifts, as a special and sacred class. It has thus happened that, in spite of its early struggles, the movement has been to a large degree successful, and the theories on which it rested either in whole or in part enjoy a temporary triumph.

That the High Church movement should owe its success to its appeal to some of the lower and more general tendencies of the time, to the indifferentism and wealth of the laity, and to the obvious self-interest of the clergy, in no wise prevents it from having originated in the minds of most earnest and high-minded men. It was not at first confined to Oxford, but before long the vigour and ability of John Henry Newman, seconded by the earnestness of Hurrell Froude, the delicate and spiritual purity of Keble, and the learning and authority of Dr. Pusey, made that University

The Tractarian movement.

Origin of the movement.



its undoubted centre, and gained for it the title of the "Oxford Movement." Keble, the author of the *Christian Year*, though he had left Oxford, was, like Newman and Froude, a Fellow of Oriel College, hitherto regarded as the stronghold of Liberalism; and it may be presumed that it was partly a reaction from the views of Coppleston, of Whately, and of Arnold which drove them so vigorously along the course they pursued. According to Newman's own account, at the time when he began to issue the publications known as *Tracts for the Times*, which have given the movement its second name of "Tractarian," he rested upon three great articles of belief: The

Newman's three principles.

importance of dogma—that is to say, that "religion and dogma are one;" the existence of a visible Church, with sacraments and rites which were the channels of invisible grace—that is, that there is one Catholic Church, and one only, through which the means of grace flow; and hostility to the Roman Church, a hostility which by degrees grew weaker, till it entirely disappeared. The object of these Tracts, and of the numerous theological works issued by the school, was the establishment of the view that that system of the English Church which they spoke of as "*the via media*," was a real religion lying between Popery with its errors on one side, and Protestantism, liberal and anti-dogmatic, and leading, as the writers thought, to atheism on the other. With this view, the writings of the High Church divines of the seventeenth century were brought forward as expressing the real opinion of the English Church, the prevalent more Protestant view being regarded as erroneous. Antiquity, as explained in the utterances of the Fathers, was taken as the ground on which the English Church could claim to be the direct descendant of the one primitive Church; and every sign of doctrine or ritual, holding affinity to the doctrine or ritual of the more widely spread Roman Church, was emphasised.

At length, in 1841, Newman determined definitely to examine how far it was possible to hold the same doctrines as the Roman Church within the limits of the English Articles. The outcome of this examination was No. 90 of the Tracts. As the general belief was then, and is now, that the Articles had been drawn up in opposition to the Roman Church, it appeared to all those unaffected by the movement that this was an unfair use of the possible defects in the language of the Articles. When we remember the history of the Articles, and recognise that they were distinctly intended to be a wide and elastic formula, the basis of a national Church, incorporating as far as was possible all shades of opinion, it

Publication of  
Tract 90.  
1841.



is difficult to say that the meaning given them in Tract 90 is untenable. But it is obvious that if they may be stretched in one direction, they may equally be stretched in the other; and that if Anglo-Catholics can continue within the limits of the English Church holding nearly all the doctrines which our early Reformers disapproved of in the Church of Rome, they have no right to assert them as the sole doctrines of the English Church, or to find fault with those of different opinions who press to the opposite extreme the laxity of wording which is to be found in the Articles. In other words, if it be right to treat the Articles in this fashion, it follows of necessity that the Church of England is not a strictly dogmatic Church. Almost inevitably Tract 90 produced a great ferment of opinion. It was censured by the Vice-Chancellor and Heads of Houses in Oxford, the bishops generally mentioned it with disapprobation in their charges, the Bishop of Oxford requested Mr. Newman to cease from the publication of the Tracts. It was, in fact, the critical point of the movement. Led on imperceptibly by his logic, Newman's own position in the Church had become less and less assured. Already, before the publication of the Tracts, he had begun to question the catholicity of the English Church. Minds with less power of delicate logical discrimination had been pressing his own arguments to conclusions he was not yet willing to admit. The refusal of the authorities of the Church to allow that such doctrines as these men regarded as alone capable of rendering the English Church Catholic could exist within its limits drove them further and further on their course, and numerous individual perversions to Rome were the result. For several years longer Newman himself remained in doubt, but in 1843 he thought it incumbent on him to resign his clerical duties, and in October 1845 he finally passed over to the Roman communion.

Mr. Newman is so incomparably the most interesting person among the Tractarians that, although he himself repudiated the idea of leadership, and claimed the position of the chief author of the party only, to follow his career is in fact to trace the history of the movement. It seems difficult to deny that in passing over to the Roman Church he was acting in the only manner which was truly consistent with his principles. But such was not the view of the greater part of those whose minds he had influenced. With Dr. Pusey as their leader, they saw a possibility of still remaining in the English Church. As in the case of other movements within the Church, the growth of Tractarian opinions brought with it

The High  
Church under  
Dr. Pusey.  
1843.

much new spiritual life. It was at least a protest against the quiet acceptance of things as they were, another instance of the awakened sense of reality and duty which marks the time. As in the case of other movements, too, it survived chiefly because it fell in with very general and not very noble tendencies of the time, and harmonised well with class interests. But whatever may be the good that it brought with it, by its reactionary character, by the offence which it gave to minds of Protestant tendencies, and by the separation which it evidently implied between the secular and religious life of the nation, it raised a fresh difficulty in the way of re-establishing a really national Church, changed the Church of England more completely into a sect, and rendered more probable its ultimate separation from the State.

The administration may, on the whole, have the credit for the comparative quiet which reigned in the manufacturing districts during the year. Vigorous action had been taken against the late rioters. Feargus O'Connor and fifty-eight others had been tried with various success at Lancaster, in the spring, with the effect apparently of quieting for the time the movements of the Chartists. In Wales, the discontent, partially repressed in England, assumed a somewhat threatening form. What are known as the Rebecca Riots broke out in June. The form which these riots took was the appearance of armed crowds disguised in female dress, and bent upon the destruction of turnpikes. The claims of the rioters went however a good deal further, and seem to have been in some degree connected with hostility to the English Church, and the growth of Dissent. They demanded the removal of all turnpike gates, the abolition of tithes and of Church rates, and of the new poor law. Originally appearing in Carmarthen, where they took possession of the workhouse and were only suppressed by the employment of troops, the rioters re-appeared throughout North Wales almost nightly for several months. Hundreds of turnpikes were destroyed, insults and violent ill-usage were employed against the authorities, occasionally even murder resulted. Some sort of organisation appears to have existed, which publicly claimed for itself the command of more than 100,000 men. "If God spares her life," wrote some agent of the Association under the name of Rebecca, "she will work out the redemption of her poor oppressed children." Government however was able to suppress the rioters; a special Commission was issued for the trial of the prisoners, most of whom pleaded guilty, and the difficulty passed away. But in accordance with the growing recog-

Result of the  
Tractarian  
movement.

*True.*  
The Rebecca  
Riots.  
June-Sept.  
1843.

nition of its duties on the part of Government, suppression was not regarded as sufficient ; a Commission was appointed to examine into the causes of the discontent, and in the course of the next year, upon its recommendations, the system of turnpike trusts in Wales was wholly remodelled. Provision was made by loan, and by charges on the rates so arranged as to fall upon the owner and not the occupier, for the gradual extinction of the existing debt upon the trusts. The management of the roads was then to be placed in the hands of county boards, consisting in part of representatives of the ratepayers ; the county would thus have the management of its own gate-tolls, which could be considerably reduced.

Rearrangement  
of the turnpike  
trusts in Wales.

But nearly all questions, whether of social improvement and order, of foreign policy or of religious growth, were overshadowed by the absorbing interest of the renewed agitation in Ireland. After succeeding in procuring the Catholic Emancipation Bill, O'Connell had raised the question of the Repeal of the Act of Union. He was then in the triumph of his late success, and was able to secure a considerable following of Irish members pledged to his views. The English Parliament had refused in 1834 to consider the question of Repeal, but had pledged itself by resolution to "apply its best attention to the removal of all just causes of complaint, and to the promotion of all well-considered measures of improvement for the benefit of Ireland." The resolution had been presented as an address to the Crown by both Houses. From that time the agitation for Repeal appeared to have died out. O'Connell gave his general support to the Whigs, attempting as far as Ireland was concerned to procure "equal justice," as it was called—that is to say, a Union of a true Imperial character, in which Ireland should enjoy the same laws as England, and the same freedom from legislation of an exclusively partisan character. The results had not answered his hopes. None of the measures of a conciliatory character introduced by the Whigs had been carried without considerable mutilation, nor had they been of that thoroughgoing description which O'Connell and those who thought with him desired. Despairing apparently of success in this direction, especially as the Whig Government, on which alone he could rely, seemed certainly on the point of falling, in the year 1840 O'Connell fell back upon his scheme of Repeal, and established the Repeal Association in Dublin. The movement seemed however to have little life. Week after week the Association met in the Corn Exchange, and the weekly subscriptions which were raised for the maintenance of the cause were received ;

Repeal agita-  
tion in Ireland.

but there was little enthusiasm, and the subscriptions were not large. An attempt made by O'Connell to rouse Repeal enthusiasm in the north proved a signal failure, and at the general election in 1841 less than a dozen members pledged to Repeal were returned ; O'Connell himself lost his seat for Dublin.

Towards the close of the year 1842, however, a marked change was visible in the fortunes of the agitation. O'Connell's old lieutenants in his campaign in favour of the Catholic claims had followed him into English politics, and had joined in his alliance with the Whigs. They now gave place to younger and more enthusiastic men who aimed at the fusion of all religions and parties in Ireland, and desired to sink all differences in devotion to the national cause. In support of this view the *Nation* newspaper was established, in which every topic which could tend to raise national self-respect or excite national ardour was treated with high ability. The writers were young men, Protestant as well as Catholic, of the middle-class and of good education. The best known among them are Gavan Duffy, Thomas Davis, and John Dillon. The effect of this paper, and of the feeling of which it was the expression, was very powerful and almost instantaneous. Before many weeks were over the Repeal rent had risen to more than £1500 a week ; and with the strength of this new band of partisans, faithful to him as a leader, though on many points disagreeing with him, O'Connell again resumed more than his old supremacy, and occupied a position even more threatening than during the agitation for Catholic Emancipation. A formal discussion held by the Dublin Corporation and the declaration by a large majority in favour of Repeal, added fresh strength to the movement. The organisation began to assume a national character. The Catholic bishops for the most part declared their adhesion to it, and the Protestant loyalists of Ireland began to feel uneasy that the Prime Minister was taking no steps to check it.

On the 9th of May the attention of Ministers was drawn in both Houses to what was going on in Ireland, and they were asked whether they intended to take any measures to suppress Repeal meetings and to maintain the Union. Sir Robert Peel gave a very clear answer. Quoting the declarations of Lord Althorpe in 1834, he declared that, though he deprecated above all things civil war, there was no alternative which he did not think preferable to the dismemberment of the Empire. The effect of this threat was merely to exasperate the Repealers, and to drive men who had hitherto held aloof from it to

"Young Ireland" starts the "*Nation*" newspaper. Oct. 1842.

Peel threatens coercion. May 1843.



join the national movement. It is probable also that the menace of armed coercion enlisted the sympathy of many foreigners upon the side of the Irish. At the same time, it almost inevitably obliged the Irish leaders to consider how far they intended to go, and there seems little doubt but that the more advanced among them contemplated if necessary an appeal to arms. But they were loyal followers of their leader, O'Connell, who, although he began to use language which might easily imply that he too looked to the possibility of armed resistance, never in fact intended to proceed to extremities. He had a well-grounded belief in his own skill in keeping within the law, and in the weakness of Peel when brought face to face with an overwhelming declaration of the popular will. He had already seen him yield upon the Catholic question, accept the Reform Bill, and show a tendency to change in his fiscal legislation. And O'Connell thought that he might safely continue to excite and threaten, sure at the last moment that his end would be obtained without bloodshed. The form which he gave to his agitation was therefore intended to show the vast and threatening amount of popular sympathy on which he could reckon. Meetings were held in all parts of Ireland so numerous attended that they were spoken of as "monster meetings." But crowded though they were, they were invariably orderly, the people frequently attending them parish by parish, headed by bands of music, and with something little short of military regularity.

O'Connell  
adheres to  
constitutional  
agitation.

The first blow struck by the Government was directed against the gentry who attended these meetings. O'Connell and his son, Lord French, Mr. Roche, subsequently Lord Fermoy, and several others—in all twenty-four—were removed by the Irish Lord Chancellor from the list of magistrates. But this attack was not very successful. The Irish gentry, though desiring union with England, were very sensitive to any signs of indignity put upon Ireland as a nation. They considered the removal of the magistrates as an arbitrary act of English interference, and a considerable number, headed by Smith O'Brien, resigned their offices as magistrates. Advantage was taken of this by the Nationalists to separate the interests of the Irish and English still further. The displaced magistrates formed courts of arbitration, which superseded for all members of the Association the ordinary courts of Justices. It appeared as though the nation, organised if not drilled, was already supplied with the materials of an army and arrangements for the prosecution of justice. The action of the

Removal of  
Liberal Irish  
Magistrates.

The Repealers  
form courts of  
arbitration.



Government in this matter raised a grave constitutional question. The magistrates could only have been displaced on the ground of having attended illegal meetings. Yet in what respect were the Repeal meetings illegal? The right of public meeting was accepted as constitutional. The Reform Bill had been granted evidently to the demands of public meetings; the Chartists had been allowed, so long as no violence occurred, to meet without restraint; the Corn-Law agitation was in full vigour. It was certain that so questionable a step would be taken hold of by the Opposition in Parliament. Lord John Russell, Lord Cottenham (the late Chancellor), and Lord Campbell united in declaring that assemblies for a legal purpose were not illegal; that the Act of Union was a legislative Act as open to discussion and repeal as any other; and that to assemble for the purpose of petitioning against it was not an illegal purpose. The Government were as yet unable to declare the illegality of the meetings, and contented themselves with defending their action upon the ground that the Lord Chancellor of Ireland had the right to exercise his discretion in the matter. Nevertheless, it appeared that practically the Government believed that their opinion made that illegal which high constitutional authority declared to be strictly within the limits of the law.

The second blow struck by Government showed that they were determined to regard the Repeal movement not as a constitutional agitation, but as an incipient rebellion. An Arms Act, regulating the possession of arms in Ireland, was already existing, but would before long come to an end. A new Act of a far more stringent character was now introduced instead of a mere renewal of the expiring Act. It encountered, as Coercion Bills have invariably encountered, a most determined opposition. The Whigs took up the question; it was fought at every stage, and upon every clause in Committee. Obstruction, strongly resembling that which we have of late years seen revived, was freely used; and it was only by the sacrifice of the greater part of the session to it that the Bill was ultimately passed by a majority of eighty. The prolonged contest over this Bill proved, if any proof was wanting, the difficulty of encountering the national demands of Ireland by Parliamentary means; yet it appeared almost as difficult to oppose them in any other way. The Government was, however, determined against compromise. A fair opportunity for conciliatory action was given them. Smith O'Brien, a Protestant Irishman, member for Limerick, and a man as yet a declared opponent to Repeal, brought forward, with the appro-

Irish Arms  
Bill carried.  
Aug. 1843.

bation of the Whig Opposition, a motion in the House for a Committee for the purpose of taking into consideration the causes of the discontent prevailing in Ireland, with a view to the redress of grievances and the establishment of a just and impartial administration. His speech upon the 4th of July was a full and temperate Smith O'Brien's speech. statement of the Irish claims. It may be taken as an exposition stripped of all exaggeration of the theory of the Repealers. Some of his assertions could no doubt be answered. In fact, the speaker did not assert them as being absolutely true; he declared them to be the opinion accepted in Ireland, and demanded a full investigation of them, with a view to the removal of grievances should they be proved. At the Union, he said, which it was impossible to forget was completed by very questionable means, and with an implied promise on the part of Pitt which he could not perform, the two nations, by an Act of both their Parliaments, entered into partnership. The questions which could arise are these: Did the Irish nation thereby cease to be a nation? If experience proves that the partnership has produced disastrous results, may it or may it not, at the general demand of one of the nations, be dissolved? Had it ceased to be a nation, had it been incorporated with England, it would have come immediately under English laws and English administration. Yet in every important instance it has been subject to special legislation. Thus, while on every point on which English interests were served the unity of the nations has been upheld, the inherent difference of the two nations has been fully recognised when to acknowledge the similarity would have been to the disadvantage of England. The principle that the national Church should be the Church of the majority was set aside, and the Protestant Church of England, supported by payments from the Catholic people, was still upheld. And but a few years ago, disabilities of many sorts unknown in England were laid upon the Catholics. The peculiar English tenure of land, —the landlord and the tenant-at-will—though contrary to the feelings and requirements of the Irish, was forced upon the country. A Poor Law differing but slightly from the English Poor Law was hastily established on the recommendation of a single commissioner in opposition to the careful recommendations of those who knew Ireland best. And even lately alterations in the regulations of trade advantageous to the manufacturing population of England, but adverse to the agricultural interests of Ireland, had been thrust upon it. On the other hand, it had been thought necessary in the Reform Bill to establish a different franchise, to allow Ireland a different proportion

of seats. There was a different system of registration. When, after long contests, an Irish Municipal Reform Bill had been passed, it was wholly different from the English, and the municipal franchise was more restricted; while the whole period was full of instances of exceptional legislation of a coercive character. Was it possible, in the face of such facts, to assert that Ireland was the same as England, and that it did not retain its nationality? But, secondly, had the alliance been favourable to Ireland? The assertion was that that country was saddled with its share of payment of the National Debt contracted before the Union. The terms of the Union had left the Exchequers separate, but had allowed for their consolidation if at any time the national debt of Ireland should be in proportion of two to fifteen to that of England. The reckless placing of debt upon the charge of the Irish Exchequer during the war had brought that condition about, and England actually prided itself on its liberality in allowing the consolidation to take place. It could be proved by figures, as well as by the general opinion of the people, that trade had consistently declined. It was certain that the landlords and nobility had been attracted to the seat of Government, that absenteeism was the result, and the spending of Irish rent in England. The removal of all the administrative and fiscal departments to England had further lessened the expenditure of public money in the country. Harbours, better than any in England, were left idle and deserted. The application of the economic law of *laissez faire* had induced the Government to refuse all assistance in the way of guarantee for the construction of railroads, the first necessity for opening up the resources of the country. The very concessions made had been grudgingly used; scarcely any Catholics had been admitted to office; all the high places in the administration were occupied by Englishmen. As a general consequence Ireland was in a state of misery unequalled in the world. Wages were two or three shillings a week; rents so high that they were not paid, and could not be paid, were yet maintained, and the accumulated mass of arrears thus due made the small tenants mere slaves to the landlords. For the convenience of absentees, resident middlemen had been introduced, still further driving up the rents and rendering the condition of the peasantry still worse. The reports of the Poor Law Commissioners described the people as living upon the wild weeds, and upwards of a million were paupers. With such a condition before them, was it not natural and right that the Irish nation should express, as it was now doing, its almost universal belief that as the smaller and weaker partner it had lost unspeakably

by its bargain, and could look for some alleviation of its ills only to the hands of those who knew and sympathised with its wants? At all events, was there not here full ground for inquiry?

There was certainly an opportunity offered such as could never come again. But Sir Robert Peel was encountering that difficulty which inevitably arises from the determination of Englishmen to treat everything as a party question. He could not shock his friends in England by yielding to a demand which the Whigs supported, or refuse to listen to the pressure of the Protestant and Tory landlords in Ireland. Nor, of course, were the assertions of the Opposition to be taken without modification. Nor could a ruler, with a strong view of the duties of Government, be blind to the disorders which attended the movement in Ireland, or the apparent annihilation of the functions of Government by the power exercised by the Association. The difficulty which has constantly rendered the successful treatment of Ireland nearly impossible was there before him—the problem how at once to maintain the law and to satisfy the lawless. It is difficult to see how any solution of this problem can be found short of the complete triumph of one side or the other; but Peel, still believing that a middle course might be found, and that the firm establishment of authority without exceptional powers was sufficient to restore order, refused the proposed inquiry, and suggested no new measures either of a coercive or remedial nature.

Peel refuses  
O'Brien's motion  
for inquiry.

As a natural consequence, the agitation in Ireland only increased. Ineffectual measures of repression, such as the Irish Arms Act, could produce no other result. O'Connell, certain as he said that Peel would not fight, continued to hold meetings constantly increasing in importance. In August, at Tara, the supposed royal palace of the ancient Irish kings, a meeting estimated by some at 1,200,000 assembled, and the Liberator, as he was called, declared himself in a position to announce that in twelve months there would be a Parliament in College Green. Later in the autumn (October 1), at Mulloghmast in Leinster, the same scene was repeated, with the addition that on this occasion a national cap, which his enemies chose to regard as a crown, was solemnly offered to O'Connell. Meanwhile the younger men of the party, although doubting O'Connell's courage, were acting as though a crisis was approaching. They continued to work at the formation of a nation within the nation. They carried on negotiations with their sympathisers, both in America and France, and persuaded

Consequent  
increase of the  
agitation.

Monster  
meetings.



their leader to allow a convention of 300 representatives to meet in Dublin. Thus, with its organised parishes, its courts of arbitration, its foreign friends, and its convention, the Repeal organisation seemed to possess the germs at all events of an army, a judicial system, a foreign policy, and a Parliament. At length, on the 8th of October, the monster meetings were to be closed by an assembly of unusual completeness at Clontarf. Steps had for some time been taken by the Government to increase the strength of the army and of the fortifications in the country, and it was whispered that the Clontarf meeting would be forbidden. With questionable justice, the proclamation to this effect was delayed till the very day before the meeting was to assemble. When at length it was issued, it appeared as though the moment contemplated by O'Connell in many of his speeches had arrived—the moment at which constitutional action, assaulted by the arms of authority, was to give place to sterner methods. But O'Connell had never intended to proceed to extremities. He at once ordered the postponement of the meeting in obedience to the proclamation; and his more energetic followers, though bitterly disappointed, thought it right to avoid a disruption of the party, and still to trust to their leader. It was only by their most vigorous exertions that those who were crowding to the place of rendezvous were kept back, and a scene of bloodshed avoided, which the presence of troops and artillery at Clontarf would have rendered inevitable had the crowd assembled.

A week after the suppression of the meeting the blow was followed up by the arrest of O'Connell himself, his son John, and several others of the more prominent speakers and writers of his party. They were charged with conspiracy, “with having unlawfully, maliciously, and seditiously combined for the purpose of raising discontent among her Majesty's subjects, and in opposition to the Government, with stirring up ill-will between her Majesty's subjects, with exciting disaffection in the army, with assembling in large meetings for the purpose of intimidation, and with bringing hatred and contempt upon the Courts of law.” It was a hazardous charge to bring. That some of the acts of the Association might be illegal was probable enough. To prove a conspiracy in any but the most extremely technical sense seemed almost impossible. Nor did it seem probable that any jury of Irishmen fairly collected would be induced to find the accused guilty. But it can scarcely be said that the jury was fairly chosen; the lists from which it was selected were very imperfect, and the imperfection consisted largely in

The Clontarf  
meeting  
forbidden.

Arrest of  
O'Connell and  
other leaders.



the omission of Catholics. The imperfection was acknowledged ; but the Crown lawyers and the judges refused to let it stand in the way of the trial, and ultimately, after each party had exercised its right of challenge, there proved to be no single Catholic upon the remaining list. The trial lasted for more than three weeks, and was closed by a summing-up by the presiding judge, which had the character of a speech for the prosecution rather than a judicial balancing of evidence. Under these circumstances Government obtained a verdict, and three months later (May 30) the prisoners were sentenced to various terms of imprisonment and fine.

The verdict.  
Feb. 1844.

But there were certain technical questions affecting the legality both of the trial and the verdict which enabled the traversers (as the accused were called) to bring the matter before the House of Lords. Meanwhile their imprisonment began. The questions raised were the legality of the jury, confessedly chosen from an imperfect list ; the validity in law of certain of the counts of the indictment ; and finally, whether—the prisoners “having been found guilty under various counts, and sentenced generally for the aforesaid offences,” the sentence, which appeared not to define the offences for which the punishment was inflicted, was good in law. These questions were referred to the English judges, who admitted that there were errors in the indictment and imperfections in the jury list, but held that, as the Sheriff was not charged with partiality, the Irish Court was right in accepting the jury ; and that, as some of the counts of the indictment were good, the judgment might be supported on the good counts, and that, on the whole, there was no ground for setting aside the verdict of the Irish Court. From this opinion Justices Parke and Coltman dissented. The opinions of the judges having been heard, the House of Lords was called upon for its decision. It is usual in such cases for those members of the House alone to vote who have held judicial office. Of these there were but five. Lord Lyndhurst and Lord Brougham upheld the opinion of the majority of the judges, but Lord Cottenham, Lord Campbell, and Lord Chief Justice Denman gave their adhesion to the view of Parke and Coltman, and moved that the decision should be reversed. It was with some difficulty that the lay Lords, eager to uphold the verdict, were persuaded to waive their right of voting, and to allow the Court to act in accordance with precedent. But the question was finally left in the hands of the law Lords, the verdict reversed, and O'Connell and his friends set at liberty. As the majority in the House of Lords were opponents to the Government, it is difficult to determine

The verdict  
reversed.  
Sep. 4, 1844.

how far party feeling influenced the decision. At all events, though it was a rude shock to the Government, the failure of the prosecution had some effect in proving that substantial justice was to be obtained from England even in the most critical political questions. Though the technical victory lay with O'Connell, he was not able to use it. Devoid of high courage, his near approach to disaster appears to have cowed him. It is probable that he already felt the growing influence of the younger and more violent party which was to take his place, and feared lest, if he pushed matters further, the peaceful and constitutional method of agitation, which alone he contemplated, would be endangered. He was old too, and disease was creeping on him. Though the Irish question still remained the great difficulty in the way of English statesmanship, it lost for a while its extreme and dangerous urgency. On the other hand, the Prime Minister had also learned a lesson, and, true to his nature, was beginning to think that the time had arrived for retiring from his position of unyielding authority.

The session of 1844 opened while the trial of O'Connell and his partisans was still proceeding. On Irish affairs, though suggesting measures of a somewhat conciliatory character—such as a Commission upon land tenures, an improvement of the registration, and if necessary, a reform of the franchise—the Ministry in the Queen's Speech were therefore reticent. On other points they could speak in a tone of satisfaction and hope. Peace and friendship were declared to characterise our foreign relations, and the disturbances which had marked the preceding year had been successfully encountered. The offspring chiefly of want, they had yielded to an improvement in trade, and to a consequent increase of employment. For this improvement the Ministry took credit for themselves, tracing it chiefly to their new financial arrangements, which had also, in so far as they affected the revenue, been so successful that there was a considerable surplus in hand.

In fact, whatever results attended his Irish policy, it was plain that Peel had secured a great victory as a financier. Feeling that this was his strongest point, it was natural that it should influence his action, and through him the action of Parliament. For the next few years financial questions come constantly to the front. It was through them that the Minister looked to remove the discontent in the country, at the bottom of which lay want of employment. His mind was rapidly moving forward towards the idea that employment was best secured by lessening, as far as possible, the cost of production, an end attainable by the removal of all taxes

Queen's Speech.  
Feb. 3, 1844.

Peel's financial  
policy.

upon food, and of all checks upon the introduction into England of the raw materials, and by putting commercial transactions on as firm a basis as possible.

The Bank Charter had been renewed in 1833. By a clause in the Act renewing it, it was open to Parliament to revise or cancel the charter in the year 1845. An opportunity was thus afforded to Peel for attempting to remove

Reorganisation  
of the Bank  
Charter.

errors in the system of the currency, which had more than once produced disastrous results. The commercial history of the country had been marked by great alternations of prosperity and distress, traceable not so much to variations in the real amount of trade as to the over-use and sudden collapse of credit, as represented by the paper currency. A perfectly secure paper currency, payable on demand, would require that no notes should be issued except against the amount of bullion which they represented. In this case it is plain over-issue would be impossible, and the notes merely warrants for the purposes of easier transference and carriage. An over-issue of paper money is the creation of a larger amount of currency than is actually required. The currency therefore, being too plentiful, becomes cheap; and that part of it which has intrinsic value is taken abroad to countries where it can be more advantageously employed. Over-increase of paper currency has a tendency, therefore, to drive bullion out of the country. But, being payable on demand, if the notes are presented for payment while the bullion has been chiefly driven away, a stoppage of their payment inevitably results, and a commercial crisis follows. Transactions in bullion are carried on chiefly through the Bank of England, which is therefore in a position to watch the influx or efflux of the precious metal. Failing, then, a system of perfectly safe issue of paper money against bullion only, it would seem to be desirable that the Bank of England, or some office corresponding to it, should have the sole right of issuing paper money, enlarging or restricting its issues in proportion as the influx or efflux of bullion proved that the whole currency was sufficient or insufficient for the national wants. But this was not and is not the case. Private banks had

Danger of over-  
issue of paper  
money.

the right of issuing notes as well as the Bank of England. It is the interest of these private banks to issue notes, because they are thus enabled with a small capital to obtain the advantages of a large discount business. When therefore, for any reason, a demand for money arises in the districts which they serve, they are inclined to go on issuing notes, either ignorant or regardless of the general state of the currency. At times when speculation is very rife, and when rising

prices induce dealers to buy with the hope of selling again at advantage, these private banks are always ready to advance their paper. But rising prices mean nothing but the cheapening of the currency—that is to say, prices rise because the currency is already too plentiful. The action of the private banks is therefore calculated to increase the evil, and to continue to drive bullion from the country. The attempt to realise the paper issued, which must sooner or later come, discloses the absence of the bullion on which the value of the paper rests, and widespread ruin is the consequence.

In all the great commercial crises these causes and effects can be traced,—in 1792, when nearly 100 banks out of 350 stopped payment ; in 1797, when, strengthened by political causes, they drove the Bank of England to suspend cash payments ; in 1815 and 1816, when 240 country banks were ruined ; in 1825 and 1826, when the loss of the country banks was so great that the issue of about £9,000,000 of additional paper from the Bank of England was necessary to fill the void that had been made ; and finally, in 1839, when disasters occurred which were the immediate cause of

**Necessity for  
restricting its  
issue.**

Peel's determination to seize the opportunity offered in 1844 of reorganising the Bank Charter. He had considerable experience to guide him. In 1826 it had been hoped that the prohibition of small notes, and the permission for the establishment of joint-stock banks, at any distance beyond sixty-five miles from London, would have done something to remedy the evil of recurring crises. They had proved unavailing. They had indeed been worse than useless. The ease with which joint-stock banks were formed had largely increased their number. Upwards of 180 banking offices are said to have been opened in the year 1835–1836 ; and their competition had gone far in the succeeding years to neutralise the efforts of the Bank of England to keep the currency at its proper level. In America, too, the system of free banking had produced the extraordinary result that all the banks of the Union, without exception, had suspended payment, and some of the State Governments had taken advantage of the crisis to repudiate their debts. It seemed clear that the only reason why England had not suffered in the same way was the unique position of the Bank of England in London, where the greater part of the national business

**The Currency  
Bill.  
May 1844.**

was transacted. It was upon this experience that Peel founded his Bill. Though it would have been impossible to carry a Bill entirely depriving private or joint-stock banks of the right of issue, it was not impossible to restrict their use of it. The establishment of an issue office, upon the principle



of issuing against bullion only, would have been a more stringent measure than was necessary ; but something like it was desirable. Peel therefore proposed that the ordinary banking business of the Bank of England should be entirely separated from the issue department, and left, as in the case of any other bank, to the discretion of the directors ; that the issue department should be allowed to put out notes to the amount of £14,000,000 against securities—£11,000,000 and upwards of these securities being a loan to Government ; that any issue beyond this sum should be only allowed against bullion actually in the possession of the Bank. With regard to the most important portion of the paper currency, something closely approaching to absolute security was thus obtained. With regard to private banks, it was proposed that their future issue should be limited to the average amount of the circulation of each during the twelve months preceding the 30th of April 1844, and that no new bank of issue should be established. Thus, not only was the issue restricted, but, as from time to time banks ceased to exist, the centralisation of the system in the hands of the Bank of England became, and still becomes, more perfect.

It was not without considerable opposition that these proposals were formed into a Bill and carried. They have ever since been subject to much criticism. As a matter of fact, on the several occasions when commercial crises have arisen, the limitation of the power of issue imposed by the charter upon the Bank of England has been of necessity broken through. It can therefore be plausibly argued that the restriction is a useless one. It is also urged that there is no necessity for a large reserve, or for keeping up the reserve in time of pressure by a very high rate of discount, because as soon as gold is wanted in England—that is, as soon as it rises in price—it is certain to be immediately supplied from foreign countries ; while the difficulties put in the way of obtaining advances from the Bank, just at the very time when a little relaxation would tide over the difficulty till the gold arrived, has the effect of needlessly intensifying the crisis. On the whole, however, the best financial authorities appear to agree that the security given to the Bank by the law of 1844, and the confidence thus engendered, whether reasonable or not, is of the greatest value.

A second great financial measure speaks well for the recovery of trade, and the confidence reposed in the Prime Minister. The price of the funds rose so much above par that the Chancellor of the Exchequer thought it possible to lower the interest of a large proportion of the public debt. He therefore

*Objections to the  
Currency Bill.*

*Reduction of  
the three and a  
half Consols.  
March 1844.*



proposed, with the almost unanimous approval of the House, that funds amounting on the whole to £250,000,000, and paying three and a half per cent. per annum interest, should for the next ten years, till October 1854, bear interest at three and a quarter, and after 1854 at three per cent. only. The amount saved would be £625,000 a year, increased after 1854 to an annual saving of £1,250,000. A limit was fixed within which the present holders of this stock might express their dissent to the change, and be paid off. But the repayment of only £247,000 was in fact claimed. The causes for the abundance of capital, which rendered the operation so easy, were probably a revival of trade throughout Europe as well as in England, which induced foreign capital to seek investment here; the renewed vigour and success of our foreign trade; and a disinclination on the part of English capitalists to invest in foreign speculation, especially in America, where the financial catastrophes of late years had much shaken credit.

The credit of the Government would certainly not have been sufficiently good to enable it to carry through this conversion, had not the Budget of the preceding year proved a success. The Chancellor of the Exchequer had promised a surplus, and when he introduced his Budget he was able to fulfil this promise. The receipts had during the last year exceeded the estimates under nearly every head. The income-tax did not appear to have lessened the assessed taxes, as had been feared. The customs upon articles of consumption among the poor had increased—a hopeful sign of returning prosperity; and, on the whole, after making due provision for meeting the deficit of the last year, there appeared to be a final surplus of £1,400,000. For the coming year there was an estimated revenue of £51,790,000. The expenditure, after including the payment of those who dissented to the conversion of the three and a half per cent. stock, and certain other extraordinary charges, was estimated at a sum which left a clear surplus of £2,376,900. Mr. Goulburn and his colleagues did not think it advisable to make a very complete use of the surplus in their hands. The produce of the income-tax was a little over £5,000,000. The question as to its continuance was to be considered the following year. If, therefore, they remitted taxes to the full amount of the surplus, even granting a reasonable growth in receipts, the hands of Parliament would have been tied, and the income-tax must of necessity have been renewed. It was therefore proposed only to remit or alter taxes to the amount of £400,000. The Budget was upon the whole well received, though

*The Budget.*  
*June 1844.*

it was not difficult to see that the income-tax would be continued—a tax as yet very unpopular. But behind the Budget lay proposals, with regard to the sugar duties, which produced much discussion and party warfare.

It will be remembered that the removal of a great part of the duty upon sugar was an item in the Budget of the Whig Ministry immediately before their fall in 1841. The Changes in the sugar duties. gradual advance towards general acceptance of the free-trade theory—that the interests of the consumer are to be considered rather than those of the producer, was shown in the proposals which the Conservative Ministry now made. But as yet they were content with a half measure, and suggested, while considerably lowering the duties upon sugar, the maintenance of a differential duty of 10s. in favour of English colonial produce. There was a second point which it was thought necessary to consider. The suppression of the slave trade and of slavery must, it was supposed, be still forwarded by every possible means. The diminution of the impost was therefore to be confined to such sugar as was the produce of free labour. Hitherto a treaty, by which we were bound to treat Brazil commercially on terms of the most favoured nation, had prevented any measure of this kind. As that treaty was now coming to an end, it was proposed that, while the old duty of 63s. per cwt. was maintained upon slave-grown sugar, the duty upon free-grown sugar should be 34s., the duty upon colonial sugar 24s. the cwt. The subject became of greater importance upon the production of the more sweeping Budget of 1845. On the present occasion the proposal encountered strong opposition from the protectionists on the Government side, who considered the differential duty wholly inadequate; from the free-traders, who desired the entire disappearance of the protective duty; and from those who thought the attempt to discriminate between free and slave-grown sugar injudicious and ineffective—injudicious as at once closing important markets for our own produce, ineffective because, by ourselves taking an enlarged quantity of free sugar, we should leave a want elsewhere which would be supplied by the slave-grown commodity, the quantity of which would therefore be in no wise lessened. In spite of these various lines of opposition, the Budget, with its attendant proposals, was carried. The interest in the discussion lies chiefly in the growing strength of the free-trade party, and still more perhaps in the widening differences between the Government and their own more extreme supporters.

Though not of much historical interest, there is an incident of the session which must be mentioned as still further lowering the popularity of the Home Secretary, already discredited by his unfortunate expression in the debate with regard to the Factory Bill. A petition was presented to the House by the Italian agitator, Mazzini, who had taken refuge in England, and some others, stating that their letters had been habitually detained in the Post Office, opened, and resealed in such a way as to conceal what had been done, and then forwarded to them. Sir James Graham declared that he was legally allowed to give a warrant for the detention and reading of letters in the Office, basing his right upon a statute of Queen Anne, and a subsequent statute of George III. Leaving legal technicalities aside, there could be no doubt that such "espionage" was quite contrary to English feeling, and that the power, if possessed, was not publicly recognised. But the real burden of the charge lay in the suggestion that the letters had been opened not on account of any suspected difficulty in England, but because Mazzini was intriguing in Italy, and that the power claimed by the Home Secretary had been put in exercise at the demand of a foreign Court. Mr. Thomas Duncombe, member for Finsbury, took up the case against the Government, and again and again returned to the attack. Several very long debates were held on the subject. It was elicited that on the warrant of the Home Secretary letters were not unfrequently opened; that such had been the case during the Chartist riots, and in the case of Mazzini; but the secret Committee to which the question was referred, although their report was somewhat doubtful, seemed to acquit the various Secretaries of any misuse of their power. The power itself they regarded as legal, and probably in exceptional cases necessary. Upon this report, in spite of warm and determined assaults, Sir James Graham was able to take his stand, and to defeat all hostile motions.

The financial character which had marked the discussions in Parliament during the last session continued to be even more strongly observable in the year 1845; the gradual conversion of the Prime Minister and his immediate friends to the doctrines of free-trade became still more obvious, and was attended with an increasing mistrust on the part of his Tory supporters. The feeling was not allayed by a corresponding change in the Minister's Irish views. The peculiarity of Peel's mind was its capacity for growth in conjunction with a strong natural tendency towards Conservatism. He does not seem to have been gifted with

Graham accused  
of opening  
letters.  
Aug. 1844.

Characteristics  
of Peel's  
statesmanship.

foresight beyond the somewhat immediate future. Indeed one source of his power lay in the methodical manner in which, as he himself declared, he thought of one thing only at a time. The effect of these peculiarities, added to a certain want of geniality and openness which prevented him from taking his party thoroughly into his confidence, produced an unfortunate result. It gave him the appearance of duplicity, of accepting the leadership of a party based upon Conservative principles, and of using power thus obtained to advance measures which were not Conservative. He was of that class of statesmen who, after resisting as long as possible, accept and give expression to the ripened wish of the country which they govern. Even in the apparent triumph of his Irish administration, in the imprisonment of O'Connell, he had learned by the facts brought to light and by the astonishing unanimity which the monster meetings displayed, that simple repression, even if possible, was unwise. Already his determination to make some concessions in favour of the Roman Catholic priesthood had deprived him for a time of the services of one of his ablest lieutenants, Mr. Gladstone, who felt himself pledged to the opinions expressed in his book on *Church and State*.

The Prime Minister did not keep the House long in ignorance of the advance in free-trade legislation which his observation of the working of the experiments of the last two years led him to consider advisable. Ten days after the opening of Parliament he explained his financial projects for the coming year. They contained a continuation and development of the plans which he had advocated on entering office. The three years for which the income-tax had been fixed were expiring; the House, he pointed out, must now decide whether it should be continued as he had suggested for a further period of two years, or not. If the income-tax were dropped there would be a deficiency in the revenue, and yet it was the opinion of Ministers that certain additional expenses, especially for the navy, would be necessary. Under these circumstances he should himself advise the continuation of the income-tax. If that proposal was adopted, there would be, after meeting the increased expenditure, a clear surplus of £3,400,000. The application of this surplus was the chief point to consider. In the first place, with regard to the much-contested sugar duties, he proposed a general reduction; but at the same time the maintenance of the differential duty. He then suggested the abolition of all export duties, and also that, of the 813 articles of raw material taxed upon importa-

The Budget,  
Feb. 1845.

Retention of  
the income-tax.



tion, 430 should be exempt from duty; besides which, he would remove the duty from cotton at a loss to the revenue of not less than £680,000. These, with the remission of the duty on glass, of almost equal value, would make a total remission of taxation to the amount of £3,338,000, within a very little the whole calculated surplus. Of course the scheme was open to criticism on all sides. The income-tax was still to many highly objectionable, and the possibility of its withdrawal seemed to depend upon the success of a principle still somewhat questionable, that the remission of duty would be met by a corresponding increase of trade and wealth, and therefore of revenue. On the other hand, the maintenance of the Corn Laws with the protective duties of the sliding scale, and of the differential duty upon sugar, was contrary to the principles of the free-traders. The whole tone of the Budget, directed to the advantage, as it was asserted, exclusively of the mercantile class, and without relief to the agricultural interests, excited the anger of the ultra-protectionists. Among these, a small number of younger men, such as Lord John Manners, Mr. Smyth, and Mr. Disraeli, their chief spokesman, were beginning to take a leading part, and to express openly their mistrust of the Minister. While Mr. Miles, the acknowledged leader of the agricultural party, gravely pressed the interests of the land, Mr. Disraeli began his bitter assaults upon the Premier, denouncing the Conservative Government as nothing but "an organised hypocrisy." As, however, in spite of the qualified protection still maintained, the tendency of the Budget was evidently towards free-trade, and as the Whig party had now as a whole adopted free-trade principles, Peel secured large majorities. But those majorities were composed chiefly of his political enemies, combined with his more moderate followers, who could not shut their eyes to the extraordinary skill and success of the financial measures already carried out by the Government. Upon the other side, supported by the whole of his own party, and by those of his opponents who had not yet been fully converted, Peel was able to command majorities against the direct free-trade assaults of Mr. Cobden and Mr. Villiers. The Minister was thus to all appearance successful in maintaining the middle part he had chosen, and giving free-trade to the manufacturing interest while still largely protecting the interest of the land. Yet looking on the Budget as a whole it was not difficult to see that his mind was rapidly changing, and that the Corn Laws were principally retained as a means of keeping his party together.

The Budget  
carried in spite  
of strong  
opposition  
May 1845.



The Premier's relations with his party were no less severely strained when he introduced his Irish measure. In all summaries of Irish complaints, a foremost place had been occupied by the Established Protestant Church of Ireland. Subsequent events have shown that it was only one of many grievances, and that in all probability it was the land question more than the religious question which was really at the bottom of the discontent. But the evil was in the one case obscure, and in the other glaring. Peel had, however, learned to recognise both. The land question was already in the hands of a Commission, at the head of which was Lord Devon, which had been during the last year collecting a vast amount of facts, and which was shortly to produce its report. Meanwhile, pledged both by conviction and by party ties to the maintenance of the Protestant Irish Church, Peel had determined to attempt some alleviation of the evils arising from its monopoly, and to give some substantial assistance to that Church which included the vast majority of the Irish nation. It was too late to attempt what had perhaps once been a feasible project, frequently suggested, but always put aside before Protestant opposition, the extension of State support to the Roman Catholic clergy. The Roman Catholic Church itself was not willing to receive an assistance which would have hampered its independence. But it did not seem impossible to lessen some of the evils arising from the depression in which that Church had been kept, and to give it at all events some share in one of the great advantages of a State Church, the possession of a well-educated body of clergy. There already existed, established by the Acts of the Irish Parliament before the Union, and sanctioned by an Act of the United Parliament in 1808, a College at Maynooth for the purpose of educating Roman Catholics for the priesthood. But the endowment was miserably small. £9000 a year was granted, out of which ten professors, three of them professors of theology, were supported, at a maximum salary of £120 a year, and 250 students receiving £23 each. From this sum the dress, the scanty furniture, and the commons of the students were to be provided. The whole establishment had to be carried on in the most penurious style. The buildings are described as resembling a deserted barracks; the students were packed two or three in a room. But in spite of this a debt had been contracted, and the condition of the place was so bad that twenty-two Roman Catholic prelates had addressed the Lord-Lieutenant upon its deficiencies. Before the close of the last session it had been indicated by the Government that some

Opposition from  
Peel's own  
party to his  
Irish measure.  
April 1845.

Increase of the  
Maynooth  
Endowment.  
June 1845.

improvement of the educational system in Ireland, including an increased grant to this College, was in contemplation. The idea encountered the bitterest opposition. The Protestants of England, and of the north of Ireland, were up in arms. Churchmen, already viewing with angry terror the Romanising tendencies of the Oxford School, joined with Dissenters in the "No Popery" cry. The Tories, eager for the monopoly of the English Church, added their political objections. Petitions came in on all sides against the intended measure. It is related that when Peel rose in April to ask leave to bring in the Bill, the Speaker called for the petitions against it, and immediately nearly the whole body of Peel's own party rose to present them, amid the laughter of the Opposition. He, however, persisted. Having described the present wretched circumstances of the College, he placed before the House two courses, either the entire repudiation of the grant, trusting the maintenance of the College to voluntary effort, or a considerable addition to the public assistance given it. In words which sounded somewhat strange from his lips, he declared his belief that Ireland was to be won only by concession and kindness, and strongly recommended the adoption of the second course. His definite proposal was to increase the grant to £20,000 a year, with an immediate gift of £30,000 for the purposes of building. Few questions have produced longer or more angry debates. Again, the Young England party, with Disraeli at their head, made themselves prominent. Again, words foreshadowing the coming revolt of Peel's followers were heard in the House, as Disraeli demanded the re-establishment of the proper balance of political parties, the creation of a real and legitimate Opposition, to be secured only "by dethroning the dynasty of deception, by putting an end to the intolerable yoke of Parliamentary imposture." In spite of this opposition, the Bill was carried in the Commons by large majorities, and, on being introduced by Wellington in the Upper House, met with the same success.

It was followed by a broader scheme for the improvement of University education in Ireland. Since the establishment of the National Board of Education in 1831, the elementary education in Ireland had been theoretically organised on the principle of omitting religion from the subjects taught in the schools, and leaving it to the various denominations to supply to their own children the religious instruction they required. During the existence of the so-called Charter schools, which had been established in the year 1733 for the purpose of proselytising, abuses of the most abominable character had arisen; vast sums had

Establishment of  
the "Godless"  
Colleges.  
July 1845.

been squandered upon a few sickly, untaught, and half-clothed children. Nor had other efforts at purely denominational education proved much more successful. But the new system under the National Board had met with rather marked success. At the close of 1844 there were no less than 3153 schools, and the number of children educated in them was nearly 400,000. The National Board had just arranged for the establishment of district model schools for the education of the lower middle-class. Government now proposed to complete the sequence of education by establishing free colleges, one at Cork, one at Galway, and one at Belfast, to be conducted on the same undenominational lines. These colleges, the establishment and endowment of which were estimated to cost £100,000 of capital and an annual sum of £18,000, were to be centres of instruction and not residential colleges, as those of the English universities. The existing University of Dublin, from its close connection with Trinity College, was practically a Protestant university. It was left an open question whether the newly created colleges should be incorporated with this university, or formed into an entirely new one. The proposal to establish the three undenominational colleges encountered warm opposition, not only from the Protestant supporters of Government, but from many of the Roman Catholics themselves, who agreed with their Protestant rivals that education without religion was worse than useless. The proposed colleges were in the course of the debate branded with the name of "Godless," an ill-omened title which clung to them. The Bill was, however, successfully carried through the House. But it has subsequently come to be the general opinion that undenominational education is not precisely fitted to the needs of Ireland. The lengthened rivalry of theological creeds has given to religious teaching an importance in the country which seems to put an obstacle in the way of the success of purely secular education. Even in the elementary schools where the two rival religions have been at all largely represented, it has been found better to establish two separate schools than to attempt any form of combination. The same reason has always rendered the establishment of a united university a matter of great difficulty. Nor can the several efforts which have been made to solve the question be as yet regarded as successful.

The introduction of these measures was not exactly consistent with the policy of the Minister on his accession to power in 1841. The firm suppression of political agitation, and immediate well-considered social reform in the shape of

No attempt  
at land  
legislation.

a change in the land system, would appear to have been his object upon entering office. If his imprisonment had gone far to thwart O'Connell's policy, the reversal of the verdict against him had been equally destructive to that of Sir Robert Peel. The action of the Ministry had been so far successful that O'Connell had lowered his tone, and the Repeal party, divided by faction, was for the time comparatively quiescent. But Peel felt that Government had been defeated, and had lost that mastery which he regarded as necessary for the proper handling of so difficult a question as the land. Sagacious as he was, and skilled in dealing with a problem immediately before him, he was not a far-seeing statesman. He had therefore, in order to regain his position, adopted measures of political concession, and neglected the more distant advantages which might have come from legislation on the land. But indeed it may well be questioned whether anything he could have done would not now have been too late. The session was scarcely over when information reached the Government of the certain approach of a terrible event which defied all calculation. The potato blight had made its appearance.

In Ireland a failure of the potato crop meant nothing short of famine. The report of the Devon Commission had made it abundantly evident that the land laws as enforced in Ireland had brought a large majority of the population to so low a pitch that anything tending to deprive the people of their habitual means of sustenance must produce ruin. The crime against which the British Parliament had been struggling ever since the Union was at bottom agrarian crime, and the result of extreme misery. Nearly the whole population was dependent upon the land for its support. The landlords were generally absentees, their properties either let to middlemen or worked by agents. The farmers, usually with very small holdings, were tenants at will, and it was the habit of the country that all improvements (and the word includes in Irish land-history the building of residences, cottages, and farm buildings) were carried out by the tenant, who might thus at any time be deprived not only of his holding, but of the capital he had invested in it, for the benefit of his landlord. And those landlords were not only frequently absentees, but the wild and extravagant life of the last generation had in many cases so embarrassed them that their property was virtually in the hands of money-lenders. To such men, to procure the rent at all hazards was the one object, and no inconsiderable part of the tenantry of Ireland was kept constantly

Poverty  
revealed by  
the Devon  
Commission.  
Jan. 1845.



under notice to quit, in order either that at every convenient opportunity their rent might be raised under the threat of eviction, or eviction actually carried out for the purpose of obtaining a higher offer, which the keen competition for land would almost certainly produce. Rented far beyond what the land would pay, obliged to spend upon their houses and other improvements the capital which should have been employed in the cultivation of their fields, liable to be suddenly deprived of their homes and their invested capital at their landlords' will, the Irish tenants were in a miserable plight. The land was wretchedly cultivated ; and deep indignation, followed by deeds of violence, was not unnaturally felt by every one driven from his farm against the successful competitor who had outbidden him. The Irish tenant farmer thus became not only the enemy of his landlord, but the enemy also of the more successful members of his own class. But the results of these arrangements were not confined to tenant farmers ; they passed on to the still more numerous class of labourers. The population of Ireland (about 8,000,000) was probably not larger than the country would bear, had the vast tracts of waste land been reclaimed, and the natural powers of the soil developed. But the want of capital in both landlord and tenant, and the low condition of agriculture produced by the existing system, prevented any large employment of wage-paid labour. It was almost a matter of necessity that the labourer should possess some little corner of land on which to raise food for himself and his family. The impoverished farmer took advantage of this necessity in the same way in which the landlord had taken advantage of him ; and the conacre system sprang into existence, by which modicums of land were let to the labourers either by the year or for one or two crops, at rents so high that, while it was scarcely possible for the labourer to pay them, if they were paid they were almost sufficient to cover the farmer's rent to his landlord. Thus for land let to the farmer at £1 per acre, the labourer had to pay at the rate of from £5 to £12, and the few acres thus held produced a total rent which gave the farmer the rest of his land sometimes even as low as a few pence per acre.

Tyranny of the  
landlords over  
the farmers,

and of the  
farmers over  
the labourers.

The land was thus covered in many districts with tenants and sub-tenants, alike unable to pay their rent and in the last stage of depression. The efforts made to change the system, sometimes undertaken in good faith, with the purpose of relieving the land of a superfluous population, sometimes merely with the object of securing better returns, had only added to the general misery. The system of



clearances had begun. Landlords were ridding themselves of their small tenants and consolidating their farms. A series of laws passed by the British Parliament had rendered the powers of eviction complete. Absolute masters of their tenantry, the landlords proceeded to turn them out of their little holdings, frequently without any compensation, or any care of what became of those who were thus rendered houseless. The mass of destitution is almost inconceivable, and as the evicted, in their dislike of the new Poor Law, refused to take advantage of the workhouses except in the direst necessity, every town and open estate was crowded with a wretched population, always on the verge of starvation.

The cheapest of all foods is the potato. When successful it yields the largest return per acre. The cottier therefore, or conacre tenant, grew upon the little plot, which was his sole hope of food, nothing but this crop, while the farmer in his turn raised his grain crops for sale or exportation to meet the demands of his landlord, keeping his potato crop for home consumption. It might be supposed that the labourer who could pay such high rent to the farmer might have found it possible to purchase upon emergency some other kind of food, but in fact in very many cases he worked out his rent and received no money. If his potatoes failed he was simply without resource. It is easy then to see how a failure of this crop could produce nothing but famine. In August the blight had appeared in the Isle of Wight and in Kent, and by the middle of September it was forced upon the notice both of Sir Robert Peel and Sir James Graham that the Irish potato crop threatened to be a complete failure. The attention of the Government to the matter was close and anxious. Scientific men were sent to examine the disease in the hope of suggesting some alleviation. Constant reports were sent in, and it gradually became evident that not only would Ireland be practically without food for the greater part of the coming year, but that the seed from diseased stocks would continue to propagate the blight, and that the next crop would also fail.

Sir Robert Peel had been for some time seriously shaken in his belief in protective duties. His experience of the elasticity of the revenue, derived from the success of his late changes in the tariff, inclined him to move further in the same direction; and, as usual with him, he was beginning to listen to the sustained agitation of which the Anti-Corn-Law League was the mouthpiece. As early as 1836 an association in opposition to the Corn Laws had been formed in London, had circulated tracts, held

Failure of the  
potato crop.  
Aug. 1845.

History of the  
Anti-Corn-Law  
League.

meetings, and otherwise advanced the cause. But London had proved unsuited to its exertions, and the headquarters of the agitation had been removed to Manchester, where in 1838 a petition in favour of the repeal of all corn duties had been adopted by a large majority in the Chamber of Commerce. The Corn Law reformers appeared to be undertaking an almost hopeless task. The large majority of Parliament, both Whig and Tory, were connected with the land, yearly motions against the Corn Laws were thrown out by overwhelming majorities, and the opposition of the working men themselves, at that time engaged in their Chartist movements under the leadership of Feargus O'Connor, presented a still further difficulty. But they persisted, and in 1839 changed the Association into the Anti-Corn-Law League, with a regular organisation centred in Manchester. Cobden, Bright, Potter, Wilson, and others carried on the work indefatigably. Twice a day for six years the Council met in Market Street, Manchester, to transact the business of the League. Tracts and pamphlets poured over the country. Lecturers went from town to town and village to village. An enormous hall was erected in Manchester. Lord John Russell's proposal in 1841 for a low fixed duty gave them further encouragement, nor could they doubt, when this plan was rejected, and Sir Robert Peel began his alterations in the tariff, that their arguments were making way. The agitation was redoubled. A vast free-trade bazaar in Manchester in 1842 produced £10,000. A body of Anti-Corn-Law delegates watched the proceedings of Parliament in London. Enormous meetings were held in Drury Lane Theatre, and in the open air at Bedford, Maidstone, and Carlisle. It was determined to rent Covent Garden Theatre for fifty nights, and to raise £100,000, and at length *The Times*, which had constantly opposed the agitation, was compelled to confess that the "League was a great fact." Important adhesions were of frequent occurrence; and, gaining confidence in their success, the League turned its attention towards the next election, strained every effort to get free-trade voters upon the register, and to induce those interested in their cause to invest in 40s. freeholds, and to claim their vote for the county. The pecuniary history of the League was thus strikingly narrated by Mr. Bright: "In the year 1839 we first asked for subscriptions, and £5000 was given. In 1840 we asked for more, and between £7000 and £8000 was subscribed. In 1841 we held the great Conference at Manchester at which upwards of 700 ministers of religion attended. In 1842 we had our great bazaar in Manchester from which £10,000 was real-

ised. In 1843 we asked for £50,000 and got it. In 1844 we called for £100,000, and between £80,000 and £90,000 has been paid in, besides what will be received from the bazaar to be held in May. This year is yet young, but we have not been idle. We have asked our free-trade friends in the northern counties to convert some of their property, so as to be able to defend their right and properties at the hustings. This has been done, and it now appears that, at the recommendation of the Council of the League, our friends in Lancashire, Cheshire, and Yorkshire have invested a sum of not less than £250,000 in the purchase of county qualifications. Besides all this, we shall have our great bazaar in May."

A movement so vigorous, so constantly on the increase, was exactly calculated to influence Sir Robert Peel. To his mind, already wavering, was presented the problem of the approaching famine in Ireland. The distress was not confined to that country; it was visible also in Scotland, and to some degree in England. In other parts of Europe the disease had made its appearance. Belgium, Russia, and Holland had already closed their ports to exportation, with a view of retaining their food supply, and had relaxed for the time the stringency of their import duties. It might seem that the adoption of some such measures were more imperatively called for in Ireland than elsewhere. For side by side with the blighted potato there had grown an unusually large crop of corn of which thousands of quarters were weekly exported to the English market. The rent-paying crop was good, and was sold; the food crop had disappeared. Peel's thoughts were however turned in a different direction. The remedial measure which suggested itself to him was to lower the price of corn by remission of the protective duties. But Peel felt, and felt truly, that to relax the Corn Laws was practically to abolish them. In the first place it was a confession that the arrangements of his sliding-scale failed upon the first pressure; and secondly, in the face of the growing power of the League, a restoration of the duties would be impossible. A Cabinet was summoned on the 1st of November to discuss the question, and there the Prime Minister laid before his colleagues his own view of the matter. It became evident that there were serious differences of opinion, and the Cabinet was adjourned till the 6th. It was then proposed to suspend by Order of Council the duties on importation of grain, to summon Parliament immediately on the 27th to sanction the Order, and to declare the intention of the Government to modify the Corn Law in the next

Peel's  
conversion to  
the League.

Opposition of  
the Cabinet.  
Nov. 6.

session. Three Ministers only—Lord Aberdeen, Sir James Graham, and Mr. Sidney Herbert—supported these propositions. It might have been better if Peel had at once resigned. He determined however, in the hope that his opponents might change their minds, to await the next Cabinet on the 25th of November. Meanwhile, in concert with Sir James Graham and Mr. Goulburn, he authorised a very large purchase of Indian corn for the temporary supply of the immediate wants of Ireland. The energetic measures which he had contemplated were allowed to sleep.

The unusual brief activity of the Cabinet, followed by some weeks of inaction, was interpreted rightly by the leader of the Opposition, Lord John Russell, then in Edinburgh; and on the 22d of November he published a famous letter to his constituents in London confessing that he was a convert to free-trade. He declared that "the struggle to make bread scarce and dear, when it is clear that part at least of the additional price goes to increase rent, is a struggle deeply injurious to an aristocracy which (this quarrel once removed) is strong in property, strong in the construction of our legislature, strong in opinion, strong in ancient associations, and the memory of immortal services. . . . Let us then unite," he continued, "and put an end to a system which has been proved to be the blight of commerce, the bane of agriculture, the source of bitter divisions among classes, the cause of penury, fever, mortality, and crime among the people." It was plain therefore that the Whig party was determined to support an entire abolition of the Corn Laws.

At the next Cabinet, Peel adhered to the views he had lately announced. Several discussions took place. It appeared that the greater part of his colleagues were either convinced by his arguments, or, as in the case of the Duke of Wellington, regarded the maintenance of the Conservative party as all-important, but that Lord Stanley and the Duke of Buccleuch refused to support him. Determined not to undertake so important a question, and one which implied so grave a change of opinion on his own part, with a weakened and divided Cabinet, Sir Robert Peel thought it better to resign, and leave the repeal of the Corn Laws to be carried out by his Whig opponents. Lord John Russell was summoned to form a Ministry. He believed that he had succeeded, when the objections of Lord Grey to serve if Lord Palmerston was given the Foreign Office broke up his combinations, and compelled him to decline the duty of forming a Government.

Russell's  
manifesto on  
free-trade.

Peel resigns.  
Dec. 5, 1845.

Russell fails  
to form a  
Ministry.



There remained no alternative but to bring into office either the Conservatives or the Radical free-traders. It might have been possible for a Conservative Government to have been formed upon the grounds of protection, with Lord Stanley at its head. The Queen did not send for Lord Stanley, but Peel appears to have ascertained that none of his former colleagues would undertake the duties of Premier. The choice lay between himself and the Radicals. It was almost impossible to hesitate, and Peel consented to resume office on the clear understanding that he intended to propose free-trade.

There seemed every likelihood that the Prime Minister was returning to office with unexampled power. There seemed no probability of a strongly organised opposition. Though the Tories might differ from their chief on the great point at issue, they had felt so deeply injured by Lord John Russell's letter that there was little likelihood of their joining him in opposition. Such members of the Cabinet as still clung to protection had, by the mere act of taking office, deprived themselves of the power of vindicating their opinions strongly. Thus the Premier might have expected the support of his old partisans, though grudgingly given, and the full approbation of the Whigs and free-trade Liberals upon the point on which his mind was fixed. But the session, which promised to be so peaceful, proved to be one of the most tumultuous and eventful on record. Lord George Bentinck,

Peel returns to office. Dec. 20. a man who had been eighteen years in Parliament without making an important speech, but who was gifted with much courage and with considerable ability, especially for figures (an ability probably increased by his large dealings on the turf), appeared suddenly as the leader of a new party, the protectionists. At his elbow was Disraeli, who now found that opportunity for which he had long waited of taking a prominent part in Parliamentary warfare. He was too much of an adventurer to be recognised by the important country gentlemen as their chief. But while the noble birth, good presence, and high courage of Bentinck made him admirable as a leader of an aristocratic Opposition, the fire, the venom, and the acute Parliamentary tactics were supplied by his less distinguished henchman.

The speech from the throne indicated the introduction of further removal of protective duties, words which were well understood to mean the repeal of the Corn Laws. Sir Robert Peel in fact intended to effect their repeal in such a manner that it should be a part of the general system of free-trade, avoiding the appearance of a direct assault upon the agricultural interest.

Queen's Speech.  
Jan. 22, 1846.



The allusions in the speech were interpreted by the mover of the Address, and still further by the Prime Minister, while explaining his conduct in the late crisis. The leader of the Opposition followed his example, and explained the part he had himself played. A bitter speech of Disraeli, reviewing the conduct of the Prime Minister, likening it in its treachery to that of the Turkish Pasha who, when sent out with a fleet against Mehemet Ali, had joined him with all his ships—showed the temper which Sir Robert Peel's conduct had roused in his former friends, and fitly began the struggle which was to occupy the greater part of the session. The Address was, however, carried in both Houses without a division.

The ground was thus left clear for Sir Robert Peel to explain at length, on the 27th of January, the financial measures which he contemplated. He rested his action, firstly, on the abstract principle that protective duties are in themselves injurious, and can be defended only on some special ground of national interest or individual justice ; and, secondly, on the actual experience of the last three years. During that time he had largely modified the tariff, and remitted nearly all duties upon raw materials. The remission had been successful ; there had been an increase in production and in the revenue, a greater demand for labour, more comfort and peace among the people. In this course he meant to continue. On the remaining raw materials, which were only two, tallow and timber, he intended to make a considerable reduction, and to extend the same principle to manufactured goods and to corn. All duties on the coarser articles of wool, linen, and cotton manufacture were to be withdrawn, those on finer quality reduced, and on silk (the favourite subject of the illicit traffic of the smuggler) the duty was to be reduced from 30 to 15 per cent. A large number of other articles were to be subjected to the same process. The exhortation which the Prime Minister addressed to the manufacturers to throw no obstacle in the way of these changes, though they might seem to affect their interests, was, no doubt, rather illusory ; they were chiefly free-traders, and not likely to oppose measures carrying with them the removal of the Corn Laws. It was in this that the importance of the change really lay. Determined to repeal those laws, the Prime Minister did not, however, think it advisable to do so at once. He proposed that in February 1849, oats, barley, rye, and wheat should be admitted at a merely nominal duty, and that during the interval there should be a continuation of a sliding-scale, falling from 10s. when wheat was under

Peel's financial proposals.

Proposed Repeal of the Corn Laws.

48s. a quarter to an invariable duty of 4s. when the price reached 54s. He attempted to sweeten the bitterness of the proposition by the removal of certain burdens upon land. A change in the law of settlement, to prevent the manufacturing districts from sending back paupers to the place of their settlement in times of manufacturing depression, a concentration of parishes for the management of highways, and certain facilities for borrowing from the Government for agricultural improvements, were the advantages offered. In addition to this, the maintenance of prisoners, the expense of prosecutions, and the payment of workhouse schoolmasters were to be transferred from the counties to the State. The amount of money relief was calculated at about £250,000. In Ireland, the expenses of the constabulary, which were about £180,000, were in like manner to be transferred to the Treasury. His suggestions in fact showed that, alarmed at the Irish famine, and construing the late disturbances in England in the light thrown on them by that famine, he had become completely converted to the fundamental doctrine of free-trade, that the interests of the consumer should take precedence of those of the producer.

By the standing orders of the House of Commons, every Bill affecting the trade or religion of the country has to be founded on a preliminary resolution of the whole House in Committee. Very abundant scope was therefore given for prolonged opposition to the Government measures. On the motion that the House should go into Committee on the resolutions, the battle began. Mr. Miles, assuming for the time the leadership of the protectionists, moved the postponement of the Committee to that day six months. The protectionists had had time to organise themselves, taking as their centre a society which had been founded in opposition to the Anti-Corn-Law League. The real leaders were Lord George Bentinck and Disraeli; and such life had they infused into a party which had suffered under the disadvantage of being deserted by those to whom it had hitherto looked for guidance, that the debate was kept up for twelve days, during which 103 members spoke; and, though the Government was supported by the whole strength of the Opposition, in addition to such Conservatives as had followed Peel, the amendment was only rejected by a majority of 97. Between the 6th and the 20th of March the separate resolutions on which the Government Bills were to be founded were introduced. They were all bitterly opposed by Lord George Bentinck. As in turn stockings, silk, hops, timber, came before the House, he steadily fought the battle of

Virulent opposition of the protectionists.

the protectionists. The resolutions were, however, ultimately passed, and on the 23d of March the second reading of the Bill for the repeal of the Corn Laws was moved. Again there was a great struggle. Again the attacks upon the Prime Minister were of a very virulent kind; but again, though with a somewhat decreased majority, the Government was victorious. This was on the 27th of March.

Second reading  
of the Corn  
Bill.  
March 27.

But meanwhile an event was happening which was destined to throw the successful progress of Government into confusion, and ultimately to lead to its removal from office. The famine in Ireland and the misery which accompanied it had almost inevitably produced an increase of crime, and while busied in the Lower House with the financial measures which they perhaps unwisely regarded as likely to remove the pressure of famine, the Ministers had thought it necessary to introduce in the Upper House a stringent measure of coercion. Lord St. Germans, in introducing the Bill, had gone through the statistics of crime in Ireland. He had shown that what might be called exceptional crimes, including murders, violent assaults, firing into houses, threatening letters, and administering secret oaths, had risen during the last year from 1495 to 3462. They had been chiefly directed against men of comparatively low social standing, small farmers, tenants, and labourers, and as the Government connected them with the existence of secret societies, and as they had been chiefly committed in the night-time, the most important enactment of the Bill (which subsequently gave it the name of the Curfew Act) was that which conferred on the executive Government the power in proclaimed districts of forbidding persons to be out of their dwellings between sunset and sunrise. The right of proclaiming a district as a disturbed district was placed in the hands of the Lord-Lieutenant, who might station additional constabulary there, the whole expense of which was to be borne by the district. The disorders in Ireland were so terrible and so obvious, that Whigs and Conservatives in the Upper House combined in approbation of the Bill, and it was passed without difficulty.

Irish Coercion  
Bill carried in  
the Lords.

Although Sir Robert Peel was well aware that the Irish in the Lower House were prepared to offer prolonged opposition to the Bill, he believed—misled by its reception in the Upper House—that the support of Whigs and Conservatives combined would be given to him, and that he would find it a comparatively easy matter to pass the Bill recommended in the

Opposition to  
it in the  
Commons.

Queen's Speech and already somewhat unduly delayed. Immediately that the second reading of the Corn Bill had been accepted he therefore, through Sir James Graham, introduced the Coercion Bill. He expected, no doubt, to have been able to get it through the House, in some of its more important stages at all events, before the Easter recess, and, thinking it a matter of great importance, was willing to postpone the completion of the Corn Bill, of which he now felt tolerably sure, for the short time which might be necessary. It was a fatal miscalculation. He was in the awkward predicament of having but a very small body of personal followers, and of being able to secure majorities only by the support of the various sections of his opponents, and this support could only be secured upon conditions. The protectionists were willing and eager to vote for the Coercion Act, if it was given precedence to everything else, and was hurried forward as a matter of extreme urgency. The Whigs and free-traders were upon the same terms willing to vote for the Corn Bill, but were determined to oppose the Coercion Act unless their favourite measure

Deadlock  
caused by the  
attempt to pass  
both Bills  
together.

was allowed to be at once completed. It was out of the power of the Government, when once the Coercion Act had been introduced, to fulfil the conditions of either one party or the other. It only let free the flood of Irish eloquence, and gave room for that policy of obstruction which had already been conceived. Rapidity was out of the question ; for while Bentinck and his followers clamoured for the postponement of the Corn Bill, the Whigs in order to secure its precedence supported the obstruction of the Irish by every means in their power. The Easter recess arrived, and the Coercion Bill had not yet passed its first reading. Nay, more, a whole week after the recess went by without either Bill being advanced a step. Nor was it till the 1st of May (or rather at two o'clock on the 2d) that the division on the first reading of the Coercion Bill took place, and the Government carried it by a majority of 274 against 125. This however broke up the deadlock. The Corn Bill again came forward for discussion, and finally, after another long and very hot debate, late at night on the 15th of May, the third reading was carried by a majority of 98.

Third Reading  
of the Corn  
Bill.  
May 15.

On the 28th of May the House of Lords, from whom much opposition had been expected, consented to follow the lead of the Duke of Wellington, and passed the second reading by a considerable majority. This rendered the final success of the measure certain ; the protectionists could no longer hope to resist it. As Disraeli himself writes :



"Vengeance therefore had succeeded in most breasts to the more sanguine sentiment; the field was lost; but at any rate there should be retribution upon those who had betrayed it." By hook or by crook some means were to be found to drive from office the great Minister who had offended the country gentlemen, and who had ventured to risk his whole political life in acting according to the dictates of his conscience. He had been guilty of the high crime of possessing a mind capable of growth and of learning the lessons of experience. With want of foresight, and of that power of leading opinion which is the note of the highest statesmanship, he may justly be charged. Of the credit of self-denying patriotism, in the honest declaration of a changed opinion, though it led to his own ruin, he can scarcely be deprived. The means of carrying out the contemplated vengeance were not at first obvious. In order to effect it some point of union between the Protectionists and the Whigs had to be found. There seemed much possibility of the two parties uniting in supporting a fixed duty on corn which several of the Whig leaders still preferred to free-trade, but Lord John Russell felt himself compromised by his Edinburgh letter in which he had declared his change of opinion, and which he thought precluded him from falling back upon the old Whig nostrum. It was possible that when the much-vexed question of the sugar duties came on, a combined attack on differential duties in favour of free-grown sugar might have been made. But Bentinck consistently declared that he could not consent to give up his support of British capital, however invested. There remained the Coercion Bill. But as both Russell and Bentinck had supported the first reading it was difficult to see how it could be used as a means of ejecting the Ministry. Russell, eager for party success, and not without a reasonable feeling that the newly converted free-traders were robbing the Liberal party of its natural rewards, found a way out of his difficulty in the remarks he had made when supporting the Bill. He had then said there was much he disapproved of in it, and he could now, as he thought, without inconsistency vote against it unless it were accompanied by healing political measures. Bentinck was driven to a more doubtful shift. He had declared that he voted for it on account of its extreme urgency, and had supported the Government on the belief that they intended to press it quickly through the House; in other words, as long as it could be used to postpone the passing of the Corn Bill. But several weeks had now passed over; the Corn Bill had been carried, the Whitsun holidays

Vengeance  
of the  
Protectionists.

They join the  
Liberals  
against the  
Coercion Bill.



had intervened, and nothing had been done to forward it. He therefore thought himself justified in declaring that the Government had either ceased to consider it urgent, or had basely neglected their chief duty of keeping order. It was to a House almost entirely hostile that the Coercion Bill was presented for a second reading on the 9th of June. The fate was a foregone conclusion; it was debated warmly and at great length, but an amendment moved by Sir W. Somerville that the Bill be read a second time that day six months was upon a division carried by a majority of seventy-three on the 25th of June.

Coercion Bill  
thrown out.  
June 25.

The resignation of the Ministry was a necessary consequence. Having fulfilled his great object, it was probably not without a considerable sense of relief that Sir Robert Peel, who had suffered much from the breach of party ties, and the violent assaults at the hands of his former friends to which he had been subjected, threw up the reins of Government. His resignation was not inglorious. On the very day of his defeat the third reading of the Corn Bill passed the House of Lords, and on the day on which he had to announce the dissolution of the Government, news arrived that the quarrel with the United States with regard to Oregon had ended in the acceptance of the English proposals without the alteration of a word.

The Ministry  
resign.  
June 29, 1846.

Sir Robert Peel had come into office as a financier. His success had consisted in the restoration of the financial affairs of the country; his fall had followed upon the complete exposition of his most mature financial views. The history of his Ministry had of necessity been chiefly a financial history, or where not strictly financial had been engaged upon those social and economic events which are closely connected with finance. The extent to which commercial enterprise had been restored is illustrated by the furious speculation in 1845 which is known as the Railway Mania. The introduction of railways afforded a new opening for the investment of capital; the success which appeared likely to attend them gave birth to a wild outburst of speculation. Unpaid-up stocks and shares in railways, not only unbuilt but not yet authorised by Act of Parliament, freely changed hands, and were purchased largely upon account by men without means, to be sold again upon the first turn of the market. Paper fortunes were rapidly amassed, to be afterwards as rapidly lost when the hollowness of the schemes on which they rested was discovered. In these speculations many indiscreet but *bona fide* purchasers were

Peel's financial  
success.

The Railway  
Mania.

necessarily involved, and the loss and distress were considerable. The number of schemes, even of a genuine character, was very large ; and the scene at the Railway Board on the last day of receiving plans to be laid before Parliament calls to mind some of the incidents of the South Sea Bubble. Before twelve o'clock the hall was choked with eager claimants for attention, each with his plan and specification. The crush was somewhat allayed by the information that all schemes brought before midnight should be duly attended to. But even after that hour projectors arrived in hot haste, flung their plans into the house, only to have them thrown back again into the street. As it was, nearly 800 schemes were duly registered. It is calculated that, besides the deposit paid, the liabilities of railways on their borrowed capital, on expenses already incurred, and on the expenses calculated in the new plans, amounted to little short of £600,000,000. To make the projects as genuine as possible it had been determined that a considerable deposit should be ledged with the Accountant-General, and so large was the amount required, that very serious fear, fortunately groundless, was entertained among commercial men that a money crisis would occur on the withdrawal, even for the few days, of so much of the currency.

Scene at the  
Board of Trade.  
Nov. 30, 1845.

But although in its main lines financial, the five years during which Peel had held office had brought with them the usual crop of foreign difficulties. An empire so wide-spread as England, and touching foreign nations on so many points, can scarcely be free from such complications. In India, with America and with France our interests had been seriously involved.

Foreign affairs.

The events following immediately upon the Afghan war, and the success of Lord Ellenborough against Sindh have already been narrated. The conduct of the Governor-General, though approved by the Ministry and lauded by the Duke of Wellington, was distasteful to the Directors of the Company. The mixed character of the Government of India was well suited to produce such a result. The wars in which the country had been involved, and the ostentatious conduct of the Governor-General, emphasised by the unwise proclamations which had closed the Afghan war, had so displeased the Directors that they made an almost unexampled use of the power vested in them, and recalled Lord Ellenborough without producing any definite charges against him. Their legal right was so clear that the Government, in spite of its strong disapprobation, could not avoid

Difficulty in  
India.

Recall of  
Ellenborough.  
May 1844.

ratifying their action. Sir Henry Hardinge, a soldier of some celebrity, and a member of the Government, went out to take his place. Lord Ellenborough may have been to blame in the warlike character of his Government, but Sir Henry Hardinge found himself soon compelled to follow in his footsteps.

The death of Runjeet Singh, the faithful friend of the English, had left his dominions in a state of much confusion, which was still further increased after the death of his successor, Shere Singh, and became so threatening that precautionary measures on the British frontier were necessary. At the end of 1845 the throne was occupied by a boy, Duleep Singh, under the care of the Ranees or Queen-mother. But he ruled in constant terror of a mutinous army and its restless and powerful commanders. Either, as was alleged, under the pressure of the army, or for the politic purpose of giving it employment, the Sikh Government made preparations to invade the British territory. Though repeated demands for explanations remained unanswered, Hardinge, anxious to avoid war and eager for the establishment of a strong Sikh Government, did not immediately march troops to the frontier, but repaired thither himself, ostensibly for the purpose of visiting certain protected States lying on the eastern side of the Sutlej. He was unwilling to believe that an invasion would really take place, and thought that the advanced posts of Ferozepore and Loodiana could hold out against any sudden assault. It was not till the Sikh troops had actually crossed the river with their artillery that the English forces were summoned from Umballah and from Loodiana. The Sikh army, under Tej Singh, having crossed the Sutlej and invested Ferozepore, advanced to the villages of Ferozeshah and Moodkee. It

was here that, after a rapid march, the troops under Sir Hugh Gough, Commander-in-Chief, first came upon the enemy. The Sikh army was entirely routed, with the loss of seventeen pieces of cannon. Three days later, Sir Hugh Gough having effected a junction with the garrison of Ferozepore, under Sir John Littler, advanced against the fortified camp of the enemy at Ferozeshah. Again, after very heavy fighting, victory declared for the English. Sir Henry Hardinge estimated the British forces at 16,700 men, and 69 guns, the Sikhs numbered between 48,000 and 60,000 men, and 108 heavy pieces of cannon. The victories were not won without considerable loss. Sir Robert Sale of Jellalabad and Major Broadfoot, one of the most distinguished of the political agents of the North-West, were among the killed. These two victories

*Battle of  
Moodkee.  
Dec. 18, 1845.*

necessitated the retreat of the Sikh army, which repassed the river. The Governor-General had, during these operations, put himself under the command of Sir Hugh Gough, and shared with him the honour of the victories. But the campaign was not yet over. The Sikhs did not yet abandon their design, and, finding themselves pressed for provisions, passed a large body of troops across the river, and moved towards Loodiana. To support the little garrison under Brigadier Godby, Sir Harry Smith was despatched. By able manœuvring he succeeded in effecting his communication with Loodiana, and on the 28th of January moved forward to the attack of the enemy, who had drawn up along a ridge near the village of Aliwal. The victory was complete; 52 pieces of artillery fell into the hands of the English, making a total of 143 since the beginning of the campaign. The left bank of the Sutlej was now clear of the enemy, except that they held a strongly fortified camp at Sobraon, covering a bridge across the river. It was determined to carry this by storm, and, Smith having rejoined the Commander-in-Chief on the 10th of February, the attack upon the formidable position began. The Sikhs, who were very strong in artillery, offered a desperate resistance; but at length the English, pressing them on every side, drove them in masses on to their bridge and into the river, which had suddenly risen seven inches behind them. The slaughter upon the bridge, and in the flooded fords, was terrible, and the victory again complete. The course of the English arms had indeed been strikingly glorious, and closed with a battle which the Governor-General described "as an exploit one of the most daring ever achieved, by which in open day a triple line of breastworks, flanked by formidable redoubts, bristling with artillery, manned by thirty-two regular regiments of infantry, was assaulted and carried." On the very evening of the day of battle the passage of the army began, and by the 24th the whole of the troops were within thirty-two miles of Lahore. There Sir Henry Hardinge received the submission of the Sikh Government, and dictated the terms of peace. He required the surrender of the territory lying between the Sutlej and the Beas rivers, the payment of a war indemnity, the disbanding of the Sikh army, and its restoration to the same form and numbers as during the reign of Runjeet Singh, the surrender of all guns which had been used against us, and the entire control of both banks of the Sutlej river. The young Maharajah was replaced on the throne under the regency of his mother. Some English troops were left in the

Battle of  
Aliwal.  
Jan. 28, 1846.

Battle of  
Sobraon.  
Feb. 10, 1846.



country, and an English Resident appointed; but it was distinctly stated that the internal government should be left entirely to the Sikhs themselves. Sir Henry Hardinge determined to give them an opportunity of saving the nation from military anarchy and misrule; but at the same time he let it be clearly understood that if the opportunity was lost the Government of India would have to make other arrangements. The Queen Regent was unwise in the choice of a Minister. She selected Lal Singh, her paramour. Selfish and vicious, he was quite unable to carry out the required reforms, which implied the disbanding of much of the old army, and the resumption of many grants which had been made to prominent and anarchical chiefs. The English felt that they were upholding by their arms a thoroughly bad governor. Sufficient cause for removing him was before long found. Cashmere, one of the outlying provinces of the Sikh empire, which had been ceded to the English to cover war expenses, had been by them given or sold to Golab Singh, who in the late disturbances had consistently urged the maintenance of the English Alliance. But the chief in actual occupation as Governor for the Sikh Government refused to carry out this arrangement. It was proved that in so refusing he was acting at the instigation of Lal Singh. So clear a proof of the duplicity of this Minister necessitated his removal and the appointment of an English Resident, with a sufficient staff of subordinates, to whom the widest powers of supervision and administration were intrusted. The officer selected for this responsible place was Henry Lawrence, who at once set to work to introduce reforms into every branch of the government, ably supported by a little band of officials most of whom became subsequently well known in Indian history. For some years all seemed to promise well, and it was in the belief that, though his first attempt at introducing self-government had failed, he had succeeded in rendering the British rule of incalculable advantage to the people of the Punjab, that Lord Hardinge withdrew from the Lord Lieutenancy.

The Ashburton Treaty in 1842 had settled the questions as to the frontier on the north-east of the United States satisfactorily, and although there were not wanting some who considered that the English Government had carried their conciliatory temper somewhat too far, the nation as a whole was pleased at the peaceful solution. But there was still a district in the extreme west where the frontier between the two countries was quite indefinite. The rapid development of the States rendered it necessary that some fixed line should be drawn beyond the Rocky Mountains

Difficulty on  
the Canadian  
Frontier.



as well as to the foot of them. Thus far the fourteenth parallel had been accepted by both parties as a satisfactory frontier in 1818. The country beyond, known as Oregon, was not at that time sufficiently in the occupation of either country to be included in the arrangement, and a convention was made securing the right of joint occupation to both English and American citizens. In 1827, when the question again arose, such difficulties were found to exist in the way of a final settlement, that it was thought better to continue the existing convention by a treaty terminable at a year's notice given by either of the governments concerned. As population increased and the territory became of more importance, such an indefinite arrangement became undesirable, and the attention of Lord Aberdeen had been directed, ever since the conclusion of the Ashburton Treaty, to the settlement of this further question. With a people so self-asserting as the Americans, and upon a point so beset with conflicting rights, it was not easy to deal. But the President, Mr. Tyler, had shown himself disposed to act in a friendly manner, and there had appeared, in 1845, as Lord Aberdeen declared in the House, a fair hope of avoiding war, and of closing the question by amicable compromise. But in that year a new President, Mr. Polk, came into office, a representative of the Democrats, and bound to show his sympathy with the somewhat encroaching and self-asserting character of the great party which had elected him. Within a fortnight of the encouraging declaration of Aberdeen, the inaugural address of the President was issued, containing an uncompromising assertion of the rights of the United States to the whole of the disputed territory. The warlike tone of this address, and of the expressions of public opinion which followed it, roused a corresponding feeling in England, and it was in the midst of enthusiastic cheers from all parts of the House that Peel explained that since the accession of the new President, nothing having been heard of the negotiation which he was now inclined to regard as hopeless, Government was resolved and prepared, after exhausting all efforts for peace, to maintain its rights. There is little doubt that the prospect of war with America had much to do with the more conciliatory attitude towards Ireland adopted at this time by the Prime Minister. He felt how great a source of weakness Ireland would prove if dissatisfied and upon the verge of rebellion. There was for the moment real danger of a war. But in spite of frequent heart-burnings, there is always at the bottom the strongest disinclination both in America and England to press matters to extremity. It is felt that a war between

Danger of war  
with America.  
1845.

nations so closely allied in origin, in language, and in manners, would of necessity have much of the character and involve many of the horrors of a civil war. Although the language of the Democratic party in the House of representatives continued to be angry and vehement, a cooler temper showed itself in the Senate, and, after much discussion, resolutions were arrived at and passed, which appeared to open the door to fresh negotiation. Aberdeen at once seized the opportunity, and before Peel's ministry was driven from office he was enabled to announce that a successful compromise had been arrived at. The point at issue had been the possession of Vancouver's Island and the inlets and islands immediately opposite to it. The continuation of the forty-ninth parallel would have deprived us of these districts, which, by every claim which can be raised to newly settled country were legitimately ours. The Americans, not uninfluenced perhaps by the evident approach of a war with Mexico, consented at length to accept the forty-ninth parallel as the frontier as far as the middle of the channel which separates the continent from Vancouver's Island. The boundary then followed that channel down to the Pacific. At the same time the navigation of the northern branch of the Columbia river, and of the river itself from its bifurcation to the sea, was made equally free to the citizens of both countries. The patience of the English Government, its firmness when negotiations were broken off, its readiness to renew them upon the first opportunity, deserved the marked success it had secured.

Peaceful  
settlement of  
the Frontier.  
July 1846.

From the time of the Reform Bill a close friendship with France had been regarded as the necessary policy of England. The establishment of the Orleans dynasty had at the time largely influenced the course of English politics, and it was supposed that the two constitutional countries of the west formed the natural counter-weight to the great absolute empires on the east of Europe. Louis Philippe shared in this view, but it was by no means thoroughly accepted by the French nation. The King, a man of astute mind, who, though his rule followed constitutional forms, was strongly disposed to rule as well as to reign, found it difficult to pursue a straightforward course. Though succeeding when the critical time arrived in maintaining the English alliance, he was on several occasions obliged to countenance ministers whose views were of a far less friendly character. As early as the year 1835 the English Government had found that the *entente cordiale* existed more in words than in reality ; and in the East, so opposed had been the interests of the

Difficulty with  
France.

two countries, that it was only under the pressure of the treaty of July 1840, into which the great Powers had entered without the co-operation of France, that the French Government had unwillingly accepted the settlement of the Egyptian question. In all probability it was the influence of the King himself which had alone prevented open hostility. The Guizot-Soult ministry, which had succeeded to the more warlike ministry of Thiers, though avowedly established for the purpose of maintaining the alliance, was strongly infected with the desire then prevalent in the country to act an independent part, and win back for France a preponderance in European politics.

While Palmerston was at the head of foreign affairs there was little chance that the estrangement between the two Courts would be allayed. He was without fear, and did not hide his fearlessness. He had been the author of the treaty of July, which had been a severe blow to the pride of the French. He mistrusted the genuineness of the French professions of friendship. He disliked Guizot, and was the uncompromising adherent of what he considered English interests.

Hostile feelings  
aggravated by  
Palmerston.

The accession of the Conservatives, though the objects of national policy were not avowedly changed, introduced a change in conduct; so much so that both publicly in his speeches and in his private letters, Palmerston thought himself justified in charging the Government with a readiness to sacrifice English interests for the purpose of maintaining friendly foreign Ministers in power. He instanced the acquiescence, on the part of the English Government, with the French acceptance of the protectorate of Tahiti. It had been twice offered to England and twice refused, but with the assurance that Queen Pomare might rely on English assistance against the interference of any other Power. None the less England had looked on calmly when Pomare was compelled, under severe pressure, to place her dominions under the French protectorate. But if the Conservative Government was at any time open to this charge, events took place in the island in 1844 which drove it to a firm and successful assertion of the power of England. Smarting under French encroachment, Pomare had ventured upon some acts of independence, trivial enough in themselves, but which the French attributed to the interference of the English Consul, Mr. Pritchard. A French ship of war appeared before the island. In spite of his consular immunities Mr. Pritchard was arrested, and the admiral proceeded to annex the island. This was more than the English Government could put up with. It demanded and obtained a disavowal on

Collision with  
France in  
Tahiti.  
March 1844.

the part of the French of the action of their admiral, and ultimately, though with great difficulty and against a resistance pushed almost to the verge of war, obtained a sort of apology and a promise of a money indemnity for the injured Consul.

But it was in Spain that the covert hostility of the two nations was chiefly displayed. The establishment of the constitutional throne had been the joint work of the French and English. But the cessation of the war against the Carlists had been followed by factious and party struggles among the Constitutionals themselves, scarcely less disastrous and anarchical. Two great parties, the Moderados and the Progressistas, disputed the Government, and had found support respectively in the Governments of France and England. The interests of Lord Palmerston and of Mr. Villiers, subsequently Lord Clarendon, the English Minister at Madrid, were decidedly with the Progressistas. As decidedly did the French Minister support their opponents. In 1840 General Espartero, the Progressista leader, secured the success of his party, and Christina, the Queen-mother, was compelled to withdraw. The young Queen Isabella and the Government fell into the General's hands, and he was made Regent. But only two years later an insurrection, which the French almost openly supported, put an end to his reign. Christina had found a supporter in General Narvaez, a man of cruel and absolute character. With his assistance she returned, the constitution was again reformed in a less liberal direction, and a law which had rendered the consent of the Cortes necessary for the Queen's marriage was repealed. French interest seemed thus for a while paramount at Madrid, and the obstacle withdrawn which had hitherto stood in the way of some matrimonial arrangements which the French Court had had in view for the purpose of rendering its predominance permanent.

As early as 1840 the question of the marriage of the Spanish Queen had become a subject of interest, both to the French and English governments. The first suggestion, which came from the side of Spain, was a marriage between Queen Isabella and the Duc d'Aumale, Louis Philippe's fourth son. The French King and his Minister saw that it was out of the question that England should allow Spain to fall directly into French hands. They therefore rejected the suggestion, but taking credit for this concession, attempted to obtain the consent of Lord Aberdeen to a stipulation confining the choice to members of the Bourbon house, descendants of Philip V. So unjust and unnatural a limitation

Rivalry with  
France in  
Spain.

Suitors for the  
Spanish Queen.



on the free choice of an independent Queen should have met with instant rejection. But Aberdeen, eagerly bent on supporting the *entente cordiale* with France, contented himself with taking up a position of complete neutrality, and, while asserting that the Queen's choice ought to be free, implied that England would make no opposition to a Bourbon marriage if it in no way threatened the balance of power. The pretension of the French Court to lay this restriction on the Spanish Queen was rendered particularly irksome by the limited choice afforded by the condition of the Bourbon house. It was impossible to suppose that the sons of Don Carlos, so lately in war against the constitutional monarchy, could be agreeable suitors ; they were in fact regarded as out of the question. The late King's brother, Don Francisco de Paula, had two sons, Francisco d'Assis, Duke of Cadiz, and Enrique, Duke of Seville ; but of these the elder was on every ground quite unfit to become the Queen's husband, and the younger was a man of wild and undisciplined character. There remained Count Trapani, the younger brother of Christina, a member of the Neapolitan Bourbon house ; and although he was under the disadvantage of being a Neapolitan, and therefore unpopular and despised by the Spanish people, he seemed to be the least objectionable of the suitors. It appears to have been agreed between Guizot and Aberdeen to favour his suit, and with this intention Bulwer was sent as Minister from England and Bresson from France. But although the Courts at home desired to act in agreement, it soon became evident that neither Bulwer nor Bresson were inclined to allow the rivalry of the English and French parties in Spain to be thus obliterated. While Bresson, who appears to have been a man of haughty and unscrupulous character, boasted openly of the triumph of French influence, Bulwer waited quietly till the overbearing manner of his adversary should alienate his adherents, and frustrate the attempt to force Trapani on the Queen.

It was just at this time in 1845 that Bulwer, while passing through Paris, was first informed of the intention of Louis Philippe to marry the Duke of Montpensier, his second son, to the Infanta, Queen Isabella's sister ; and in the autumn of the same year, on the occasion of a friendly visit of the English Queen to the French Court at Eu, the same plan was talked over. Guizot and Aberdeen had an opportunity of a personal explanation, and the French minister reaffirmed what he had already intimated to Bulwer, that though the French were desirous that both princesses should marry Bourbons, there was no

French  
proposals for  
the Infanta's  
marriage.  
Sept. 1845.



intention of arriving indirectly at the Spanish throne through the marriage of the Infanta. He added that Christina had already assented to that marriage, but that it should not take place till there was a direct heir to the Spanish throne. Louis Philippe also personally assured the Queen that this was the case, using the words, "that he never would hear of this marriage until it was no longer a political question, which would be when the Queen was married and had children." On these promises the Court and Government of England had fully relied. Yet within a few months Guizot wrote instructions to Bresson in Madrid which showed that he either had or pretended to have suspicions of the honesty of England. He directed him, should the Bourbon marriages be imperilled, at once to act directly and with vigour. The excuse for this conduct is found in the probability which at that time existed of a change of Ministry in England, and the substitution of Palmerston for Aberdeen at the Foreign Office. The change did not take place; nevertheless the transmission of the instructions to Bresson was shortly followed, February 1846, by a memorandum read by the French ambassador in London to Lord Aberdeen, which offensively suggested the dishonesty of England, asserting that France would hold herself absolved from all her engagements if a marriage with any one not descended from Philip V. became probable and imminent. The instructions and the despatch taken together amounted to this, that under certain circumstances of which France was the sole judge, all previous engagements were cancelled, and that the ambassador should if possible discover the existence of those circumstances. Conscious of his own rectitude, and relying upon the King's promise, Aberdeen disregarded the memorandum, no copy of it was given him, nor on his accession to office was Lord Palmerston informed of it.

Meanwhile in Spain, though Narvaez had been driven from office, his partisans, the Moderados, under the premiership of Isturitz, still retained power. Yet even they began to find their dependence upon France irksome, and awoke to the glaring iniquity of forcing upon the young Queen a husband whom she detested. They began to turn towards the English, and to revert to an old project which had already been once set aside, of marrying Isabella to Leopold of Saxe-Coburg. The ambition of Christina led her to support this match, which indeed offered many advantages. Personally well fitted to please the Queen, Leopold was connected with both the French and English courts, and his selection might be held to imply the desire of Spain,

Change of  
government  
and feeling in  
Spain.

Proposal for  
Coburg's  
marriage with  
Isabella.

while retaining her independence, to keep up friendly relations with both the rival nations. On the other hand, Louis Philippe had always felt the extremest repugnance to the idea. The brother of Leopold of Saxe-Coburg was already upon the throne of Portugal, and it appeared to him that the Peninsula would thus become wholly dependent upon England, if another cousin of Prince Albert's was placed upon the Spanish throne. Sir Henry Bulwer was informed of Christina's design. He was even asked to forward the proposition to the Duke of Saxe-Coburg, who was at that time visiting Lisbon. Uncertain as to the reception of the plan by England, but feeling strong sympathy with the Spaniards and their Queen, he thought it safe to adopt the declared position of England, and while not in any way pressing the claims of the German prince, to give what assistance lay in his power to the free choice of the Spanish Court. In so doing he was undoubtedly acting against the wish of Aberdeen, whose main object was the maintenance of close friendship with France. When he told him what he had done he therefore met with a severe reprimand, and found his information at once communicated to the French Court. The extreme frankness of Aberdeen certainly proved that England was acting honestly, and had no special candidate in the field; but Bresson at once took advantage of the incident, and while the English were still quietly relying upon the promises of France, succeeded so completely as to be able to announce to Guizot in July 1846 that he had arranged for the simultaneous marriage of the Queen and the Infanta with the Dukes of Cadiz and Montpensier.

The French arrange the simultaneous marriage of the Queen and Infanta.

Of this step Guizot approved, but some remnants of honesty prevented Louis Philippe from at once acceding to the plan. The friendship of England had been his chief support in the face of Europe, he could not but feel that the breach of his personal promise must forfeit that friendship. Guizot was still at work removing his lingering scruples, when the fall of the Conservative Ministry brought Lord Palmerston again

Effect of Palmerston's return to office.

into office. More than once, when in Opposition, Palmerston had charged the Ministry with truckling to France; his mistrust of the ambition of that country was well known, and his constant desire to maintain the prestige of England. There was good reason to think that he would seize the present opportunity, and press for the Coburg marriage. Had he done so Bulwer was convinced, although probably his opinion was erroneous, that the Court, Ministry, and nation of Spain would all alike have thrown them-

selves into the arms of England. But though inclined to push matters very far, Palmerston was always desirous to avoid war; nor could he willingly desert that alliance with France on which his hope of maintaining the principle of constitutional government in Europe chiefly depended. He was besides a man of strong prejudices and predilections. He thoroughly mistrusted Queen Christina, who had suggested the Coburg alliance; he did not altogether understand the change which had taken place in Spanish feeling; he was surrounded by his old friends of the Progressista Party, now in exile; he could not bring himself to believe that any plan of Christina and the Moderados could deserve his support. He therefore frankly accepted the neutral policy of the outgoing Government with the intention of supporting, as far as his avowed neutrality would allow, the claims of Don Enrique, Duke of Seville, Paulo's younger son, who was now accepted as the leader of the Progressistas. In accordance with these views he wrote a despatch to Bulwer, and communicated it to the French Government. It stated in plain words the indifference of England as to the Queen's choice, so long as the balance of power was untouched. A marriage with neither of the three suitors—Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, the Duke of Cadiz, or the Duke of Seville—appeared to him to infringe this principle. But he then launched out into a violent attack upon the government of the Moderado Party. It was an unfortunate exhibition of spleen. Louis Philippe, on the look-out for an excuse to break his word, found it in the fact that Coburg's name had appeared first in the list of suitors, though the whole tendency of the despatch was entirely neutral; and saw in the assault upon the Moderados, which he immediately communicated to the Spanish Ministry, a means of annihilating their incipient inclination to seek English assistance. Quite unaware of the effect of the despatch, the English Ministry continued to believe that the French were acting loyally. Even as late as the 27th of August, Guizot promised our ambassador in Paris that he would immediately write to Madrid and state that a marriage with the Duke of Seville would not be objectionable to France. At that moment he was well aware that the question was already settled, and only two days later it was publicly declared in Madrid that the Queen would marry the Duke of Cadiz and the Infanta the Duke of Montpensier at once and simultaneously.

Marriage of  
Isabella and  
the Infanta.  
Oct. 10, 1846.

So scandalous a breach of morality has seldom been perpetrated, even in the notoriously immoral sphere of diplomacy. To gratify dynastic, or perhaps merely paternal ambition, the King's plighted

word had been broken, and a young princess doomed to the certainty of a hateful and unfruitful marriage. It is possible to question the bad faith shown by Louis Philippe in this transaction, and to argue that he really believed that Palmerston was setting on foot a new policy in spite of the declaration contained in his despatch. It is impossible to question his want of wisdom. The cordial alliance of England had been the chief support of the Orleans dynasty, and it was only by the combined action of the two nations that they were enabled to exert influence upon the politics of Europe. The despotic Powers at once regained their pre-eminence, and in the coming crisis, in which all the monarchies of Europe were involved, the French King found himself without a friend at the time of his sorest need. A breach between the Courts of France and England became inevitable, the *entente cordiale*, of which so much had been said, disappeared for ever. It seemed not unlikely that war might ensue. Palmerston turned at once to the Eastern Powers, and clamoured loudly that the Treaty of Utrecht had been broken. An appeal to so time-honoured a document was ridiculous enough. It was more to the point that the dissolution of the Western Alliance at once allowed the destruction of the much more recent Treaty of Vienna. Freed from all fear of interference, the despotic Powers in the East of Europe declared in so many words that that Treaty was abrogated, and destroyed the little remnant of the Polish State.

Folly of this  
French  
dishonesty.

France left  
without allies.

Final  
destruction of  
Poland.

## CHAPTER III.

### LORD JOHN RUSSELL'S MINISTRY, July 1846.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Russell.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cottenham.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Lansdowne.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Minto.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Charles Wood.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Grey.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Palmerston.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Fox Maule.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Auckland.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	. . . . .	Sir John Cam Hobhouse.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clarendon.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clanricarde.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Campbell.

#### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Bessborough.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Brady.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Henry Labouchere.

The following changes subsequently took place :—

<i>Lord Lieutenant of Ireland,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clarendon.	}
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir William Somerville.	
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Henry Labouchere.	

[These were on the death of Lord Bessborough, May 16, 1847.]

<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Francis Baring, Jan. 1849.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Carlisle, March 1850.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Truro, July 1850.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Granville, Dec. 1851.

IT must have required some courage on the part of Lord John Russell to assume the reins of Government upon the fall of Peel's Ministry. In the House, though he might to some degree, especially in his financial policy, rely upon the supporters of the late Ministry, they were after all an Opposition; though the Protectionists had joined him in overthrowing Peel, they were opposed to him in the whole temper of their political views; while the Radicals, though gratified by his late adherence to

Difficult position of Lord John Russell. July 1846.



their free-trade doctrines, were far from feeling sympathy with the great bulk of the Whig views. Nor even, supposing that his position in the House had been strong, were the difficulties to be encountered slight. There was Ireland, with its increasing outrages, its increasing misery, its increasing famine. The famine had not spared Scotland; and the trade of England, which under the Peel administration had risen to great prosperity in 1845, was again falling into depression. There was disturbance on the Continent, and a threatened movement among the autocratic Governments of the east of Europe for the final destruction of the remnant of Poland, at which England could hardly look on unmoved.

Lord John Russell however had apparently no difficulty in finding men willing to undertake the arduous duties of the The new Ministry. Ministry. The Duke of Wellington was persuaded to continue to hold the office of Commander-in-Chief, without a seat in the Cabinet, and Duncannon (now become Lord Bessborough) made for a short time an efficient and popular Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland. The difficulty which had thwarted the Whig party at the beginning of the year had been the refusal of Lord Grey to hold office if Lord Palmerston came in as Foreign Minister. He could not persuade himself that the friendship between France and England, which he not unreasonably regarded as of the last importance in the existing state of Europe, would be safe in his hands, for Palmerston was known to have a personal dislike to the Orleans House, and to be actuated by a keen spirit of opposition to the French. But though he had, when in Opposition, more than once expressed somewhat strongly his feeling that Lord Aberdeen had unduly subordinated English interests to the continuation of the Alliance, Palmerston seems to have felt the substantial necessity of avoiding anything like a rupture; and by adopting in the main the policy of his predecessor so far removed Lord Grey's objection that that nobleman accepted the Colonial Office.

The consequence of Lord Palmerston's appointment has already been mentioned. Bound by his engagements to con- Difficulties abroad. tinue Lord Aberdeen's policy, he rejected the opportunity of securing influence in Spain by upholding the Coburg marriage, but was unable to refrain from severe strictures upon the Spanish Government and its action under French influence. He thus roused into activity the suspicious fear of the French King and Minister, who, throwing to the winds their former pledges, secretly and hastily brought their selfish policy to a conclusion in the Spanish marriages.

Yet though the outcry raised by the English Ministry and their friends who had thus been outwitted was loud, the pacific declarations of Palmerston on accepting office, as well as his own part in the late transactions, precluded the possibility of any serious breach between the countries. At the same time the irritation against France, and the condition of England itself, rendered equally impossible any active intervention in favour of Cracow, the absorption of which into the Austrian empire completed the spoliation of Poland. Protests and loud expostulation were the only resources left; and the Ministry in its foreign policy, and therefore in a more especial degree Lord Palmerston, fell with some show of justice under the charge of using strong language but failing when the time for action came; and the impression—a very disastrous one—began to gain ground that under no circumstances would England have recourse to arms.

But the management of Ireland was the first and most prominent work to be undertaken, for the disaster which had fallen on that country had now become obvious in all its terrible completeness. It was no doubt the apparent approach of famine, the wholesale blight on the potato crop, which had formed the chief factor in the conversion of Peel to free-trade. He had taken several well-considered steps to alleviate the threatened dearth. He had watched it anxiously, and had employed scientific men to inquire into its cause and probable cure. He had attempted to obtain sound seed for the coming year. He had advanced £100,000 from the Treasury for the purpose of drainage and improvement, and had purchased secretly and at the Government risk £100,000 worth of Indian meal. He had trusted to such assistance, small though it was, coupled with the lowered price of grain which he expected from his measures with regard to the Corn Laws, and to the energy of the people themselves, who did not yet despair. Though full of miserable forebodings, the peasantry had exhibited an almost feverish eagerness in planting

Renewal of the  
potato blight.  
Aug. 1846.

their potatoes for the coming year. But it was a late and bad season, and towards the end of July almost suddenly the terrible blight swept again over the country, and the air was loaded with the unwholesome smell of the decaying potato-fields. "On the 27th of July," writes Father Mathew, "I passed from Cork to Dublin, and this doomed plant bloomed in all the luxuriance of an abundant harvest. Returning on the 3d of August, I beheld with sorrow one wild waste of putrifying vegetation. Stupor and despair fell upon the people. In many places the

wretched men were seated on the fences of their decaying gardens, wringing their hands, and wailing bitterly the destruction which had left them foodless." The stories of the miseries undergone are heartrending. The most foul and least nutritious food was sought and devoured. Horses and dogs, seaweed, and even grass, were used to allay the pangs of hunger. By the existing Poor Law outdoor relief did not exist in Ireland, and the lately erected workhouses were objects of universal detestation. They were now besieged by clamorous thousands who lay by the roadside and died waiting for their turn of admission.

It was a crisis which moved all parties alike in England ; and the English people, who have never been wanting in charity, were eager in their desire to mitigate the terrible scourge. But the management of necessity fell first at least into the hands of Government. It has been the constant error of England to treat the Irish as though they were children, and by undertaking their work for them, by listening to their demands, and giving them concessions, to lead them to trust rather to the Government than to themselves. No doubt such treatment suited well the momentary wish of the Irish. But it fed the weakest part of their character, and fostered that deficiency of self-reliance which it should have been the first object of Government to remove. It was in accordance with precedent that Government, instead of applying a stimulus to independent action in all directions, now itself undertook to encounter the almost incurable evil which had fallen on the country. But at the same time, being under the influence of the strictest sect of political economists, it made a great parade of its non-interference with the ordinary courses of trade. The measure in which the policy of the Government was incorporated is known as the Labour Rate Act. In introducing it, Lord John Russell declared that he would not interfere with the regular mode by which Indian corn and other kinds of grain were brought into Ireland, or with the retail trade. The Bill established relief works. This Sir Robert Peel's Ministry had already done ; but those works had been stopped, and nearly 100,000 men who had been at work on them thus added to the number of the unemployed. The present relief works were to be set on foot by the Board of Works at the recommendation of the Grand Juries ; and to carry them on, Government agreed to advance money at  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent., to be repaid in ten years. To certain poorer districts £60,000 was to be granted. Thus the Government undertook to employ the people and to pay them, but to leave the supply

Mismanagement of the first efforts to relieve the famine. 1846.

of food entirely in private hands. The establishment of relief works upon sound economical principles must always present grave difficulties. To all appearance on the present occasion the well-meant efforts of Government did more harm than good. To fulfil the condition of non-interference with private interests, it was held that the works ought to be useless ; road-making was one of the favourite forms of labour, and the roads seldom led anywhere. To organise the relief a very numerous staff of officials was necessary ; it was found impossible to avoid gross jobbery in the appointments, or to secure efficiency in the 11,000 men who were employed. Useless and extravagant, the works brought with them even more disastrous results than a highly-paid waste of labour. It was found impossible to enforce good work ; the lightness of the labour and the certainty of the wages attracted men from their own necessary work, and the neglect of the tillage of the fields which resulted threatened to render the famine perennial. The ill-considered adherence to the principle of non-interference with the retail trade was equally disastrous. The food of the people having been almost exclusively the potato, grown on their own plot of land, a retail trade scarcely existed ; the weary labourer was compelled to walk many miles to procure his food, and as Government had declared in favour of open competition, that food was purchasable only at famine prices. Speculation ran riot, immense fortunes were made, and corn is said to have been shipped and re-shipped as many as four times on speculative voyages before it was finally parted with. It is true that certain Government depots of food were established. But again the system of non-interference rendered them of little avail ; competition with the retail trader was forbidden, and the food might be sold only at the highest rate. The number of men employed upon the relief works was more than half a million, and the cost to England was about £1,000,000 a month. Meanwhile the curse of famine was bringing with it the still worse curse of disease. A terrible plague, known commonly as the road fever, attacked the people. It found an easy prey in the miserably weakened people worn out by famine, and gave rise to sickening scenes in the overcrowded workhouses and fever hospitals and their immediate neighbourhood. And all this time the land lay uncultivated, and the repetition in the ensuing year of similar scenes of disaster seemed only too certain. The unquestionably good intentions of the Government had resulted in a serious aggravation of the evil.

It was in the midst of the excitement which these terrible events



had roused in the people of England that the Parliament met for its last session on January 19, 1847. As a matter of course the main topic of the Queen's Speech—the main topic of thought in all men's minds—was Ireland. And no sooner were the necessary preliminaries got through than, on the 25th of January, the Prime Minister introduced the subject in the Lower House. After a description of the miserable condition of the country and of the efforts already made for its alleviation, he stated his intention of producing certain measures, some of a temporary character to meet the immediate evil, others, as he hoped, of a more permanent character, to prevent its recurrence. He used language—and he was not alone in using it—which seemed to imply that he regarded the time to have arrived for a reconstitution of Irish society. A crisis had indeed arrived, and a state of things existed which, however it had arisen, was an indelible disgrace to the English Government. It is strange, after the speeches of Lord John Russell and Lord Grey in the summer of 1846, in which they clearly pointed out that the inherent evil in Ireland was the existing land system—the competition for land, the tenure at will, and the frequency of arbitrary evictions—that they should not have made use of the present opportunity for at least attempting to touch this part of the national disease. Probably the immediate horrors of the famine made them for the moment forget what had given the famine its peculiar virulence, and induced them, like unskilful surgeons, to treat the symptoms instead of the cause of the illness. All the measures which they intended to be of permanent utility were directed to a greater production of food and a greater employment of labour. The state of society was left entirely untouched; the relations between landlord and tenant remained in the same unsatisfactory condition; and the reconstitution of Ireland—which should have been the work of the Government after the most careful and long-sighted deliberation—was left to the landlords, who, taking advantage of the unutterable misery of the people, carried it out to suit their own interests, with a haste which was little short of barbarous. For their immediate purpose the propositions of the Government were not ill considered. The Labour Rate Act had proved a distinct failure. It was proposed now, setting aside the rules of political economy, to proceed in the way of direct charity. Relief committees were to be formed to receive subscriptions and donations from Government, and to levy rates. With the money thus obtained soup-kitchens were to be established, and food given to the famishing

Measures of  
relief proposed  
in Parliament.  
Jan. 1847.

Soup-kitchens.



inhabitants either freely or for some small payment. The donations from the Government were to be advanced by way of loan, but although the form of a loan was preserved, the repayment was to be largely remitted. It was also proposed to advance £50,000 to the proprietors of Ireland to purchase seed. In fact the Government proposed that England should, in the midst of a calamity so extensive, support the famine-stricken Irish. These propositions of the Prime Minister were accepted and acted upon with the best results. There was still some mismanagement, for the discontinuance of the relief works, which was to have gone hand in hand with the new system of relief, was carried out so suddenly that when on the 1st of May the works altogether ceased very few of the soup-kitchens were in working order. But as soon as the relief committees were thoroughly organised actual death from starvation seems to have ceased.

Permanent measures proposed.	The more permanent measures suggested were greater facilities in the advance of money from the Treasury for drainage and improvement of estates; the application of £1,000,000 to the reclamation of waste lands, to be divided into twenty-five acre lots to be ultimately sold to the tenants; the modification of the Poor Law, so as to allow of outdoor relief; encouragement afforded to the fisheries and to emigration; and finally, a Bill for facilitating the sale of encumbered estates. Of these Bills, the temporary measures, which assumed the form of a Bill for indemnifying Government for its past proceedings in Ireland and a Bill under the title of "The Destitute Persons (Ireland) Bill," were after some discussion carried. It was naturally objected that the Government was in fact charging England with the support of Ireland and pauperising the country; while by more than one speaker in the House the feeling that the landlords of Ireland were not doing their duty was very strongly expressed. But it was probably a fair
The temporary measures carried.	answer to these objections that the crisis was one of a wholly exceptional character, and that there was no possibility of allowing the slowly working principles of political economy to come into play; the necessity was immediate, and the remedy must be applied at once. On these grounds the House allowed the Chancellor of the Exchequer to raise a loan of £8,000,000, which, with the £2,000,000 already advanced, would be required to meet the necessities of the case. As a reasonable and almost necessary consequence of the evident necessity of increasing the supply of food in Ireland, and of the determination of Government to allow the supply to be introduced by private enterprise, it

was proposed to suspend for the time (whatever might be the subsequent course adopted) all restrictions hampering the import of corn; and the duties which by Sir Robert Peel's legislation were to have been continued till 1849, and even the shilling tax for the purpose of registration, were therefore suspended. But even when all duties were removed there remained a further restriction. The trade, by the Navigation Act, was confined to English shipping. It was of great importance to allow of immediate import from foreign countries, especially as the want of food was not confined to Great Britain, and any obstacle in the way of free importation might easily have diverted to foreign markets the supplies otherwise available. Upon these grounds, though not without considerable opposition on the part of English shipowners, the Navigation Act was suspended.

Corn and  
Navigation  
Laws  
suspended,  
Jan. 27, 1847.

In the course of the discussions upon these temporary means of alleviating Irish misfortune, Lord John Russell had expressed his willingness to listen to any plans, other than those of Government, which might be suggested, and Lord George Bentinck had early given notice that he had in contemplation a wide alternative scheme. In accordance with his promise the Premier gave Bentinck an opportunity early in February of explaining his plan. It was based upon the idea that what Ireland wanted was an influx of capital. For the purpose of introducing it and applying it in a useful manner, he recommended the advance by Government of £16,000,000 to the Irish railway companies. Acts had already passed Parliament for the construction of 1500 miles of railway in Ireland, but only 123 miles had as yet been made. He could not explain, he said, how it was, if population, as asserted by the chief railway authorities, was the first element of success, private speculators had not come forward to invest their capital. But the fact being so, he recommended that for every £100 spent by the companies £200 should be lent at the rate at which England could borrow it (presumably four per cent. or less) in aid of their work. The advantage he considered would be the almost immediate employment of 110,000 men, representing (including the families) 550,000 persons. He urged that the security would be ample, for that the railways would pay; that this number of labourers would therefore practically be supported on nothing, the many thousands (which he calculated at £200,000 a year) which their maintenance on the present system would cost the country would be saved, and the value of Irish land permanently increased by £23,000,000. Like all Lord

Bentinck's  
railway scheme  
refused.  
Feb. 1847.

George Bentinck's speeches, the address in which he recommended his plan showed great dexterity in the manipulation of figures, and completeness in the working out of detail ; but it was not a scheme which could possibly find favour in Parliament. It was in the first place entirely speculative. There was no proof, nor could there be

**Objections to it.** in the minds of most men under the existing circumstances much belief in the probability of the financial success of the railways themselves. It seemed a manifest injustice on the part of the Imperial Government to support so largely the interests of a certain number of speculative companies. The advantages to be derived from the plan, although indirectly the Irish people were to be benefited, came first into the hands of the railway companies and then to the Irish landlords. Even the labourers on the railroads might very probably not have been Irish, as the contractors would in their own interest have employed the best labourers they could get, probably men already practised in railway-making in England and elsewhere. The scheme attacked one of the first principles of the economists, that the employment of private capital should be left under the guidance of private interests. And indeed the remarks of Sir Robert Peel upon the plan seemed at once to show its futility. If an addition of £23,000,000 to the value of Irish land was to be the result, what could possibly be preventing the Irish landlords from themselves carrying it out ? On financial grounds, too, the Government refused to have anything to do with it ; already contemplating for immediate necessities, a loan of £8,000,000, they could not believe that their application for a second loan of twice the amount could be made without seriously disarranging the money market and hampering their arrangements. As a matter of course the plan was rejected by a large majority. Yet though financially and according to economic rules it was obviously absurd, it does not seem so certain, in view of what has been done in India under circumstances of a somewhat similar character, that a Government guarantee for a certain percentage of returns might not have been desirable as a means of attracting private enterprise. The state of Ireland was so bad, and as it has proved so permanent, that a considerable loss of money to England might have been well encountered for the sake of changing it. And in fact the Government seems to have been so far influenced by the belief that increased means of locomotion were of vast importance, that within a few weeks they themselves produced and carried a Bill, conceived in the same spirit, though of infinitely smaller dimensions, for advancing £620,000 to the Irish railways. The Encumbered Estates

Act, a proposal which had somewhat the same object in view, and aimed at introducing a more solvent class of landlords, was postponed for a future year, and when carried was not wholly successful in its results, since it placed the land of Ireland more entirely in the hands of those who were determined to work it for a profit, and rendered probably still more glaring the defects of the English system of landlord and tenant as applied in Ireland.

Encumbered  
Estates Act  
postponed.

In the same way the measure for the improvement of waste lands was allowed to fall through, and the only permanent measure which was actually completed was the alteration of the Irish Poor Law. Up to the passing of the Poor Law Act, introduced by Lord John Russell in 1838, no burden had been imposed on either the resident or absentee landlord. Subsequently landlord and tenant were equally charged with the support of the poor in the workhouses; but outside those buildings the destitute were supported by the voluntary charity, not of the landlord, but of the middle and lower classes. Henceforward, when the workhouses were full, the support of the destitute under proper restrictions was to be met as in England by a rate levied upon landlord and tenant alike. The Irish landlords made a powerful opposition to this Bill, urging that the land in Ireland was unable to support the poor, and that the whole rental would be thus consumed. It encountered a still stronger opposition in the House of Lords, where Lord Stanley failed to carry an amendment rendering it unlawful for a tenant-at-will to deduct any part of the rates from his rent, but proved unfortunately strong enough to secure the rejection of a clause by which when the rates exceeded 2s. 6d. in any district, the excess was chargeable on the whole union. That clause being removed, and the burden of the rates thrown upon the smaller area, it became the interest of the few landlords holding land in the district to get rid of the poor from their properties; and this undoubtedly had its effect upon the subsequent tendency to wholesale eviction. With this important omission, which the Government thought it necessary to accept, the Bill was passed.

Alteration of  
the Poor Law  
carried.

It was not only the Irish famine and the fever which accompanied it which had driven for the time both the political and social condition of that country out of sight. O'Connell, the great Liberator, made his last speech in February of this year, and died abroad on the 15th of May. In spite of the exaggeration and recklessness of his assertions, and of the personal

Death of  
O'Connell.  
May 15, 1847.



hatred and mistrust engendered by them in the minds of many Englishmen, he had even in his most turbulent times confined himself as he believed to constitutional action. He had been a great figure, not only at monster meetings in Ireland, but in the House of Commons. He had there been in close connection with the Liberal party. He was a man whom it was possible for a Government to take into account, and to treat as a recognised force in Parliament. He had moreover obtained, as no other man ever did, the love and command of the Irish people. His influence was supreme ; and even while pushing matters to such extremes that he brought himself within the reach of the law, he consistently upheld the necessity of peaceable agitation only. But of late there had arisen a covert opposition to him, centred in the writers of the *Nation* newspaper, and known as "Young Ireland," who believed that constitutional means had been exhausted and that more decided action would be necessary to gain their ends. The Parliamentary spokesman of this party was Smith O'Brien, its chief members, Mitchell, Gavan Duffy, and Meagher. The removal of O'Connell and the attempted substitution of his very inferior son John as the leader of the Repeal movement produced a complete split in the party ; and although Smith O'Brien was a man to respect and urged his cause with much ability, the English Government, freed from the commanding presence of O'Connell and aware of the divided state of Irish feeling, felt itself no longer obliged to adopt the same caution as before. Thus the claims of Ireland, and its wishes for a change in its social system, being no longer powerfully supported, sunk out of sight, and England was contented to act with generous charity indeed, but without intelligent sympathy for Irish needs.

The measures adopted by Parliament relieved the immediate effects of famine ; but they came too late to stop the famine itself or to alleviate the terrible scourge of pestilence which followed on it. The deaths from fever in the year 1846 were 17,145, in the following year 57,000, to which 27,000 by dysentery must be added. And though probably actual deaths from want of food ceased with the establishment of soup-kitchens, the loss before they were established, and the deaths resulting indirectly from insufficient food, and therefore classed as deaths by starvation, were not less than 6000 in this year. The details of the misery are beyond expression horrible. In one hospital in Dublin 12,000 cases applied in ten months. At Cork there were 147 deaths in one week ; and on one day there were 44 corpses in the workhouse. It was

Rise of Young  
Ireland.

Deaths from  
famine and  
fever.



impossible that such misery should pass by without demoralising the people. Robberies and violence increased; men sought admission into the jails by means of some misdemeanour. On the west coast the starving islanders turned pirates, and robbed ships in hopes of finding food in them. The hearts even of the charitable Irish peasantry seemed to grow hard under their misery, and often no pity and no refuge was offered to their starving and fever-stricken neighbours. Murders increased in number, and although in some cases the victims were small farmers, and the object robbery, the assassinations were more generally acts of vengeance upon landlord's agents and process-servers. To such an extent indeed had crimes of this description increased, especially in the counties of Clare, Limerick, and Tipperary, that almost immediately after the assembling of the new Parliament which met in November, Sir George Grey, the Home Secretary, brought in a bill of a coercive character, very similar to that on which Sir Robert Peel's Ministry had been defeated. It allowed the Lord Lieutenant to proclaim disturbed districts, in which the possession of firearms then became illegal, and to which he might send at the cost of the district an increased force of constabulary. The obnoxious Curfew clause was not however repeated, and an effort was made to counteract the open sympathy displayed by the people with the assassins by giving the police the right to call upon all men above 16 years of age to assist them in the pursuit of murderers. The Liberals had thus again when in office followed the line of policy which they had denounced when in opposition. Nor did they couple it with any remedial measure beyond those included in the temporary expedients of the former session. It was in vain that voices were lifted up in favour of some change in the land system, such for instance as the establishment of the Ulster custom, which implied fixity of tenure. Yet now if ever was the time when a great change of this description might have been carried through without difficulty. For not only had the late years of misery deeply moved the English nation, but the action of the landlords, left free to work their system to its extreme, had begun to excite the disgust of many Englishmen. It was not without provocation that the Irish people were apparently sinking into a race of lawless savages, or the younger more eager patriots dreaming of an appeal to arms. For many years the evil effects of what were spoken of as *Clearances* had excited attention. Lord Devon's Commission had mentioned them. Lord Grey had spoken of them with abhorrence. But it was to them that the

Increase of  
crime.

Coercion Bill.  
Dec. 1847.

The Clearances.

Irish landlords were now proceeding to have recourse. Deprived of their rent of necessity during the height of the famine, and saddled by the new Poor Law with the maintenance of the poor, they were determined as far as in them lay to restore their land to the condition of profitable property. It can scarcely be said with certainty whether Ireland was over-populated or not ; that is to say, whether the employment of the existing labour in wise directions would or would not have produced a sufficiency of food to meet the requirements of the people. But at first sight it no doubt appeared evident that the land was settled with a vast mass of pauperism, engendered by the fatal habit of subletting, and by the establishment of cottier tenancies, and that the only hope of restoring it to a remunerative condition lay in the large diminution of its population. The opposite view was somewhat speculative, and required a large and enlightened self-

Unutterable  
misery of the  
evicted.

denial leading to a complete change in social organisation ; the policy of clearance was simple and immediate. It is difficult to say that the proprietors had not a right to clear their lands, or that they were not even justified in trying to do so. But the manner in which they carried out their intentions and its fearful consequences form one of the blackest chapters in Irish history. The process of clearance continued during 1848 and 1849. In these years there was never a cessation of famine and of fever ; the earlier part of 1849 was, in fact, as terrible as that of 1847 in many parts of the island, especially in the west and south-west. Throughout the whole of these two years the people were in a truly fearful condition, and are described as "half-starved creatures everywhere in the fields, picking weeds or herbs to eat." The number of deaths from fever and its kindred diseases was indeed higher in 1849 than in the previous years, reaching a total of 123,386. It was upon people in this unutterable misery that the landlords had to act in carrying out their plan of clearing the land. Two or three reports from Captain Kennedy, an official of the Poor Law in the Kilrush Union, describe in a few words what was done. "In November 1847," he writes, "an immense number of small landholders are under ejectment or notice to quit, even where the rents have been paid up." Four months later we are told that some of those admitted to the Kilrush workhouse "were the most appalling cases of destitution and suffering" it had ever been the writer's lot to witness. "The state of most of these wretched creatures is traceable to the numerous evictions which have lately taken place." A fortnight later he states his conviction that "1000 cabins have been levelled in this union within a

very few months." The numbers rapidly increased. A month later he calculated that 6000 houses had been levelled since November. "The wretchedness, ignorance, and helplessness of the poor on the western coast of this union prevent them seeking a shelter elsewhere ; they linger about the localities for weeks or months, burrowing behind the ditches under a few broken rafters of their former dwelling, refusing to enter the workhouse till the parents are broken down and their wretched offspring beyond recovery. The misery attendant upon these wholesale evictions is frequently aggravated by hunting these ignorant helpless creatures off the property from which they perhaps have never before wandered five miles. It is not an unusual occurrence to see 40 or 50 houses levelled in one day, and orders given that no remaining tenant or occupier should give even a night's shelter. I have known some ruthless acts committed by drivers and sub-agents, but, no doubt, according to law, however repulsive to humanity ; wretched hovels pulled down where the inmates were in a helpless state of fever and nakedness, and left by the roadside for days. As many as 300 of the most helpless class have been left houseless in one day." In April 1849 the same writer reported that on one farm alone where there had been 73 houses there were now but 13. And in May, "notwithstanding that fearful numbers have been unhoused in this union within the year (probably 15,000), it seems hardly credible that 1200 more have had their dwellings levelled within this fortnight." The whole report was so terrible that it moved Sir Robert Peel to say that he did "not think the records of any country, civil or barbarous, presented materials for such a picture as was set forth in the statement of Captain Kennedy."

Kennedy's  
report.

But whatever horror may have been excited by the inhumanity of the proceeding no attempt was made to stop it. The English Parliament was unable to conceive the legitimacy of interfering with the rights of property under any circumstances. The evil was traced not to the system which gave one man as complete command over the life of another as if he had been his slave, but to the bankrupt condition of the Irish landlords. No doubt it was impossible to expect from the bankrupt proprietors, whose lands were frequently in the hands of mortgagees, that sort of care for their tenants which a prosperous English landlord almost invariably shows. The necessity of paying the charges on the estate and living out of it drove such poverty-oppressed owners to a rigorous exaction of rent, and to attempts to make their property more

Encumbered  
Estates Act.  
1849.

lucrative. Thus the Encumbered Estates Act of 1849 was in principle a wise measure. It did not however produce such good results as were anticipated. The land, sold forcibly at a time of depression, fetched but small prices for the advantage of the original owners, and fell largely into the hands of mercantile men, often of the very class which had hitherto furnished the money-lenders and mortgagees, from whom it was intended the land should be rescued. It created also an indefeasible Parliamentary title which could not be disregarded, and strengthened the position of the landed proprietor against any future attempt to change for the advantage of the people the absolute character of his tenure. But this well-intentioned measure, from which great results were anticipated, had not been introduced till the critical state of Ireland had rendered repression a matter of absolute necessity, and an act of open rebellion had placed the leaders of the Young Ireland party at the mercy of the English Government.

The Young Ireland party had entirely broken with the pacific policy of O'Connell, and in the spring of the year 1848 had used and printed language of a character in the last degree inflammatory. Rebellion was openly preached, advice as to the best means of destroying the troops given in detail, and all efforts at a peaceful solution of the difficulty treated with the profoundest contempt. The hopes of the party of rebellion had been raised by events in France. Smith O'Brien had gone to Paris for the purpose of obtaining assistance from the Provisional Government which had lately been established there. Lamartine, the President, had indeed declined to pay attention to his request, wisely pointing out the continued desire of France, even though it had become a Republic, to cultivate the friendship not of one part of Great Britain but of the whole country. None the less the Irish leaders were still boasting that 50,000 Frenchmen were ready to assist them in subverting the Monarchy. The Government thought it necessary to bring such violent and seditious writing within the compass of a more stringent regulation. A Bill was therefore brought in for altering the Act of 1795 with regard to high treason. By that Act compassing the deposition of the Sovereign, intending or com-

Outbreak of  
the 1848  
rebellion.

Government  
Security Bill  
passed.  
April 22.

passing to levy war against the Sovereign, and seeking to bring a foreign foe into the country, were offences liable to the penalties of high treason. It was now proposed to declare them felony, and that persons guilty of them should be liable to transportation. The word "compassing" was to include the publishing or printing of any writing, or open and avowed speaking.



The Act thus changed was to be extended to Ireland, where it had not hitherto been applicable. Smith O'Brien made his last appearance in Parliament to oppose this measure. Within a few weeks, in company with Meagher, and Mitchell, the editor of *United Ireland*, the most outspoken of the Young Ireland party, O'Brien was brought to trial under its provisions. Mitchell was found guilty and sentenced to fourteen years' transportation, O'Brien and Meagher were acquitted, and able for some weeks longer to continue their treasonable course. The conviction of Mitchell and the arrest of Duffy under the late Act seemed to have driven the leaders to immediate action, and to have produced an abortive insurrection which for a while ruined their cause. The Confederation, as the Association of Young Irelanders was called, made preparations for a general rising in August, for the purpose of rescuing Mitchell and anticipating the trial of Gavan Duffy. Information of what was going on, and the strong representations of Lord Clarendon, the Lord Lieutenant, that extraordinary measures were absolutely necessary, induced the Government on the 22d of July to introduce a Bill to suspend the Habeas Corpus Act in Ireland. So urgent was the need considered that the Bill was hurried through all its stages on the Saturday, agreed to by the House of Lords on Monday, and received the royal assent on the Tuesday. On the arrival at Dublin of information that the Bill would be passed, Meagher and Dillon at once proceeded to join O'Brien in Tipperary. For several days the three leaders passed through the country making speeches, drilling and collecting armed parties. On Saturday July 29 a body of police some forty or fifty strong marched to disperse the rebels. They found themselves almost surrounded by some thousands of insurgents, and went for shelter to a neighbouring house. An attack of no very serious nature was made upon this post, and the fire returned by the police. On the arrival of a larger party of police, O'Brien, finding resistance useless, and losing all hope of persuading the constabulary to join in the movement, withdrew from his followers, and was shortly after arrested. A Commission was issued, before which O'Brien, Meagher, M'Manus, and several others were tried for high treason and condemned to death, a sentence subsequently commuted to transportation for life. With almost ludicrous perverseness the prisoners whose lives had thus been spared refused the commutation of their sentence, declaring that their own assent was requisite; the Queen could pardon, but the pardon must be absolute.

**Habeas Corpus  
Act suspended.  
July 22.**

**Suppression of  
the rebellion.  
July 29.**

**Sentence of  
the leaders.  
October 23.**



The law officers of the Crown, although they entirely denied the grounds of the objection, caused a Bill to be introduced into Parliament to put the Queen's power of pardon in cases of high treason beyond further controversy. The prisoners were all deported as quickly as possible to various colonies, and all with the exception of O'Brien thankfully accepted the advantages of tickets-of-leave which Government at once offered them. The absurd inefficiency of the attempt at an insurrection, of which so much had been threatened, threw an air of ridicule over the whole proceedings of the Irish agitators. The capture and punishment or flight of so many of the ringleaders deprived the movement of all guidance, and for a time Ireland ceased to be a subject of dread, although the means of curing its disaffection and of healing the deep-seated social sores with which it was afflicted remained as a chief difficulty in the way of every English Government.

The misery of Ireland, and the measures of relief which it had necessitated, raised far-reaching questions as to the soundness of the general principles on which our commercial and social arrangements had hitherto rested. When it had been found necessary to suspend the Corn and Navigation Laws, it became a question whether they were under any circumstances desirable. When our financiers were driven to alter the sugar duties, the question of the protection of the Colonial industry was at once touched. The raising of the loan of £8,000,000 involved the whole principle of taxation ; while the possibility of such a dissolution of society as was visible in Ireland under the influence of the misery, poverty, and ignorance of the labouring classes, might well direct attention to the condition of those classes in our own country.

In the early Session of 1847 but little of any sort was completed. The approaching dissolution, and the absorbing interest of Ireland, did not allow of much activity in other directions. But the feeling that it was necessary to ameliorate the lot of the workman was shown in the large majorities by which an Act introduced by Mr. Fielden

Mr. Fielden's  
Factory Act.  
May 1847.

for limiting the hours of labour of young persons between the ages of thirteen and eighteen, in certain factories, was carried. It was a revolt against the strict principles of political economy ; and its success was secured by the general sentiment of Parliament in opposition to the arguments of its most respected leaders, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir James Graham, Sir Robert Peel, Lord Brougham, and Lord Clarendon, all

of whom strongly condemned it. It was urged that it must inevitably produce a decrease of wages, which the high and rising price of provisions would render disastrous, for it could be hardly possible in most cases for the factory to continue at work after the dismissal of the young persons. It was asserted to be a restriction on free contract, a compulsory limitation upon the willing work of the industrious man. It was urged that the two hours it was proposed to withdraw from labour was exactly that time which returned his profit to the manufacturer; and that in the general competition, which the country was wilfully seeking by its newly introduced free trade, this Act would strike a deathblow at manufacturing interests. Even Sir Robert Peel, who foresaw the immense importance of the working classes, and was eager for their well-being, urged with all his authority that education and the larger command of the necessaries of life were the true means of securing it, and that unless they had these preliminary requisites increased leisure would be useless to them. But sympathy with the dreary lot of unenlivened labour; the not wholly unfounded belief that the quality of shortened hours of work might make up for the loss of quantity; the principle which has guided much of the action of the Liberal party that the boon must be given before the recipient can be raised to the full power of enjoying it; and more than all the social conscience which had been aroused and was impatient for the immediate removal of evil, rendered Parliament deaf to such arguments, and the Bill was carried by large majorities in both Houses.

The question of national education, which appeared to some to be the only sure method of ameliorating the condition of the working classes, was also engaging the attention of Government. The establishment of a Committee of Privy Council by Lord John Russell in 1839, for the purposes of national education, had formed a starting-point. The grant for schools at that time was but £10,000. Efforts to extend the system upon wider lines had been made by Sir James Graham in 1842, but had failed. The grant however had been several times increased, and Lord John Russell now asked Parliament for £100,000. So small a sum could have excited no opposition from those who thought that the duty of educating the people lay upon Government. But there were many who denied this duty, and were jealous of the increasing outlay on education, and of the patronage which its distribution appeared to place in the hands of Government. There were others who looked upon the scheme as at present existing as unduly favourable to the

Russell's  
education grant  
carried.  
May 1847.

interests of the English Church. It was the opposition of this class (which included both Roman Catholics and Dissenters) which had obliged Sir James Graham to withdraw his propositions. Lord John Russell was fully aware of the difficulties which beset any general plan, and was induced by the apparent impossibility of combining conflicting interests to confine his efforts to the improvement of the class of teachers. The grant he demanded was for the purpose of giving effect to a minute of the Educational Committee of Council issued the preceding year, and chiefly drawn up by Sir Kay Shuttleworth. The scheme itself might be carried out by the authority of the Crown without recourse to Parliament. All he required was the money. In making his demand he stated that the Roman Catholics would still be excluded from the advantages of the grant, but that this arose from no wish of his or of the Government. The obstacle in their way, which he did not as yet see the means of removing, was the necessity of the employment, in the religious teaching of the schools, of the authorised version of the Bible. The clear declaration of Government that they were ready at a future time to admit the Roman Catholics to its advantages removed one great objection to the grant, and it was ultimately allowed by a considerable majority. The scheme which was thus authorised formed in many respects the basis of the subsequent development of our national education. Masters were by it allowed to take pupil-teachers as apprentices, careful inspection under strict conditions was established, and pensions were granted to superannuated masters. It was hoped that those arrangements, although they fell far short of establishing any general system, would at least secure the efficiency of such schools as chose to seek Government assistance.

With the exception of a Bill for the establishment of a Bishop of Manchester, little else of importance was done during this Session. The opposition which stood in the way of so reasonable a Bill was grounded on the difficulty felt to any increase of the number of spiritual peers, and was overcome by an arrangement by which the number of bishops having seats in the House remained unchanged, the junior bishop being excluded unless he should happen to be the bishop of London, Winchester, or Durham. Several very important Bills were withdrawn, and the Parliament was prorogued preparatory to a dissolution in July. The election which followed was uneventful. It was carried out with less than the usual excitement, and produced no marked change in the balance of parties. It was thought necessary

Bishopric of  
Manchester Bill.  
July 1847.

New  
Parliament.  
Nov 23, 1847.

to bring the new Parliament together in the middle of November. There were two causes which led to its being thus early summoned. The continued increase of outrage and social disorganisation in Ireland seemed to call for repressive measures, and the commerce of England was passing through a dangerous crisis. The measures taken with regard to Ireland have been already mentioned.

With regard to the commercial difficulty the Chancellor of the Exchequer proposed that a committee should be appointed to examine into the causes of distress and into the operation of the Bank Restriction Act of 1844. In introducing his motion he sketched the course of events which necessitated it. The failure of the harvest in 1846, and of the potato crop, had rendered necessary a large importation of corn, more than could be paid for in goods, and consequently money payments had been required. At the same time railway enterprise had demanded a great amount of capital. And both the corn trade and the making of railways had afforded a wide field for speculation. Such speculations may be carried on long upon credit, but money must be eventually obtained, and the expenses met by obtaining advances from banks and dealers in money, upon securities payable at some future date, and realised at once upon the payment of discount. The demand for such advances became so great that they could not be obtained even at a very high rate of discount. The pressure had begun in April, but had apparently passed away. It set in again with extreme severity in the autumn. Unable to obtain money either from their own resources or by means of advances, house after house, many of them of high standing, stopped payment. The Bank of England, which in some degree regulated the money market, continually raised its rate of discount to 6, 7, and 8 per cent., at the same time shortening the period for which it was willing to lend its money. A crisis seemed approaching. In spite of the high rate money was not forthcoming, the failures continued, the funds fell as low as 79, and so difficult was it to obtain money that the Bank of England was practically the only establishment from which advances could be got. The Bank Restriction Act of 1844 had set a limit to the amount of notes which the Bank could issue, and consequently limited its power of making advances. It appeared that that limit would soon be reached, that all the means of obtaining additional money would have been exhausted, and that universal bankruptcy would follow. The condition of the country was so serious that the Government thought it right to interfere, and wrote to the bank directors advising them to continue to

Commercial  
crisis.  
Sept.-Oct. 1847.



advance, even though in so doing they passed the legal limits. The ministers suggested, as a means of keeping the advances within reasonable bounds, the maintenance of a very high rate of discount, but promised that if it should be necessary to infringe the restrictions of

Credit  
re-established  
Dec. 1847.

1844 they would introduce into Parliament a Bill to indemnify the directors from this breach of the law. Upon this suggestion the bank acted. The knowledge that further accommodation was within reach checked the panic. The high rate of discount, and the great demand, had the natural effect of attracting money from abroad ; and by degrees, without any infringement of the law, credit was re-established and the pressure lightened. But it remained evident that this had only been effected by an authoritative relaxation of the restriction of the Bank Act, and it became a very natural question whether a restriction which could not be enforced in time of difficulty was worth maintaining. It was consequently subjected to severe criticisms ; but Sir Robert Peel vindicated the measure of which he had been the author, showed that the unexpected scarcity of food, the wild spirit of speculation, and the failure of the cotton crop were the chief causes of the present distress, and declared it to be his belief (a belief which was generally accepted as correct) that any tampering with the existing law would afford but temporary assistance with the risk of greater subsequent danger. He also pointed out that although many important failures had undoubtedly taken place, there had been as a fact no run on the bank for gold, and that the country had been consequently saved from the terrible disorders of 1838 and 1839.

Although the Government had been allowed to raise a loan of £8,000,000 to meet the requirements of the Irish famine, the Chancellor of the Exchequer did not desire to continue this very questionable method of supplying the revenue, and the financial difficulties to be overcome were by no means slight. The threatening aspect of political affairs on the Continent had raised into prominence the condition of the national defences, and the opinion that they were wholly inadequate had been strongly expressed. The receipts of the year had fallen below the estimate under nearly every head. The only important increase was that derived from the sugar duties since they had been lowered ; and this was the only practical proof of the advantages of Free-trade. Various causes had kept up the price of food. The commercial theory of 1846 had therefore to be upheld against a Protectionist party not yet silenced by the overwhelming logic of facts ; while the Radical

Financial em-  
barrassments  
of Government.



free-traders regarded with indignation all idea of increased armaments.

The question of the commercial policy to be pursued arose early in the Session, upon a motion of Lord George Bentinck for a Committee to consider the condition of the West India planters. Their depression could not be denied.

Free-trade  
maintained.  
June 4, 1848.

However, although their claims were enforced not only by the usual arguments in favour of protection, but by others peculiar to their case—such as want of labour, the duty of supporting free labour in opposition to slavery, and the special responsibility England had incurred by the abolition of the slave-trade—Government succeeded in maintaining its free-trade attitude. The planters had to content themselves with a small loan for the purpose of encouraging immigration of free labour, and with a reduction of the duty paid by sugar from the colonies. But upon the production of the Budget the financial weakness of the Government became evident. Afraid, in the present disturbed state of Europe, to adopt the plan of the advanced free-traders and diminish the warlike expenditure of the country, and rightly disinclined to increase the national debt, additional taxation appeared the only means of encountering the formidable deficit. Lord John Russell therefore proposed to renew the income-tax at the increased rate of one shilling in the pound for five years. His proposition encountered the most vehement opposition. While one party cried out against the wicked expenditure on the army and navy, another revived all the arguments previously urged against direct taxation; a third, while accepting it in principle, pointed out the injustice of taxing realised property and professional incomes equally, and clamoured for an income-tax graduated in some way to meet this difficulty. The Government yielded to the storm. It allowed the army and navy estimates to be examined by a committee charged with the duty of reducing them if possible. It gave up the idea of increasing the income-tax, though maintaining it at its present rate, and in its present form. And at last, late in August, when, after all this patching and correction was over, the Chancellor of the Exchequer made his definite statement, he found himself obliged to demand a renewed loan of £2,000,000, which, not without considerable objection, was ultimately allowed.

The Budget  
withdrawn.  
August 1848.

Few things lower the credit of a Government more than a rejected budget, and a strong feeling began to gain ground of the inefficiency of the present Ministers to grapple with financial difficulty. Yet on

the whole Government had passed through a time of most unusual anxiety with very fair success. And it was not without truth that the Prime Minister urged, in reply to the sharp attack of Disraeli with which the session closed, that "that gentleman had remarked that there had been sedition in England, rebellion in Ireland, and revolution in Europe; but that when sedition had been checked in England, rebellion suppressed in Ireland, and foreign revolution prevented from shaking our institutions at home, the administration of the empire could scarcely have been very defective." The Prime Minister's boast was justified by the outbreaks of revolutionary energy which had shaken nearly every throne in Europe, while in England they had been easily suppressed by the mere exhibition of the power and determination of the orderly classes.

The suppression of the Chartist outbreaks in 1843 had by no means put an end to their agitation. But the unity of the party had been much disturbed. The more violent Chartists had broken from the Radical reformers, and had themselves divided into two sections; for their nominal leader, Feargus O'Connor, was at bitter enmity with more thoroughgoing and earnest leaders such as O'Brien and Cooper. O'Connor had not proved a very efficient guide. He had entered into a land scheme of a somewhat doubtful character, which consisted in purchasing an estate, raising money on it, with this money purchasing another, and so on, until eight estates had been purchased, upon each of which he proposed to put fifty shareholders, and hoped at the end of some years, through the improvements carried out, to produce a large balance for the advantage of the association. For a popular leader to engage in monetary speculation is always dangerous, and O'Connor suffered the usual fate in charges brought against him of dishonesty. He had also injudiciously taken up a position of active hostility to the free-traders, and while thus appearing as the champion of a falling cause had alienated many of his supporters. Yet the Parliament elected in 1846 contained several representatives of the Chartists' principles, and O'Connor himself had been returned for Nottingham by a large majority over Hobhouse, a member of the new Ministry. The revolution in France gave a sudden and enormous impulse to the agitation. The country was filled with meetings at which violent speeches were uttered and hints, not obscure, dropped of the forcible establishment of a republic in England. A new Convention was summoned for the 6th of April, a vast petition was prepared, and a meeting,

Practical  
strength of the  
Government.

Continuation of  
the Chartist  
movement.

at which it was believed that half a million of people would have been present, was summoned to meet on Kennington Common on the 10th of April for the purpose of carrying the petition to the House in procession. The alarm felt in London was very great. It was thought necessary to swear in special constables, and the wealthier classes came forward in vast numbers to be enrolled. There are said to have been no less than 170,000 special constables. The military arrangements were intrusted to the Duke of Wellington ; the public offices were guarded and fortified ; public vehicles were forbidden to pass the streets lest they should be employed for barricades ; and measures were taken to prevent the procession from crossing the bridges, if, in spite of its declared illegality, the Chartists should persist in their intention. Such a display of determination seemed almost ridiculous when compared with what actually occurred. But it was in fact the cause of the harmless nature of the meeting. Instead of half a million about 30,000 men assembled on Kennington Common. Feargus O'Connor was there ; Mr. Maine, the Commissioner of Police, called him aside, told him he might hold his meeting, but that the procession would be stopped, and that he would be held personally responsible for any disorder that might occur. His heart had already begun to fail him, and he expressed his gratitude for the civility of the police, went back to his meeting, and used all his influence to put an end to the procession. His prudent advice was followed, and no disturbance of any importance took place.

Preparations  
for the 10th of  
April 1848.

The firm attitude taken up by the middle-classes and the Government, and its complete success, could not but be regarded, in the midst of revolutionary fury in Europe, as a remarkable proof of the stability of the English society and its institutions. The air of ridicule thrown over the Chartist movement by the abortive close of a demonstration which had been heralded with so much violent talk was increased by the disclosures attending the presentation of the petition. Upwards of 5,000,000 signatures were declared to be appended to the document ; and its supporters doubtless hoped that it would make a great impression by its mere bulk. But Parliament referred it to the Committee on Petitions. A number of law stationers were employed to count and examine the signatures. The number proved to be less than 2,000,000, and of those very many were obviously false. Whole sheets were in one handwriting ; eight per cent. were the signatures of women ; and the Queen, Sir Robert Peel, the Prime Minister, and Punch made their

The Chartist  
petition.  
April 14.

appearance among the signatories. This failure proved a deathblow to Chartism. O'Connor had in fact lost his influence, and was already giving signs of a weakened mind. At the same time reviving prosperity, the action of the new Poor Law and of the Corn Law reforms, began to alleviate the physical want which had after all been the main supporter of the movement. The Charter as a whole ceased to be a standard round which revolutionary forces might gather, yet every point in it adopted by serious politicians and urged in a constitutional manner has played its part in subsequent political history. Of its five points, two have been accepted, two have been closely approached, while of the fifth, payment of members, the last has not yet been heard.

End of the  
Chartist  
movement.

Causes for the  
revolutions in  
Europe,  
1848.

Though it is ridiculous to trace great movements affecting the social politics of nearly every State in Europe to the political action of governments or of kings, it is true that the conduct of rulers, by giving occasion for great forces to exhibit themselves, plays an important part in at all events regulating the time of such movements. The questionable policy of Louis Philippe with regard to the Spanish marriages no doubt accelerated the great movement of 1848. The friendship with England on which his position had chiefly rested was entirely destroyed. The position of France and England as the joint supporters of Liberal and Constitutional ideas on the Continent was no longer tenable, and while in the national movements which were going on in Spain, Portugal, Switzerland, and Italy, England, under the guidance of Lord Palmerston, pursued perhaps even with undue vigour a course implying sympathy with the Liberal party, France was driven more and more into Conservative lines. It would appear that Louis Philippe had drawn so close to the despotic Governments of Europe that he had actually entered into an arrangement for mutual support, from which England was excluded. In France itself the same Conservative tendencies on the part of the King were visible. A fierce opposition came into existence, clamouring for a reform and enlargement of the constituencies. The measures taken by the Government against this movement, and its final step in forbidding reform banquets in Paris, were the proximate cause of the outbreak of February 1848 and of the deposition of the King. Unsupported by any great Power, isolated in Europe, Louis Philippe was left to deal with the French people whose confidence he had lost, and towards whom, himself the creation of a popular revolution, he had assumed a wholly false position. The

Reactionary  
tendencies in  
France.



breach with England had not indeed been complete. On the contrary the French and English had acted together in the affairs of Portugal. They had there intervened between Donna Maria and the rebellious Junta, and calling into action the Quadruple Alliance, originally entered into against the Carlists and Don Miguel, they had mediated in force, reduced the Junta to obedience, and compelled the Queen to accept a Liberal Ministry. But all sympathy between the two countries was gone, and this intervention was somewhat perversely construed by the advanced French Liberals as having been undertaken merely in the interests of the oppressive Government of the Portuguese Crown. Events in Spain still further strengthened this impression. The unhappy marriage had brought with it its inevitable results—grave scandals at once appeared at Court. The Queen and the King had quarrelled and separated. Serano had become the acknowledged favourite of the Queen; and a way had been opened by the weakness and disorders of the Court and Government for the return of Narvaez with Queen Christina, and the re-establishment of the more arbitrary section of the Moderados.

French  
intervention in  
Portugal and  
Spain.  
1847.

But although the French Government had thus lost credit with the Liberal party in France, and although the strength of this party was constantly increasing, the Government was still strong in the Assembly, and there was no thought of immediate danger. Some of the more far-seeing statesmen of the time had indeed pointed out the growth of socialistic ideas which might easily herald a revolution, but the comparative moderation of the Opposition leaders, and the readiness with which they yielded to the formal prohibition of a great reform banquet which had been appointed in Paris, gave no indication of the approaching outbreak. It came about in fact almost by accident, and its completion was chiefly due to Louis Philippe himself. The interrupted banquet had dissolved itself into a great procession. Warned by the authorities, the popular leaders again expressed their willingness to give up this demonstration. But crowds collected and slight disorders occurred. It was thought necessary to call out the national guard and the troops. But the national guard declared in favour of reform, and interposed an effectual barrier between the troops and the people. It was a virtual triumph of the mob. Louis Philippe at once yielded, dismissed Guizot, and intrusted Molé with the formation of a government. Some critical hours were wasted in a futile attempt to form an administration, and in the middle of the night the King went a

Deposition of  
Louis Philippe.  
Feb. 24, 1848.



step further and placed the Ministry in the hands of Thiers and Odillon Barrot. Marshal Bugeaud had already been appointed to the command of the troops, and it seemed probable that were he allowed to act the riot would be quelled. But Thiers and Odillon Barrot, supposing that the movement was entirely political, and ignoring the strength of the social feeling involved, believed that they should be able by their presence to bring the people to order. They therefore sent an order to Bugeaud to postpone the action of the military. The mistake was a fatal one. Thiers and his colleague were ill received by the mob, rendered furious by an affray which had taken place before the Hotel of Foreign Affairs. The bodies of the victims had been carried in a torch-light procession through the streets, and the excitement had become ungovernable. In the morning the crowd pushed on towards the Tuilleries. Urged to resign by many influential men who regarded disaster as inevitable, the King yielded. He appears to have had an invincible disinclination to the use of force. The representative of the popular will, he seems to have regarded it as his duty to withdraw from the throne when that will had declared against him. His personal courage cannot be questioned. He fled in disguise, and his sons also withdrew, leaving the kingdom to his grandson the Comte de Paris, with his mother the Duchess of Orleans as Regent. She betook herself with her sons to the National Assembly, but it was too late. While the members were still debating whether to accept the Regency or to appoint a provisional government, the mob broke into the chamber and settled the matter. The Duchess of Orleans withdrew, and the Provisional Government, of which Lamartine was the moving spirit, became the accepted rulers of the Republic of France.

The rapidity with which this almost bloodless revolution had been accomplished, and the temperance and wisdom displayed  
*Its effect in Europe.* amid the first difficulties of the Republic by Lamartine and his colleagues, excited the wonder of Europe, and at once set fire to all the slumbering embers of revolutionary and ultra-liberal sentiment throughout the Continent. The feeling in favour of Liberal reform had already made itself obvious in many directions. It had assumed several forms. In Switzerland the disturbances took the shape of a religious war against the further spread of the power of the Jesuits. In the Italian Peninsula hostility to the Austrian power and a desire for "a United Italy" was the ostensible shape it assumed. In Austria the various nations constituting the composite Empire were looking for autonomy. In Germany, constitutional rule,

together with the restoration in some form or other of a united Empire, were the chief points in the Liberal programme. Under all these various forms there lay a strong though somewhat hidden force of Republican sentiment, and an uneasy feeling in favour of social changes, which threatened to break down the thin partition which divides reform from revolution. The reforming spirit had already made considerable advances. Sicily was in insurrection. The Pope, the Grand Duke of Tuscany, and the King of Sardinia had granted Liberal constitutions, and had joined in the national protest against the Austrian occupation of Ferrara. Already in Prussia the King had shown signs of yielding to the popular sentiment.

With all these movements England had sympathised, and Palmerston's support of the partisans of reform in the different countries of Europe had been sometimes carried even beyond the limits of prudence. But the general revolutionary outbreak which followed the events of February changed the aspect of affairs, and rendered the policy of England in the last degree difficult. For a while it appeared as if the established system throughout Europe would give way before the storm. A successful insurrection in Milan against the Austrians was followed by the invasion of Lombardy by the Sardinian king, in which Tuscany and the Pope were compelled to join. An uproar in Vienna drove Metternich into exile. Kossuth, at the head of the Hungarian Liberals, rose in arms. Many of the small states in Germany were compelled to follow the example of the Grand Duke of Baden, and to yield to the pressure of the mob. The King of Bavaria thought it wise to abdicate in favour of his son. In Berlin, though the troops had no difficulty in quelling the riots, the King in his weakness checked them in the moment of victory, and conceded all the demands of the extreme reformers. In Frankfurt, the supporters of German unity established a national Assembly, appointed Archduke John of Austria to the office of Head of the Empire, and plunged Germany into a war with Denmark by claiming as German territory the Duchy of Sleswig.

Still it seemed not impossible that the changes taking place might prove to be acceptable to England. Although they had been attended with a good deal of violence and some bloodshed, as in France so elsewhere, the early part of the movement appeared to be in the direction of the establishment of orderly constitutional rule. The removal of Metternich, and the abdication of various monarchs, did not necessarily imply more than the cessation of arbitrary principles of govern-

Palmerston's  
sympathy with  
the Reformers.

Spread of  
Revolution.

ment. Nor did it seem impossible that in Italy some compromise might be arrived at by which Austria might be induced to give up possessions which were increly a source of weakness to her, and a northern constitutional kingdom established under the Sardinian King. But though England, already free and constitutional in its government, had passed successfully through its difficulties, though the insurrection in Ireland had ended in the contemptible outbreak of Smith O'Brien, and the Chartist meeting had only led to an exhibition of the strength of the governing classes, it was not so in other parts of Europe. The hope of the establishment of governments, at once free and orderly, proved evanescent. The masses, by whose assistance the changes had been secured, looked for something more than a transfer of political power or a mere alteration in the form of government; and the newly created Governments proved unable to resist them. In nearly every country, before the end of the year, it had been found necessary to have recourse to material force for the preservation of order, and a reaction had set in. In France, a terrible outbreak in the first days of June had been suppressed with stern vigour by General Cavaignac, who had been placed at the head of the Government. In Berlin, a succession of weak Ministries had allowed of constantly increasing demands on the part of the Democrats, till at length the Assembly, invaded by the mob, had voted the abolition of the nobility; and the King, roused to action, had placed Count Brandenburg, a Conservative, at the head of affairs, had poured troops into Berlin, and finally (on Dec. 5th), having dissolved the Chambers, had promulgated, on his own authority, a more or less Liberal constitution. The attempt at a re-establishment of German unity had proved a complete failure. Popular riots in Frankfort had shown the powerlessness of the Assembly there. Its rejection of Prussia, the sole Power of sufficient strength to afford it assistance, had left it destitute of material resources. The revived hopes of the Princes strengthened them in their determination to resist the self-effacement necessary for national union, and for the present the question was shelved. In Vienna the revolution had been suppressed by force of arms. The Emperor had thought it wise to withdraw in favour of his nephew, and Schwarzenberg being called to the Ministry, set to work to reconstitute the tottering Austrian Empire. Thus at the close of the year Europe, though in some cases with revised and more liberal governments, still remained in the hands of its former possessors, or, as in the case of France, of rulers with whom the ordinary course of diplomacy might be renewed.

Conservative  
reaction  
through Europe  
at the end of  
1848.

Lord Palmerston's management of the Foreign Office under the extraordinary difficulties of the time was a subject of much controversy. There was an apparent readiness to meddle in the affairs of other countries, and to give uncalled for and sometimes dictatorial advice to foreign governments which was very distasteful to the Opposition, and even to some of the Liberal party. And Lord Palmerston was in the habit of acting so independently, and without regard to the advice of his colleagues, that the harmony of the Cabinet seemed at times threatened. But his policy is intelligible, and proved on the whole successful. He was an ardent admirer of constitutional government. He foresaw the difficulties in store for the arbitrary rulers of Europe, and dreaded the revolutionary changes which appeared to him likely to follow if the popular feeling was not in some way assuaged. He was therefore constantly recommending his agents abroad to advise the Courts to which they were accredited to meet the coming dangers by voluntary concession. Of necessity England thus appeared to be sympathising with the aspirations of the Liberals. How little our Foreign Minister was inclined to side with anarchy was not known; and almost inevitably, while at home he was blamed for recklessly intermeddling in revolutionary projects, abroad he laid himself open on the one side to the charge of officious interference with the Courts, on the other of raising hopes among the people he had no intention to fulfil.

Palmerston's  
diplomacy  
during 1848.

Of the governments threatened by the outbreak of the Revolution in France none seemed in a more dangerous position than that of Spain, nor was there any country where diplomatic agents mingled so freely in the arrangements of party. The return of Narvaez, resting avowedly on French support, had placed power in the hands of the more absolute party. The fall of the Orleans dynasty afforded an opportunity which the Progressistas were not likely to neglect. Accordingly a despatch was sent from the English Foreign Office recommending the adoption of Liberal measures, and Bulwer sought, as the best means of securing order, the admission of some of the Progressista leaders to a share in office. It was not yet clear to the Spanish Minister that England would itself escape the dangers of a revolution. Narvaez was a man of unscrupulous character; the despatch was treated as an insult and sent back to Bulwer, who, himself charged ridiculously enough with joining in revolutionary plots, was abruptly dismissed (May 1848), while Narvaez, forcibly suppressing all opposition, established a government of the most arbitrary description. Bulwer succeeded in entirely

Unsuccessful in  
Spain.



vindicating himself at home, and there was no resource left but to put an end to diplomatic relations with Spain. The Spanish ambassador was dismissed from London, and for several years the countries remained totally estranged.

In Switzerland a Conservative and reactionary party, instigated largely by the Roman Catholic priests and Jesuits, had been very busy ever since the year 1830. In 1844 the Canton of Lucerne had introduced the Jesuits. The Federal Diet had passed decrees against their introduction, and the seven Roman Catholic cantons had found it necessary to form a confederacy among themselves known as the "Sonderbund." This attempt at secession had, in 1846, produced a civil war. The French Government, at that time under Guizot, had tried to combine the great Powers in a conference to modify the Federal compact, and to employ the arbitration of the Pope. Should the propositions of the Powers be rejected it was intended to violate the neutrality of Switzerland, and to compel it by force to accept the views of the great Powers. Lord Palmerston refused to accede to the proposal. He held that in spite of the apparent break-up of the Federal constitution, the independence of Switzerland must still be maintained. While the French and Austrians, with the intention of destroying the Federation, supported the Roman Catholic Sonderbund, Lord Palmerston used the influence of England in favour of maintaining unity under the Federal Diet, and recommended that the Powers should confine themselves to using all their influence to obtain from the Pope the recall of the Jesuits, and to inducing the Sonderbund cantons to declare themselves ready to abide by any decision which the Pope might make. He succeeded in persuading France to accept his propositions for a joint mediation. Meanwhile, the delay which he had occasioned by his opposition to the more violent proposals of the other Powers, enabled the Swiss to settle their own affairs, and the capture of Friburg by the Federal troops put an end to the civil war, and removed the necessity for interference.

But it was to Italy that the chief efforts of Lord Palmerston were directed. Throughout the year 1847 the political ferment had there been increasing, and in November Lord Minto had been despatched with directions to visit most of the capitals and to explain the views of the English Foreign Office. The instructions given him clearly express Palmerston's views. "Her Majesty's Government are deeply impressed with the conviction that it is wise for sovereigns and their governments to pursue in the

Successful in  
Switzerland.

Only partially  
successful in  
Italy.



administration of their affairs a system of progressive improvement ; to apply remedies to such evils as, upon examination, they may find to exist, and to remodel, from time to time, the ancient institutions of their country, so as to render them more suitable to the gradual growth of intelligence and to the increasing diffusion of political knowledge ; and Her Majesty's Government consider it to be an undeniable truth that if an independent sovereign, in the exercise of his deliberate judgment, shall think fit to make within his dominions such improvements in the laws and institutions of his country as he may think conducive to the welfare of his people, no other government can have any right to attempt to restrain or to interfere with such an employment of one of the inherent attributes of independent sovereignty." The English envoy was well received, and his mission tended to strengthen the hands of the King of Sardinia, of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, and of the Pope. With Pio Nono Difficulties with the Pope. however there were questions at issue which prevented any close relation. For the Pope had refused to exert his authority to restrain the political action of the priests in Ireland, and had issued a rescript against the newly established Queen's Colleges ; while on the other hand a Bill which had been brought in for the opening of direct diplomatic relations with the Papal See, though carried through Parliament, had been practically rendered nugatory by an amendment to the effect that no ecclesiastic could be received as the Papal Ambassador. It was in Naples that Lord Minto's work chiefly lay. In January 1848 the Sicilians had broken into insurrection, demanding the constitution of 1812, and claiming the intervention of the English as having had a share in the making of that constitution. The Neapolitan King had also asked England to mediate. Lord Minto ultimately arrived at propositions on which he thought an arrangement might be made, but he did not reach Sicily till after the Revolution in Paris. This event had so excited the Sicilians that they now demanded nothing less than a separation of the two crowns of Sicily and Naples. Mediation was impossible. The question had to be settled by the sword. Messina and Palermo were bombarded by the Neapolitans, and though the intervention of the English and French fleet secured a brief armistice, no arrangement could be arrived at, and the revolt was finally suppressed in the course of the following year.

The difficulties of English diplomacy in Italy were much increased after the establishment of the French Republic. The dangers which Palmerston had foreseen in January had become real. In that month,

in a circular to the English representatives in Italy, he had urged them to point out to the various courts "that the direction of the progress of reform was still in their own hands, but that resistance would lead to irresistible demands."

The effect of  
the French  
Revolution in  
Italy.

The Revolution in Milan and Venice, and the appearance of Charles Albert as the champion of Italian liberty at the same time that Metternich was driven from office in Vienna, seemed to threaten the very existence of the Austrian Power, and it was to England—

The position of  
Austria in  
Italy.

which, with the exception of Russia, was the only important Government remaining unshaken—that application for assistance was made. Lord Palmerston by no means desired that Austria should be destroyed. He still had a belief in the theory of the balance of power, and thought the presence of Austria necessary in the centre of Europe. It was rather in the belief that the maintenance of an unwilling subject population in Italy was a source of weakness, and that the establishment of an independent Italian kingdom between France and Austria would tend to the establishment of greater stability, that he looked with favourable eyes upon the efforts of Charles Albert. It was with this view that he undertook, at the request of the Austrians themselves, to act as mediator. The first success of the Italians had driven Radetsky the Austrian general behind the Mincio. And Austria was ready to withdraw from Lombardy on the condition that it should take its due share of the Imperial debt. As Venice was already in Italian hands, and as the establishment of a northern kingdom seemed both possible and desirable, Palmerston urged Austria to agree to a total surrender of the north of Italy. But he was aware that the acceptance of such a proposal must depend upon the course of the war. Events proved that Italy was not yet ripe for independence or unity. Co-operation between the States appeared impossible. The Republicans saw with dislike successes which appeared to lead to the establishment of Monarchy. Delay brought renewed strength to Radetsky, and before the middle of August a succession of disastrous defeats had driven the Sardinians again beyond the frontier, and Milan had returned to Austrian hands. The character of the mediation was inevitably changed, but the English minister believed that Austria was still so hard pressed that Lombardy at least might be rescued. The French Republicans were eager to support the Italians, and were only kept back by the hope of a successful mediation, and Palmerston was able by pointing this out to the Austrians to induce them so far to yield as to agree to a con-

ference at Brussels. But as the affairs of the empire became re-established, as the Hungarians were checked, and the young Prince succeeded to the late imbecile Emperor, the hopes of a favourable arrangement grew weaker. The Sardinians, impatient of waiting, early in 1849 again took the field, and the disastrous battle of Novara (March 24), followed by the bombardment and capture of Venice, extinguished for a while all further hope of Italian independence.

Italian unity  
postponed after  
the battle of  
Novara.

With regard to Germany England could really do nothing. Her policy was confined to giving such encouragement as was possible to the efforts for the reconstitution of the empire. England thus appears during this year as the mediating Power of Europe—the refuge of dethroned kings and ministers, the consistent champion of orderly and constitutional reform—a position won by the proved stability of our institutions and the comparative ease with which the storm which had passed over Europe had been weathered. In spite however of the high position thus taken by England, the year 1849 was not without its grave difficulties.

The state of the Continent, and the part which the English Foreign Office played in the widespread disturbances of the year, afforded a constant ground for party assault. The instructions issued by Lord Palmerston through the Foreign Office to his agents abroad showed that he looked to timely concessions on the part of governments to secure European tranquillity. By the bigoted admirers of what was spoken of as “the cause of order,” his despatches were treated as incitements to revolution, while every instance of ready acceptance of change was alleged as a breach of the Treaties on which the European settlement rested. Lord Aberdeen, the late Foreign Minister, supported by Lord Brougham, made himself the mouthpiece of these charges against Government. But in all directions the defence of his conduct offered by Lord Palmerston seemed successful. When charged with allowing ordnance stores to be supplied to the Sicilian insurgents, having explained the circumstances under which it had been done, and that it consisted merely of an arrangement for the convenience of the contractor, he was able to declare that his advice, as tendered by Lord Minto, had been directed to the maintenance of the crowns of the two Sicilies upon one head, that that advice had been demanded by the King of Naples himself, and that probably had it been followed the insurrection would not have taken place. With regard to Northern Italy he was able to urge that he had throughout attempted, in conjunction

Palmerston's  
defence of his  
policy.  
March 6, 1849.

with France, to mediate between Austria and Sardinia, but that he had done his best to impress upon Charles Albert the danger and futility of a single-handed renewal of the war. He declined to be forced into passing judgment on the conduct of the French Government in sending an expedition to Rome. It was indeed very difficult to understand the intention or object of France in so doing. The liberal efforts of the Pope had come to a sudden stop. After the murder of his minister Rossi, he lost all confidence in the people, fled from Rome (Nov. 24), and watched from his retirement in Gaeta the triumph of the popular party, the establishment of a Republic, and the appointment of triumvirs, of whom Mazzini was one. All attempts at reconciliation between himself and his people he harshly rejected. Summoned by Austria, the Catholic Powers began to interfere. Naples, Spain, and Austria sent armies in the field against the Roman Republic, and suddenly an expedition under General Oudenot was despatched from France to occupy Civita Vecchia. It was impossible that France should have come openly forward as the upholder of arbitrary authority, but the country was still eager to assert its position in Europe, and Prince Louis Napoleon, now President, had been elected (Dec. 20) avowedly as the champion of order. Already, probably, his views were reaching onward to the establishment of a Napoleonic Empire, to which the maintenance of the Papacy was necessary. He took advantage therefore of the national feeling, and despatched the expedition under the not very comprehensible pretext of saving Rome from anarchy, while pretending to separate himself from the hostile action of Austria. The Republicans demanded to be left alone to fight their own battles; they refused General Oudenot admission to their city. The General declared his military honour involved in occupying the city from which he had been excluded. The consequences were the siege of Rome, its capture (July 1, 1849) after a firm resistance, and the entire annihilation of the Republican movement. But while Lord Palmerston refused to condemn the action of France which led to this result, he pointed out that he had from the first deprecated the intervention of foreign powers in Rome, and regarded the conduct of France as at the least unfortunate.

The best summary perhaps of the views of Palmerston, and therefore of England, at this time with regard to foreign affairs may be derived from his defence of himself when his conduct in Hungary was impeached. In the course of the debate the Radicals had expressed strong indignation against the intervention of Russia for the purpose of suppressing the Hungarian movement, as well as the intervention of France at Rome and had plainly indicated

Palmerston's  
speech.  
July 21, 1849.



that they considered that the duty of our Government reached beyond verbal interference. Both charges to which Lord Palmerston's policy was open were thus levelled against him; on the one side he was charged with intermeddling and with revolutionary tendencies, on the other with intermeddling without dreaming of supporting his advice by war. In reply he remarked, "There are two objects which England ought peculiarly to aim at, the one is to maintain peace, the other is to count for something in the transactions of the world. It is not fitting that a country occupying such a proud position as England, a country having such various and extensive interests, should lock herself up in a simple regard to her own internal affairs, and should be a passive and mute spectator of everything that is going on around. It is quite true that it may be said, 'Your opinions are but opinions; you express them against our opinions who have at our command large armies to back them. What are opinions against armies?' Sir, my answer is opinions are stronger than armies. I say then . . . that so far as the courtesies of international intercourse will permit us to do so, it is our duty to state our opinions founded on the experience of this country. We are not entitled to interpose in any manner which would commit the country to embark in those hostilities; all we can justly do is to take advantage of any opportunities which may present themselves in which the counsel of order and peace may be offered to the contending parties." As to the other charge, he concludes, "To suppose that any Government of England could wish to incite revolutionary movements in any part of the world, to suppose that any Government of England could have any other wish or desire than to maintain peace between nations and tranquillity and harmony between governments and subjects, shows really a degree of ignorance and folly which I never could suppose any public man could be guilty of, which may do very well for a newspaper article, but which astonishes me to find made the subject of a speech in Parliament."

It was not only in foreign affairs that the ministry encountered difficulty. Its free-trade policy had not as yet been attended by a success sufficiently striking to secure its universal acceptance. Bad harvests, interruption of foreign trade, difficulties remaining over from the commercial crisis of 1847, and the inordinate speculation in railway enterprise had deprived the new system of a fair trial; and although the depression was lessening, it was impossible to say that either the mercantile or the agricultural interest was fully prosperous. The potato blight had reappeared with renewed strength in Ireland, and in spite of the case with which the

*Difficulties of  
the year 1849.*



insurrectionary movement of Smith O'Brien had been suppressed, terrible suffering and deep discontent, with its usual accompaniment of crime, still pervaded that unhappy country. The ferment in Europe had by no means ceased, and the policy of Lord Palmerston, the wisdom of which was not yet vindicated, was open on all sides to assault. Disorders in our colonies were leading to the conclusion that some revision of our colonial policy was necessary, and a renewed war in the Punjab threatened to destroy the fruits of Lord Hardinge's victories. ✓

Whatever doubt was still felt as to the success of free-trade, the Government at any rate showed its belief in the principle by reintroducing a Bill for the repeal of the Navigation Laws which had been withdrawn in the previous session.

Repeal of the  
Navigation  
Laws.

The very strict laws passed in the time of the Commonwealth to oppose the competition of Holland had been gradually modified. The produce of Asia, Africa, and America might be imported into the United Kingdom in ships belonging to the country where the goods were produced. European goods might be brought in the ships of any country. Between England and the colonies, and between colony and colony, transportation was restricted to British ships or to ships of the colony in which the goods were produced. It was believed by many—and Adam Smith had lent his great name to the belief—that these restrictions fostered the commercial marine, and therefore indirectly the royal navy, on which the safety of England mainly depended. But free-trade had now been established, and protection withdrawn from the colonies; and it seemed manifestly unjust to free their trade with the one hand and to trammel it with the other. If the colonies were to compete with foreign producers it was necessary that they should obtain the means of transport as cheaply as possible in the general market of the world. To convinced free-traders it was also beyond belief that free competition could in any way tend to the diminution of English nautical superiority. The Bill was carried by a majority of sixty-one in the Lower House. But in the House of Lords its progress was watched with great anxiety, for it was regarded as a test-question with respect to the principles of protection, and the Government were by no means sure of their strength. It was however carried after a warm debate by a majority of ten. This struggle may be regarded as the last direct effort of the protectionists. They had shown that they were still a strong party, but in the course of the debate it had been confessed by more than one that the restoration of the system, at all events for the time, was impossible. Lord George Bentinck, who had served them so well

in the great struggle of 1846, had died suddenly in the last year, and a new and far abler leader had been found in Mr. Disraeli. Under his guidance they somewhat changed their tactics, demanding, instead of a renewal of the old system, compensation for the landed interest; and a motion which he introduced in March was the first of many similar attempts leading to the rearrangement of local taxes and the transference of some share of their burden to the general tax-payer. His resolution was negatived by a large majority.

The suppression of the insurrectionary movement in Ireland, though relieving it from an immediate danger, had left the country in a very disturbed state. It was thought necessary to renew the suspension of the Habeas Corpus.

Measures for  
the relief of  
Ireland.  
July 1849.

But it was understood that the opportunity of the tranquillity thus secured would be taken for introducing some important measures as a cure for Irish distress. The Government however did not seem to be capable of forming any scheme of a sufficiently complete character to reach the root of the evil. Poverty and the want of capital were accepted at the time as the main causes of the distress. But Mr. Charles Wood, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, a disciple of the strict economic school, had an extreme objection to the interference of Government in commercial matters, and set his face against all plans for the fictitious introduction of capital. His idea seems to have been that the value of land would by degrees become so low under the influence of the enormous poor-rate that it would afford an irresistible temptation as an investment to capitalists. The Government consequently confined itself to measures of a merely temporary character. The terrible amount of pauperism in some

districts had, under the operation of the Poor Law, raised the rates to a ruinous height. With this difficulty Government proposed to deal by a grant of £50,000, and by levying upon the whole of Ireland a general rate, known as the "rate in aid," from which the insolvent Unions were to be supported. Sir Robert Peel, on the other hand, while accepting this measure as a temporary alleviation, suggested that the truer policy was to take some steps which, without Government interference, might yet attract capital to Ireland. He developed an elaborate scheme recommending that the distressed districts should be placed under the direct management of a Government commission, and that steps should be taken to facilitate the transfer of land. The reception of this proposal was so favourable, and the feeling that Government was legislating only from hand to mouth so strong, that the Ministry in some degree adopted it,

The "rate in  
aid."  
May 1849.

and the Encumbered Estates Act was the consequence. A Bill embody-  
 ing the same principle had been passed in the preceding  
 year, but had proved inoperative. Romilly, the Solicitor-  
 General, now introduced a very stringent measure by  
 which a commission, superseding for the time the Court of Chancery,  
 removed the obstacles and expenses which the procedure of that Court  
 entailed, and allowed under its authority the easy sale of land, and  
 the establishment of an unquestionable parliamentary title in favour  
 of the purchaser. Its comparative failure has been already men-  
 tioned. Though much land changed hands, and capital was thus in a  
 certain degree introduced, the new landlords were even more inclined  
 than the old to employ the powers which the law gave them, and the  
 strict enforcement of which was the chief cause of discontent. It was  
 in fact a plausible effort in the wrong direction, based upon the  
 erroneous belief that the same laws with regard to land were applicable  
 to England and to Ireland, and that the mere introduction of wealthy  
 landlords would establish that friendly relation between them and  
 their tenants which existed in England. It was followed  
 by an attempt to find some further cure for the ruinous  
 character of the Poor Law. Lord John Russell, with the  
 intention of restoring confidence, proposed, along with several other  
 modifications of the law, that seven shillings in the pound should be  
 the maximum rate in any Union. The deficiency which might thus  
 occur was to be supplied either by the "rate in aid" or by a fresh  
 grant from Parliament, or "from those sources from which relief had  
 been given before the introduction of the Poor Law in 1837." The  
 measure was to be accompanied by the resumption of the strict  
 administration of the principle of the English Poor Law and the  
 demand for the workhouse test. The Bill after much discussion was  
 passed, but not till it had been shorn in the Upper House of its most  
 important clause by which the maximum was fixed.

The difficulties of the year had been complicated by a war in India.  
 Mooltan, the capital of the district at the bifurcation of  
 the Sutlej and the Indus, had been one of the latest  
 conquests of the Sikhs under Runjeet Singh. On the  
 death of its first governor his son Moolraj succeeded to his office. But  
 his reputation for wealth induced the Lahore Government to insist  
 upon an enormous succession-duty. Difficulties with regard to the  
 payment of this sum continued, and though for a time the disturbed  
 state of the country had allowed Moolraj to remain at Mooltan,  
 when the country became more settled the claims were renewed.

The Encum-  
 bered Estates  
 Act.  
 June 1849.

Change in the  
 Poor Law.  
 July 1849.

The Punjab  
 War.  
 1849.

An arrangement was at length arrived at, and, as it was believed, accepted by Moolraj, by which the government of the town was to be placed in other hands. Two English officers, Mr. Vans Agnew and Lieutenant Anderson, were sent with a small native escort to superintend the transfer. They appear to have asked Moolraj somewhat roughly for a settlement of his accounts, and either at his instigation or induced by their own dislike to the interference of foreigners the people of Mooltan, at the close of the interview at which the town had been ceded, fell upon the English officers and severely wounded them. Shortly afterwards the house to which they had retired, and where they lay wounded, was assaulted, and they were both murdered. Moolraj at once put himself at the head of the insurrectionary movement. At first, a local outbreak ostensibly against the native Government of Lahore, the insurrection rapidly grew into a national movement against the English occupation. The country was ripe for rebellion. The chiefs were thoroughly disaffected. The energy of the young English officers who had superintended the native Government, not always with discretion, had alienated the people. Signs of the coming danger had been visible at Lahore, and it had been thought necessary to remove the Queen-mother as a centre of disaffection into English territory. The English Government was at first inclined to treat the matter as a local disturbance, and no immediate advance of troops was made. But a young officer, Lieutenant Edwardes, employed in the settlement of the revenue in the neighbourhood, had thought it his duty at once to collect what troops he could lay hands on, and, calling to his aid the Khan of Bahwulpore, an English ally to the south of Mooltan, had after some successful skirmishes confined the insurgents to the immediate neighbourhood of Mooltan; unable to act against the town itself without reinforcements, he had applied to Sir Frederick Currie, the English Resident at Lahore, for help. Currie, still maintaining the fiction that the insurrection was local, had sent him a strong body of Sikh troops under Shere Singh (who was among the most prominent of the Sirdars), as well as some siege guns under General Whish, thus enabling him to lay siege to the town. He seemed on the point of success when the desertion of the whole Sikh force under Shere Singh obliged him for the time to suspend his operations, and made it evident that the Sikh nation had seized the opportunity to attempt again to throw off English influence, and that the Punjab would have to be reconquered. The scene of the great struggle was to the north-west of Lahore, between that capital and the passes

Insurrection at  
Mooltan.  
April 1848.



leading to Cabul and Afghanistan. The Sikhs in their eagerness had laid aside their old quarrels with the Afghans and persuaded Dost Mahomed to send troops to their assistance and to occupy Attock.

To meet this alarming combination English troops were at once assembled at Ferozepore ; and in November Lord Gough, the Commander-in-Chief, advanced at the head of 20,000 men to the Chenab. Gough, a vigorous and successful

Battle of  
Ramnugur.  
Nov. 22, 1848.

soldier, and capable, as was subsequently proved, of commanding well, was hasty and incautious. An attempt to cross the river without proper precautions produced the battle of Ramnugur—a victory indeed, but so dearly bought and so ineffective that it was little better than a defeat. Though the river was crossed, the only result was the removal of the enemy to a strong position on the Jhelum. The battle was fought on the 22d of November. On the 21st of January Whish succeeded in reducing Mooltan, and the troops which had been employed there were at liberty to join the main army.

Battle of  
Chillianwallah.  
Jan. 13, 1849.

But before this, on the 13th, Gough had fought a great battle at Chillianwallah. He had made all fitting dispositions for fighting the battle on the 14th, but the Sikhs, having fired upon his camp, had roused his temper, and he had hastily plunged at once, late in the evening and with wearied troops, into a battle. It had been a terrible slaughter, in which both armies claimed the victory. Seldom had a despatch been received with more anger and dismay than that which brought the news of this battle to England. A cry arose on all sides for the removal of the impetuous general, and the immediate appointment of Sir Charles Napier, the conqueror of Sindh. In spite of a good deal of opposition from the Court of Directors, the Government felt obliged to yield to the cry, acting under the advice of the Duke of Wellington ; and although suffering under a mortal disease, Napier accepted the appointment, and within a few hours left England to take it up. Before he arrived, however, Gough had re-established his reputation. Strengthened by the army under Whish from Mooltan, which had marched up with extraordinary rapidity, he brought the united Sikh

Battle of  
Goojerat.  
Feb. 21.

and Afghan troops to an engagement at Goojerat, and there neglecting no precaution, and using to the full his artillery, he completely routed the enemy with little or no loss, showing by this success how thoroughly his late disaster was traceable to his indiscreet haste. Under Sir Walter Gilbert the pursuit was pressed with extraordinary rapidity. The Afghan allies withdrew into the passes, the Sikhs recognised that their force was completely



broken, and on the 14th of March the remnant of their army laid down their arms.

The merciful attempt to allow the native government to reform itself under English guardianship had entirely failed. It seemed obvious to Lord Dalhousie that any further steps in the same direction would be unwise, and he proceeded at once to annex the Punjab. The Maharajah Dhuleep Singh was handsomely pensioned and brought over to England, while the Punjab itself—placed first under a Board consisting of John and Henry Laurence and Mr. Mansel, and subsequently under the sole rule of John Laurence—became a model of a well-governed English province, and in subsequent times of great danger the stronghold of English power in India.

Annexation of  
the Punjab.  
Mar. 29, 1849.

The difficulties of the previous year had been so far overcome that the Ministry, in the Queen's Speech with which the session of 1850 opened, were able to give a tolerably successful account of the nation. Free-trade had begun to tell its tale, and trade was steadily reviving; the revenue showed a handsome surplus; the value of the exports had risen in the course of the last year nearly £10,000,000; pauperism had decreased; and the prices of the necessaries of life were low. There was indeed progressive improvement in the condition of the working-classes. Public attention had for some years been, by the spread of the cholera, attracted to the insanitary state of the dwellings of the poor; great efforts and great improvements had been the consequence. The Sanitary Commission which, even as early as 1842, had published its report, had shown how large was the amount of illness which it was possible to prevent, and in 1847 and 1848 several important Bills—the Towns' Improvement Act, the Public Health, and the Nuisance Removal Act—had been the result. The Public Health Act of 1848, which was founded chiefly on the recommendation of Mr. Chadwick and Dr. Southwood Smith, the authors of the first sanitary report, had established a general Board of Health to carry out the curative measures necessary; and its success had been emphasised by the comparative ease with which the cholera, which had reappeared in 1849, had been met and combated. In Ireland, too, there was an appearance of unusual tranquillity. It was perhaps rather specious than real, the effect of exhaustion caused by the late terrible disasters. Nor had the opportunity been thoroughly or wisely used. Yet for the instant much was hoped from the action of the Encumbered Estates Bill, and the temporary lull of agitation.

Prosperous  
state of affairs.  
1850.

There was however a confessed depression in the agricultural interests, the protectionists still formed an important party in opposition, and the foreign policy of the Government, conducted by Lord Palmerston, still afforded a constant opening for attack. On the other side, the demands of the Charter, no longer pressed by external agitation, began to make themselves heard in a more formal and practical manner in the House, and it was plain that the question of further reform of the constituencies would soon become prominent. But the question of protection appeared to have been practically settled in the late defeat sustained by the Opposition in the repeal of the Navigation Laws. The amendments to the address moved by the country party in both Houses were defeated by large majorities, and the attempt of Disraeli to obtain by a revision of the burdens of the Poor Law some indirect advantages to the landed interest met with the same fate. The movement on behalf of a reform of the constituencies, of which Mr. Hume made himself the spokesman, proved also to be as yet not ripe for success; and the resolution in favour of Household Suffrage, Triennial Parliaments, and the Ballot, which he introduced, was negatived by 242 to 96. A somewhat colourless Budget, showing a calculated surplus of a million and a half, gave rise to a good deal of discussion with regard to the employment of this surplus, and allowed room for a motion by Mr. Cobden for the reduction of expenditure. But the Government was able, though sometimes by small majorities, to resist the amendments of the Opposition, and little was done beyond a small diminution of the principal of the public debt, and the removal of the tax on bricks with the intention of facilitating the improved housing of the working-classes.

Foreign affairs and the state of our Colonies were the points round which the interests of the year centred. In the course of the last few years public attention had been drawn in not altogether a pleasant way to the subject of our colonial policy. General causes, such as constantly increasing emigration and the desire to cut down the national expenditure, had gone hand in hand with disputes and incidents of a somewhat threatening character, to excite public interest in a subject but too often regarded with indifference. An insurrection in Ceylon had been suppressed with questionable severity, and Lord Torrington, the Governor, was said to have passed an Act of Indemnity for himself by his own casting vote. Similar exhibitions of overstrained authority had taken place in the Ionian Islands. In British Guiana, thwarted by the governor in attempts at retrenchment. the Assembly

Attention  
drawn to the  
colonies.

had stopped supplies, and the colony had been almost brought to ruin. From Australia increasing complaints of the government had been made. Both Australia and New Zealand had refused any longer to serve as penal settlements, and to accept the offscourings of England. The attempt to land convicts at the Cape had produced something closely resembling a rebellion. The Queen's ship, with the convicts on board, had been refused all intercourse with the shore, and been compelled to sail away with its living cargo. And in Canada, a serious uproar had arisen in Montreal. Lord Elgin, the Governor, had given his assent to a Bill to indemnify the inhabitants of Lower Canada for the losses inflicted on them by the insurrection of 1837 and 1838. The British party, Loyalists, as they called themselves, had broken into riot. Parliament House had been burnt, the houses of the Ministers pillaged, and a petition got up for the removal of the Governor, and to entreat Parliament to disallow the Bill, which was stigmatised as a means of rewarding rebels at the expense of the community. A declaration had even been put out advising the annexation of the Canadas to the United States. In the words of Sir William Molesworth, "From every quarter, north, south, east, and west, charges were brought against the present Secretary of State for the Colonies, of injudicious appointments, ignorance, negligence, vacillation, breach of faith, and tyranny."

But although the complaints were levelled against Lord Grey, thinking men who took interest in the subject were fully aware that it was not the individual Minister, but the system which was to blame. It was seen that it was impossible that the wishes, interests, and aspirations of rising colonies in every corner of the globe should be understood or answered by any single head of a department resident in London. It was inevitable that disputes should arise in countries governed, as our colonies then were, by nominee councils and an executive over which the people had no control. An association had been formed for colonial reform. The solution which it offered was the establishment of self-government in the colonies, and as complete a command of local questions lodged in the hands of the colonists themselves as was consistent with the maintenance of Imperial interests. At last, in the session of 1850, Government, which had resisted all private efforts at reform, found it necessary to undertake the business themselves, and Lord John Russell introduced a Bill for the better government of the Australian colonies. After a rapid sketch of the history of the colonies, and a declaration of his determination to preserve, for the present at least,

Desire for  
reform of the  
Colonial Office.

the colonial empire, he pointed out that the late complete destruction of the system of commercial monopoly had entirely altered the position of the colonies, which had been originally founded principally for the maintenance of that system. Upon this ground he confessed

Russell's  
Australia  
Constitution  
Bill.  
May 13, 1850.

that he thought it right that many of them at least should be allowed separate constitutions. He refused however, on the plea of impossibility, to draw the sharp line which the more advanced reformers desired between local and imperial questions. But while thus reserving the power of the veto in all cases to the home Ministry, he proposed the establishment of a legislative body in each of the Australian colonies (now for the first time separated), with power to introduce such changes in their constitution as they thought fit, and an executive responsible to the colonial Parliament. Objections were made to the form of constitution offered and to the want of definition of Imperial rights. But as the colonists were given the power to change their constitution, the objection was really of little weight, and practically the common-sense of the Government has prevented any difficulty from arising as to what the colonial legislature might or might not handle. The Bill in fact was a long step in the right direction. It was the recognition of the principle that, whenever it was not forbidden by circumstances, the best way of securing the friendship of the colonies and maintaining the unity of the Empire was to be found in giving them the complete management of their own affairs. It forms the beginning of that system of local responsible governments which at present exists in all our chief colonies.

The strictures upon the management of the Colonial Office had been very severe; but it was throughout felt that although some mismanagement might be attributable to Lord Grey, it was rather the system than the man that was to blame. With regard to foreign affairs the case was almost reversed. It was Lord Palmerston himself against whom all attacks were directed. It was the way in which the policy was carried out, rather than the policy itself, which seemed open to objection. Full of self-confidence, mistrusting in diplomacy the effect of combined management, such as would be afforded by the Cabinet, Lord Palmerston had kept foreign affairs much in his own hands. It must be confessed also that he allowed his strong prejudices to influence his political action. A profound mistrust in France and French diplomacy, and a strong abhorrence mingled with some contempt for the arbitrary Powers of Europe, coloured all that he did. A firm belief

Attacks on  
Palmerston's  
foreign policy.



in the excellence under all circumstances of the political arrangements of England, and of the superiority of Englishmen, tended still further to give a dictatorial and meddlesome character to his diplomacy.

In a certain sense successful—for undoubtedly the position of England among nations was very high—in the actual production of its object, if that object was constitutional rule, it had signally failed. The reaction in the course of the year 1849 had been complete, and the prospects of constitutional advance were very dark. All insurrectionary movement in the two Sicilies had been suppressed. The victory of Novara and the fall of Venice had re-established Austrian supremacy in the north of Italy, and her troops had been instrumental in crushing the rising liberty of Tuscany, of Parma, and Modena. The French had restored the power of the Pope in Rome. Meanwhile, under Schwartzemberg, Austria had been attempting to centralise its dominions. The Magyars of Hungary, clinging to their old constitution, though checked in their advance upon Vienna, had regained their superiority in the field. The stirring eloquence of Kossuth excited them to firm resistance, while the Polish Generals Bem and Dembinski made successful head against the Austrian arms. In an evil hour for itself the Austrian Court summoned to its assistance the Czar; and 150,000 Russians added to the Austrian troops proved more than the Hungarians could resist. The surrender of their last army under Georgey completed their defeat, and their leaders fled for refuge to Turkey. In Germany the effort at reconstituting the Empire had broken down. While the Republican feeling, which had gone hand in hand with the desire for national union, had driven the Assembly at Frankfort to foolish extremes, the jealous rivalry of Austria and Prussia, equally desirous to secure the first place in any new federative arrangement, and the refusal of the Princes to annihilate themselves for the advantage of their common fatherland, had prevented any reasonable settlement. Prussia had felt itself obliged to refuse the Imperial crown. The greater Princes had withdrawn their deputies from the Frankfort Assembly, which had moved to Stuttgart, and on the 18th of June its meeting had been suppressed by the soldiers of the King of Wurtemberg. A fresh outburst of revolutionary zeal which had followed upon these events had produced an insurrection in Baden. But when this was crushed by Prussian, Federal, and Bavarian troops, the revolution was over, things fell back again into their old position, the Princes forgot

Complete  
European re-  
action of 1849.



all their promises of constitutional government, and the dynastic reaction was complete.

Throughout this troubled period, the most which English diplomacy had been able to undertake had been mediation and advice, directed to moderate in their own interests the severity of the successful reactionaries. But the popular sympathy was doubtless with the party of progress. The cruelty with which the Austrians exercised their renewed authority, and the masterful intervention of Russia, rendered this feeling more acute. It was fully shared by Lord Palmerston, who lost no opportunity of giving it effect when he could do so without bringing the country into war. Such an opportunity was found in the demand of Russia and Austria that Turkey should deliver up the Hungarian fugitives. To this demand Turkey gave a firm refusal, but offered to send them out of the country or to keep them safely at a distance from the frontier. The Ambassadors of Russia and Austria at once broke off diplomatic relations, and it seemed not improbable that Turkey would be forced into war with its powerful neighbours. It applied to England and to France for assistance, which was immediately and effectively given; for in refusing the demand the Turks were certainly justified. The Russian Ambassador in London indeed acknowledged that by treaty while the Emperor had a right to make the demand, the Turks had a right to refuse it. The English Government sent a remonstrance to the

English fleet  
sent to the  
Dardanelles.  
Oct. 1849.

Russian Court, and to accelerate its movements the English and French fleets were ordered to the Dardanelles. They even, contrary to the Treaty of 1841, entered the Straits; but this error was speedily corrected, and was alleged to have been due to stress of weather. Neither Russia nor Austria was inclined to press the matter further, the demand was withdrawn, and after a while such of the refugees as had not become Mahomedans left Turkey for America and England. Though the difficulty had been arranged without recourse to arms, the feelings of the Czar had been much shocked, and a permanent hostility to England excited in his mind.

France had in this case acted cordially as our ally, but the next exhibition of English vigour seriously threatened the alliance. Greek

Bad govern-  
ment in  
Greece.

independence had been established under the joint guardianship of Russia, France, and England. Constitutional government had been guaranteed. It had however been constantly delayed. Otho, the Bavarian Prince, who had been placed upon the throne was absolute in his own tendencies, and supported by the absolute Powers; and France, eager to establish

her own influence in the East, and seeing a road to that object rather in flattering the hopes of Greece for increased territory than in support of good government, had sided with the Absolutists, leaving England the sole supporter of constitutional rule. The Government and administration were deplorably bad. One Prime Minister, Coletti, had been himself little better than a leader of brigands. Justice was of a violent and arbitrary sort, and the judges were dependent on the Ministry. Any demands raised by the English against the Government, and the bad administration afforded abundant opportunity for dispute, were certain to encounter the opposition of the King, supported by the advice of all the diplomatic body. Such questions had arisen. Ionians, claiming to be British subjects, had been maltreated, the boat's crew of a Queen's ship roughly handled, and in two cases the money claims of English subjects against the Government disregarded. They were trivial enough in themselves; a piece of land belonging to a Mr. Finlay, a Scotchman, had been incorporated into the royal garden, and the price—no doubt somewhat exorbitant—which he set upon it refused. The house of Don Pacifico, a Jew, a native of Gibraltar, had been sacked by a mob, without due interference on the part of the police. He demanded compensation for ill-usage, for property destroyed, and for the loss of certain papers, the only proof as he declared of a somewhat doubtful claim against the Portuguese Government. Such claims in the ordinary course of things should have been made in the Greek Law Court. But Lord Palmerston, placing no trust in the justice to be there obtained, made them a direct national claim upon the Government. For several years on various pretences the settlement of the question had been postponed, and Palmerston had even warned Russia that he should some day have to put strong pressure upon the Greek Court to obtain the discharge of their debts. At length, at the close of 1849, his patience became exhausted. Admiral Parker, with the British fleet, was ordered to the Piræus. Mr. Wyse, the English Ambassador, embarked in it. The claims were again formally laid before the King, and upon their being declined the Piræus was blockaded, ships of the Greek navy captured, and merchant vessels secured by way of material guarantee for payment. The French and the Russians were indignant at this unexpected act of vigour. The Court of the Czar found in it an opportunity for revenging itself for the late action of England with regard to the Hungarian refugees, and sent and published a strongly worded and threatening despatch

Claims of English subjects disregarded.

English fleet sent to the Piræus. Jan. 1850.

to Lord Palmerston. The French, on the other hand, displeased at the idea of the matter being settled without reference to themselves, made an offer of their good offices as mediators. The offer was accepted ; but on the distinct understanding that neither the principle involved, nor, except in certain cases, the amount demanded, were to be subjects of discussion. Their emissary was to use his influence to persuade the Greeks to meet the claim. Should he fail, England was to be free again to have recourse to its own means of coercion. Baron Gros was

French mediation unsuccessful.

the emissary sent. During his negotiation the blockade was suspended. He reached Athens on the 5th of

March, and after six weeks of delay and argument—during which, as Palmerston thought, he had constantly passed the limits of mediation, and adopted the position of arbitrator—on the 21st of April he declared that his negotiation was unsuccessful. But the French, disliking a treaty contracted under English guns, had meanwhile employed their Minister in London, Drouyn de L'Huys, to agree with Lord Palmerston upon a Convention, settling the terms on which the quarrel might be ended. The Convention was agreed to on the 18th of April. A steamer had been sent from France informing Baron Gros of the probability of such a Convention ; it arrived on the 24th of April. But no corresponding information had been sent to Mr. Wyse. He therefore refused to renew negotiations

Greece yields to force.  
April 1850.

through the French, again proceeded to coercive measures, and on the 26th the Greek Government yielded. The

French thus found that after all the business had been concluded without their participation. As Palmerston pleaded that the delay which had occurred in communicating with Mr. Wyse as to the Convention was the effect of accident, the French demanded that the accident should be corrected, and that the Convention and not Mr. Wyse's terms should form the basis of the final agreement. Lord Palmerston, on the other hand, thinking that on the withdrawal of Baron Gros from the negotiation England had again entered on her full rights, justified Mr. Wyse in renewing the blockade, and held to the arrangement then made. In extreme anger the French charged him with duplicity and recalled their ambassador from England. The matter was too small to cause any risk of war ; but the Cabinet thought it so serious as to require some concession, and finally on all points not already completed the Convention was accepted.

For the time this trumpery little affair caused the greatest excitement, and being regarded as a typical instance of Lord Palmerston's management of the Foreign Office, it formed the ground of a very seri-

ous attack upon the Government. In the House of Lords in a great debate in June the foreign policy of the Government was arraigned, and Lord Palmerston was accused of having alienated the whole of Europe. His constant interference on behalf of the Liberals, it was said, had set in array against us the absolute Powers of Europe, without in any way advancing the cause of liberty, for on all sides those absolute Powers were for the time successful. His conduct had not even been consistent. The national aspirations of the Duchies of Holstein and Sleswig had not been supported. Anxious, with much show of reason, to attach themselves to the German nation, they had found assistance in the Assembly of Frankfort and the Prussian King. But England had throughout, while assuming the part of mediator, favoured the maintenance of the unity of the Danish dominions, and thus our position, both with regard to Prussia and to all those desirous of German unity, had been injured. The appearance of the fleet in the Dardanelles, contrary to treaty, had excited the hostility of Russia and Austria, and now, while alienating our one real ally, France, we had exhibited ourselves in the odious attitude of a bully, and laid ourselves open to reproaches so insulting as those of the Russian despatch of February. The resolution condemnatory of our foreign policy, supported by Lord Stanley and Lord Aberdeen, was carried by a large majority.

Attack on  
Palmerston in  
the House of  
Lords.  
June 17, 1850.

Had Lord John Russell thrown over Palmerston it might have been regarded as a personal attack; but he was too true to his friends and too constitutional in his views to adopt such a line. It became necessary to take some steps to vindicate Government. This was managed by the introduction by Mr. Roebuck of a resolution, declaring the approval of the House of Lord Palmerston's management of foreign affairs. The debate which ensued, and which lasted four nights, is one of the most celebrated on record. At length Palmerston rose, and in a speech of nearly five hours' duration defended the whole course of his administration, a speech which is said to have been more admirable than convincing, but which, at all events, had the effect of obtaining for Government a majority of 46, and of retaining Lord Palmerston in office; while by its essentially manly and English tone it won for him that strong popularity which subsequently rendered him so exceptionally the Minister of the nation. It drew from Sir Robert Peel the observation that "It has made us all proud of him." Yet Sir Robert Peel had

Palmerston's  
defence in the  
Lower House.  
June 25, 1850.



spoken against the resolution. Nor is it possible to say that a policy which allied against it such men as Stanley, Aberdeen, Canning, Sir James Graham, Sir William Molesworth, Sidney Herbert, Gladstone, Cobden and Peel, was not open to some stricture. But in fact Lord Palmerston, conservative in many of his tendencies, was in his foreign policy democratic. Judged from the point of view of the ordinary statesman, who saw in England only one of a group of nations arranged upon dynastic principles, the policy which had, as a matter of fact, shocked every Court in Europe, could not but be blameworthy. From those who regarded England as the guardian and champion of the great idea of liberty, and from those also who rightly or wrongly considered it the duty of England to raise a constant protest in favour of its own position, the policy could scarcely fail to elicit warm admiration.

The debate of June 28th was remarkable, not only for the triumph of Palmerston, but because it was the last occasion on which the voice of Sir Robert Peel was heard in the House. The next day, while he was riding up Constitution Hill, he was thrown from his horse, and received injuries which speedily proved fatal. Sir Robert Peel was a typical English statesman, not gifted with that insight, that comprehension of the contest of forces with which he is surrounded and its probable outcome which makes the great man, but ready to treat with admirable sagacity and practical power each question as it arises; not a leader of public opinion, but ready to accept and throw into its best form opinion already ripened, and by skilful interweaving of the new and old, saving the country from the disastrous results of sudden innovation. In the first part of his life he was hampered by the creeds of his youth and entangled with party ties. He opposed with a tenacity not creditable to his foresight the removal of disabilities from the Roman Catholics and the reform of the constituencies. But after the passage of the Reform Bill he appears to have reconsidered his position. From that time onward it is difficult not to recognise in him the national statesman rather than the party leader. Under the English system it was impossible for him to use his influence without a party at his back. His attachment to the fundamental structure of the constitution, and his dislike to rapid change naturally allied him with the Tories. But reconstituted by him the party ceased to be merely obstructive, and not without some mistrust found itself led into a course of moderate and progressive advance. Although it is difficult to point out the exact moment at which his views were formed, it is evident

Death of Sir  
Robert Peel.  
June 29, 1850.



that he recognised in the middle-class the real element of national strength, and shook himself free from the aristocratic and territorial influences of his younger days. It was upon this view that he rested his financial and commercial policy. The production of wealth and (as far as was consistent with the principles of political economy which he had embraced) the well-being of those who produced it appeared to him to be the objects an English statesman should pursue, implying, as they did to his mind, the maintenance of stable order and a friendly and peaceful attitude towards other countries. He apparently hoped to educate by degrees the party which he led to accept the financial system which would secure these ends, and of which the repeal of the Corn Laws was a part. The terrible outbreak of famine and disease in Ireland, which, as is evident from his letters, moved him deeply, drove him from this course, and obliged him suddenly to offer the completion of the system to his friends as yet untrained to accept it. It was the belief that he was charged with the fate of England, and not of party, which allowed him, though not without much effort, to break loose from his political relations, to forego, as he well understood must be the result, all further hope of office, and to submit to the bitter assaults with which he was assailed. The position which he regarded himself as holding when in office he continued to hold after his fall. The consistent friend and wise adviser of the Liberal Ministry, to whom alone the carrying out of his ideas could be intrusted, he passed his last years in anxiously watching the effect of what he had done, and, without a following and without office, remained to the end of his life the most respected and powerful statesman in the country.

The triumph of Palmerston in the late debate, and his maintenance in the position of Foreign Minister, was a matter of some moment, for war was still raging between Denmark and the Duchies of Sleswig and Holstein; and in the course of the autumn there appeared to be every probability that Prussia and Austria would come to blows. The legal position of the Sleswig-Holstein question is intricate, the principle at issue very simple. The inhabitants of Holstein and a considerable portion of those of Sleswig, speaking the German language, desired to be admitted to any new form of confederation arrived at, and the upholders of the unity of Germany were eagerly determined that this junction should be effected. It would appear that legally Holstein had always been a German fief, Sleswig nearly always a Danish fief. But an old law had declared that Sleswig should always be joined to Holstein, and the law of suc-

✓  
The Sleswig-  
Holstein War.

cession allowed the female line in Denmark but forbade it in Sleswig. These were the technical grounds on which Sleswig claimed to follow Holstein into the German Federation. A guarantee in 1721 by France and England of the Duchy to Denmark formed the technical ground for the action of the Danish Government. The Prussians had offered themselves as the instruments of Germany. Their troops had not only occupied the Duchies but had invaded Jutland, from which, however, they had been forced to retire by the interference of the Swedes,



and an armistice between Denmark and Prussia had been concluded at the close of the year 1848. The war had continued after the termination of the armistice, negotiations of various kinds had been entered into, and at length, on the 2nd of July 1850, under the mediation of England, a Treaty of Peace between Denmark and Germany was contracted. The question with regard to the Duchies was left for future settlement, and England joined with Austria, France, and all the

Baltic Powers in a Protocol on the 4th of July, declaring their wish that the integrity of the Danish monarchy should be preserved. Resting upon such large support, when the Duchies continued the war the King of Denmark invaded Sleswig, defeated General Willisen, a Prussian officer in command of the troops of the Duchy, at Idsted, and again at Friedericistadt, and brought the war to a conclusion when Williseu and the other Prussian volunteers, by whom the war had been mainly kept up, withdrew. Their withdrawal was chiefly due to the calling out of the Prussian army. Throughout the year the rivalry between Prussia and Austria had been becoming more pronounced. The old Diet of the Confederation had resigned its powers to the Assembly of Frankfort. Austria supposed that the restoration of the old Diet, of which she was the acknowledged chief, followed as a matter of course upon the dissolution of the Assembly in June 1849. Prussia, on the other hand, summoned at Erfurt representatives of as many of the German Principalities as it could collect, for the purpose of constituting a new Confederation of which it was itself to be the head. There were thus two rival German Parliaments. No progress however was made at the Erfurt Conference, and Austria considered the reconstitution of the Frankfort Diet as a triumph for itself. At one moment war appeared inevitable. The Elector of Hesse Cassel withdrew before a constitutional opposition, caused by his arbitrary misgovernment, and sought assistance from Austria. Prussia could scarcely avoid supporting the constitutionalists and moved an army into the country. Fortified with the support of the Czar, who had been summoned to mediate, Austria sent troops to reinstate the Elector. The rival forces were thus face to face. But hostilities were postponed by a convention signed at Olmütz, by which, at the price of large concessions from Prussia, the settlement of open questions was referred to joint commissioners of the rival powers. But meanwhile the Prussians thought it prudent to put their army on a war footing.

England joins  
the Protocol in  
favour of  
Denmark.  
July 4, 1850.

Convention of  
Olmütz.  
Nov. 29, 1850.

In the German quarrel England had no very direct interest. But the Queen, or rather Prince Albert—who busied himself much in foreign affairs,—saw with displeasure the action of Palmerston with regard to Sleswig-Holstein. Strongly imbued with admiration for German unity, and regarding the leadership of Prussia as necessary for the success of that object, the Prince disapproved of the anti-German policy of the Protocol of July. The divergence of Lord Palmerston's views from those of the Court, and still more his off-hand manner of conduct-

ing business, produced an incident which foreshadowed the crisis of the following year. The Queen thought it necessary to communicate to Lord Palmerston, through the Prime Minister, a memorandum, requiring him to state distinctly what he proposed in any given case, in order that she might know to what she had given her consent ; and, secondly, that having once given her sanction to a measure it should not be arbitrarily altered or modified. Such an act, she said, she "must consider as failure in sincerity towards the Crown, and justly to be visited by the exercise of her constitutional right of dismissing the Minister." It excites surprise that, after so strongly worded a memorandum, Lord John Russell should still have allowed Lord Palmerston to remain at the Foreign Office, or that Lord Palmerston himself should have wished to do so. No doubt the memorandum embodied a true constitutional view. If the Sovereign, as the permanent element of the executive, is to be of any weight in the Government, it must be in securing as far as possible continuity in our relations with foreign countries, and as all communications with foreign Courts are carried on in the name of the Sovereign, it is but reasonable that he should at least be thoroughly informed of what his Ministers are doing. There is indeed no sign that the Queen, or her chief adviser, Prince Albert, ever relaxed their loyal adhesion to constitutional maxims. Yet there was a prevalent feeling that the Court might and did exercise a sinister influence on the foreign policy of England. It was impossible to forget the close family relationships which connected the crowned heads of Europe, or to avoid the suspicion that the views of the Sovereign were somewhat coloured by a natural, nay an inevitable sympathy with the interests of the reigning class.

It was only when Prince Albert devoted his great abilities and love of culture to questions of a more social character that he was regarded by the people in general as occupying his proper place. In everything relating to the improvement of the physical condition of the people and to the spread of science and art, he exhibited the warmest interest, and a great idea was now occupying his mind. In the year 1849 he had conceived the plan of a great International Exhibition of the works of industry, to be held in the course of the year 1851. It was believed that all nations would gain advantage by an interchange of experience, and obtain a knowledge both of the requirements and achievements of other countries necessary for success in the increased competition which improved locomotion was rendering

The Queen's  
Memorandum.  
Aug. 1850.

The Great  
Exhibition.



inevitable. The plan had found favour generally, both among the manufacturers of England and abroad. Commissioners had been appointed to carry it out. The difficulty of erecting with due rapidity and due attention to beauty a building vast enough for the purpose had been solved by the adoption of Paxton's plan for a palace of glass; and shortly after the close of the Parliamentary session the still further difficulty of finding a fitting site was met, though only after much opposition, by the appropriation of a portion of Hyde Park for the purpose. The completion of this plan was in some respects the most important event of the following year. It was opened on the 1st of May, with a magnificent and effective ceremony. The fear which had been excited lest the concourse of people brought to London should be dangerous, proved entirely groundless. Foreigners were struck with the ease with which a few policemen kept the crowds in order. Nor was the anticipation felt by some that the anarchists of Europe would seize the opportunity for riot in any way realised. In all respects, in the striking character of the building, in the wealth and variety of the products exhibited, and the excellence of the arrangements, it was a marked success. It was visited by 6,000,000 people, and after the payment of all expenses there was a large surplus remaining in the hands of the Commissioners, by whom it was invested in an estate at South Kensington. On this a museum and schools for the advance of art were built, which have continually grown till they now play a very important part in the national education. The results of the Exhibition in a more direct sense were no doubt important. It proved the forerunner of many collections of a similar character, both in England and other countries, the effect of which has been largely to accelerate the equalisation of commercial advantages, and to bring about that great industrial struggle in which all countries engaged in manufactures of a similar kind are now involved.

Results of the  
Exhibition.

But while the Commissioners for the Exhibition were still busy in making arrangements for the coming year, an event occurred, trivial enough in itself, but which caused an excitement which drove for a while all more serious questions into the shade. This was the issue of a Papal Bull establishing a Romish hierarchy in England with territorial titles. "We do hereby decree," it says, "the re-establishment in the kingdom of England, and according to the common laws of the Church, of a Hierarchy of Bishops deriving their titles from their own Sees." This Bull was issued on the 24th of September, and fell upon a public already somewhat excited

The Papal Bull.  
Sep. 1850.



upon ecclesiastical questions. The Crown had appointed in 1847 the Rev. George Gorham to the living of Brampford Speke in the Diocese of Exeter. The Bishop, Dr. Phillpotts, after insisting on examining Mr. Gorham very closely upon his faith, had declined to institute him, declaring his views heretical with regard to the doctrine of baptismal regeneration. The Court of Arches had sustained the action of the Bishop, but this judgment, when brought by appeal before the Privy Council, had been reversed. This tribunal was a lay tribunal. While therefore the Evangelical party rejoiced at the maintenance of Mr. Gorham's doctrine, which was generally speaking their own, and even Churchmen of the older school were pleased at the rebuff given to Episcopal interference which they disliked, the Tractarians and High Churchmen of the newer school were filled with anger, not only at the apparent admission of a doctrine less strict than their own, but at the intervention of a lay court in a question, the settlement of which they believed the spirituality alone had the right of handling. The quarrel was carried to the Queen's Bench, to the Common Pleas, and finally to the Exchequer, but always with the result that the judgment of the Privy Council was upheld. To not a few, the efforts of the High Church party appeared to be nothing less than a serious assault upon the supremacy of the Crown. Thus when the Papal Bull appeared, it was very generally interpreted as a step in the same direction. It was supposed that the Pope would not have ventured to issue it had he not believed that the High Church party were becoming powerful, and that their doctrines led (as in many individual instances had been the case) direct to the adoption of the Roman doctrine. Full of these feelings, the Prime Minister on the 4th of October wrote a letter to the Bishop of Durham, stigmatising "the late aggressions of the Papacy upon our Protestantism as insolent and invidious." His alarm however, he said, was not equal to his indignation; he felt that England was strong enough to repel any outward attacks. But there was a danger which alarmed him much more than any aggression of a foreign sovereign: "Clergymen of our own Church who have subscribed the Thirty-nine Articles, and acknowledged in explicit terms the Queen's supremacy, have been the most forward in leading their flocks 'step by step to the very verge of the precipice.'" The letter was regarded as a sort of proclamation against both the High Church and the Roman Catholics. Cardinal Wiseman, the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Westminster published an appeal to the English people

Excitement  
about Mr.  
Gorham's case.  
June 1850.

Cardinal  
Wiseman's  
appeal.  
Oct. 1850.

justifying the recent measures, and explaining that they consisted in mere matters of ecclesiastical discipline. But his appeal served rather to increase than to allay the storm. The conduct of the Irish clergy too, who had in Synod denounced the late effort at improving Irish education as irreligious, and who had not scrupled even to discuss the question of land tenure in a spirit hostile to the Government, had roused general indignation. The feeling in England showed itself in clamorous meetings and in addresses to the Crown poured in from all quarters. The excitement continued and increased up to the very time of the opening of Parliament in February, when the Queen's Speech declared the intention of the Ministry to maintain the rights of the Crown, and to lay a measure before Parliament for that purpose. The measure made its appearance as the Ecclesiastical Titles Bill. Its object was to prevent the assumption of territorial titles by the Roman Catholic Bishops. Leave was given by a very large majority to introduce the Bill. It was plain that the popular feeling entirely favoured it. But the minority, though small in numbers, was important in ability. An evident determination was shown, both on the part of the Radicals and of the Peelites, to throw obstacles in the way of the Bill; certain clauses had to be omitted, and when after the Ministerial crisis it was reproduced, though carried by large majorities, it was in fact little more than an idle protest.

Ecclesiastical  
Titles Bill.  
March 1851.

The crisis which interrupted the Ecclesiastical Titles Bill, although signs were not wanting that the Ministry was in some difficulty, came as a surprise. It was the effect rather of general weakness than of distinct defeat. The budget was produced on the 17th of February. With a considerable surplus in hand, the Chancellor of the Exchequer had offered only to repeal a portion of the window-tax, which was highly unpopular, and at the same time to continue the income-tax. His statement was so badly received that the defeat of the Government seemed almost certain. But the actual cause of the crisis was a vote taken a few days later, in a very thin house, on a motion by Mr. Locke King to assimilate the county franchise to that of the boroughs. The question of electoral reform had become pressing, and Lord John Russell offered to introduce a measure for extending the suffrage. In spite of this, however, Mr. Locke King proceeded to a division, and in opposition to the Government obtained leave to bring in his Bill by a majority of fifty. Conscious of their weakness, and preferring to resign upon

Ministerial  
crisis.  
Feb. 20.

this point, where their defeat had been pretty plainly accidental, to suffering complete discomfiture upon their budget, the Ministry determined to resign. The state of parties rendered the formation of a new Ministry a matter of great difficulty. The Peelites, pledged to oppose the Ecclesiastical Titles Bill, would not join the Whigs, nor could they stand alone, especially in the face of the general feeling in

The Russell  
Ministry retain  
office.  
Feb. 24, 1851.

favour of that Bill. But they were equally resolute not to combine with Lord Stanley and the Protectionists, who without them were unable to form a Ministry. After a considerable delay and much negotiation, as it proved impossible to form any successful combination, the old Ministry returned unchanged to office. Having thus obtained a new lease of life, Lord John Russell was able to pass his Ecclesiastical Titles Bill. A new budget completely repealing the window-tax, and on the amendment of Mr. Hume continuing the income-tax for a year only, was carried. And amid the excitement caused by the great Exhibition the session quietly came to an end without further difficulty.

But the real source of the weakness of the Ministry—the mistrust of Lord Palmerston felt by the Queen and Prince Albert, and the difficulties with foreign courts excited by his self-asserting method of doing business, still remained. The arrival in October of Kossuth, the late leader of the Hungarian Revolution, from his exile in Turkey, again brought these difficulties into prominence. Kossuth and his

Kossuth in  
England.  
Oct. 1851.

friends were received with enthusiasm by the English Liberals. His eloquent speeches inculcated the principle that foreign interference with the constitutional arrangements of a country was wholly inadmissible, and that to prevent it other countries were bound to combine and take up arms. The natural deduction from this was that England was called upon to protect the Hungarians from the assaults of Austria and Russia. Listened to and admired by multitudes in England, such speeches could not fail to cause great displeasure to the despotic Powers attacked in them. Those Powers ranked nominally among the friends of England, and although the Government could not of course dream of suppressing the expression of opinion, it certainly could not openly give its countenance to the opinions expressed. When Lord Palmerston therefore apparently with difficulty refrained from receiving Kossuth himself, and listened with approbation to addresses from the Radicals of Finsbury and Islington, in which the Emperors of Austria and Russia were spoken of as “odious and detestable assassins,” he appeared to be going some way towards compromising

the position of England. His conduct was formally condemned by the Cabinet on the 4th of December.

But before that time much graver events had occurred which threw such slight peccadilloes into the shade. On the night of the 1st and the morning of the 2d of December, the French President, Prince Louis Napoleon, had carried out a *coup d'état* which upset the existing Republican constitution in France, established for a while a military despotism, and led directly in the course of a few months to the establishment of the Second Empire. The Republican Constitution of 1848 was not of a character to be lasting or to work easily. More especially was this the case in France, where undoubtedly among the middle-classes, and those possessed of property, there was a strong disposition in favour of some form of monarchy. In their desire to establish constitutional balance, the constitution-makers had so arranged the powers of the Chambers and of the President that a conflict between them was inevitable. During the whole of the year a struggle had been going on. Every law tending at all to increase the power of the President had been opposed, though the unsettled state of the country seemed to call for a strong executive. But it was generally believed that the crisis would be postponed till the following May, when, according to the Constitution, a new President would have to be elected. It was certain that a large majority of Frenchmen would have wished to re-elect the Prince. But by the Constitution he was not capable of re-election, nor was there any means of changing the Constitution without the concurrence of two-thirds of the Chamber, which was of course unattainable. But Prince Louis was not only an ambitious man, he had also passed his life in meditating upon the career of his great uncle, and had brought himself to believe that it was his destiny to follow his footsteps as the ruler of France. It was not to be expected that a man of this character, feeling the support of the nation behind him, would quietly allow himself to pass into obscurity at the close of his tenure of office. He had undoubtedly been taking steps to secure his re-election as well as great constitutional changes. He had filled some of the more important offices—the Ministry of War, the Prefecture of Police, and the command of the troops about Paris—with adventurers on whom he could rely, and in whose hands, almost without expecting it, he became a mere puppet. He had secured the friendship of the army, already irritated by an attempt in the Chamber to place a civilian at its head, and had declared himself in favour of universal suffrage. It seems possible that the intention of

The Coup  
d'État.  
Dec 2, 1851.



the hostile majority of the Chambers to take some unconstitutional action against him had come to his knowledge, that he had heard of some plot in which the Orleans princes were implicated. This may have decided him to proceed at once to a counter-stroke. At all events, at the end of November, careful and secret preparations were made, and on the night of the 1st of December the State printing office was secured, troops were brought into Paris, many of the leaders of the Chambers and the more important generals were apprehended in their houses, and when the morning broke the walls were found placarded with proclamations declaring the intentions of the President, and promising a new Constitution, of which the outlines were given. In the course of the day the Legislative Assembly was cleared by the troops, all the members present being carried off and imprisoned. The people, left without leaders, taken entirely by surprise, made but a slight resistance. Some barricades were thrown up but were captured without difficulty. Yet the change of government was not effected without terrible bloodshed, for the troops in the boulevards (whether upon instruction, or of their own motion, it can never be known), fired volley after volley upon the peaceful bystanders in the streets, and into the windows of the houses. No quarter was given, and those prisoners who were taken were put to death in cold blood. Whatever may be thought of the political aspect of the *coup d'état*, the underhand stealthy manner in which it was planned, the mean and selfish character of its perpetrators, the cold-blooded and calculating ferocity with which it was executed, stamped upon the reign of Louis Napoleon a character of vulgar and unprincipled adventure which clung to it even in the time of its greatest prosperity, and checked all feelings of regret at its miserable downfall.

But of course it was as a political event that foreign governments had at first to regard it. As it has for many years been a fixed principle of English policy to allow nations to settle their own constitutional matters themselves, there could be no question as to what the conduct of the Government must be. Lord Normanby, our ambassador, was instructed by Lord Palmerston in a short, formal despatch, draughted in accordance with the decision of the Cabinet, "to make no change in his relations with the French Government." This was written on the 5th of December, two days after Normanby had applied for instructions. The despatch was not intended to be shown to the French Minister, Turgot, but only as instruction for himself. Lord Normanby did however communicate it to M. Turgot, apologising for the delay.

Palmerston's  
despatch to  
Normanby.  
Dec. 5.



Turgot replied, somewhat nettled at any doubt as to the English position being raised, that the delay made no difference, especially as he had received from Walewsky, his own ambassador in London, information that Lord Palmerston had expressed his full approbation of what had been done. This Lord Normanby communicated in a public despatch, which came of necessity to the notice of Lord John Russell and the Queen. The Premier at once wrote to Palmerston, asking him to explain how he came thus to have expressed in private, and before consulting his colleagues, so definite an opinion on the matter. But Lord Palmerston allowed a day to pass before writing his reply. He was busily employed during the interval, and among other things, wrote a despatch which he did not show to the Cabinet, informing Lord Normanby that in his opinion the success of the President was desirable for France. Very late that night, the 16th of December (he was unable to write till past four in the morning) he replied to Lord John Russell in a long letter, giving the grounds of the opinion he had expressed, at the same time saying that Walewsky had given a highly coloured account of his words. To this Lord John replied that the question was not what his opinion was, but whether he ought to have given any opinion without taking the orders of the sovereign. Palmerston replied by stating that he had given the opinion as a private individual, and that friendly intercourse with foreign ambassadors would be impossible if all expressions of private opinion were forbidden. The Premier at once cut the discussion short. "No other course," he wrote, "is left me than to submit the correspondence to the Queen, and to ask her Majesty to appoint a successor to you in the Foreign Office." At the same time he offered Palmerston the position of the Viceroy of Ireland, which, it is needless to say, he declined with some sarcasm. As Lord John Russell and other members of the Cabinet had expressed in private conversation to the French ambassador the same views as those held by Lord Palmerston, it was evidently not any disagreement as to the policy to be pursued which caused his dismissal. Nor apparently did Lord John Russell fail to recognise the difference between the public and private utterances of Ministers. But the independence of action which Lord Palmerston had always employed, and which he appears to have thought necessary for the efficient transaction of foreign business, had been long distasteful to the Queen and Prince Albert. The Premier was not unnaturally displeased at the apparent disregard of his remonstrance shown by the despatch of

Correspondence  
between  
Russell and  
Palmerston.

Palmerston's  
dismissal.  
Dec. 19.

the 16th. The whole incident seemed to show Lord Palmerston's determination to pursue his own course, and the opportunity was taken to give effect to the long-cherished wishes of the Court.

The news of what had happened was received with a cry of triumph by the reactionary party abroad. Schwartzberg is said to have held a *fête* to celebrate it. It remained to be seen, when the necessary explanations were given on the reassembling of Parliament, what the verdict of England would be. The attack of Lord John Russell upon

Explanations  
in Parliament.  
Feb. 3, 1852.

his colleague is described as singularly powerful. In his defence Lord Palmerston delivered a speech far below his usual standard. In fact Russell had acted scarcely fairly. Having distinctly told Palmerston that the cause of his dismissal was his conversation with Walewsky, he brought up against him a variety of charges drawn from his former conduct, strengthening them by reading the Queen's memorandum of 1850, and closing them with the assertion that Palmerston's despatch of the 16th of December, having been sent without the knowledge of the Queen or Cabinet, broke the conditions mentioned in the memorandum, and laid him open to dismissal. Palmerston, though he hinted at the fact that Russell had sinned equally with himself with regard to Walewsky, felt bound in honour not to bring the ambassador's name forward as his witness. His repartee therefore wanted all point. In the same way he thought it impossible to explain his reasons for submitting so quietly to the memorandum of 1850. He neither liked to emphasise the delicacy which had led him to regard that memorandum, not only as a letter from a sovereign but from a lady, and therefore to submit to it, nor to explain the fact that had he resented it the triumph he had just gained by his great vindication of his policy in the House would have been destroyed. In fact he seems to have thought it wiser to put up calmly with the assault made upon him, and await a future opportunity of reasserting his position. The opportunity came soon enough. The Ministry, already weak, was unable to bear the loss of its ablest member. Immediately after bringing in a Reform Bill, in accordance with his promise the preceding session, Lord John

Militia Bill  
brought in.  
Feb. 16.

Russell produced a plan for the reorganisation of the militia. The defence of the country had become an object of paramount interest. The *coup d'état* carried out by the aid of the French army, and in the name of a Napoleon, had excited general alarm. Men asked themselves whether a Government resting on this footing would not be obliged to recall something of the Napoleonic tradition and vindicate its position by war. There was

a general feeling that the means for the defence of the country had been too long neglected. While deprecating, therefore, the idea that he was acting under panic, the Premier thought it a good opportunity for introducing his Bill. It was received with general approbation, although a few of the stricter economists objected to the additional expense. The necessity for a reserve force was urged by no one more fully than by Lord Palmerston ; but he disapproved of the determination of the Government to make the newly organised militia local instead of general. Lord John Russell indeed explained that in case of war the embodied militia would be available for employment wherever their presence might be required. But Lord Palmerston persisted in his objection. "If this were so," he said, "the title of the Bill appeared to be a misnomer" ; he therefore introduced an amendment by which the word "local" was struck out. Lord John Russell somewhat hastily declared that were this amendment carried it would imply want of confidence in the Ministry. When therefore a majority of eleven appeared in favour of Lord Palmerston's views the Ministry had no choice but to resign. Little or no surprise was felt. The Ministry had been growing gradually weaker, and it was understood that the first opportunity offered would be taken for its resignation.

The Russell  
Ministry  
resign.  
Feb. 20, 1852.

## CHAPTER IV.

LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY, February 26, 1852.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . .	Lord Derby.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . .	Lord St. Leonards.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . .	Lord Lonsdale.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . .	Lord Salisbury.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . .	Mr. Disraeli.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . .	Mr. Walpole.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . .	Sir John Pakington.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . .	Lord Malmesbury.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	. . .	Mr. Beresford.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . .	Duke of Northumberland.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	. . .	Mr. Herries.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . .	Mr. Henley.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	. . .	Lord Hardwicke.
<i>First Commissioner of Works,</i>	. . .	Lord John Manners.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . .	Lord Eglintoun.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . .	Mr. Blackburne.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . .	Lord Naas.

ON the fall of Lord John Russell's Ministry, the Queen intrusted Lord Stanley (who had now become the Earl of Derby) with the formation of a Conservative administration. He found no difficulty in the task, and although lacking the support of a certain majority in the Lower House, undertook to carry on the business of the country without a dissolution. The leadership of the House of Commons was intrusted to Mr. Disraeli as Chancellor of the Exchequer, Mr. Walpole became Home Secretary, Sir John Pakington Colonial Secretary; the management of Foreign Affairs, which since Lord Palmerston's dismissal had been in the hands of Lord Granville, fell to Lord Malmesbury, hitherto untried in office. The course of the new Ministry was at first clear enough. Putting aside for the present all idea of Parliamentary reform—for which indeed at the moment there was but little general wish—they were able to pass a Militia Bill by overwhelming majorities, and to carry further the colonial policy already accepted by giving a constitution to New Zealand. Nor under the circumstances could

**Lord Derby's  
Ministry.  
Feb. 26, 1852.**

**The Militia Bill  
carried.  
June 21.**

they well avoid accepting, at all events temporarily, the financial policy of their predecessors, and producing a Budget in accordance with it.

But in his speech after his acceptance of office, Lord Derby had made assertions which led to the belief that he still regarded protection as both desirable and possible ; and this was known to be also the opinion of the bulk of his supporters. It thus became necessary that the nation should have an opportunity of declaring its opinion upon this point. Immediately upon the close of the Session on the 1st of July, Parliament was dissolved, to reassemble upon the 4th of November. The result of the general election was decisive on the question. The balance of parties was but little altered ; there was certainly not that strong expression of opinion in favour of a return to protective finance which Lord Derby himself recognised as necessary to justify it. As the expression in the Queen's Speech was ambiguous, as many of the election addresses had distinctly upheld protection, and as neither Lord Derby nor Mr. Disraeli had as yet made any definite declarations, it was thought necessary by the free-trade party to set the matter at rest. Mr. Villiers, the old champion of free-trade finance, introduced a resolution in which he declared that "the Act of 1846 had improved the condition of the country, particularly of the industrial classes ; that it was wise, just, and beneficial ; and that the extension of the policy of free-trade would most contribute to the prosperity, welfare, and contentment of the people." The wording of this resolution gave great unbrage to the Protectionists. To accept it was to declare the unreasonableness, and worse than unreasonableness, of their violent assaults upon Sir Robert Peel. Of all his assailants Disraeli had been the bitterest. He attempted therefore to parry the blow by a counter resolution, in which the improvement in the state of the country was admitted, and while the words in praise of the measure of 1846 were omitted, the duty of the House to adhere to the policy once deliberately adopted was allowed. But the free-traders were not contented with the mere admission of facts ; they desired some vindication of Sir Robert Peel's conduct. Nor did they think it fair that his chief assailants should be intrusted with the duty of formulating the national opinion on the matter. It was impossible to force their views upon the House, but they had at least the satisfaction of hearing on all sides words of respect and commendation for Sir Robert Peel, and could not but feel the full pleasures of triumph when they heard Sidney Herbert declare that "the

Mr. Villiers' resolution in favour of free-trade.  
Nov. 23.



memory of Sir Robert Peel requires no vindication, his memory is enshrined in the grateful recollections of the people of this country ;" or when they listened to his words as, pointing to the Treasury Bench, he concluded, "If a man wants to see humiliation he need but look *there*." The difficulty was solved by Lord Palmerston, who introduced an alternative amendment, embodying the free-trade resolution with the omission of the word "just." The sharpness of the sting being thus mitigated, the large majority of the House proved willing to accept the amendment, and it was carried by 468 to 53. A resolution similar in tenour was carried in the Upper House, and the long struggle as to the main principle of our commercial legislation seemed thus to be finally set at rest.

Amended by  
Palmerston and  
accepted.  
Nov. 26.

Lord Palmerston had by his amendment saved the administration. Its acceptance of the principle of free-trade allowed the Government to continue a little longer in office. But the Conservatives, more numerous than any other single party, were still in a minority of the whole House, and liable to be overthrown if at any time a combination should be formed against them. The financial policy which they would adopt under the restrictions which late events had laid upon

Disraeli's  
Financial  
Proposals.  
Dec. 3.

them was a matter of extreme interest, and it was felt that the fate of the Ministry depended on their Budget. It was opened by the Chancellor of the Exchequer in a brilliant and elaborate speech of many hours' duration, but it appeared upon examination to be rather clever than sound. Mr. Disraeli had taken for his text the late resolutions of the House, had found means, while apparently acting in the strictest accordance with them, to introduce into his scheme what was intended for a large compensation to the landed interest. Open competition and the removal of taxation upon the prime necessities of life were the principles of the day. Tea and beer were prime necessities of life ; he would therefore greatly lower the duty on tea and give up half the malt-tax. Direct taxation to take the place of such reductions was the main point of Sir Robert Peel's policy, now so much admired. The income-tax should therefore be continued, and extended partially to Ireland, and a direct tax upon houses carried downwards, so as to affect houses rated at £10 instead of £20, the existing limit. But the income-tax was avowedly not exactly fair. In Ireland funded and real property alone should be subject to it, and in England the tenant farmers, instead of being rated at one-half their rent, should be rated at only one-third. In these arrangements the malt-

tax and the remission of the farmer's income-tax were distinctly intended as compensation to the landed interest. The deficit caused was to be filled by a direct house-tax, falling almost entirely upon the inhabitants of towns.

Though the brilliancy of the speech in which it was introduced, and the cleverness and variety of the scheme itself, attracted for the time considerable admiration, it soon became Opposition to  
the Budget. apparent that the Budget would meet with determined opposition upon all sides. In the first place, the estimated surplus was not sufficient to call for a remission of taxes. It was merely a readjustment which was suggested. The remission of indirect taxation is, generally speaking, only advisable when the increased consumption of the taxed article will make up for the decrease of the duty. As far as tea was concerned this was probably the case. But with regard to the malt-tax, not only was it very questionable whether increased opportunities of purchasing beer were in themselves desirable, but also in the existing state of the brewing trade, which is a virtual monopoly, it seemed pretty clear that there would be no great extension of consumption, no great diminution in the price of beer, no great advantage to the malt-grower, but a very considerable advantage to the brewer, for whose interest £2,500,000 of revenue, easily collected and generally approved, would be sacrificed. Again, the house-tax, extended as it was to be, laid a heavy pressure on the lower middle-class, which could not fail to render it a most objectionable form of revenue. The modifications of the income-tax, although in accordance with the views of some of the best economists, were joined with an extension of its action, which was now to affect incomes arising from property of £50 a year, and excited the opposition therefore of those financiers—at the head of whom was Mr. Gladstone—who regarded as impossible any attempt to distinguish the sources from which income came, and those also who, like Mr. Cobden, disapproved of any further pressure upon small incomes. At the same time the free-trade party as a whole could scarcely avoid seeing in the arrangements suggested a clever use of their own principles as a means of retaliation upon themselves. A general assault was therefore made upon the Budget. For four nights the debate was continued.

On the 16th of December the Chancellor of the Exchequer rose to reply. Feeling probably that the result of the division could not be in his favour, he threw aside all restraint, retorted upon his adversaries in bitter language and with a licence to which Parliament was

at that time unaccustomed, and closed his speech by a declaration that he was the victim of a coalition, that England did not love coalitions, and that any Ministry formed on such a principle was certain to be short-lived. His speech called forth a severe and dignified rebuke from Mr. Gladstone; and in this characteristic manner the sharp hostility between those statesmen, which was subsequently to be the very groundwork of English party politics, took its rise. The division showed a majority of 19 against Government. Lord Derby at once resigned, and the Coalition Ministry which Disraeli had foreseen came into power, the Cabinet being composed nearly equally of Whigs and Peelites, under the premiership of Lord Aberdeen.

The Derby  
Ministry  
resign.  
Dec. 16, 1852.

During the brief Ministry of the Conservatives two events had happened, one seeming to mark the close of a chapter of past history, the other full of significance for the future. On the 14th of September the Duke of Wellington breathed his last at Walmer Castle. He had reached the great age of eighty-three, but still retained almost unimpaired his mental powers, and was able to execute the duties of his office as Commander-in-Chief. It is unreasonable to speak of the death of a statesman at so ripe an age as a great national loss. Yet the position held by the Duke was one which no other man could fill, and was not without its value to the State. The greatness of his services, his well-known honesty and single-hearted patriotism, and his large experience, had raised him above the sphere of party contest; and the Sovereign had found in him a calm and trustworthy adviser in all matters of difficulty, and a friend on whose loyalty to herself and to the constitution she could implicitly rely. His death naturally called to mind the greatness of his career, and all parties and all classes vied with one another in their expressions of admiration for his life and regret at his loss. It was determined to honour him with a public funeral, and to lay the remains of her greatest military leader beside those of the favourite naval hero of England under the dome of St. Paul's. The ceremony was carried out with striking completeness. Detachments from every regiment in the army formed a funeral procession more than a mile in length, which preceded and followed the magnificent car on which the body was borne, and the more pathetic emblem of the riderless charger and the empty boots of the great Duke, through a densely packed crowd estimated at more than a million and a half of orderly sympathisers. The solemnity of the scene in the Cathedral as hour by hour the great multitude waited in silence, broken only by

Death of the  
Duke of  
Wellington.  
Sept. 14, 1852.

the sad blare of the military trumpets playing the "Dead March in Saul," was unrivalled as a State ceremony, and in this instance the ceremony was a true expression of the national regret.

Of a very different character was the second event. On the 1st of December Lord Malmesbury notified to the House of Lords the recognition by England of the newly established French Empire. That the Prince-President intended from the first to adopt this title had appeared certain. But it was necessary that he should feel his way and discover the amount of support on which he could rely in France before he did so. Throughout the year it had been becoming more and more obvious that however blameworthy the execution of the *coup d'état* may have been, the principle involved in it had been accepted with joy by the great bulk of the French nation. It appealed to the selfish interests or sentimental desires of nearly every class. While the army looked for glory at the hands of a Napoleon, the mercantile class hoped for increase of material wealth under the strong government which was promised, the Church saw in the "saviour of society," as they did not scruple to say, a man of God appointed to remove the evils of sixty years' revolution; and even the workmen were flattered by the fictitious importance which universal suffrage and the use of the *plébiscite* seemed to give them. Thus, when in the autumn the Prince undertook a progress to feel the national pulse, he was everywhere hailed with indications that the change from the present incongruous form of government to the better understood and more clearly defined character implied by the Empire would be accepted with enthusiasm. In accordance with this experience he obtained, as was necessary under the constitution he had established, a "senatus consultum" making him Emperor, and intrusting to him the power of settling the succession in the House of Bonaparte, should his own direct descendants, legitimate or adopted, fail. The "senatus consultum" was referred to the people, and by them accepted by an enormous majority. Upwards of 7,000,000 supported the Empire, less than 300,000 voted against it.

Napoleon III.  
proclaimed  
Emperor.  
Dec. 1, 1852.

There was no reason why England, in accordance with its habitual policy, should not accept the new Government, with the exception perhaps of the title assumed, which was that of Napoleon III.; as this implied hereditary succession from a sovereign whom England had never acknowledged, it was thought necessary to explain that no claim to hereditary right was intended—that it was merely the assertion of a fact, and that the Emperor based his right

Effect on  
England.

unconditionally on popular choice. The explanations were attended with the strongest assertions of friendship for England, of the peaceful character of the Empire, and the desire to maintain in all its fulness the existing alliance with the country. No doubt the assertions of friendship were real, for the great empires of the east of Europe were not likely to accept so easily the claims of the upstart monarch, and the support of England was of the last necessity to him. The uses to which he put it, and the somewhat disastrous effects which it exercised upon England were not long in showing themselves. Already the necessities of his position had driven the Emperor into a course of policy in the East which was fated to involve England in all the difficulties and disasters of the Crimean war.



## CHAPTER V.

### LORD ABERDEEN'S MINISTRY, Dec. 27. 1852.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Aberdeen.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cranworth.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Granville.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Argyll.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Gladstone.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Palmerston.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Newcastle.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Russell.
<i>Secretary at War,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Sidney Herbert.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty</i>	. . . . .	Sir James Graham.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Charles Wood.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Cardwell.
<i>First Commissioner of Works,</i>	. . . . .	Sir William Molesworth.
<i>(No office),</i>	. . . . .	Lord Lansdowne.

#### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord St. Germans.
<i>Lon. Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Brady.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir John Young.

The following changes subsequently took place :—

<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clarendon, Feb. 1853.
---------------------------	-----------	----------------------------

On the separation of the departments in June 1854 :—

<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Newcastle.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Russell.

THE construction of the new Ministry was a matter of very considerable difficulty. The late Government had been defeated by Whigs and Peelites combined ; it was not evident to which party the leadership of the new Cabinet by right belonged. Besides this there was much hostility between Lord Palmerston and Lord John Russell, the acknowledged leaders of the Whigs ; while Lord Aberdeen, the leader of the Peelites, had always been Lord Palmerston's chief opponent in foreign affairs. The Queen, well advised, sent for the chiefs of both parties, Aberdeen to represent the Peelites, and Lansdowne, whose position and authority was above question, to represent the Whigs. On Lord Lansdowne's absolute refusal to undertake the duty, the formation of

Aberdeen's  
Ministry.  
Dec. 27, 1852.

the new Ministry was intrusted to Lord Aberdeen. The amalgamation of parties, implying the exclusion from important office of a certain number of those who had distinct claims to it, was not easily effected. The chief obstacle to be overcome was the rivalry of the Whig leaders ; but at length, with Palmerston at the Home Office and Russell as Foreign Secretary, the Cabinet, in which the Peelites were perhaps too strongly represented, was formed. Like other coalition ministries, it suffered from an excess of individual ability. The discrepant views and rival pretensions of its members, though at first veiled under a discreet silence, gave no promise of enduring stability to the Ministry.

Pending the development of the Eastern question, which had as yet reached only an early stage, the new Ministry, "a First efforts at legislation. Ministry of progress, without principles and without party," as Mr. Disraeli described it, proceeded at once to vindicate its title by the introduction of various reforming Bills. A Bill for removing the disabilities of the Jews met its usual fate ; carried in the Lower House, it was rejected by the Lords. The relations between landlord and tenant in Ireland, of much importance in the presence of a Tenant Right Association existing in that country, and with which the late Ministry had attempted to deal, were referred to a Select Committee with a view to subsequent legislation. The legislature of Canada, in spite of the warm opposition of the Tory and Church party, was allowed to deal freely with the "Clergy reserves," or in other words to settle its own ecclesiastical affairs irrespective of any monopoly enjoyed by the English Church in Canada. And, though no Bill was introduced, an elaborate survey of the intentions of the Government with regard to education was given by Lord John Russell, who, while declaring himself the advocate of great freedom of education, stated that neither he nor the present Government could ever be a party to a plan proposing merely secular teaching.

But naturally, having been called to office by the failure of their predecessors' Budget, it was to the financial policy of the new administration to which public attention was chiefly directed. It afforded opportunity when produced after the Easter recess for one of those great Budget speeches for which Mr. Gladstone became so remarkable. Before bringing in his Budget he introduced propositions for the simplification and reduction of the National Debt. By conversion of certain minor stocks, by the issue of exchequer bonds at long date, and by the establishment of a new 3 per cent. stock, he hoped to make a considerable saving to the country. His resolutions were accepted, and he then proceeded

Gladstone's  
Budget.  
April 1853.

to explain his financial projects. In conspicuous contrast with the clever but complicated scheme of his predecessor, he kept in view as his chief object simplicity of arrangement. The revenue of the country was in a good condition. Even with considerably enlarged estimates for the present year, it seemed pretty certain that there would be a surplus of £700,000. But this was but a small margin on which to act. Before proceeding to remit taxes it would, he said, be necessary to see whether the reconsideration of the existing taxes would not enable the surplus to be increased. At the head of these stood the income-tax. He pointed out in some brilliant sentences the important part this tax had played in times of difficulty, and exhorted the House for the present at all events to continue it; and while confessing that there were certain inequalities in the tax which rendered its permanent maintenance as a part of our financial system questionable, he yet declared that any attempt to readjust it, or as he expressed it, "to nibble at it," would produce failure. The undue pressure of the tax upon certain classes of income was not, he said, so great as was often supposed, for although the rate paid was the same on all, practically the land paid a larger proportion than trade, and both land and trade largely more than professions. He proposed that incomes between £100 and £150, hitherto untaxed, should in future be charged, though at a lower rate, and that the tax should be extended to Ireland. In this way there would be a not inconsiderable addition to the public revenue; but still greater would be the effect of a readjustment, upon fair principles, of the legacy duties, "a tax which left wholly untouched the intelligence and skill of the country, giving more than the relief aimed at by the reconstruction of the income-tax without the danger attending that reconstruction." He proposed also an addition to the duty on spirits and on brewers' licences. By these means he hoped to acquire a sufficient surplus for his purposes. He desired the abolition of the duty on soap at a net loss of £1,110,000, the establishment of a uniform duty of one penny upon all receipt stamps, a large diminution in the duties levied on life assurance, on apprenticeships, and on the certificates of attorneys, and the reduction of the advertisement duty from 1s. 6d. to 6d. He rearranged the assessed taxes, making them as few, as simple, and as uniform as possible. Then proceeding to the tariff and pursuing the free-trade principles now established, he proposed a very large lessening of the duty upon tea (which in less than two years should descend from 2s. 2d. to 1s.), and upon thirteen articles of food, while upon some 256 articles the duty was either to be wholly removed or largely reduced. The

loss of taxes for the year he estimated at £1,656,000, the new taxes at £1,344,000, the surplus in hand at £805,000, leaving for the coming year a surplus of £493,000. He then concluded by explaining that he had good ground for believing that the income-tax might, if Parliament thought fit, be dispensed with in 1860. He went in detail through the probable increase of permanent sources of income, and showed that they would amount in that period to a sum equal within a very little to the product of the income-tax. So large and comprehensive a scheme necessitated much discussion. Nearly every part of it afforded opportunity for party opposition. But with the exception of a few slight amendments it was carried (May 2) triumphantly through both Houses, and the position of the Ministry appeared unusually strong.

The victorious close of two little wars was also a subject for satisfaction. The lawless violence of the native Governor of Rangoon had produced in 1851 the outbreak of the second Burmese war, which had been conducted, though not without difficulty, with such success that the Governor-General of India had declared the annexation of the province of Pegu and had established the English Government there (Dec. 20, 1852). From that time a series of disorderly contests, sometimes with the troops of the King of Ava, sometimes with organised robbers known as Dacoits, had been carried on. But at length, in February and March 1853, defeats had been inflicted both on the regular troops and upon the Dacoit bands, and in June the termination of the war was officially proclaimed. No formal peace was made; but as the King of Ava made the concession demanded and declared the navigation of the Irawaddy free, the Governor-General considered this substantial proof of his acquiescence sufficient. During the same period a frontier war had been carried on in South Africa against the Kaffirs. Sir Harry Smith, to whom it had been intrusted, had met with no great success. He had been superseded by General Cathcart. Acting with more energy, he had succeeded in obliging the most formidable of his opponents, Sandilli, to sue for peace. Pardon was offered to the vanquished chief and to his people upon condition of their resigning entirely their old country called the Amatolas, and living in peace in another portion of British Kaffraria. These terms they felt themselves compelled to accept, although they complained that the allotment was too small for them. The rivers Kye and Orange thus became the fixed boundaries of British Kaffraria to the north and east. Immediately upon the conclusion of the war the constitution which had been granted to Cape Town was formally proclaimed.

Success of the  
Burmese and  
Kaffir wars.  
1853.



Behind the seeming prosperity there lay a grave cause for anxiety in the quarrel which had arisen between the Czar of Russia and the Porte. The ostensible origin of this quarrel was a dispute between the Latin and Greek Churches for the custody of the sacred places in the Holy Land. From the days of Francis I. France had from time to time been in close friendship with the Turkish Empire, and had not unnaturally undertaken the duty of watching the interests of the Latin Church. In the sixteenth century the holy places had by treaty been placed in the hands of the Latins. But a considerable majority of the subjects of the Sultan belonged to the Greek Church, and as the habit of pilgrimage played a far more important part in their religious life than in that of the Latins, they were in fact more interested in the right of free access to the holy places. The possession of them was also a matter of deep interest to the whole vast population of Russia. The Czar undertook therefore the same duties with regard to the Greek Church as the French Government had undertaken with regard to the Latins, with this difference, that while to the one it was a matter rather of nominal and diplomatic honour, to the other it was a matter of real and vital importance. Almost necessarily, as Russia obtained influence in Turkey, the Greek Church had obtained privileges and immunities which were scarcely in accordance with the old treaty rights of the Latins. Disputes had constantly arisen between the rival churches in Jerusalem. But the Turks had contrived to keep the question in their own hands, and to produce some sort of concord, when in 1851 a French agent, Monsieur de Lavalette, was instructed to make good in their full extension the rights of the Latins. The instructions given him were in accordance with the position of Louis Napoleon, who was seeking to appear as the champion of order and eager for the support of the ecclesiastical party in France. Opposition from the Russians necessarily followed, and the Porte found itself in a difficult position between the claims of two powerful nations. Eager to please both parties, it was at once led into a course of contradictory actions. While a formal note in January 1852 acknowledged the validity of the Latin claims, a firman in the following month revoked this note and confirmed the Greek privileges. But having granted the firman the Ministry of the Sultan did not publish it, and the matter having now become one in which the national representatives of France and Russia were deeply interested, great pressure was brought to bear by the Czar to compel the reading of the firman, and by the French to

Origin of the  
Crimean war.

Quarrels be-  
tween the Greek  
and Latin  
Churches in  
Jerusalem.



secure that the key of the great door of the Holy Sepulchre should be given into the hands of the Latins, and that they should be allowed to replace a silver star on the shrine of the Nativity. But the instances of Lavalette had been urged with a violence of language and with threats of immediate warlike action which proved stronger than the more measured arguments of the Russian minister. An attempt to bring the question to some sort of settlement was made, and Alif Bey was despatched to Jerusalem ostensibly to read the firman. Instead of doing so, he gave to the Greeks a certain triumph over the Latins by declaring the permanence of the furniture of the altar, which was arranged to suit their ritual, and to the Latins a certain triumph by permitting them to perform mass there once a year. But the Greeks saw that the firman had not been read; the Latins were horrified at the idea of performing their service on a schismatical altar. This attempt having thus entirely failed, in December the Latins triumphed, the key was placed in their hands, and the star brought to its resting-place with great solemnity.

Insignificant and even trumpery though the quarrel appeared—the squabbings of two rival sets of monks—it had involved a diplomatic dispute, and the triumph was won by such ostentatious violence that the loser in the strife could not quietly put up with his defeat. In January 1853 the Russian Chancellor, Nesselrode, wrote a circular stating that the insult having been completed could not be recalled, but that reparation might be required; and that as France had acted by threats of violence, Russia would indeed take a less summary course, but would feel itself obliged to adopt precautionary measures to support its negotiations. Those measures were at once taken; a considerable army was collected on the frontiers of the Danubian Principalities, which were under the suzerainty of Turkey. But it is difficult to believe that so slight a cause could alone have produced the formidable action of Russia. To the Czar, as head of the Greek Church, and an enthusiastic, indeed bigoted, supporter of his religion, the question was no doubt of more importance than it seemed to be in the eyes of Western statesmen. But it appeared certain that something of far more consequence lay behind the question of the Holy Places. Some very remarkable conversations between the Czar and the English ambassador, Sir Hamilton Seymour, which took place at this time came to light in the course of the year, and disclosed what was working in the Czar's mind. The course of events in the preceding part of his reign had led him to believe that his true policy

Important  
because  
supported by  
Russia and by  
France.

The Czar's  
views with  
regard to  
Turkey.

lay in maintaining the Ottoman Empire. At least he appeared to have arrived at the conclusion that it was impossible for him to take any strong measures against it. After his visit to London in 1844 he drew up and deposited in the English Foreign Office a memorandum of his views in which he distinctly stated that his present policy was the same as the English policy, that the maintenance of Turkey was necessary, that the best way of maintaining it was carefully to abstain from irritating diplomatic action threatening its independence, but that before all else it was desirable that Russia and England should, in case of the threatened dissolution of the Empire, come to an agreement as to the arrangement which was to take its place. It has lately transpired that the Czar had good reason for believing that such concerted action with England was possible. During his visit to London he had numerous conversations with the Ministers. The memorandum just quoted appears to sum up the conclusions there arrived at. But he had gone considerably further than mere consultation. A note had been drawn up and signed by Peel, Wellington, and Aberdeen, as well as by the Czar, implying a promise to support Russia in her claims to the Protectorate of the Holy Places and of the Greek religion, and this without consulting France. In the winter of 1852-53, in conversations resumed from time to time, and of a private and confidential nature, the Czar urged upon Sir Hamilton Seymour the necessity of bringing about such an arrangement as the memoranda contemplated, declaring, in figurative language, that the Turkish Government was a man sick unto death, and that it would be of the last inconvenience if he should die before measures were taken to facilitate the necessary arrangement with regard to his inheritance. The English Government replied that a secret arrangement would be disloyal to their other allies, that they were not in the habit of forming contingent treaties, and that nothing was more likely to bring about the result mentioned than discussions as to its probability. The Czar then suggested that it was not so much what should be done as what should not be done that he wished to decide. He would not, for instance, allow Constantinople to be held permanently by himself, nor would he allow it to be held by any other great nation, nor would he allow the formation of a Greek Empire, nor the establishment of independent Republics to form shelter for the Kossuths and Mazzinis of Europe. The reply from England was to the effect that the Government entirely agreed with him in rejecting all these schemes, but that their objection to anything like a formal agreement continued as strong as ever. At last the Czar went so far as to make

what can be considered as little else than the offer of a bribe to England ; while the Principalities might remain as they were, virtually independent countries but under Russian protection, and Bulgaria might be established under the same form, there would be no objection, he said, to England appropriating Egypt and the Isle of Candia, and thus securing its intercourse with the East. These overtures met with the same rejection as the former ones, and for a while the Czar ceased to speak on the matter. But it is plain from what took place that he regarded the dissolution of the Turkish Empire as a very probable event. He indeed declared to the English that they were entirely misinformed if they believed that it had any principle of vitality left. The origin of his belief lay in the idea that the Christian populations, considerably outnumbering the Turkish subjects of the Porte, might at any moment rise and destroy the Government of which the administration was notoriously weak and deficient, and which from time to time acted towards its Christian subjects with a harshness which revolted the feelings of Europe. The opportunity for such an insurrection seemed not improbably to be at hand. A disturbance among the Christian inhabitants of Montenegro had induced the Porte to adopt very severe measures, and there seemed every chance of a repetition of those scenes of cruelty with which the suppression of Christian insurrections was apt to be attended. Austria, which was in some sort the protector of the Montenegrin Christians, had sent Prince Leinigen to Constantinople to demand a cessation of the Turkish interference in the country. The Czar believed that the suggestion would be refused, that the cruelties would take place, and that there was a fair opportunity for the Christian populations to rise. Of that opportunity he intended to take advantage. With unexpected wisdom the Turks accepted the intervention of Austria, and the Montenegrin question was settled.

But the Czar, whose mind was now set upon the certain dissolution of the Ottoman Empire, saw a fresh opportunity in the affair of the Holy Places. He therefore took up the case of the orthodox Greek Church more warmly than he had hitherto done, and resolved to send an extraordinary ambassador to Constantinople to press his negotiations for reparation, supported as they would now be by the presence of a large army on the frontier. Unfortunately for the peace of Europe, he selected for the purpose Prince Menschikoff, a man of overbearing character, and unused to the forms of diplomacy, a member of the extreme Russian party, and with a strong dislike to the English. His instructions were in obvious

Menschikoff  
sent to  
Constantinople.  
March 2, 1853.

contradiction to the policy of the Czar in his memorandum ; for they implied exactly that sort of irritating diplomacy which he had there deprecated. He was charged with two duties, the one the settlement of the question of the Holy Places, the second, far more important, to procure a convention between Turkey and Russia which should place the orthodox Christians, subjects of the Porte, under the immediate protectorate of Russia. The arrival of Prince Menschikoff had a very threatening appearance ; he came surrounded by a military suite, and accompanied by the commander of the Black Sea fleet, and the chief of the staff of the land forces collected in Bessarabia. He came in fact in such a manner as to imply that he could at once put in motion both the military and naval forces of Russia in support of his demands. His arrival caused an immediate panic among the Turks. He refused to hold intercourse with the Minister of Foreign Affairs. Fuad Effendi at once resigned, and the frightened Ministers sought the advice of Colonel Rose, at that time acting Minister for England, who thought the moment so critical that he despatched an order to the Admiral of the English fleet at Malta bidding him come up to the Dardanelles. Admiral Dundas declined to obey. But the mere knowledge that Colonel Rose had thus acted appears to have quieted the panic and restored the Turks to their equanimity. The English Government disavowed the action of its Minister, and as yet there was no sign of anything but friendship between the Courts of St. James and St. Petersburg. But the Emperor of the French, more deeply implicated in the question of the Holy Places, and more eager on account of the insecurity of his position at home to adopt a forward and prominent position abroad, was less prudent, and in the middle of March despatched the French fleet from Toulon to the Bay of Salamis. The measure gave great umbrage to the Russians, and Menschikoff, whose tone had been considerably lowered, at once grew more pressing, opening now more clearly the second object of his mission, and demanding the Convention insuring the Protectorate, while he offered in exchange that his master would place at the disposal of the Turks a fleet and 400,000 men to support them against any other European power. It must be observed that during the whole of this time the Czar was declaring his friendship for England, and that it is impossible to acquit him of double-dealing in requiring, as he did, that this Convention should be kept an absolute secret. That secrecy, however, the Turkish Minister had sense enough to refuse.

About this time the English Government awoke sufficiently to the



danger of the situation and to the fact that threats were being used to Turkey which might easily produce a European war. They thought it necessary to order Lord Stratford de Redcliffe to return to his post.

Lord Stratford de Redcliffe sent to Constantinople. April. He was ordered to proceed to Constantinople through Paris and Vienna, implying that he was to concert measures with France, already pledged to opposition to the Czar, and with Austria, by its position more interested in the maintenance of Turkey than any other European nation. He was given leave also to communicate orders to the Admiral at Malta to hold himself in readiness for immediate action. The reappearance of Lord Stratford de Redcliffe on the scene was full of significance. He was better acquainted than any other man in Europe with the affairs of the Turkish Empire, and his personal qualities had given him an unusual amount of influence over the Eastern mind. But he was also the avowed enemy of Russia, and personally distasteful to the Czar, who had even refused to receive him as ambassador in St. Petersburg. His presence at Constantinople seemed to imply that the English Government was determined, as of old, to maintain the independence of Turkey, and that it believed that the action of the Czar was threatening it. The diplomatic war at once began. One thing Lord Stratford saw clearly; the demands of Russia must be separated. The question of the Holy Places, on which the action of Russia was based, must at once be settled. The demand for the Protectorate would then appear in all its nakedness as an unjust and unwarrantable effort to coerce an independent nation, which in this case would be almost certain to enjoy the sympathy of Europe. Acting on this principle he set to work to bring the vexed question to a conclusion. Completely master of Menschikoff as a diplomatist, he persuaded him to separate the two demands, and succeeded in a few days in producing a compromise on the first point which was accepted by both sides. The dispute was finally closed upon the 22d of April, and the results embodied in a firman. With regard to the second point he encouraged the Turks to stand firm. Since the arrival of the French fleet at Salamis, Menschikoff, urged from St. Petersburg, had been eagerly and angrily at work. In the Convention offered to the Turkish acceptance the Protectorate was of course not openly avowed. It purported to be a treaty to secure under the guarantee of Russia all the immunities, spiritual and temporal (and in the arrangements of the Turkish Empire these were closely connected), which the orthodox Church had ever enjoyed. It was seen that the effect of this would be to deprive the Sultan of the power, without



breach of treaty, of altering any of the arrangements he had made with regard to the majority of his subjects. Some weeks of angry discussion followed. Several times Menschikoff demanded an answer within a short limited period. The Turks invariably replied with extreme civility but perfect firmness. At last the Russian envoy declared his mission at an end. Before he actually departed, however, Lord Stratford took the wise step of assembling the ambassadors of the other Great Powers, and thus treating the matter as one of general interest. They all agreed entirely with his view. But even their protest did not shake Menschikoff, who at length on the 20th of May, only altering the form of his proposition, and demanding a diplomatic note instead of a convention, sent in an ultimatum with the same inherent fault as his preceding demand. The ultimatum was rejected, and Menschikoff with the whole of the Russian embassy withdrew; but not till after the Sultan had yielded so far as to issue on his own authority a guarantee of the exercise of all their spiritual rights to the Greek Church. It was the 21st of May when the ultimatum was refused.

Menschikoff  
withdraws  
defeated.  
May 21.

Enraged at the failure of his embassy, on the 31st of May the Czar instructed Count Nesselrode to inform the Porte that having failed in obtaining the guarantee he desired for the orthodox Christians, he should at once proceed to occupy the Danubian Principalities and hold them as a material guarantee, but that he would abstain at present from offensive operations against Turkey itself. The threat was carried out in the first days of July. The Pruth was then crossed and the Principalities occupied. On the same day that the vanguard crossed the river a conference of the representatives of the great Powers assembled at Vienna. The idea of treating the matter as one of general interest had been adopted. As early as the 17th of June, Austria had declared its full union with England; Prussia, too, had declared its intention to unite cordially with the other Powers. The position of Austria upon the flank of any Russian army moving towards the Principalities, seemed to render an advance of the Russians in that direction a matter of extreme danger. The interests of Austria were also deeply involved in restraining the growth of Russian influence. It was almost impossible, if the four Powers had acted firmly in union, that the occupation of the Principalities could have long continued. But unfortunately the English Government had entered upon a second line of policy not wholly consistent

Russia occupies  
the Principa-  
lities.  
July 2.

Conference at  
Vienna.

with this perfect union. In fact, the English Cabinet was not at one in its views. Lord Aberdeen was not only constitutionally averse to war, but had a high personal respect for the Czar, and was hampered by the secret arrangement to which he had been a party. He was determined to pursue the path of negotiations as long as it should be at all possible. He always spoke as if war was an impossibility, and would have been satisfied with the removal of the Russian troops from the Principalities. Lord Palmerston, on the other hand, had a deep mistrust of Russia, and believed that it was following its usual course, speaking words of peace and friendship while bringing about by violence events telling entirely in its own favour—events which if successful it would adopt as accomplished facts from which it could not withdraw, while if unsuccessful it could fall back upon its pacific diplomatic language. He therefore desired something considerably beyond the evacuation of the Principalities. A concert of the four Powers, if honestly maintained, would in all probability have produced the result desired by Aberdeen. But the constant pressure exerted by Palmerston, backed up by the French Emperor, drove the Government, in the first place, into a close combination with France, scarcely consistent with united action in concert with the four Powers, and secondly, induced England to adopt measures of a hostile character which could not fail to precipitate the war. Lord Aberdeen's attitude produced the further result of exciting in the mind of the Czar a fixed belief that England would not proceed to the last extremities. How far Russia was to be trusted must remain a matter of opinion, but it can scarcely be questioned that, even for the success of the diplomatic settlement, less appearance of a determination to avoid war, less use of pacific language would have been desirable. The twofold policy of the English Cabinet might have been discovered in the language of the Queen's Speech at the close of the session (August 20th). In one and the same sentence she declared herself closely united with France, and as acting in concert with the other Powers of Europe. It appeared however at the time as though the two lines of policy, in fact very different, were but one. While the war party marked its ascendancy by hastily despatching, on the 2nd of July, the allied fleets to Besika Bay, the conference at Vienna continued its work, and produced on the 31st of July what is known as the "Vienna Note," embodying propositions for an arrangement which it was hoped both Russia and Turkey would accept. The Vienna Note promised for an instant to be successful.

Different views  
of Aberdeen  
and Palmerston.

The Vienna  
Note.  
July 31.

Its purport had been communicated to the Russian Court, which had expressed its readiness to accept it. But when it was sent to the Porte, the Ministers of the Sultan found in it certain things which appeared to them to leave the door open for that same future interference with their independence which they were engaged in combating. They introduced alterations on August 19th, and the Note, as altered, was forwarded to Russia, but rejected by that Court, and rejected with explanations which clearly showed that the Turks had not been wrong in their view of the interpretation which the document might bear.

From the time of the rejection of the Vienna Note, although negotiation continued, the approach of war became more certain and rapid. The movement of the fleets had given extreme umbrage to the Czar, and had called forth a circular from Count Nesselrode, alleging that the occupation of the Principalities was the consequence. The fallacy of the assertion was exposed in firm letters by both Lord Clarendon and the French Foreign Minister. The determination to occupy the Principalities had been intimated in the end of May before the fleets were moved. But argument had no effect in allaying the anger of the Czar, while his pretension to restrict the movements of the English fleet, while strictly within its rights and infringing no treaties, exasperated the minds of the English people. Both in Russia and Turkey the people had become excited by the long dispute, and had begun to regard the approaching crisis as a question of religion. In September the Mahomedan theological students of Constantinople burst out in warlike riots. There seemed some possibility of a massacre of Christians, and although Lord Stratford thought no such danger imminent, the French ambassador, de la Cour, wrote home in terror to his Court. An opportunity was thus afforded for a further step in the policy of Napoleon and of the war party in England, and ostensibly for the purpose of preserving the Christians, the fleets were ordered up to Constantinople. As there was no actual declaration of war, although it was difficult to avoid regarding the occupation of the Principalities as a warlike act, the passage of the Dardanelles was a technical breach of the treaty of 1841. A few days later it would have been strictly in accordance with the treaty, for on the 23d of October, feeling stronger doubtless for the presence of the English and French fleets, and conscious that longer waiting would be of no advantage to it, the Porte formally declared war with Russia. The declaration of war was met by a strange reply from the Czar, who,

The English  
and French  
fleets enter the  
Dardanelles.  
Oct. 22.

on the 31st October, issued a circular to his representatives at foreign courts, asserting that he would abstain from taking the offensive, and content himself with holding the Principalities as a material guarantee. He thus set the Danube as a limit between himself and the Turks which he declined to cross, while at the same time he in no way precluded the Turks from acting on the offensive. Omar Pasha, the commander of the Turkish troops, took advantage of this state of things, passed the river, and the war began on various points of its course. The representatives of the European Powers at Constantinople urged upon the Porte the wisdom of refraining from such action. But before long an event occurred which destroyed all hope of peace.

**Turkish fleet  
destroyed at  
Sinope.  
Nov. 30.**

A Turkish squadron of seven frigates, employed in carrying reinforcements to the troops in Asia, was lying in the harbour of Sinope, when it was attacked by a far superior force under Admiral Nachimoff, and entirely destroyed. The disaster, from which one steamer alone escaped, was attended, it was said, with the loss of 4000 men. The declaration of the Czar that he would not take the offensive caused this attack to be regarded as an act of barbarous treachery. There was in fact no surprise, for the Russian fleet had been many days at sea capturing Turkish vessels, and the admiral of the Ottoman squadron had indicated his extreme danger to the Ministers at Constantinople. But carried out under the very eyes as it were of the allied fleets, in a Turkish port, and after the declaration of the Czar, it raised a storm of indignation too strong to be resisted. The allied fleets were forthwith ordered to enter the Black Sea, and to compel every Russian ship to withdraw into harbour. Thus alone did it seem that the defensive duty of the Allies could be properly performed.

**The allied  
fleets enter the  
Black Sea.  
Jan. 4, 1854.**

The order was not given without much hesitation on the part of the English Cabinet ; so much so that it is difficult to avoid the conclusion that Lord Palmerston's resignation on the 16th of December was connected with this question. The cause he alleged was his disapproval of the outlines of a Reform Bill laid before the Cabinet by Lord John Russell ; and it is true that the refusal of Lord Aberdeen to allow weight to his objections on this point affords sufficient grounds to explain his conduct. Yet there was undoubtedly a strong divergence of opinion in the Cabinet with regard to the conduct of Turkish affairs, and Palmerston's return to office was not secured till Aberdeen, yielding to the urgent demands of France and the firmness of Lord Clarendon, had consented to the occupation of the Black Sea (Dec. 27).



This difficulty had throughout the Session excited frequent discussions in Parliament, and filled the minds of Ministers with alarm during the recess. In the words of Lord Clarendon, "England, with a Government bent on peace, had been drifting into war." For the measure which secured harmony in the Cabinet rendered war inevitable. The Czar almost immediately withdrew his representatives from Paris and London, and prepared to invade Turkey, for the preservation of which England and France were pledged. So clear did it seem that the employment of English troops would be necessary—at all events in defence of the Sultan's territory—that Engineer officers were sent to report upon the best means of assisting the Sultan, and troops were collected at Malta. But with strange persistency, Lord Aberdeen continued to speak peace; and the French Emperor, desirous before all things of playing a prominent part, wrote (Feb. 9) an autograph letter to the Czar, in the name of himself and the Queen, hoping thereby to identify himself with England, and to appear as the peacemaker of Europe. The Czar, still perhaps trusting to English inactivity, peremptorily refused the overture. But the temper of the English people was now thoroughly roused, and Palmerston's views were in accordance with the general feeling. The unexpected success of the Turks upon the Danube excited strong sympathy; and when Austria, which consistently aimed at ousting the Russians from the Principalities, on the 22d of February indicated to England that if England and France would summon Russia to evacuate the Principalities by a given day, and on her failure to do this, would declare war, the Cabinet of Austria would support the summons, England, urged by its own warlike feeling and Napoleon, smarting at the rejection of his letter, imprudently accepted the suggestion. A little waiting must have driven Austria to take her part in the armed intervention, and the summons would have been irresistible. But it was sent off in the name of England and France only, demanding the withdrawal of the Russian troops by the 30th of April. The principle was indeed supported by the Austrian and Prussian Courts, but its separate form practically put an end to concerted action, and left the war exclusively to England and France. The summons was refused on the 19th of March, and on the 27th war was formally declared both by France and England. The joint declaration was immediately followed by a treaty with the Sultan and with France. The contracting parties declared that they would not act separately, that they would seek no separate advantage, that they would receive into their alliance any of the other Powers of

Declaration of  
war.  
March 27.



Europe, and that their object was to arrive at a peace which should secure Europe from a repetition of the present troubles.

The approach of war gave more than usual importance to the proposed financial arrangements of the year. And on the 6th of March, while the country was still nominally at peace, Mr. Gladstone brought forward the Budget. He was able to show with regard to the preceding year that there had been in both the expenditure and receipts results more favourable than those he had expected. The actual surplus would on the 6th of April be £2,854,000. After remission of nearly a million and a half of duty there appeared to be an increase on the receipt of customs amounting to £200,000. Of all the changes, that on the stamp duties had been most successful. Instead of a large estimated diminution, the six months showed upon that item alone an increase of £36,000. For the coming year the case was of course less satisfactory. While the income might be put at £53,349,000 it was impossible to estimate the expenditure at less than £56,189,000. There would be a deficiency of £2,840,000. The question before the House was how was this deficiency to be met, and Mr. Gladstone explained that, in the opinion of Government, it was not right to listen to the old plausible argument that the expense of the present should be thrown upon posterity by means of loans, but that, if possible, the burden of the war should be supported by the revenue of the year. Quoting his prophetic words of the preceding year as to the value of the income-tax, he now proposed that the deficiency should be covered by doubling that tax for half a year. This would give the sum required with a small margin over. The declaration of war necessitated a revised budget, but the principles adopted were nearly the same. While bringing in the earlier form of it the Chancellor of the Exchequer had declared that it might be necessary to have recourse again to renewed indirect taxes, and when the heavier demands of actual war arose—after showing the amount of money required, and explaining that £6,850,000 would be wanted—he proposed that the income-tax should be doubled for the whole year during the continuance of hostilities, but that to avoid exhausting the power of that great resource additional taxes should be laid upon some articles of general consumption, but not of prime necessity. The impost on spirits both in Scotland and Ireland was raised, the sugar duties were rearranged so as to produce larger results; and finally, as all classes should be called upon to contribute to the national needs, the malt-tax was to be increased from 2s. 9d.

Mr. Gladstone's  
Budget.  
March 1854.

The revised  
Budget.  
May 8.

to 4s. From these sources he believed that a sufficient revenue would arise. The Budget called forth much discussion. Mr. Gladstone's plan of conversion in the preceding year had proved abortive. His manipulation of Exchequer Bills seemed to be open to question. The increase of the malt-tax was regarded by all who had any remnant of Protectionist feeling about them as a fresh assault upon the landed interest. And although the great principle of meeting the year's expenses by the year's revenue seemed generally approved, there were many who clung to the old system of raising loans, and found, in the strictures which the Chancellor of the Exchequer passed upon the finance of so well-established an authority as Mr. Pitt, an easy means of assaulting him. There was however a largeness and justice in his financial conceptions, and a frankness in the readiness with which he confessed the failure of his efforts of the preceding year which proved too strong for his opponents, and his budget passed with large majorities. As was natural, the discussion had been attended with much angry allusion to the management of the negotiations and of the war, and Mr. Disraeli undoubtedly touched a weak point when he criticised, with his usual sharpness, the uncertain action of the Cabinet, and declared the present condition of England the consequence of its divided policy.

The interest excited by the war was naturally too absorbing to allow room for much domestic legislation. The Reform Bill, which had been for some time promised, was indeed produced, but there appeared so little interest in the question that, after some discussion, Lord John Russell thought it wise to withdraw it. One Bill however of much interest and importance, for securing the Reform of the Universities, on which for some time a Commission had been sitting, was brought in and passed. Mr. Heywood, a Unitarian, educated at Cambridge, had given much time and attention to the constitution of his University. Among the numerous deficiencies which he had found, the one which he selected to raise into prominence was the exclusion of Dissenters from the degree at Cambridge, and even from admission to the University at all at Oxford. In 1850 he moved "a humble address for a commission of inquiry into the state of the Universities of Oxford, Cambridge, and Dublin, with a view to assist in the adaptation of these important institutions to the requirements of modern times." The motion excited the strongest opposition among those devoted to the Church and to the preservation, even in their errors, of the Universities in which they had been themselves educated. But Lord John

University  
Reform Bill.  
July 1854.

Russell, speaking for the Government, prevented discussion by at once promising that if the motion was withdrawn a royal commission of inquiry should be issued. It brought in its report in 1852. It had encountered considerable difficulty in obtaining evidence which it had no right to compel, but quite enough had been collected to show the wide room existing for reform. Lord Derby's Government, then in power, had taken no steps with regard to it. But Lord John Russell now produced a comprehensive Bill based upon the Report. Apart from the details of the scheme, two questions were involved; the right of interference with corporate property or the special wills of Founders, and the extension of the benefits of the University to Dissenters. The answer to both was found in the national character of the Universities, and the right of the nation, for its own benefit, to accommodate the disposition of national property to the requirements of the time. The general feeling of Parliament was strong enough to overcome the opposition which the Bill encountered on both points, although its stringency was a good deal relaxed and its character became rather permissive than authoritative. A commission was appointed to work with the Colleges and make a new body of Statutes for each. Considerable freedom and variety was thus allowed to the various corporations. But the Bill laid down certain lines of reform which were to be followed. The restriction of Fellowships to founder's kin, or to counties, which allowed men of very second-rate ability to enjoy College emoluments, was to be withdrawn, and Fellowships thrown open to free competition. The same principle was applied, but with much less completeness, in the case of schools holding Exhibition Scholarships or Fellowships at the Universities. A considerable portion of the College revenues, in the case of the richer Colleges, was to be devoted to University purposes, in the hope of strengthening the professorial teaching. It was however in the constitution of the University that Parliament could most properly interfere. The government of Oxford had been exclusively in the hands of the Heads of Houses, to the entire exclusion of the younger and more active part of the University. Henceforward a Council, consisting, in equal numbers, of Heads of Houses, Professors, and Masters of Arts, chosen by the Congregation (or body of resident masters) was to supply their place. To them was intrusted the initiation of legislation, their measures being subsequently laid before the Congregation, and finally before the Convocation (or whole body of Masters of Arts of the University), and requiring the assent of those bodies before they became law. Upon the other, and perhaps more

important point, the admission of Dissenters, the Bill was at first silent. But clauses, on the motion of Mr. Heywood, were added which freed from all subscription to the formulæ of the Church young men both at their matriculation and upon taking their first degree. The Commission constituted by this Bill carried out its work in the succeeding year, and set on foot that course of University reform which has been subsequently considerably enlarged.

A campaign had already been fought when the English and French declarations of war were issued. Omar Pasha had already proved the capacity of the Turkish troops to oppose, even single-handed, very serious obstacles to any Russian advance. Free himself to act on the offensive, while his opponent had tied his own hands by his declarations to avoid any assault upon the Turkish home provinces, he had passed the Danube, and, taking up his position at Kalafat, had succeeded in repelling the Russian assaults upon his line there, while at Schumla, on the right bank, a strongly entrenched camp formed a basis for defensive operations should he be compelled to withdraw. At the same time the Turkish troops had been exercised, and had learned their strength in contests along the course of the river, in which on the whole they had maintained their superiority. The movements of the Turks had drawn the bulk of the Russian army to the extreme west of the line of the Danube. Naturally irritated by his want of success, and by the vigorous hostility of his opponents, in the spring of the year 1854 the Czar determined to pass the limit he had set to himself, and to invade Turkey. Paskiewitz, his ablest general, advised him that the line of advance through Silistria, thence to Schumla, and so over the Balkans to Adrianople, was the most desirable. But aware that the invasion would encounter the opposition of the Western Powers as well as of the Turks, and that the English and French troops were already arriving on the scene of action, he seems to have warned the Czar that for any hope of success Silistria must fall before the 1st of May. The siege was not, however, even undertaken till the 19th of that month.

Meanwhile the practical certainty of war had induced the Western Powers to send troops to the east. On the 22d of February the Guards had sailed from London, and it was the intention that the troops collected at Malta should be despatched with all speed to Constantinople. The French troops were placed under the command of Marshal St. Arnaud, a man who had distinguished himself as a dashing soldier of unscrupulous character in the Algerian war, but whose chief

The campaign  
on the Danube.  
Jan.-April  
1854.

Departure of  
English and  
French troops  
under Raglan  
and St. Arnaud.  
March 1854.



claim to the post he was called to occupy was the large part he had played as Minister of War at the time of the *coup d'état*. His capacity for commanding large armies had not been proved, and he was suffering from severe illness. The English Government had selected Lord Raglan to command the army. As Lord Fitzroy Somerset he had long been the constant friend of the Duke of Wellington, and his experience as military secretary seemed to mark him out as the most suitable person to be found. But it was not his military capacity alone which was held to fit him specially for the charge intrusted to him. His excellent judgment, conciliatory but commanding manner, and power of working in harmony with other men, were regarded as peculiarly valuable in the very delicate position he would have to occupy as the joint-commander of the troops of two somewhat jealous nations. Politically there can be little question that his appointment was the best that could be made; few men could have so successfully encountered the difficulties which the divided command created.

The first measures of the English contemplated purely defensive warfare. Lines were drawn round Gallipoli to form a base on which to retreat should the Russians pour across the Balkans and approach the capital. But the events upon the Danube appeared to show conclusively that there was no danger of such a rapid success attending the Russian arms. It was therefore decided—not without some opposition from the French—that, upon the request of Omar Pasha, the allied troops should be moved to close proximity to the scene of action, and while the siege of Silistria was still in progress, they were collected in the neighbourhood of Varna. The siege of Silistria had afforded a fresh proof of the power of the Turks to

Siege of  
Silistria raised.  
June 23.

carry on their resistance even single-handed. For thirty-nine days the weakly fortified town had been maintained against all the assaults of a considerable Russian army. The successful defence was mainly attributable to the resource and gallantry of two young English officers, Captain Butler and Lieutenant Nasmyth, who, acting only as volunteers, speedily made themselves practically the leaders of the defence, devoting their attention principally to the preservation of a small outlying fortification called Arab Tabia, which lay in the way of the Russian approaches. The withdrawal from the siege of the Russians, which took place upon the 23d of June, followed by the passage of the river vainly opposed by the whole Russian army at Giurgevo on the 7th of July, convinced the Russian generals that, for the present year

at least, invasion was an impossibility, supported as the Turks would henceforth be by the troops of France and England. Moreover the inherent weakness, in a military point of view, of the occupation of Wallachia had made itself evident ; for the Austrians, whose summons to Russia to evacuate the Danubian Principalities had been unheeded, contracted, on the 14th of June, a convention with the Turks, acknowledging the necessity of the maintenance of the Ottoman Empire, and pledging the Austrian Government to exhaust all means of negotiation, "and other means," to obtain the evacuation of the Principalities. The other means implied an army of occupation, which was at once prepared ; and as it would fall directly upon the flank of the advancing Russians, and threaten their communications, it rendered any prosecution of an invasion almost an impossibility. By the end of July Bucharest had passed again into the hands of the Turks, and the Russian troops were on all sides withdrawing.

In fact the immediate object of the war had been already obtained. A fleet under Sir Charles Napier, sent out early in the spring with a show of somewhat extravagant complacency and enthusiasm, had driven the Russian fleet in the Baltic into shelter. The allied fleets had swept the Euxine clear. Advance across the Danube had been proved impossible. Austria had actively joined in enforcing the will of Europe upon the Czar. There was no point in which war could be carried on, except in the extreme east, and the Russian hold upon the material guarantee of the Principalities had been withdrawn. As war dissolves treaties, the opportunity now lay open to the Turks, freed from all previous complications and speaking with the voice of Europe, to set their relations with their threatening enemies upon a clear and well-defined footing.

Objects of the  
war attained.  
July.

Unfortunately the war temper both in England and France was roused, and a large number of men, regarding with profound distrust the constant advances during late years of the Russian power, were unwilling to allow the opportunity of striking some decisive blow against its progress to pass away unused. This feeling found abundant expression in the public press. The siege of Silistria had not been raised, and the troops of the allies were still collecting at Varna, when, on the 15th of June, Lord Palmerston, in a memorandum to the Cabinet, stated his conviction that the most effective method of bringing the Russians to reason was to destroy Sebastopol, and with it their Black Sea fleet, which constituted their real and permanent threat against Turkey. With singular clearness he pointed out the impossibility of the Russian advance, its

Reasons why  
the war con-  
tinued.

growing weakness as it moved from its communications, and urged that the allied generals should be employed in the full flush of their first energy in the Crimea. There can be little doubt that had this course then been taken, immediate success would have been the result. Sebastopol was as yet hardly fortified. The Russian troops in the Crimea did not probably exceed 40,000. The occupation of the Russian army upon the Danube would have precluded the possibility of large reinforcements. But in this memorandum he appears to have been only enforcing a suggestion made some months earlier by the French Emperor, which had been rejected upon grounds which Lord Palmerston himself explained. Unused to war, trammelled by a faulty system of administration, it was with great difficulty that England could bring her army into active use. There were deficiencies in all the subsidiary branches of the service. And a persistent belief, the offspring of the strong desire on the part of the Ministry, that war would be unnecessary, had prevented early energetic measures. The allied troops were also in some sort pledged to assist Omar Pasha, at least by their presence, in securing his position in Silistria.

But a step which, if possible, would have been both legitimate and advantageous in June, bore a different aspect in August. Circumstances had produced the result desired without the adoption of the vigorous means suggested by the Emperor and Lord Palmerston. The proposal had, however, approved itself to at least one member of the Cabinet; and when the question arose as to the further prosecution of the war, the Duke of Newcastle pressed strongly for its adoption; and almost immediately upon the receipt of the news of the relief of Silistria, with the consent of the whole Cabinet, he wrote a despatch to Lord Raglan ordering an immediate expedition to the Crimea, so worded as to leave the general little voice in the matter. The English commander received the letter on the 16th of July, and believed that he had no alternative but to obey. As orders of a corresponding nature had reached the French commander, Lord Raglan—although not without considerable opposition from St. Arnaud and some of the English generals—contrived to get the plans of the Home Governments accepted, and preparations were at once carried out with energy.

It appears probable that Lord Raglan was induced to insist upon the invasion of the Crimea rather by the belief that no choice in the matter was left him, and by a sense of soldierly obedience, than by his approbation of the

The invasion  
of the Crimea  
ordered.  
June 29.

Difficulties of  
the under-  
taking.

scheme. For the operation was scarcely one to commend itself to a man trained in a strict military school. It partook largely of the nature of an expedition rather than of a campaign. The generals possessed little or no information as to the strength of the place they were called upon to assault, or the amount of opposition likely to be offered by the enemy's troops. And although the sea, entirely at their command, afforded some sort of base for their operations, it did not enter into the calculation of those who ordered the undertaking to establish a regular well-furnished base and proceed to a methodical conquest leading to an important siege. It was rather their intention while using their power upon the sea as a means of safety, to allow the expeditionary force to act chiefly as a movable column with the special duty of capturing Sebastopol by a *coup de main*. There certainly existed the belief that before the winter the city would have fallen. For the success of such a movement it was first of all necessary that means should be found to convey across the Black Sea, rapidly and at once, the whole of the expedition, and secondly, that the army should have at its command a large amount of land transport service for the carriage of the supplies which must accompany it. Neither of these necessities were for the instant in possession of either the English or the French ; while a further difficulty in the way of such an operation was to be found in the divided command, at a time when extreme rapidity and unity of action would be most desirable. The energy of Lord Lyons and Sir George Brown supplied the first deficiency, and the English general found that he had the means of moving the whole of his army and apparatus at one trip by steam power to the enemy's coast ; and by degrees sufficient land transport was also procured. But time was necessary for supplying these wants ; the intention of the Western Powers was well known by the Russians, and the opportunity afforded of improving the strength of Sebastopol and of collecting troops was not neglected.

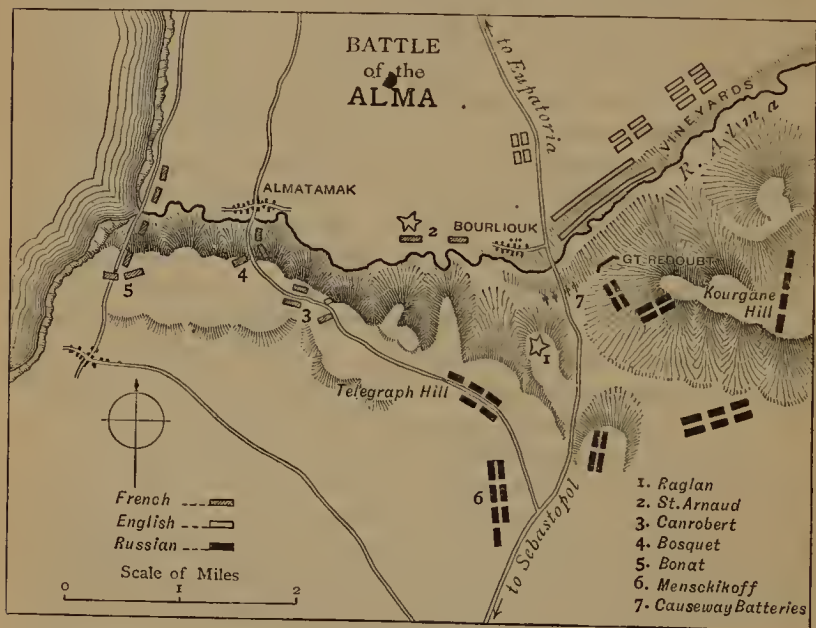
It was not until the 7th of September that the great armada set forth. On the 14th the disembarkation of the troops began, near an old fort in the Bay of Eupatoria, and was carried out without molestation either on land or sea.

The allied  
armies land in  
the Crimea.

Prince Menschikoff, in command of the Russian army and fleet, had decided to make his stand upon the banks of the Alma—a little river crossing the southward line of march about fifteen miles to the north of Sebastopol. There, on the 20th, the allied armies found him stationed in a strong position with some 45,000 men and powerful artillery, but without any very complete precautions in the way of



entrenchments. To the French had been given the right of the line of march, the more advantageous position, as being near the coast their right was covered by the shipping, while the English, covering the French left, were exposed to the constant chances of attack. The Alma is a small stream, easily fordable in most places. Its northern bank slopes gently down amid enclosures and vineyards. But on the south, near the sea, the land immediately beyond the stream rises at first almost in a cliff, which passes as it proceeds inland into a steep high hill, up which however there are roads, and then gradually falls away, till it takes the form of a sharp, almost perpendicular, bank of



from ten to fifteen feet in height, leaving a narrow level shelf between its foot and the edge of the stream. On the top of these banks the country is of a down-like character, rising gradually, with knolls and hollows, towards the west, where is the Kourgané hill, on which Menschikoff had taken up his position. Between that and the sea there is a second marked height on which was an unfinished telegraph. Between these two hills ran the road to Sebastopol. The whole position from the sea-coast to the Kourgané hill was about five miles in length; but the Russian commander, straitened for want of troops, and believing that the highlands near the sea were practically inaccessible, had left them

undefended, and had collected nearly the whole of his army either across the road, which was strongly defended with guns, or on the Kourgané hill, on the face of which he had erected a redoubt. The English, on the left, had thus the greater part of the enemy in their front, and ground less difficult indeed to ascend, but more open, and therefore more dangerous, than that in front of the French.

The allied armies numbered between 50,000 and 60,000, the English contingent, which alone had cavalry, was a little short of 25,000. Marshal St. Arnaud suggested that the French, who had found a practicable way across the mouth of the river, should turn the Russian left, while the English should attempt a similar movement upon the enemy's right. But Lord Raglan, feeling sure that the French were not sufficiently strong both to turn the left and occupy the centre of the line, and knowing that a body of 3000 cavalry, with good ground for acting, lay upon the right, determined that he would make the assault in front. The French attempted their turning movement, but without any very great success, for the roads which allowed the advance of the infantry proved in some cases unfit for artillery, which had therefore to be sent round by a longer route. Thus the infantry, having gained the crest of the hill, was unable to move further for want of its artillery. At the same time, by some mismanagement, the road in front of their left division became blocked with troops, and the forces which should have supported the infantry on the plateau were unable to be of service. Lord Raglan, originally intended to await the turning movement of the French, but observing the obstacles in its way, ordered a direct advance. The Light Division, which was in the first line, pushed forward through the vineyards. The general who commanded it had neglected to cover it with skirmishers, and it was therefore open during its advance to the fire of the enemy. Its formation was broken by its passage through the vineyards, and when it reached the shelf at the bottom of the bank it was not much more than a disorderly crowd of men. It was impossible to re-arrange the line, but disordered as it was, it was led forward up the slope of the hill, and succeeded in capturing the great redoubt. The second line, consisting of the Guards and Scotch regiments, should have been ready to support it ; it was however not sufficiently close. Unsupported and in disorder the Light Division was unable to maintain its advanced position ; it was pushed back from the redoubt and broken. As it retired down the hill it met the advancing line of the Guards, and involved one of its three battalions in its ruin. Meanwhile General Evans, who was

Battle of  
the Alma.  
Sep. 20.

advancing along the main road, found his advance checked by the batteries which had been disposed across it. The battle did not seem to be going favourably to the allies. What was little more than an accident changed the fate of the day. Lord Raglan, with his staff, riding forward beyond the line, had found himself upon a knoll in the midst of the enemy's position, looking down upon the Russian reserves and upon the flank of the batteries holding the main road. His mere appearance there is believed to have checked the movements of the Russians. The staff which surrounded him was thought to be a portion of the French army advancing from a successful turning movement. More efficacious still was his immediate order to bring up two guns. They were speedily in position, and their fire compelled the withdrawal of the reserves, and so enfiladed the batteries on the road that they also were quickly compelled to retire, clearing the way for Evans's advance. The Russian troops, opposing the Light Division and the Guards, were thus threatened upon their left flank, and unable to make the necessary effort to drive back their assailants. In spite therefore of the gap caused by the disaster of the Fusiliers, the line of the Guards pushed successfully onwards. Sir Colin Campbell, at the head of the Highlanders, advanced rapidly upon their left hand: the heavy columns opposed to them were one after the other broken and forced to retire; the hill was won, and the enemy in retreat in all directions. A large column of eight battalions had been gathered upon the Russian left to oppose the French. It even appears by its presence to have held the French troops upon the ridge entirely in check. But the artillery at length arrived from the sea-coast, and firing upon the flank of the column obliged it to withdraw. The French, now fully equipped, pushed vigorously onward, and without encountering much opposition took possession of the Telegraph Hill. As long as the allies were in sight the defeated Russians withdrew with some show of order, covered by the unbroken column which had withdrawn before the French, and by the cavalry which had not been engaged. But when the enemy was no longer to be seen the retreat became a disorderly rout. The loss of the English in killed and wounded was more than 2000, that of the French about 500. The only trophies won were two guns captured in the taking of the redoubt. Yet the victory was very complete, and the English commander wished at once to follow it up and press upon his beaten foe. But St. Arnaud, in the last stage of illness, put obstacles in the way, and for the sake of harmony Lord Raglan thought it necessary to yield. The army rested therefore on the ground which it had won.

The object for which the battle had been fought was the capture of Sebastopol. A long inlet running east and west forms the harbour of Sebastopol. The town, which was little more than a great military and naval establishment, was upon the south side of this inlet. Works of a very formidable character guarded the entrance of the harbour, and upon the northern heights opposite to the city was a fortification known as the Star fort. On the southern side the coast is deeply indented with various creeks, which are continued in ravines running up to a high plateau, of a somewhat triangular form, occupying the southern corner of the Crimea. At the head of the harbour the river Tchernaya, flowing from the south-east, divides this plateau from the high and forest-covered country lying round the eastern end of the harbour. At the time the battle was fought the southern side was but weakly defended towards the land. The site of the town is cut nearly in half by one of the deep ravines, separating the town proper, lying seaward, from a suburb. This separating creek is called the Man-of-war Harbour. Between the head of this creek and the sea the defences covering the town itself were in tolerable order, and all connected. But around the suburb there was no complete defence, and the separate fortifications were by no means formidable.

Position of  
Sebastopol.

Towards this prize the expedition of the allies now advanced, attended by the fleet. Four days after the battle the allies reached the Belbek, so close to the city that it became a matter of necessity to decide upon their next step. It appears to have been the wish of the English at once to take advantage of their victory and assault the north side. It is now known that such a step would almost certainly have been successful, and that the possession of that side of the harbour would have necessitated the speedy surrender of the town. But again St. Arnaud offered objections. There was, he declared, an earthwork in the way, the capture of which would be a matter of great difficulty. Sir Edmund Lyons, who was eagerly pressing for the assault, reconnoitred the position, and found that the earthwork was indeed there, but that it was unarmed. When he returned with the information, he found that he was too late, and that a new course had been decided on by the generals. They had come to the determination to undertake a flank march round the head of the harbour, and to take possession of the heights on the south. It was a difficult operation, for the country was unknown and rough, and while in the act of marching the armies were open to any assault upon their left flank. It was however

The armies  
march round  
Sebastopol  
to Balaclava.



carried out unmolested. The English led the way, and as they moved round the harbour came in contact at Mackenzie's farm, in a thick wood, with the extreme rear of the Russian army marching towards the mainland of Russia up the great road which joins Sebastopol with Baktchi Serai. The slight skirmish which ensued produced no results, and on the 26th the English arrived at the little landlocked harbour of Balaclava, at the foot of the steep hills forming the eastern edge of the plateau. The fleet, duly warned of the operation, had already arrived. When the French came up, Canrobert, who had now succeeded the dying St. Arnaud, demanded the harbour of Balaclava, which, as the march had entirely altered the relative positions of the armies, should naturally have fallen to the French as forming the right wing; for, the armies now looking northward, the right wing had become the easternmost of the two. The English were unwilling to surrender the harbour, and a compromise was arrived at, by which the harbour was left in their hands, but they at the same time undertook to continue to hold the more dangerous and exposed side of the line. The French lost nothing by yielding, as far more roomy and commodious harbours at Kasatch Bay were found in the ground which they now occupied. A similar question to that which had arisen on the 24th now again rose. Should Sebastopol be attacked at once or not? Again it would appear that Lord Raglan, Sir Edmund Lyons, and others, were desirous of immediate assault. Again the French, more instructed in the technical rules of war, and supported by the opinion of Sir John Burgoyne, who commanded the English Engineers, declined the more vigorous suggestion, and it was determined at least to wait till the siege guns from the fleet were landed, and the artillery fire of the enemy weakened, in preparation for the assault.

In the light of subsequent knowledge, and perhaps even with the knowledge then obtainable if rightly used, it appears that in all the three instances mentioned the bolder less regular course would have been the true wisdom. For Menschikoff had adopted a somewhat strange measure of defence. He had given up all hopes of using his fleet to advantage. He had caused some of his vessels to be sunk at the entrance of the harbour, which was thus closed; and having drawn the crews, some 18,000 in number, from the ships, he had intrusted to

The Russian plan of defence. them the defence of the town, and had marched away with his whole army. The garrison did not now number more than 25,000, and they were quite unfit—being sailors—for operations in the field. The defences were not those of a regular for-

tress, but rather of an entrenched position. It would have been impossible for such a garrison to have held out against a well-organised assault from a victorious army of 50,000 men. So strong was the Russian belief in the immediate fall of the town that the false news of the fall of Sebastopol, which for a day or two delighted the people of England, and was so fully credited that the French Emperor announced it to his troops, probably arose from it. For many hours the public was filled with enthusiastic joy at the tidings that the Russian fleet was sunk and Sebastopol captured. It was indeed what ought to have happened. Yet, though Menschikoff's conduct might have produced this result, and has been accordingly blamed, it did in fact produce results of an exactly opposite character, which must be allowed to justify it. There were in Sebastopol two men who, working together, made an extraordinary use of their opportunities. Korniloff, the Admiral, forcing himself to the front by sheer nobleness of character and enthusiasm, found in Colonel von Todleben, at that time on a voluntary mission in the town, an assistant of more than common genius. Inspired by their leader, and directed by the skill of his coadjutor, the garrison and townsmen of Sebastopol made good use of the vast resources supplied by the military establishments and dismantled fleet. Time was all that was wanted, and that was gained by the dread felt by men of military knowledge lest Menschikoff's army should fall upon the allies in the midst of their assault upon the town. Thus, while the destruction of the fleet closed the harbour and secured the town from assault from the sea, liberated for garrison work nearly 20,000 men, and supplied vast material and overwhelming artillery, the mere fact of the presence of the army, badly employed though it was, outside the walls checked any immediate assault, and gave time to the garrison to develop their resources. Whether he acted by intention, or whether the result was merely accidental, Menschikoff could, as it proved, have made no wiser move.

The decision of the allies to await the landing of their siege train was more far-reaching than the generals at the time conceived, although some few men appear to have understood its necessary result. It in fact changed what was intended to be a rapid *coup de main* into a regular siege—and a regular siege of an imperfect and inefficient character, because the allied forces were not strong enough to invest the town. And this change brought with it still further the necessity of employing in a regular operation of war a body of troops equipped only for the pur-

Siege of  
Sebastopol  
determined on.

poses of an expedition. As a matter of course this change of plan forced upon the military administration in England wholly different arrangements. Preparation had not been made to meet the change of circumstances. The work thrown upon the administration was beyond its powers ; the terrible suffering of the army during the ensuing winter was the inevitable result.

The first idea of the generals however was confined to the reduction of the fire of the place by means of their heavy siege artillery, to be followed by an immediate assault. By the arrangements made with regard to the possession of Balaclava harbour, the bombardment of the suburb, including the Malakoff and the Redan, fell to the English ; the French undertook to carry it out against the city itself, directing their fire principally against the Flagstaff battery. To secure Balaclava, Sir Colin Campbell was stationed there with the Highland regiment. On a plain at the foot of the Sapoune ridge, bounding the plateau, were the English cavalry. Along the ridge a division of the French army was placed. The inconveniencies of such a position are obvious. The supplies of the English had to be transported some distance, and to pass a portion of the French army before reaching the troops ; Balaclava, of the last importance, was weakly defended, and cut off from the immediate command of the English general by the interposition of a French division. Slowly the siege trains were landed and brought into position in the batteries marked out by the engineers. The ground in front of the English was very rocky and difficult, and the guns were, of necessity, placed at a considerable distance from the defences of the town. The size of the guns however, and the skill with which they were placed, sufficed as it proved to make them thoroughly efficacious. The French, to whom the ground afforded better opportunity, contrived to place their batteries considerably nearer, but, as it proved, in not so well-chosen a position. It was not till the 16th of October that these preparations were completed. Anxious to make the bombardment as thorough as possible, the allied generals had demanded the co-operation of the fleets ; and somewhat contrary to the wish of Dundas and his captains it had been determined that a diversion upon the sea-front should accompany both the bombardment and assault.

But the time spent in landing the siege trains had largely altered the conditions of the contest. With their *morale* shaken by their late defeat, conscious of the insufficiency of their numbers, with their defences incomplete, and deserted as they

Position of the allied armies.

Preparations of the Russians.

thought by their commander and his troops, the sailor garrison of Sebastopol had at first lived in hourly dread of an assault which they believed themselves unable to repel. The energy of Korniloff and the skill of Todleben had by this time roused the temper of the garrison, and had rendered the defences far more formidable ; and in the beginning of October means had been taken to persuade Menschikoff to allow considerable bodies of troops to return to the town. The Prince's own plan had also been succeeding. Master of the road to Russia, he had been receiving constant reinforcements. Time was telling entirely in favour of the besieged, and it was almost with enthusiastic joy that the inhabitants discovered, by the breaking of the ground, that still further time was to be allowed them, and that the allies had determined upon something resembling a siege. While their batteries were building, Todleben so altered and improved his own as to bring an overwhelming fire to bear upon the French guns, while at the same time preparations were made for receiving any assault with a storm of cannon and rifle-shot.

On the 17th the great bombardment began. The English batteries gained the mastery over those opposed to them, but the efforts of the French, much reduced by the fire of the besieged, were brought to a speedy conclusion by a great explosion within their lines. Canrobert sent word to Lord Raglan that he should be unable to resume the fire for two days. The attack by the fleet had been to little purpose. Accepting the plans of the French admiral, Dundas had consented to an assault in line of battle from 1400 to 2000 yards distant from the batteries. At such a range the artillery of that period could produce no important result upon the strong masonry of the forts. An inshore squadron, under the command of Lyons, had indeed been detached, and had found a position upon the edge of a shoal covering the northern defences. At a distance of 800 yards it had destroyed the artillery upon the top of Fort Constantine, but even at that comparatively short distance had effected nothing against its walls ; while the squadron, exposed to the fire of a small battery placed so high as to be unassailable from the sea, itself suffered severely. The result of the whole operation had been most disheartening. It seemed plain that the time for a rapid assault was over, and that tedious and dangerous siege operations must be undertaken ; while upon the other side it was so fully demonstrated that the fleet was of no use against the harbour fortresses that no further assault upon them was ever attempted. Every day till the 25th of October the fire of the allies was continued. But

Bombardment  
of Sebastopol.  
Oct. 17.



under cover of this fire (always encountered by the ceaseless energy of Todleben) the change had begun, and the French were attacking the Flagstaff bastion by means of regular approaches. On that day the siege was somewhat rudely interrupted. The presence of the Russian army outside the walls and the defect in the position of the allies became evident.

The port of Balaclava, besides its inner defences under Sir Colin Campbell, was defended about half-way up the valley which led to it by an outer line, consisting of a row of redoubts in charge of Turkish troops. They were placed on a slight ridge along which ran the Woronzoff road, one of the means of access to the plateau. The valley was thus divided into two basins, of which the southern was entirely in the hands of the allies, and was occupied by the cavalry. The Russian army, having regained the hills on the other side of the Tchernaya, and being considerably reinforced, was free to move, and had been gradually drawing down upon the north and east of Balaclava. On the 25th, part of the army under Liprandi advanced from the direction of Kamara to attack the Turkish redoubts, while another part occupied the hills on the northern side of the north basin. The generals in command had warned Lord Raglan of the coming assault; but, apparently believing that it was a false report, such as had once before caused him unnecessarily to move his troops, he took no measures for preventing it. The only troops therefore at hand to check the Russian advance were the heavy brigade of cavalry under Lord Lucan. Neither Sir Colin Campbell nor Lord Lucan appear to have supposed that they could employ cavalry alone to much advantage. Three of the redoubts were taken, the Turks after a brave resistance flying from them, and leaving behind seven English guns. When Liprandi's advance became certain, two divisions of infantry were ordered down to oppose it; but their coming was slow, and for a considerable time the cavalry, withdrawn towards the heights occupied by the allies, sat idly looking on at the enemy's successes. The Heavy Brigade, under General Scarlett, was subsequently ordered to move across the southern valley to assist in the defence of the narrow passage at Kadikoi which led to Balaclava, in case the enemy should be really intending so serious a blow as the capture of that town. While on the march in all security (for the south valley was regarded as English ground), General Scarlett saw coming across the ridge dividing the valleys the whole of the Russian cavalry in a vast column of between 2000 and 3000 men. He had with him the Inniskillings and the Scotch Greys, and was fol-

Battle of  
Balaclava.  
Oct. 25.

lowed by the 5th Dragoons. The regiments immediately at hand were about 300 strong. It seemed as if they must be at once entirely annihilated. Instead of pushing on, the enemy halted upon the slope of the heights. Of this mistake advantage was at once taken. General Scarlett, personally leading the way, charged with his 300 horsemen full in the face of the massive column. Too small in number to destroy the vast mass opposed to them, the Greys and Inniskillings, breaking through the enemy's ranks, worked themselves into the heart of the column, by degrees actually cutting their way through, and turning back again. Their fate must still have been doubtful had not some support arrived. The other regiments of the Brigade came up, and one squadron of the Inniskillings, which had been separated from the rest of the regiment and was already in advance, charged upon the left flank of the enemy, while the dragoons fell upon his right. The massive Russian column began to give ground, and before long its slight retrograde movement became a complete retreat. It dissolved and retired in disorder. Few such instances of successful daring are on record. The whole brigade employed did not count more than eight squadrons, the original assailants were but 300, yet the Russian cavalry, numbering perhaps as many thousands, was entirely routed. But though the English cavalry had performed this astonishing act of war it was not well commanded. The Light Brigade, under Lord Cardigan, stood quietly by and took no part either in the contest or in completing the ruin by assaulting the broken column. A few Russian squadrons about the same time had ridden down towards Balaclava where the 93d were placed, but had quickly withdrawn before the fire with which they were received. By this time the allied generals were upon the heights overlooking the battlefield. Lord Raglan was much distressed at the slowness with which his infantry were making their way to the scene. He saw that the impression made by the charge of the Heavy Brigade was very great, that the enemy's infantry pushed along the two heights was virtually cut in two, and that in all probability that part of it which held the conquered redoubts would be easily induced to yield its ground. He thought that even cavalry alone might probably effect much, and despatched a written order to Lord Lucan to advance and attempt what he could in the way of regaining the redoubts, assuring him of the approach of supporting infantry. Lord Lucan, a man of much ability but of much self-will, either accidentally or wilfully misinterpreted the order, not believing, apparently, that cavalry would be of use alone, and preferring to read the direction

as implying that he was to support the infantry and not the infantry to support him. As no infantry was visible, he remained immovable. Taking advantage of the inaction, the enemy was proceeding to carry off the conquered guns. Losing patience at the sight, the Commander-in-Chief despatched Captain Nolan with a second written order to Lord Lucan to advance immediately, and save the guns. As Lord Raglan had a full view of the battlefield, there was every reason to believe that he fully understood what was to be done. But Lord Lucan asked, "What am I to do? What guns?" and Captain Nolan, losing temper and speaking probably in an irritating and insulting way, pointed forward and said, "The enemy is there, and there are your guns." Lord Lucan chose to believe that the guns intended were a battery of twelve pieces at the extreme eastern end of the north valley, behind which the broken cavalry of the Russians had re-formed. To reach them it would be necessary to traverse the whole length of the valley. Along the containing ridges to the north and south of this valley the enemy's forces had advanced, so that in order to reach the battery the force would have to run the gauntlet between two lines of infantry and artillery, and meet the full fire of the battery in face. This was the extraordinary operation which Lord Lucan declares that he understood to be ordered by Lord Raglan. It was to carry out this that he instructed Lord Cardigan, refused to listen to his remonstrances, and sent the Light Brigade to its destruction. As an act of courage and devotion nothing could have been finer. With perfect and unswerving gallantry Lord Cardigan, having placed himself at the head of the first line, galloped against the guns. With ranks terribly thinned by the fire with which they were struck during their advance, the regiments which were immediately with him drove the enemy from their cannon, and pushed on beyond towards the Russian cavalry. The other regiments, which had been arranged as supports, arrived in turn in the same plight, and a wild and broken succession of charges took place. Reduced as they were, and scattered into handfuls, the English broke through whatever opposed them. But the effort was of course from the first entirely a hopeless one. Lord Cardigan, having completed his charge, had withdrawn, as some thought rather too early from the field. There was no general officer to give command, and the men collecting, almost irrespective of regiments, on the two sides of the valley, were at length brought out of action by Lord George Paget and Colonel Shewell. Even their retreat was blocked by some squadrons of Russian Lancers who had not yet been engaged. Through those who

opposed him Colonel Shewell and his followers rode, while upon the other side Lord George Paget passed across the very front of the enemy, who for some reason failed to charge and destroy them. The retreat was favoured by a well-executed operation of the French cavalry, who carried out upon the northern ridge of the valley the same movement which Lord Raglan had intended his troops to carry out upon the southern ridge, and with apparently very slight loss silenced the batteries on that side. Of the 673 that went into action but 195 mounted men were counted at the roll-call after the retreat. It appears that 113 men and 475 horses were killed, 134 men and 42 horses wounded. Blundering and loss of temper had thus cost the English in the course of twenty minutes two-thirds of their Light Cavalry. As a military operation the charge was an error of a most terrible sort, and as such was judged by Lord Raglan. As an act of heroic bravery and blind self-devotion it excited the warmest enthusiasm in England, and undoubtedly had the good effect of giving the troops a profound belief in their superiority to their enemies. Stripped of all ornament and narrated in cold words, it affects the hearer with distress and horror at the miserable blunder which caused it. It is difficult to conceive the violence of the mingled sentiments of rage and admiration which must have filled the spectators as they watched from the heights the terrible tragedy which was enacted before their eyes. When the infantry divisions subsequently arrived on the plain it would have been possible to have regained the ground which had been lost early in the day, especially as the feats of the English cavalry had gone far to dishearten the Russians. But already, before the battle, the conviction had been forcing itself upon the allied commanders that the outer line of defence at Balaelava was wider than they could possibly hold without diminishing the troops necessary for the siege. Liprandi was therefore allowed quietly to retain the position he had won, and the Russians in Sebastopol gained fresh confidence, as they learned that a distinct impression had been made upon the English lines and seven pieces of cannon captured.

The battle of Balaelava was but a first stroke in the great attempt which had been preparing for the relief of the town and the destruction of the invaders. The separate action of England and France had dissolved the European concert ; and the German Powers, satisfied with the withdrawal of the Russians from the Principalities, had adopted a policy of neutrality, only so far modified that an Austrian army had entered and occupied Wallachia and Moldavia. Far from attaining its object, this form of

Russian rein-  
forcements  
arrive in  
Sebastopol.



coercion had been in fact of the greatest value to the Czar ; war on the Danube was effectually stopped, and the troops who were there employed were set at liberty to oppose the formidable invasion of the Crimea. Somewhat slowly, for our command of the sea compelled them to follow the long coast route, reinforcements had continued to arrive. And now more than 100,000 men were collected under Prince Menschikoff, to whom the Allies could oppose less than 70,000. The English infantry had dwindled to 16,000. The French, gradually increasing their strength, were about 40,000. To these must be added the sailors, and a certain amount of Turkish troops. Again time was of the last importance, and again it seemed impossible to the Allies to proceed with sufficient rapidity. The siege-works of the French had been pushed on as quickly as possible, and by the 4th of November were so close to the Flagstaff Battery that on the next day it was intended that the long-deferred assault should take place. On that very day the Russian commander, aware of the approaching crisis, and equally conscious of the necessity of haste, was ready to make the great effort which was to oblige the allies to relax their hold upon their prey.

The lines occupied by the allied armies, extending from the mouth of the harbour to the west, followed roughly the fortifications of the town, crossed to the valley of the Tchernaya, and, passing along the Sapoune Ridge bounding the plateau, fell off south and east, and included the port of Balaclava. Their whole extent was nearly twenty miles. The number of troops at the command of the allied generals did not suffice to carry on the siege, to hold this long line, and to keep any considerable central body of reserves. Attacked on any part of their line they could only support the troops assailed by drawing reinforcements either from the siege or from some other part of their defences. At the north-east corner of the plateau a mass roughly triangular in shape was broken off from the heights, and connected with them by an isthmus or neck of no great width. This mass was generally known as Mount Inkerman. It sank down at its extreme north-east corner to the Inkerman bridge over the Tchernaya. It had been impossible to include this mass completely in the English position, and the Second Division, to whom the defence in that direction was intrusted, occupied a ridge which crossed the isthmus about half-way down its length, but English pickets and outposts covered a portion of Mount Inkerman. Troops taking possession of Shell Hill, the top of this mass, and advancing successfully against the Second Division upon the Home Ridge, as it was called, would have opened an access to the

Extent of the  
lines of invest-  
ment.

plateau. The intention of the Russians, who knew the weakness of the allied armies in point of numbers, was to place an army on this hill, and driving before it the defenders of the ridge, to clear a way for fresh troops to mount from the valley of the Tchernaya, and thus occupy with a large force the Sapouné Ridge at the east of the plateau. For the attack of Mount Inkerman an army of 40,000 was prepared. They were to march from two directions, from Sebastopol itself, and from the Inkerman Bridge, and, meeting at the top, were to form one army under General

Russian plan of attack on Mount Inkerman.



Dannenberg. Meanwhile General Gorchakoff, with the 22,000 troops which had fought the battle of Balaclava, was to make such demonstration of assault in the valley of the Tchernaya as should prevent the despatch of reinforcements to the division on the ridge, and should be ready, as soon as the opening was afforded, at once to ascend the heights and join the victorious army of Dannenberg. The deep indentation which divided the Inkerman mass from the plateau, and formed the contraction of the neck upon the west or town side, was known as the Careenage Ravine, and ran far back past the English position on the

Home Ridge, dying out at the very end of the isthmus at what was known as the Windmill Heights. Upon the eastern side another deep ravine ran inwards from the Tchernaya valley, immediately under the Shell Hill, coming out on the top of the ridge about half a mile in front of the English lines. This was known as the Quarry Ravine. It lay completely under the command of guns placed on the Shell Hill, and formed an admirable cover for the organisation of assaults. At the end there was a small loose stone wall or parapet, used as the position of the central picket, and known as the Barrier. Up this ravine ran the post road, which passed along the neck and through the centre of the English lines. The side of the ravine opposite to the Shell Hill ran out to abrupt and inaccessible heights, and was known as the Inkerman Tusk. Behind it, across another depression, was a terrace part way down the hillside, on which there was erected an earthwork called the Sandbag Battery, some nine feet in height, now deserted and without guns.

Before dawn, and under cover of a thick mist, the enemy began to carry out their plan. General Soimonoff, with his column, coming from the city, took possession unperceived of Shell Hill; and without waiting for the arrival of the column from the Inkerman Bridge made an assault along the eastern side of the Careenage Ravine, thus coming upon the left flank of the English on the Home Ridge. The formation of the ground was such that the outposts, when driven in, would converge towards the main position, where artillery was placed; and that position was so strong that small numbers might well hold it. This plan of defence had been successfully adopted by General Evans a few days before, when, by means of his artillery, he had entirely driven off a Russian assault which seemed to be a sort of rehearsal of the great battle. But Evans was absent invalided with the fleet, and the command had devolved on General Pennefather, a man of a very vigorous and combative disposition. When the outposts came in contact with the advancing enemy, and instead of falling back seemed much disposed to hold their ground, he adopted the plan of reinforcing them, and thus undertaking a defence of an offensive character, attacking the advancing Russians wherever they were encountered before they approached his line. It naturally resulted from the adoption of this plan of defence that the battle assumed the form of a series of almost unconnected combats, and that an opportunity was afforded for feats of individual gallantry, and of successes almost inconceivable won by a few resolute men against

Battle of Inkerman.  
Nov. 4.

great masses of opponents. But it was scarcely possible to maintain any supervision, or to exercise any of the usual duties of generalship. There was scarcely any opportunity for employing the troops in their usual formations, and a very terrible risk was incurred by stripping of its defenders that position on the ridge which was the real rampart against the influx of the Russians. The various bodies or clusters of men by whom the battle was maintained were frequently composed of soldiers of several different regiments, or of men commanded by officers of different regiments from their own. During some part of the day there must have been less than 500 men holding the ridge; and though success seems to vindicate the tactics adopted, the risk was very great. In fact at one time the line of the ridge was broken through, and nothing but the arrival of French supports could have saved the army. The history of such a battle becomes little more than the narration of the gallant deeds of individual men, or individual corps, or fragments of corps. But it may be described generally as consisting of three great assaults upon the English lines. The first of these was made by Soimonoff before the general command of the battle was taken by Dannenberg. It was directed along the eastern side of the Careenage Ravine, and supported by a simultaneous assault upon the east by two regiments of Pauloff's column, which was advancing from Inkerman Bridge. In each case it was encountered in the same way by small and isolated bodies of English troops, and so successfully that the 15,000 men engaged in it were driven entirely from the field. General Soimonoff was himself killed. The second assault took place after the arrival of Dannenberg, and under the cover of an artillery of more than ninety pieces which he had placed in position on Shell Hill. It was directed against the centre (approached by the Quarry Ravine) and the right of the Allies. The assault upon the right involved much of the fiercest fighting of the day. Although it was no real part of the English position, the deserted Sandbag Battery became an object for the possession of which both parties struggled with the greatest fury. The defence, begun by General Adams with the 41st and part of the 49th Regiments, was maintained by the Guards upon their arrival on the ground. The battery was again and again taken and retaken, and the combat drew towards it troops which were sorely wanted elsewhere. At length, with the assistance of General Cathcart, who, by a great error of judgment, had descended from the hill and brought his troops to assist in the battle, the Guards seemed to win a complete victory, only to find that they had separated themselves from the



English lines, and laid themselves open to an attack upon their rear, from which even the regimental colours were with the greatest difficulty extricated. In the centre a series of columns were pushed forward against the English ridge; in most cases they were encountered and checked by small bodies of infantry. One column penetrated indeed to the crest of the ridge itself, but in no instance did they succeed in taking the barrier at the head of the ravine, which remained throughout in English hands. The third and most dangerous assault (for the English troops were nearly worn out, ammunition was scarce, and a third of their scanty numbers had to be employed for opposing a possible advance upon their left) was made by a strong column directly upon the centre. It came on, surrounded by a cloud of loosely arranged skirmishers, who, subsequently forming a vanguard, actually crossed the ridge. The presence of a somewhat unsteady regiment of the French line, aided by the invincible courage of the remnants of the English, proved sufficient not only to drive back from the ridge those who had reached it, but subsequently to break and overthrow the main column. After the repulse of this assault there was a space of some forty minutes during which the position of the Allies was most critical. For the English were becoming exhausted, and such of the French as had come up had not proved thoroughly trustworthy, and were feeling much discouragement at the scattered and broken appearance of the English. Lord Raglan, who, though he had left the immediate command to General Pennefather, had been constantly present on the field, had however ordered up from the siege-works two heavy cannon. They had asserted their predominance; and this, together with his constant repulses and the continued maintenance on the part of the English of all their advanced positions, prevented Dannenberg from taking advantage of the opportunity, till the arrival of General Bosquet with considerable French supports changed the aspect of the day. It is true that the allies of the English did not render them so much service as might have been expected. Bosquet repeated the error of the morning, and involved his troops in difficulties on the Tusk, from which he only extricated them by a forced and hasty retreat. Though the French were at first heavily discouraged by this false movement, the inaction of the enemy restored their confidence, and fresh reinforcements arriving, there came a time when the allied generals had at their disposal troops of all arms to the number of 13,000, of whom 5000 or 6000 had not as yet fired a shot; while the enemy, though still superior in numbers—still in possession of 9000 unused troops, was suffering

from the depression of constant defeat, and from the superiority of our artillery fire. General Canrobert, however, was contented with the success gained. After eleven o'clock the French took no further part in the fight. For two hours longer the English maintained a scattered aggressive warfare, with such success that at one o'clock Dannenberg ordered a retreat. The time had now arrived, it would seem, when a general advance of the Allies would have turned defeat into complete disaster. For although Dannenberg's retreat was covered by his 9000 fresh men, the difficulty of withdrawing his vast artillery in the face of an advancing enemy would have been overwhelming. Such an advance was suggested by Pennefather and Lord Raglan. Canrobert refused the suggestion, to his subsequent great regret, and the Russians were able to carry off their troops and artillery in good order and without further loss.

Indeed from one point of view the attack upon Inkerman had been successful. Its main object had been to prevent the threatened assault upon the Flagstaff Battery. And at a council held the following day Lord Raglan thought it necessary to yield to Canrobert's suggestion that the losses in the battle, coupled with the proof that had been given of the vast numbers of the enemy, rendered the renewal of the assault unwise. The fatal resolve was taken again to postpone it, and thus the terrible alternative of wintering the army where it stood was practically adopted, for at no subsequent period were the Allies in condition to renew the assault. The winter was upon them, and the miserable sufferings which it brought with it reduced them so low that the siege-works, which were persistently carried on, were in point of fact necessary defensive works for their own preservation. Any sign of relaxation in their efforts, any attempt to withdraw, would have been followed inevitably by assaults which they were certainly quite unfitted to encounter.

Winter may be said to have begun on the 14th of November, when a terrible hurricane swept over Sebastopol, bringing with it rain and hail, and even snow. The destruction it caused was very great. Not only did it sweep down all the English tents and leave the men, even the sick and wounded, exposed to its fury, but it fell upon the crowded port and roadstead of Balaclava and wrought havoc among the shipping. Immense quantities of stores, on account of the narrowness of the landing-place, had been left on board the ships; and among the vessels which fell victims to the gale were two of paramount importance, the one containing the greater part of the new supplies of ammunition for the army, the

Effect of the  
battle.

Miseries of the  
army in the  
winter.

other, the *Prince*, laden with the warm clothing which was needed for the coming season. From this time onward, though with occasional returns of fair weather, there was constant winter, not apparently abnormally cold, but wet and foggy when it was not snowing or freezing sharply. It brought with it a long string of miseries, some inevitable, some the fruit of mistaken strategy and faulty administration. The soldiers lying under canvas were not properly protected. The labour they were called upon to give was of a constant and exhausting character, digging in the wet half-frozen trenches, or sitting cowering, cramped, and motionless, to avoid the fire of the enemy while covering the working parties. There was no actual want of food, though the rations were sometimes deficient, but the food was chiefly biscuit and salt meat, which the wearied soldier could not always bring himself even to cook, but either bartered it with the French or ate it raw. Ever since the army had been in the East its health had been affected ; it had brought with it the seeds of the cholera and choleraic illness from the camp at Varna. Cold, exposure, and food of the very kind best adapted for the promotion of scurvy, working upon the already weakened frames of the soldiers, produced a fearful amount of illness and death. Nor were proper sanitary precautions adopted. The plateau was covered with decaying carcasses of horses and mules, besides the accumulated filth of the camps themselves. The army was in fact so reduced that in January the rank and file at Lord Raglan's disposal numbered only 11,367 men ; at the end of February there were upwards of 13,000 men in hospital, and the deaths from sickness alone had been 8898. The suffering did not end with sickness. The organisation for attending the sick and wounded with the army was bad ; the arrangements for transport were defective ; and the general hospitals established at Scutari were crowded and unsanitary, without proper provision or supplies of medical requisites, and so little resembling what hospitals should be that the death-rate in some of them was more than 50 per cent.

It is pretty certain that in many respects the French army was suffering as heavily, but their strongly centralised government enabled them to throw a cloak over their deficiencies, while in England the presence of correspondents of the newspapers brought all facts before the public eye, dressed in exaggerated and picturesque language. The indignation of the people of England began to grow strong, and the *Times* newspaper employed all the great ability of its writers in giving it expres-

Anger of  
England against  
the supposed  
mismanage-  
ment.

sion. Lord Raglan himself was a man of such character and importance, of such recognised ability, and so necessary at the time, that the popular anger somewhat spared him, and concentrated itself on the members of his staff. He was indeed accused of ignorance of the condition of his army, of secluding himself and neglecting that personal inspection which would have taught him the truth, and of keeping from the Government such facts as he knew. It was General Airey, the Quartermaster-General ; Estcourt, the Adjutant-General ; and Filder, the Chief of the Commissariat, who were the principal marks against whom the popular anger was directed. All sorts of complaints as to mismanagement were rife and readily believed. Men could not bring themselves to understand that it was no one's fault that the stores plentifully supplied lay idle and rotting at Balaclava because there was no decent road to bring them to the front, and no land transport to take them even had the road existed. It was impossible not to suppose that there was grave and cruel mismanagement in hospitals wanting the commonest medical necessities, or in the supply of green coffee to the troops when they had no fuel to roast it. Yet the officers popularly held responsible for this mismanagement were able, efficient, and devoted. With few exceptions everything within their power had been done. So far from being ignorant of the condition of his troops, Lord Raglan had in fact sent home—though of course either in official language or in words tending rather to cheer than to cause despair—the fullest accounts of what had happened, accompanied with statistics which told their own tale. So far from being secluded or self-indulgent, he worked constantly day and night ; and although it is true that in the earlier part of the siege, in his desire to spare the men from the necessity of turning out to salute him, he had rather refrained from showing himself, he subsequently repeatedly visited every part of his camp and all his hospitals. He had indeed exercised unusual and successful foresight. On the loss of the *Prince*, he had on his own authority purchased a sufficiency of warm clothing at Constantinople, without waiting for renewed supplies to be sent from England. He had ransacked the Mediterranean to procure wood to build huts for his troops. He had given and enforced orders that vegetables should be procured wherever possible. He had tried his best, with hired workmen, to make a firm road from Balaclava, but had failed. And with regard to his subordinates he declared, and it was impossible to doubt his judgment, that no man could have done his duty more efficiently and devotedly than General Airey.



Yet the evils complained of really existed. The cause of them lay partly in the extraordinary clumsiness of the English military administration in time of war, and partly in the peculiar conditions under which the campaign was being carried on. The real difficulty which lay at the bottom of most of the suffering was the want of land transport. The army, originally despatched and equipped for a short expedition, to be speedily closed it was believed with the capture of a city which would afford abundant means of supply, had been furnished with all that was necessary for this purpose. But the expedition had gradually grown into a campaign. Under ordinary conditions a campaign, including the orderly possession of the country in which the army is acting, implies the use of the supplies and especially of the forage which the country affords. But the strategy of the Allies had induced them to surrender the command of all the country, with the exception of one bleak plateau producing nothing; and it became a necessity that the forage—an exceedingly bulky article—should, with other necessities, be supplied by sea. For this exigency the Government at home was not prepared. And although the Commissary-General had the right of purchase in other countries, and did, in fact, purchase as much as he conveniently could, his suggestions to the Treasury (which was the department under which the commissariat was at first placed) were subject to the judgment of the officials in England; and to them it seemed unnecessary to send out large supplies of hay. It was not therefore horses and mules that were wanted, but the means of feeding them. The commissariat officers refused to purchase largely animals which they knew they could not keep alive. Again the movement to the south side of Sebastopol had rendered the army dependent upon one contracted and inconvenient port. Thus there was no room for the proper storage and disembarkation of the vast supplies, and they were left lying in the ships either in the harbour or roadstead to be wasted and spoilt, and exposed to such a risk as that of the hurricane of the 14th of November. They could not be landed, and when landed they could not be forwarded, for this sole harbour was separated by ten miles from the camp. Two roads might have been used for the purpose of connecting the two; the one was a hard road known as the Woronzoff road, crossing the valley of Balaclava, and so up the heights; the other was a mere clay track passing up the Col to the heights. The submission of the Allies to the capture by Liprandi of the Woronzoff road in the battle of Balaclava deprived the English of the only sound road. In the storms of winter the valley

around Balaclava became a mere sea of mud, and the clay road all but impassable. But again this difficulty at least might have been got over by a large employment of labour. But the expeditionary army was only just sufficient to supply the men necessary for carrying on its warlike operations when it undertook the siege, and as by the arrangement between the allied commanders the lion's share of the work was thrown upon the English, numerically the weakest part of the force, the labour on which the troops were necessarily employed precluded the possibility of detaching a sufficient number of men for such work as road-making. The same cause prevented the large employment of human labour for the purposes of land transport, and prevented the troops from going down themselves to fetch the supplies which were lying waiting for them. Yet although the cause of the evils may be thus explained, it cannot be denied that the long cessation of warfare had rendered the English army somewhat unfit for immediate action in the field, and that a want of invention and of ready adaptation to circumstances was characteristic both of the men themselves and of their officers. Certain facts make this evident. The naval brigade did not suffer; the sailors got what they wanted, and succeeded in making themselves decently comfortable. The French soldiers, underfed, miserably housed in their little *tentes d'abri*, yet found means to procure fuel by digging for roots, cooked such meat as they had in a proper fashion, and being supplied with regimental bakeries were seldom without fresh bread. They also had well-organised ambulance corps at the beginning of the campaign; at all events their hospitals were thoroughly good. Even in the English army some regiments, as the 7th Fusiliers, managed, by employing the regimental horses and the chargers of the officers, to go down to Balaclava and bring up what they wanted. But the ordinary English soldier, trusting entirely to the commissariat and to the arrangements made for him, found himself unable to supply any deficiencies which occurred.

The misfortunes of the Crimean winter had produced a most powerful effect upon the English mind, and gave rise to events disclosing at once the strength and weakness of the peculiar type of Democratic government existing in England. Even more than at present the *Times* newspaper of that time aimed at representing public opinion. It seldom led it. Its skill lay in saying what was in everybody's mind an hour or two before it had found expression elsewhere. It may thus be regarded as a thoroughly good exponent of the general feeling. It had played an

Popular demand  
for change of  
Ministry.

important part in preventing the closing of the questions at issue upon the evacuation of the Principalities, and in demanding the attack upon the Crimea as a further and more permanent means of checking the ambition of Russia. It had sung the praises of the battle of Alma with enthusiasm, and, unduly sanguine, it had accepted as true the false rumour of the capture of Sebastopol. It now, as angry and despondent as it had been hopeful, wrote in vehement language of the shortcomings of the army officials and of the military decadence of England. It supplied the words that were wanted by the general feeling. Rage at official mismanagement, pity for the suffering soldiers, shame at the sorry position it appeared to occupy, filled the heart of England. But in the system of party government a Ministry can remain in office only so long as it satisfies on the whole the national wishes, and sympathises in some degree with the common feelings of the time. The Ministry of Lord Aberdeen no longer occupied that position. The Duke of Newcastle, conscious of his own efforts, and believing in his own ability, was indeed ready to join in the general outcry against the officers in the Crimea, and hoping to exonerate himself and his colleagues from all charge of mismanagement, tried to persuade Lord Raglan to make alterations in his headquarter staff. But the general refused in any way to abet a proceeding which would throw blame upon men whom he thoroughly trusted, and the Ministry were forced themselves to abide the onslaught of popular indignation.

On the 12th of December, at an unusually early time, Parliament was again assembled, to enable the Ministers to bring in measures for the further continuation of the war. Two Bills were introduced ;

**Assault on the Government in Parliament. Dec. 1854.**    the one to allow the enlistment of foreigners, the supply of English recruits having proved insufficient ;

the other to authorise the employment of the militia in our colonies and elsewhere, in such a way as to set free the regular troops. A vote of thanks was also moved both to the army and navy. It was impossible that such measures should be taken without affording an opportunity for a general assault upon the management of the war, or without allowing the Ministers a chance of vindicating their conduct. The Duke of Newcastle, on whom this duty chiefly devolved, unable to deny the existence of grave evils, made the best of what had been done. He pointed out that although the Russian fleet had not been destroyed, it was confined to its harbour, the trade of Russia had been destroyed, and that as soon as it became evident that the hope of the immediate capture of Sebastopol

was ill-founded, supplies and reinforcements had been sent out as fast as possible to the army. The Bills were speedily passed, the vote of thanks given, and the House adjourned till the 23d of January. During this brief respite the public mind, unsatisfied by the explanations of the Ministry, excited by further articles in the papers, became more and more inflamed, and Parliament had scarcely renewed its sittings when Mr. Roebuck made himself the mouthpiece of the popular indignation, and gave notice of his intention to move for a Select Committee to inquire into the condition of our army before Sebastopol, and into the conduct of those departments of Government whose duty it was to minister to the wants of that army. The assault was felt by the Ministers themselves to be fatal. Lord John Russell, who had already been urging that Lord Palmerston should be placed at the head of the War Department, declared that resistance was impossible, and withdrew. Thus severely shaken by the defection of their leader in the Lower House, the Government, after a debate of two nights, was defeated by a majority of 157. Of course they at once resigned.

Fall of the  
Aberdeen  
Ministry.  
Feb. 1855.

But the motion which had caused their defeat implied much more than a change of Ministry. The people of England who had insisted upon the war, who had insisted upon its continuation by the invasion of the Crimea, now disappointed at its want of success, were apparently determined to supersede the executive power, and to take the management of the war into their own hands. As Prince Albert was reported to have said, our Parliamentary institutions were upon their trial. The question which had to be answered was whether a great war could be carried to a successful conclusion under the blaze of publicity, when every action was exposed not only to the criticism and discussion of the press, but also to the more formidable and dangerous demands of party warfare within the walls of Parliament. And it seemed now as though the people had gone far towards accepting the idea that our Parliamentary system had failed to produce an executive of sufficient strength to perform its duty under these conditions.

Parliamentary  
institutions  
on their trial.



## CHAPTER VI.

LORD PALMERSTON'S MINISTRY, February 22, 1855.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Palmerston.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cranworth.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Granville.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Argyll.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Lewis.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Russell.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clarendon.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Panmure.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Charles Wood.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Vernon Smith.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Stanley of Alderley.
<i>First Commissioner of Works,</i>	. . . . .	Sir William Molesworth.
<i>Postmaster General,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Canning.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Harrowby.
<i>(In the Cabinet, but without office),</i>	. . . . .	Lord Lansdowne.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Carlisle.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Brady.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Horsman.

The following changes subsequently took place in July 1855 :—

<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Harrowby.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	{ Sir W. Molesworth, July.
		{ Mr. H. Labouchere, November.
<i>Postmaster General,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Argyll.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Baines.
<i>First Commissioner of Works,</i>	. . . . .	Sir B. Hall.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clanricarde, January 1858.
<i>Chief Secretary for Ireland,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Henry Herbert, May 1857.

THE crisis was brought to an end for the time by the formation of a Ministry under Lord Palmerston. Lord John Russell at the head of the Whigs, Lord Derby at the head of the Conservatives, attempted the task in vain. As at the last crisis in 1852, a coalition appeared necessary to command success, and it resulted that the same Ministers, with the exception

Palmerston's  
Ministry.  
Feb. 10, 1855.

only of Lord Aberdeen and the Duke of Newcastle, returned to office. but these two statesmen had held the most important places, the one as Prime Minister, the other as War Secretary ; their successors were men of very different character. Lord Aberdeen had from the first been half-hearted in the war, which he had entered against his own convictions, and which, though acting loyally in union with his colleagues, he had always detested. The Duke of Newcastle, to whom almost accidentally the Ministry of War had fallen, was a man of much will and energy, but had displayed no pre-eminent gifts for the office. He had been originally appointed to the Secretaryship of the Colonies, to which the Ministry of War was attached, the business of the War Office being carried on by the Secretary at War. When hostilities broke out it was thought desirable to separate the departments, and on the choice being offered to him the Duke of Newcastle had chosen the more important and arduous. The new Premier was a man whose capacity for work, command of detail, and extraordinary determination were well known, and who had throughout been the leader of the war party in the Cabinet ; while Lord Panmure, the new War Secretary, somewhat rugged and violent, had already (as Mr. Fox Maule) executed the duties of Secretary at War in Lord John Russell's administration with thorough ability and success. For the instant therefore the nation was satisfied with the change.

Yet, as originally constituted, the Ministry lasted but a few days. The question at once arose whether the Government should allow or resist the appointment of Mr. Roebuck's Committee. A Parliamentary Committee to supervise the action of the executive appeared to the Peclites in the Cabinet so fraught with danger to the Constitution that, when Lord Palmerston declared it impossible to resist the late vote of the House, they thought it right to resign. The places of the outgoing Ministers—Sir James Graham, Mr. Gladstone, and Mr. Sidney Herbert—were taken respectively by Sir Charles Wood, Sir George Cornwall Lewis, and Lord John Russell, and thus what was in fact a purely Whig administration, under a new leader, was formed. Fully awake to the possible danger of the Committee—yet believing it impossible for the Government to refuse it—the Premier attempted to lessen any evil effect it might have by obtaining the leave of the House to nominate it himself. Almost as a matter of course Mr. Roebuck, its originator, was appointed Chairman, and immediately set to work with extreme energy to collect information and prepare the report.

Reconstitution  
of the Ministry.  
Feb 22.

Meanwhile a great accession of vigour was at once shown in the War administration. Changes were made by which the army, as far as discipline was concerned, passed entirely into the hands of the Commander-in-Chief. A special Board was appointed to superintend the transport service. Two officers were despatched to examine into the reported deficiency of the commissariat; and General Simpson, with the title of Chief of the Staff, an office hitherto unknown in the English army, was sent out with instructions to inquire carefully into the conduct of the departments of the Quartermaster and Adjutant-General. It seemed possible that affairs were taking a better turn. The Duke of Newcastle, during his term of office, had recommended the formation of a railway from Balaclava, and this, under private contract with a great industrial firm, was now rapidly pressed on. Lord Palmerston, who had already distinguished himself at the Home Office by his zeal for sanitary improvements, took measures for inquiring into and remedying the deficiencies in the arrangements of that description both in the Crimea and in the hospitals at Scutari. And for a while there was a renewed hope that a Congress sitting at Vienna (at which England was represented by Lord John Russell) might produce a plan which should bring the war to a happy conclusion—a hope rendered stronger by the unexpected death of the Emperor of Russia in the beginning of March.

But any expectations thus raised proved illusory. The Conference at Vienna had been summoned by Austria, which was interested before all other countries, except perhaps England, in the maintenance of Turkish independence, and yet bound by ties of gratitude and much political sympathy to the Czar. The demands of the Allies were formulated under four heads. These were the release of the Principalities of Moldavia, Wallachia, and Servia from Russian control; the free navigation of the mouths of the Danube; the modification of former treaties, so as to prevent the undue preponderance of Russia in the Black Sea; and the abandonment, on the part of the Czar, of his claim to exclusive protectorate over the Greek Christians in the Ottoman Empire. On summoning the Conference, Austria had stated that, if upon the basis of these four points negotiation should fail, the defensive treaty already existing between her and the Western Powers should be changed into an offensive alliance. The Conference met on the 5th of March, and the Russian representatives accepted without difficulty the principle of the first and second points. But Russia had all

The Vienna  
Conference.  
March 5 to  
June 4.

along pretended to regard the war as a crusade, and in accordance with this view desired the priority of the religious question. This the English and French representatives refused to consider until the political question, which to them was much more important, had been settled. It was upon the third point therefore that the difficulties arose which brought the Conference to an end. The English and French ambassadors had been instructed to insist upon some limitation, by treaty, of the Russian Black Sea navy. Regarding any such formal limitation imposed upon them by the European Powers as derogatory to their honour, the Russian negotiators absolutely refused to accede to this suggestion, but were willing to allow the entire opening of the Black Sea to the war-ships of all nations, or to arrange by private treaty with the Porte some practical limitation of their own navy. The first of these proposals infringed the sovereign rights of the Sultan, who possessed both sides of the Dardanelles and Bosphorus ; the second, rejected by the Turks, who were bound to negotiate only in common with the Allies, also left open the door to the skill of the Russian negotiators treating with a Power avowedly weaker than their own. The English and French ambassadors therefore, regarding such a plan as inadmissible, alleged the strict character of their instructions, and refused to consider it. The Conference was thus practically closed. But on the 4th of June Austria, through Count Buol, the President of the Conference, produced a fresh suggestion, not in fact much differing from that of Russia. He proposed that the naval equality of Russia and Turkey should be secured by a treaty between the two Powers, that the number of ships possessed by either should not exceed that of the present number of the Russian Black Sea fleet, that the Dardanelles should continue to be closed, but that by a firman two frigates of each of the other contracting parties should be allowed to enter the Black Sea ; the terms of the separate treaty between Russia and Turkey were to form a part of the general treaty. Lord John Russell and the French ambassador had already left Vienna, but the representatives of England, France, and Turkey all declined to listen to the Austrian proposals, and the Conference was finally closed. Austria considered that by proposing a possible solution, and finding it rejected by the Allies, she had performed her duty, and refused to make the failure of the Conference a *casus belli*, as the English had expected. Her conduct excited much anger in England ; her refusal to join in the war was regarded as a breach of contract ; and it was further pointed out, as an illustration of her selfish conduct, that the first two points,



which were those of real interest to the Germans, had at once been settled, and that it was only when the points of English interest were brought forward that difficulties arose. The hopes based upon the death of Nicholas proved equally ill-grounded. The new Czar, Alexander, declared at once that he would maintain the policy of his predecessors, and it was in fact with his knowledge and co-operation that the terms of the Allies at the Conference had been rejected.

Though at present the Vienna negotiations produced no effect upon the war, they caused considerable difficulty to the Government in England. After their failure Lord John Russell, who had acted as our Plenipotentiary, spoke in strong language of the necessity of continuing the war; but it came to light, through a circular of the Russian Chancellor, that he had during his residence at Vienna declared his approval of the Austrian terms. He was accused loudly therefore by the Opposition of attempting to keep up a war which he in fact believed might have been brought to an honourable conclusion. He defended himself on the ground that he was acting under instructions, and was but the mouthpiece of the Cabinet, whatever his own opinion might be, and that subsequently he had fallen back to the Cabinet view of the question. That he had been indiscreet, however, was plain enough, and there was such a strong probability that a vote of censure would be passed against him in which the Ministry would be involved, that he thought it right to resign his office.

The virulent attack of the Opposition upon Russell was only one instance of the constant employment of the war as a means of party contest. Palmerston had been well received, on the supposition that he was the leader of the war party, and because he was known to have much sympathy with the common views of the time. But though he had infused new vigour into the administration, and so far bowed to the popular will as to send out commissioners of inquiry to the Crimea, implying the possibility at least of the truth of the charges popularly alleged against the officials there, the plight of the army in the early spring seemed very little improved. The same stories of suffering and mismanagement, the same incessant depreciation of the power of England, continued to be the favourite theme of the newspapers. The people also began to suffer from the high price of food, which, though perhaps it may be otherwise explained, was not unnaturally attributed to the cessation of trade with the country which at that time supplied us with the largest proportion of our foreign grain. The Ministry were

Resignation of  
Lord John  
Russell.  
June 16.

Discontent  
with the  
Ministry.

therefore open to assaults on all sides. The lovers of peace impugned the wisdom of the rejection of the Russian offers at Vienna, and spoke of the sufferings entailed on the people. The war party reiterated their assaults upon the want of energy with which hostilities were carried on, and, while complaining of the incapacity of our officers, opened a door for exhibitions of class feeling, and such motions as that of Mr. Layard, that "the sacrifice of efficiency to family and party interest is a source of danger and shame to the country." The cry for administrative reform went even beyond the army; and motions were brought forward to be subsequently adopted—though means were found at present to get rid of them—for the opening of the services to public competition. In finance the apparently inevitable results of war had been reached. With a revenue amounting to the then unprecedented sum of £63,000,000 there was still a deficit of £20,000,000, and Sir Cornwall Lewis, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, was obliged to throw aside the prudent measures of his predecessor and contract a loan of £16,000,000.

Meanwhile the Committee of Inquiry had continued its sittings; the Commissioners, Colonel Tulloch and Sir John M'Neill, had been preparing their report upon the commissariat, while General Simpson had been examining into the conduct of the headquarter staff. The inquiry, which was very exhaustive, proved the truth at all events of the facts alleged by the correspondents of the papers. The sufferings of the army and the frequent confusion of the administration could no longer be questioned. But chiefly through the moderation of Lord Seymour, afterwards Duke of Somerset, the Commissioners did not commit themselves in their report to any personal charges. They traced the suffering to the circumstances under which the expedition had been undertaken, to the ignorance of the administration as to the amount of the enemy's forces in the Crimea and as to the strength of the fortress to be attacked; and to the consequent error by which they were led to expect the immediate success of the expedition, and to make no provision for a winter campaign. It is now nearly certain that the expectation was not ill-grounded, and that the disasters are to be attributed rather to faults of strategy on the part of the generals than to any erroneous conception on the part of the Ministers. As to the administrative officers, General Simpson felt bound in honour to declare that he found them thoroughly capable and energetic men, and in his position of Chief of the Staff he took care not to interfere with them. "There is not one of them," he writes, "whom I would

Result of the  
Committee of  
Inquiry.

wish to see removed ; I do not think a better selection of staff officers could have been made." The report of the Commissariat Commissioners took a somewhat different course. It contained certain strictures upon General Airey, upon the commanders of the cavalry, and upon Mr. Filder, the Commissary-General. Those officers demanded a formal inquiry, which was granted them, and, after a minute and careful examination, the Board, which sat in Chelsea Hospital, came to the conclusion that they were not to be blamed, but that the evils complained of were to be traced to the action of the Treasury.

The same sort of result was arrived at from the inquiries into the Hospitals. As early as November 1854 English lady nurses had gone out to devote themselves to the care of the wounded, and Miss Nightingale, enjoying the full confidence of Mr. Sidney Herbert, the Secretary at War, had been appointed to their superintendence. Under her the very defective arrangements for nursing had been rapidly improved. The doctors who, while devoting themselves with exemplary fidelity to the performance of their regular duties, had disregarded the administrative portion of hospital management, fell into the system which she suggested, and the hospitals, as early as December, appear to have been well organised. But the most extraordinary difficulties lay in the way of giving due effect to the management. As far as the Government or military administration was concerned, every possible neglect seems to have occurred—not wilfully, but merely because of the hampering effects of old routine. Not only were the requisite supplies, the most necessary medicines and clothing, wanting, but the officers appear to have been quite ignorant as to the sanitary requisites of an hospital. The rate of mortality therefore, in spite of Miss Nightingale's efforts, continued fearfully high. The new Ministry is to be credited with the appointment of Sanitary Commissioners with powers to act immediately, who so thoroughly did their work that when they were able, on the 17th of March, to set their arrangements in motion, the death-rate fell within a fortnight from 31 to 14 per cent., and by the close of June it had reached the normal rate of our military hospitals at home, namely 2 per cent. Again it was the administration and not the officers who were at fault.

Meanwhile the war went on. Wherever the blame should fall, at bottom the winter disasters had been caused by the unprepared condition in which England was habitually kept, and the necessity that some time should elapse before the resources of the country

Reform of  
the Army  
Hospitals.

could be efficiently employed. As a matter of course therefore, as the war lengthened the condition of the army improved. As the spring advanced the complaints ceased. Supplies were abundant, materials for carrying on the siege lavishly provided, and the employment of private enterprise in the building of the railway at Balaclava enabled the army to obtain without difficulty what the Government so freely bestowed. But although well supplied, the number of our troops was not largely increased; and as reinforcements poured in for the French army, and as the Sardinians had in May joined the Alliance and sent troops to the Crimea, the English operations were somewhat restricted. The defence of the plateau was given up to our allies, and with it went what proved to be the most important of the offensive work, the attack upon the Malakoff Tower on the eastern side of the suburb. The secondary position which circumstances were thus forcing upon England on the land had not been compensated, as the nation had expected, by any marked success upon the sea. The great fleet sent out under Sir Charles Napier with such a flush of hope had returned, after taking Bomarsund, unable to accomplish anything against the great fortresses of Cronstadt and Sweaborg in the Baltic. Nor did the fleet under Dundas in the following year prove more successful. It was compelled to restrict its operations to a useless bombardment of Sweaborg. Even in the Black Sea, where the energetic Admiral Lyons was now in command, the capture of fortresses and stores upon the Sea of Azov (May 27), useful as inflicting some injury upon the enemy and throwing difficulties in their way, but without much importance on the general issue of the war, was all that our fleet could effect.

Improved  
condition of  
the army.

Time, which their want of preparation and dilatory tactics had rendered necessary for the Allies, had proved at least as useful to their opponents. Their great naval fortresses had become practically impregnable, and the indefatigable genius and resources of Todleben had so improved the defences of Sebastopol that its capture was a more difficult task now for the Allies, strengthened and well-prepared as they were, than it would have been when they first approached it; while the siege was now watched by an enemy which had been raised by reinforcements to 200,000 men. Todleben's defence had assumed an active character, and as the regular parallels and trenches of the Allies drew nearer to the town, frequent combats took place to secure the advanced works which had been thrown out. A hillock known as the Mamelon, in front of the eastern defences, had been occupied by the Russians.

The Russian  
position  
strengthened.



Rifle-pits had been dug, from which the trenches were commanded, and opposite the English attack some quarries had been occupied.

Unsuccessful  
assaults on  
Sebastopol.

On the 17th of March the rifle-pits were captured by the French ; a few days later a powerful sortie of the garrison was repulsed. On the 19th of April a general bombardment of the town again began, but without definite result. Shortly after this General Canrobert, too anxious-minded to be a very successful commander-in-chief, resigned his position, and was succeeded by General Pélissier, a man of firmer character. The attack now assumed a more active form. On the 17th of June, while the French army captured the Mamelon, and what was known as the White works, the English gained possession of the quarries. The road being thus cleared for a general assault, after a renewed bombardment on the 18th the assault was made. The concerted plan was ruined by an unfortunate error of one of the French generals, who mistook a signal, and for the first time the Russians could fairly boast of a complete success. Both English and French attacks were repelled. Very shortly after this, his first military failure, Lord Raglan died. Exposed as he had been to the constant assaults of the Opposition, and loaded with charges of inefficiency which were proved to be false, he had shown himself able in the field, and had struggled manfully against disasters for which he was not responsible. It may however well be doubted whether his long training in official life and his extremely conciliatory character had not somewhat deprived him of the ready power of facing unexpected difficulties, and induced him to forego too readily the dictates of his own better judgment for the sake of maintaining the appearance of unanimity among the Allies. He was succeeded in command by General Simpson, a man of much less ability, of advanced age and failing health.

Death of  
Lord Raglan.  
June 28.

Battle of the  
Tchernaya.  
Aug. 16.

After the failure of the late assault the siege-works had been continued, and were gradually approaching nearer and nearer to the city. A renewed assault appeared imminent ; and as in November, so now on the 16th of August, the covering army of the Russians made a desperate attempt to avert it. Coming down from the Mackenzie heights at the east end of the harbour, they pushed into the valley of the Tchernaya, a movement which was to be followed by a general assault upon the plateau both from the valley and from the city itself. The French and Sardinians, without the assistance of the English, succeeded, after several hours of severe fighting, in repelling the assault in the valley, and thus preventing the execution of the further parts of the plan which depended

on its success. The siege therefore continued without interruption ; and in three weeks after this battle the French lines had approached so close to the Malakoff, which was regarded as the key to the defences, and the daily loss in the trenches was so heavy, that it became necessary either to assault or to withdraw. On the 8th of September, at midday, when the Russians generally retired for shelter and rest, a great assault was made upon the works in front of the lines. The broken character of the ground made the attack upon each work a separate engagement. The capture of either the Malakoff or the Redan must in all probability prove fatal to the defence ; it was against them therefore that the chief efforts of the Allies were directed. The attack upon the Malakoff fell naturally to the French, and as its guns covered the Redan, the English assault upon that work was not to take place till the French flag was seen on the Malakoff. An imposing body of troops nearly 30,000 strong was organised for the French assault. The fortress was carried at the first rush, and though again and again the Russians advanced to reconquer it and met with some successes, it remained in the hands of the French. According to the plan arranged, no sooner was the tricolour hoisted than the English pushed forward against the Redan. The Redan was a work in the form of an obtuse angle, and requiring many men for its assault ; but according to General Simpson's own despatch, the assaulting column consisted of only 1000 men, and instead of attacks directed upon all sides of the work, the salient angle alone was assaulted. In spite of the fire to which they were subjected, the troops forced their way over ditch and rampart, but then found themselves faced by an inner rampart erected across the angle, to the fire of which they were fully exposed. They were unable to advance from their cramped position, and although from the number of killed and wounded it would appear that troops were sent to their assistance, the general's own despatch makes no mention of it. At all events the result was that they were compelled to relax their hold upon the work, and to retreat in disorder to the trenches.

Capture of the  
Malakoff.  
Sep. 8.

Failure of the  
attack on  
the Redan.

An urgent request was sent by Marshal Pélisier, who was with difficulty holding his own in the Malakoff, that the assault should be renewed. But, as General Simpson states, the trenches were so crowded with troops that he was unable to organise a second assault before the following morning. Beyond the loss of reputation which it entailed, and the heavy list of killed and wounded, the failure of this ill-arranged movement was of no great moment. So truly was

the Malakoff the key of the position, that its possession by the French practically closed the siege. The Russian general, after destroying as much as he could of the city, withdrew to the northern side of the harbour, and the town itself, with the fleet and dockyard, remained in the hands of the Allies. In its gradual growth the siege had become one of gigantic proportions. The Russians had more than 800 guns mounted, and the besieging army about 700. The approaches, in many places cut through the rock, were upwards of fifty miles in length.

Though the fall of Sebastopol had taken place under circumstances which deprived it of that decisive effect which would have followed the capture of the town immediately after the battle of Alma, it brought the war to a conclusion. The Russians had indeed exhibited unexpected powers of resistance, their army still unbroken kept the field, and a certain success, even after the fall of Sebastopol, attended their arms in Asia. For the fortress of Kars, near Erzeroom, had, after a lengthened defence, conducted with conspicuous courage and ability by three Englishmen, General Williams, Dr. Sandwith, and Colonel Leake, been compelled to surrender to the Russian General, Moravieff.

But the losses of the Russian troops in the Crimea, both in men and material, had been enormous, and the state of his resources was such as to induce the Czar to desire negotiations for peace, into which he could still enter as an unbroken though defeated Power. The Emperor of the French was satisfied with the military glory he had acquired, and with the favourable comparison which had been somewhat unduly drawn between his army and that of England; he was at the same time much distressed by what he himself knew, but which he had kept secret from the world, of the losses his army had sustained in the Crimea. He was as usual eager chiefly for the security of his own position, now rendered more important to him by his late marriage and the hope of an heir. He was willing to secure the friendship of Russia by ceasing to press the advantages he had gained. At the same time Austria was anxious as ever to play its double part—to spare the Czar and to thwart any increase of the influence of the Western Powers if its own interest with regard to Turkey could be secured. It was Austria, therefore, which in September renewed the negotiations broken off in June, and formulated a new ultimatum which was accepted by Russia as a basis of peace. The danger which Lord Palmerston had foreseen had come upon England. There was much risk of being

Fall of  
Sebastopol,  
Sep. 8.

Surrender of  
Kars,  
Nov. 28.

Desire for  
peace on the  
part of Russia,  
France, and  
Austria.

compelled to accept an insufficient peace, which would leave unsettled the real object of the war—a substantial check to the encroaching ambition of Russia. It was only by great firmness on the part of our plenipotentiary, Lord Clarendon, and the strong support he obtained from Lord Palmerston at home, that the negotiations were brought to a satisfactory conclusion. At one time it seemed by no means improbable that England would find itself obliged to continue the war single-handed in alliance with Turkey. Lord Palmerston declared himself ready, if necessary, to pursue this course. Indeed the condition of England was so satisfactory as to render this no vain boast on his part. The fleet and army were in thoroughly good condition, the revenue had within a little proved sufficient to cover even the war expenditure of the last year, and the credit of the country was so good that when a loan of several millions was wanted, no less than £38,000,000 was offered to the Treasury beyond the necessary amount, which was readily advanced on sound terms by the great house of Rothschild.

Fortunately, however, the necessity did not arise, and a peace of a tolerably satisfactory character was concluded on the 30th of March 1856. The difficulty of securing the Black Sea from the preponderance of Russia without exerting a coercion upon that Power, which, even after the loss of Sebastopol, it could scarcely be expected to bear, had wrecked former negotiations. The difficulty was now solved by the declaration of the neutrality of the Black Sea, to which all mercantile marines were to be freely admitted, but from which the ships of war of all nations, even of those occupying its shores, were to be excluded. As this removed the necessity for warlike preparation, Russia and Turkey eventually consented to abstain from the establishment of any military maritime arsenal within the Bosphorus. A certain number of comparatively small ships of war for the ordinary business of the coast, agreed upon in a convention between the Czar and the Sultan, were excepted from this rule. In other respects the treaty incorporated the points which had been already formulated at the Vienna Conference, including the admission of Turkey to the advantages of public law and European Concert; the reference to the joint decision of all the signatory Powers of any dispute arising between the Porte and any one of them; the maintenance of the firman spontaneously issued by the Sultan securing advantages to the Christian population; the opening of the navigation of the Danube under charge of a commission; the restoration of all conquests during the war; the demarcation of the

Terms of the  
peace.  
Mar. 30, 1856.



frontier of Bessarabia and of the Asiatic territories of the Porte ; and the maintenance of the Danubian Principalities in their present state of independence under the suzerainty of Turkey. The opportunity of a European settlement was taken to secure a general concurrence in certain ameliorations in the laws of maritime war. England consented to yield all the points which had more than once seemed on the verge of bringing her into collision with the maritime Powers of Europe. The neutral flag was henceforward to cover all goods, with the exception of contraband of war. Neutral goods, with the same exception, were to be free from capture, even under a hostile flag, and blockades to be binding were to be effective. In exchange for these great concessions, which appeared to rob her of her most efficient weapons in war-time, she obtained the abolition of privateering. America alone held aloof from the arrangement, alleging as the ground for refusal that the European Powers declined to exempt private property from capture. The powers of offence which England had been able to use when mistress of the sea she thus surrendered in exchange for immunities from that danger to which her world-wide commerce was inevitably exposed. The firmness of Lord Palmerston, which had overcome the supineness of France during the negotiations for peace, was again successfully asserted in insisting upon the complete execution of the articles. Russia attempted to occupy the Isle of Serpents at the mouth of the Danube, and raised a question with regard to the new Bessarabian frontier, which, taking advantage of some ambiguity in the maps of the district, the Russians tried to draw considerably to the south of that intended by the negotiations. Again, in spite of the lukewarm support of the French, Lord Palmerston had his way.

An indirect effect of the war was nearly involving England in a serious quarrel with the United States. Some irritation already existed between the two countries as to the affairs of Central America, where the claims of England to the protectorate of the Mosquito Indians, and the establishment of a colony consisting of certain islands in the Bay of Honduras, were regarded as infringements of a treaty known as the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, contracted with America in 1850. The difficulty was ultimately solved by an agreement, in accordance with which the English withdrew their claims in exchange for the payment of a compensation to the Mosquitoes, and a pledge on the part of Honduras to preserve the rights and property of the English settled in the islands. But while this question was still in abeyance, the public mind was considerably shocked by the summary dismissal of certain of our consuls

Difficulties with  
America.  
June 1856.

and Mr. Crampton, our Minister at Washington ; and blame was somewhat freely thrown on Lord Palmerston's Government for not replying to the apparent insult by the dismissal of Mr. Dallas, the American Minister. The grounds on which the American Government acted were that in attempting to obtain recruits for the war in the East the English agents had transgressed the Municipal Law of the States, and that the ambassador had been cognisant of these illegal acts. A recruiting office had been publicly established in the English territory at Halifax, and of this it was impossible to complain. But it was alleged that English agents had gone into the States, and there persuaded men to come to Halifax to enlist. The English Government, conscious that there had been no intention to act illegally, and apparently satisfied upon inquiry that infringements of the law had actually taken place, tendered an apology to the President's Government, and put an end to the enlistment. The dispute, however, formed the groundwork of a motion of censure in the House of Commons. An attempt was made on the one side to implicate Government in wilful co-operation with its agents, and on the other to bring home to it a charge of mean-spirited submission to American insults. Lord Palmerston's explanation and denunciation of the irrational and double-sided charge was triumphantly successful. An immense majority asserted the continued confidence felt in his administration (July 1).

The close of the war afforded a fair opportunity to the Chancellor of the Exchequer (May 19) to make an estimate of its cost, while explaining the necessity during the existing year of continuing the war expenditure. As far as receipts and expenditure went, he calculated upon a deficiency of nearly £7,000,000, and this he purposed to raise by way of loan. He then explained that in the years between 1854 and 1856, including a million lent by treaty to Sardinia when that country joined the Alliance against the Russians, the expenditure had amounted to £155,121,307. In the two preceding peaceful years it had been £102,032,596, leaving as the excess of expenditure during the two war years £53,088,711. If to this were added the difference between the expenditure of the present year and that of the preceding years of peace, namely £24,500,000, the total excess-expenditure of the three years would amount to £77,588,000, and this might be regarded as the expense of the war. Of this sum, during the year 1855 £17,182,522 had been raised by increased taxes, £33,604,263 had been added to the funded and unfunded debt. The £7,000,000 to be borrowed for the current year,

Cost of the  
Crimean war.

added to the £33,000,000 already borrowed, would show the addition to the public debt. Yet in spite of this the position of the country with regard to debt was not unfavourable. Since the end of the great war, notwithstanding the lately incurred addition, there was a decrease of nearly £50,000,000 on the funded, and of £17,000,000 on the unfunded debt, while the total diminution on the interest of the funded and unfunded debt since the close of the last war was more than £5,400,000.

The interest felt in the war and in its conclusion was so absorbing that very little was done in Parliament in the way of domestic or social legislation. Indeed though a variety of topics which were filling the minds of reformers, and were ultimately to rise to the surface as subjects of the first importance, were brought in and discussed, they produced no fruitful legislation. Thus, resolutions for the improvement of national education, introduced by Lord John Russell, a motion for the introduction of competitive examination in the civil service, and observations as to the necessity of improved military education, all passed away without result. A fruitless attempt was also made by Government (Feb. 1856) to introduce a system of life peerages. This was a revival of an obsolete right of the Crown, which had not been exercised since the reign of Richard II. By this new form of patent Judge Parke was raised to the Upper House for life under the title of Lord Wensleydale. The reason given for the innovation was the necessity of strengthening the body of lawyers in the Upper House, which was a final Court of Appeal. Parke was well chosen for the experiment; an excellent and dignified judge, he had no male heir. The limited nature of his peerage was therefore of no moment to him, nor after his death would the number of peers have been increased. His creation however was regarded with the gravest suspicion, not only by the Lords but by many other men of conservative principles. For it seemed to establish a precedent which would render it easy for a Minister to do what hitherto had been a matter of the gravest difficulty, to create a majority in his favour in the Upper House. At the same time it was thought that the dignity of the peerage would suffer much by the introduction of this secondary class of peers. The opposition was too strong to be overcome by Government, the point was yielded, and Lord Wensleydale was made an hereditary peer. In spite of this rebuff Lord Palmerston's firmness was successful in the following year in passing, against the strongest opposition, a Divorce Bill, relaxing some of the great difficulties which had hitherto pre-

Domestic  
legislation of  
1856-57.

vented all but the wealthiest people from obtaining relief in the case of unhappy married life.

Though the Government, occupied as it was with grave difficulties abroad, did little or nothing for the advance of political reform, the active growth of the nation during these years in its more social aspects was marked. The Premier was at all events in earnest in that common-sense sort of reform which consists in the improvement of the material condition of the people ; while Prince Albert devoted much of his great ability to fostering the advance of culture. The condition of the housing of the poor in our large cities was attracting attention ; science was beginning to point out that not only was much of the prevalent disease a preventable evil, but that the same causes which produced physical disease produced moral degradation. Dr. Letheby had been intrusted with the duty of examining and reporting upon the condition of the poor in the East of London, and his disclosures had brought to light a terrible state of things. To remedy such practical evils as these Lord Palmerston was always ready to give his best attention, and it is but just to regard him as one of the earliest workers in that field of sanitary reform which has of late years so extended, but in which, so far at least as concerns the housing of the poor, much still remains to be done. The chief measures which by his energy were taken were the enforced registration of common lodging-houses, and the appointment of medical officers to supervise and control them. The influence of Prince Albert was of a different character. While Lord Palmerston was aiming at straightforward and immediate physical improvement, and setting on foot plans of local and municipal supervision which have yet to ripen, the Prince, a man of finer and more ideal views, was aiming at improvement by those more indirect methods which are summed up in the word "culture." Education, art, music, all that adorns and softens life, were in his view the best methods for the education of the national character. He was in no sense visionary or unpractical ; model farms and model cottages engaged his attention. But the movement which he had set on foot in 1851 had continued to be paramount in his mind—the improvement of taste and the cultivation of the more artistic side of the British workman,—and to his influence, direct or indirect, may be traced the establishment of the South Kensington Museum as a centre of art-training, the vast musical festival in honour of Handel held in the Exhibition building of 1851, now removed to Sydenham, and the exhibition of art treasures opened at Manchester in May 1857.

Progress in  
sanitary  
reforms and in  
culture.



The explanation of the Chancellor of the Exchequer as to the necessity of regarding the expenditure of the current year as one of war proved to be only too well justified. For during the recess England found herself with two small wars upon her hands. On the 1st of November the Governor-General of India issued a declaration of war against Persia. On the 27th of October a British fleet under Sir Michael Seymour proceeded to an armed attack upon Canton.

As was not unusual at that time with regard to matters in Asia, the Persian war attracted but little attention. Yet the Ministry themselves were not blind to its importance. "We are beginning," wrote Lord Palmerston, "to repel the first opening of trenches against India by Russia." It was with this view that he was determined to bring the questions at issue with Persia to a very definite conclusion. For some time hostility to the English had been visible at the Persian Court, and had culminated at the close of the last year in the withdrawal from Teheran of Mr. Murray, the English representative. But this squabble went hand in hand with a far more important matter, the siege and capture of Herat. By an agreement concluded in 1853 between the Persian Government and Colonel Shiel, the British Minister, the Persian Shah undertook not to attack this important post unless it were invaded by a foreign army, which meant an army from the East, and in that case the Shah agreed to withdraw his troops as soon as the foreigner should retire. The ruler of Herat at the end of the year 1855 was Syad Mahomed. A rebellion broke out, and Yusuf Khan, a member of the old royal family, was seated on the throne of Herat. At the same time Dost Mahomed, the Afghan ruler of Cabul, conquered Candahar. The Persian Shah, pretending that this was a preliminary step to the acquisition of Herat, chose to consider that the condition of the convention of 1853 had been fulfilled, and sent troops and captured the city. Its fall was immediately followed by the declaration of war from India (November 1, 1856). In his proclamation the Governor-General explained the condition of the treaties, declared that the assertion that Dost Mahomed had been instigated to advance by the British Government was false, that there was no proof that any advance upon Herat was intended, and as friendly remonstrances had failed, it became incumbent upon England to convince the Persian Shah that solemn engagements could not be violated with impunity. A force from Bombay and a fleet were at once despatched to the Persian Gulf, and the town of Bushire captured (December 10). No

great anxiety was felt as to the success of British arms, but it was known that the situation was unhealthy, and that advance towards the interior lay across formidable mountain ridges and might be attended with serious difficulty. The first expedition was followed up by strong reinforcements under Sir James Outram, having General Havelock as his second in command. He could dispose of about 5000 troops. With these, and with the assistance of the ships, he succeeded in entirely defeating the forces opposed to him, and in capturing the strongly fortified position of Mohamera, near the mouth of the Euphrates, and the city of Ahwaz, further inland. Further advance became unnecessary. On the 4th of March 1857 a peace was signed in Paris by which the Shah engaged to withdraw his troops from Herat, to relinquish all claim to the sovereignty of that city, or to any part of Afghanistan, and to abstain from all interference with the independence of either of those States. If differences arose they were to be referred to the friendly offices of the British Government, and till those friendly offices failed, no recourse was to be had to arms.

The attack on Canton was the outcome of a dispute with regard to the action of the Chinese authorities in seizing a The Chinese War. Lorch or coasting schooner called the *Arrow*. By the existing treaties a strict system of extradition was established between the Chinese and the English, whether residing at Hong Kong or in their ships. The criminals of either race were to be diligently sought for and returned to their own authorities. Also all British trading vessels were to have a register in Chinese and English under the seal of the chief superintendent of trade. In 1855 the local government of Hong Kong had passed an ordinance authorising the grant of such registers for a year to vessels owned by British subjects, whether they conformed to the other requirements of the English law or not. In the case of the *Arrow*, even this relaxation had been relaxed; the proprietor of the *Arrow* was a Chinese resident in Hong Kong, but not a naturalised British subject. In September 1855 it had received a colonial register and sailed under the British flag, but that register lapsed in September 1856. Here was therefore a vessel, Chinese built, Chinese owned, Chinese manned, with the exception of the master, and without a British register, but sailing under the British flag. The authorities in Canton believed that one of the crew was a pirate; a war boat came off as she lay in the Canton river and siezed the whole crew. Mr. Parkes, the British Consul, demanded that the crew should be brought to the consulate under

the extradition treaty, and wrote to Sir John Bowring, the British Plenipotentiary at Hong Kong, narrating the circumstances. In reply Sir J. Bowring acknowledged that the *Arrow* had no right to hoist the British flag, but said that as the Chinese had no knowledge of the expiration of the licence, they had violated the treaty by refusing to give up the prisoners. The Commissioner Yeh, the governor at Canton, refusing to make any reparation, Sir John Bowring summoned Sir Michael Seymour with the British fleet. On the 23d of October he took forts on the river, including one called the Dutch folly, on an island opposite the city. Upon this Yeh surrendered the men, but demanded that two of them, charged with piracy, should be given back to the Chinese authorities. But Mr. Parkes had demanded a public restitution and apology; as this was not sent, he refused to recognise the restoration of the men without it as an act of reparation, sent them back to the Chinese, and raised a new demand. By the treaty of Nankin in 1842, and subsequently, stipulations had been made for the free entrance of the English to Canton. These stipulations had been evaded, and had not been pressed. Sir John Bowring thought this a good opportunity for bringing them up, and thus shifting the ground of the quarrel. Throughout November attacks upon the river and the Chinese vessels were carried on. The Bogue forts and those opposite to them, mounting 600 guns, were captured. As was to be expected, reprisals were made; the Chinese burnt down the foreign factories, and towards the end of the year there was a cruel massacre of the European crew of a vessel called the *Thistle*; and while Seymour was waiting for reinforcements a violent proclamation was issued by Yeh in which a price was offered for the heads of "the English and French dogs;" for the French, too, had claims which they had taken the opportunity of urging. In the spring of 1857 hostilities were renewed, and many junks were destroyed. The English were nearly everywhere successful without difficulty, but were driven back by the strong works raised by the Chinese in the Fatshan branch of the river. It became necessary to despatch troops from England, and Lord Elgin, a man of greater authority than Sir John Bowring, was sent out, with Ashburnham to command the troops. Affairs in India looked so gloomy that the expedition was diverted to Calcutta. It was not till October that Lord Elgin was in a position to enter upon negotiations as plenipotentiary.

It is not to be supposed that such questionable proceedings as these would pass without notice in England. There was a strong feel-

ing among the more advanced Liberals that Lord Palmerston was here playing that part which they so often erroneously attributed to him, and bullying a weak country. Mr. Cobden made himself the spokesman of this party, and moved a resolution in the House to the effect that the papers laid on the table failed to establish satisfactory grounds for the violent measures resorted to. A long and able discussion followed, and besides many of the Liberals, with Lord John Russell at their head, Gladstone and the Peelites, Disraeli and the Conservatives, combined in supporting the resolution. It became evident that if it was carried it would be a vote of want of confidence in the Ministry. As such Lord Palmerston regarded it. But he did not believe that the verdict of the House, construed in this broad manner, was the verdict of the people; and when upon a division the Government appeared in a minority of 16 (March 3), instead of resigning he dissolved Parliament and appealed to the Constituencies. The question placed before them was really a personal one;—had they, or had they not, confidence in the Prime Minister. The answer was for the time conclusive. The Crimean war had roused the aggressive feelings of the nation. The man who, in the midst of its disasters, had taken upon himself the duty of carrying it to a successful conclusion, whose firmness had secured a peace at that time considered honourable, and whose administration had since been crowned with success in Persia, was a general favourite. In all directions his party was successful. Several of the leading Peelites lost their seats, Bright, Milner Gibson, and Cobden, were all defeated. It was with a triumphant majority that Lord Palmerston met the new Parliament on the 30th of April.

Debates on  
the Chinese  
War.

Palmerston  
appeals to the  
Country suc-  
cessfully.  
March 1857.

Meanwhile the war in China went on. The first effort at negotiation failed. Yeh's answers were all of an evasive character. Late in December Canton was bombarded and the walls occupied. At the beginning of January 1858 the town itself was entered, and Yeh captured and sent off to Calcutta. The demands of the English and French Commissioners were forwarded to the Court of Peking, and when no answer was received, the Commissioners went with the fleets to the Piho river to insist upon a reply. The forts which covered the river were taken or destroyed, and the fleets pushed up as far as Tientsin. Then in June, after some delay, negotiations were resumed, and brought to a successful conclusion by a treaty securing the permanent establishment of a British Minister at Peking, the opening of more ports, the

Peace with  
China.  
June 1858.



establishment of Consuls, and the clear definition of the rights, in judicial matters, to be exercised by the respective countries over their subjects.

While the tidings from the seat of war in the East continued to be in the highest degree satisfactory, they began to be mingled with rumours of disaffection in the Indian army; and the triumphs of the British troops in Persia, and the less glorious successes in China, passed out of public sight, hidden by the terrible scenes of the Indian Mutiny.

The English Empire in India is practically a military occupation.

**The Indian Mutiny.** The resources of England alone in men and money have never proved sufficient to carry it out; from the time of Clive, when the English trading company began to acquire dominions in India, it has been found necessary to have recourse to native assistance to supply troops. Every addition to the constantly growing territory in English possession, or under English influence, necessitated a corresponding increase in the native army, till in 1857 the extraordinary spectacle was presented of a vast alien country kept in subjection by a mercenary army of nearly 300,000 of its own inhabitants. The principles of cohesion which held this mass together, and kept it under discipline, could have been no other than the advantage of their pay, the *esprit de corps* engendered by successes in the field, the personal influence of the European officers who organised and commanded them, and a fidelity of very great but unknown strength to their salt, as it was called—that is, to those whose bread they had eaten. When it is remembered that the Sepoy brought with him to the camp his civil life, his family, his religious rites, and his caste, and that he was thus alive to every movement, social or religious, which was disturbing the rest of the population of India, it is plain that an army thus constituted must have been an instrument requiring most judicious handling. Since the time when it was first constituted, the Indian army had been considerably changed, and in some respects for the worse. It had become more Europeanised. The possibility of rising to high military rank had been taken from the natives. No coloured man was allowed under any circumstances to command Europeans. The most ignorant lad who joined the regiment was at once superior to every native officer, however great his worth and experience.

**India held by military occupation.** The large number of European officers in each regiment, which had been increased in accordance with the custom obtaining in the army at home, tended, by supplying the Europeans with a society

**Changes in the native army.**

of their own, to separate them from that close intercourse with their men which had at first been one great source of their strength. Improved means of communication with England, and the large introduction of English society, had acted still more in the same direction. The same cause had taught the English officer but too frequently to regard his Indian service as temporary, and to look forward to closing his life upon his pension in England. It had thus happened that even the free use of the native languages had become a somewhat rare accomplishment. At the same time the large increase of the English dominions, and the consequent demand for efficient agents, had introduced the custom of employing as civil or political officers military men. It was naturally to the abler among them that these appointments fell, and thus the standard of those who remained with their regiments tended to be lowered. It appears certain that, although the officers had an almost blind love for the regiments to which they belonged, and implicit confidence in their men, the close tie between European and native in the army had been much loosened, the intimate acquaintance of the officers with the wants and feelings of their men had in a large degree disappeared, and room had thus been afforded for the growth of deep-seated discontent wholly unknown to the officers.

The process of change had not gone on without repeated indications of the danger it was causing. Mutiny after mutiny, though partial and speedily suppressed, had broken out in different parts of India. Of these the apparent causes had been various, but always illustrated the strange credulity of the Sepoy, and the extreme sensitiveness of his feelings when either his religious prejudices or the advantages derived from his service were assaulted. Thus in the case of the two most dangerous demonstrations of disaffection, the Velore mutiny in 1806, and the refusal of the Sepoy troops to serve in Sindh in 1843, the first was caused largely by religious panic. The defiling leather stock, the round hat, and the belt which formed a cross upon the Sepoy's breast, were regarded as so many insidious attempts to break down the caste and religion of Hindoo and Mahomedan. It was even believed that for the same purpose the blood of hogs and kine had been mingled with the salt they were called upon to use. On the second occasion it was the demand made upon the native regiments to occupy the newly annexed country, without the additional payment which had hitherto attended service beyond the Indus, which aroused the spirit of rebellion. While on a third occasion, at Barrackpore, in 1824, it was

Warnings given  
by former  
mutinies.

the dread of being required to serve in Burmah, which the Bengal Sepoy regarded as beyond the service for which he had contracted, and which implied either much privation on the voyage or loss of caste, which drove the 47th to an outbreak, suppressed only by the fire of European artillery and the breaking up of the regiment. Again, the Sepoy was not only a soldier but a member of a nation, and liable to be influenced by the social and political feelings of those around him. And the native army being recognised as the instrument by which English supremacy was upheld, it was the natural desire of all those who for any cause wished ill to that empire to undermine the fidelity of the army, to turn if possible against them the instrument the English had themselves created. Astute men were always ready, therefore, to play upon the credulous and sensitive character of the native soldier, and disaffection in the army rose or fell according as the sway of political events roused the enemies of England to hopeful activity, or condemned them for the time to passive submission. Thus the intrigues of the sons of Tippoo may be regarded as the exciting cause of the mutiny of 1806; the disasters in Cabul encouraged the mutincers of 1843; the final destruction of the Sikh power at the battle of Goojerat for a time set discontent at rest.

But the conduct pursued by the Government of late years had tended to increase largely those classes who disliked the English rule. The administration of Lord Dalhousie from 1848 to 1856 was one of unusual brilliancy. The second Sikh war had been brought to a triumphant conclusion; at the other side of India Pegu had been conquered; and the territory under the direct rule of the English Government had been largely increased. But these apparently brilliant results had been purchased by the pursuit of a policy which was not adapted to conciliate the friendship of the natives. Keenly alive to the advantages of direct English rule, as contrasted with the administration of native princes, Lord Dalhousie lost no opportunity of asserting to its full the paramount power which the English claimed. Whenever a princely family became extinct he regarded its dominions as having lapsed, and took possession of them; and in defiance of Indian custom disregarded the process of adoption by which those families had been perpetuated. As it happened it was the Mahrattas, the last of the great conquering Hindoo people, who suffered chiefly by this policy. No less than four great divisions of their empire underwent the process of annexation. In 1849 the possessions of the Rajah of Sattarah, the nominal head of the whole confederation, were appro-

*The Mahrattas  
alienated by  
Dalhousie's  
policy.*

priated upon the death of the chief. Under similar circumstances, in 1853, Nagpore, the dominion of the Bonslar, passed under English rule; and the same fate befell the smaller State of Jhansee, in spite of the strenuous opposition of the widow of the late Rajah, and her assertion, which was true, of the unbroken fidelity of her house. The case of the Peishwa was a little different, for the last holder of that title had already withdrawn from his dominions and lived as an English pensioner at Bithoor. But on his death Lord Dalhousie refused to recognise Nana Sahib, his adopted son, as his political heir, and thus deprived him of his title, and the advantages which accrued to him from it. The history of the mutiny tells only too plainly, in the massacres of Cawnpore and Jhansee, the hostility thus excited in the minds of the Mahrattas.

There were two other annexations which, in different ways, exercised an even more important influence upon the coming struggle. These were the annexation of Oude and of the Punjab. If the appropriation of the Mahratta principalities touched the feelings of the Hindoos, it was the Mohamedans who were irritated by the annexation of Oude. The wretched government and profligate extravagance of the Oude Court had early attracted the attention of the Government of Calcutta; and Lord Wellesley at the beginning of the century, not only in the interests of good government, but also with a view to utilise Oude as a bulwark to the English power, had obliged the Nabob to disband his disorderly native troops, and to take into his pay a certain amount of British soldiers, surrendering districts yielding a large revenue in order to secure punctual payment of the subsidy. At the same time Lord Wellesley did not apparently believe in the lengthened duration of this sort of double government. He thought that no effective security could be provided until both the civil and military management of the Government was transferred to the Company. But Lord Wellesley's successors had held their hand. The sovereign of Oude, whatever the faults of his administration, had proved faithful, and had even been raised to the dignity of king. Meanwhile the civil government had become simply monstrous. Attempts were made to bring the king to reason; they all proved vain, and in the opinion not only of such Governor-Generals as Bentinck and Lord Hardinge, but of men so averse to any general system of annexation as Sir Henry Lawrence, Low, Outram, and Sleeman, it appeared an absolute duty laid upon the English Government to step in and put an end to the miserable condition of the country. It is to be observed, however, that these officers all recom-

The Annexation  
of Oude  
not well  
carried out.



mended that the revenue should be applied wholly to the uses of the country. Postponed for a while by the difficulties in the Punjab, the question of annexation came up again in 1855, and with the consent of the Directors at home, Lord Dalhousie determined to incorporate the country with the English dominions, and to draw from it revenue as from any other part of India. Outram was intrusted with the carrying out of this sentence. The transfer of power was completed without difficulty and without objection on the part of the people, and Lord Dalhousie left India in the belief that he had brought to a successful conclusion his last and greatest measure. It is possible that had this great revolution been steadily carried out in a conciliatory spirit, this hopeful state of things might have continued. But unfortunately Outram was disabled by his health from completing the work. It fell into the hands of inferior men, who, full of the advantages of the English system, imposed it recklessly upon the people. By the action of the settlement officers the wealthy Talukdars found themselves stripped of half their property. The class who had depended upon the Court were naturally ruined. The military class no longer found scope for their energy. And even the peasants were distressed by the introduction of a revenue system, better it might be, but different to that which they knew and understood. Thus, while the mere act of annexation appeared to be a blow at the rights of all the princely families of India, all classes of the people became bitterly alienated from the new rule, and it was from Oude that a number (estimated at three-fifths) of the Bengal Sepoys were drawn.

It was not only in its larger political action that the English Government had been exciting discontent. The action which had so tended to alienate the people of Oude was only an instance of the approved and accepted policy of many of our best statesmen in India. In fact something resembling it had been the inevitable attendant upon every fresh increase of our empire. The destruction of the apparatus of native royalty had cut loose and thrown from their rank and employment those who had depended upon the Court. The rearrangement of the revenue upon the principles then accepted had as inevitably destroyed what may be spoken of as the native aristocracy. Starting with the idea that the native gentry were of necessity oppressors, the object of our statesmen was to protect the mass of the people. The means by which they sought to do this was to allow as little as possible to intervene between the Government and the people. But the Governments to which we succeeded had granted the collection of revenue to a class of men

Discontent  
excited by the  
rearrangement  
of the revenue.

called Talukdars. To them had been given districts or estates, not as property, but saddled with a certain amount of revenue due to the Government, and with the right of keeping for themselves the rent of the estate after the Government claims had been paid. The property of the land lay with the Zemindars or with the village communities. The English system consisted in recognising only this proprietary right, and in dealing directly with the Zemindars without the intervention of the Talukdars or collectors. But in fact it was these Talukdars who, exercising a sort of manorial right over the land, were the landed gentry of the country. The English revenue system, as exemplified in the great settlement of the North-Western Provinces, which began in 1833, almost entirely swept away this class. To many of the wisest and most observant men in India it was evident that this system turned against us a great and influential body, without securing us the support of the peasant whom we wished to protect, but from whose mind the memory of old connections could not be obliterated. Still further in the same direction went the principle of resuming rent-free properties unless a title to them could be exhibited. As many of these properties had been acquired many years before by grants either of our predecessors or of ourselves in the early times of our occupation, and as the preservation of documents in the climate of India is no easy thing, the resumption was little else than a revolution in the tenure of land.

It is not difficult to see how, under such circumstances, the feeling of discontent, widely diffused among many classes of the country, might find an exponent in the native army, or how a mutiny in this army might speedily grow into a great national rebellion, and even a struggle between the black and white races. And this is in fact what took place in the beginning of the year 1857. It is almost impossible to lay the finger upon the original cause of the mutiny, to settle whether it was Mahomedan or Hindoo in its first shape, or whether it was a spontaneous movement of the Sepoys, or a part of the general movement of the discontented classes, the offspring of intrigues carried on by astute men using the childish character of the Sepoy as their instrument. The elements of danger were at all events present in profusion. An exiled and discontented king of Oude kept his Court in Calcutta. The claimant to the rank of Peishwa was nursing his wrongs at Bithoor. Even the effete representative of the old Mogul line had been looking with hope to the movements of the Persian Shah, and was dreaming of a new Mohamedan invasion. And Oude at all events was full of a

Effect on the  
Army of  
this general  
discontent.

ruined class of landed magnates and of a disbanded soldiery, pining for the disorderly rule so summarily swept away. The point through which the Sepoy was to be reached was in this case his religion. The all-devouring character of the English Government, which spared neither prince nor gentleman nor custom nor prejudice, seemed to warrant the idea that caste and religion would be equally disregarded. It seemed not unreasonable to believe that a thorough recasting of all conditions of life, political or social, upon a model in some sort at all events English, was the ultimate object aimed at by the dominant nation. Full of suspicion, the Sepoy misconstrued everything under this false light. Troops were required to serve in

**Panic of suspicion among the Sepoys.**      Burmah, but the Brahmin might not cook upon "the black water;" to cross the sea condemned him to live during the voyage upon the parched grain he brought with him. Most of the regiments in the Bengal army were recruited only for service to which they could march, only a few for general purposes. It seemed so absurd a thing that a Government should not be able to command the services of its own army that Lord Canning, the Governor-General, himself introduced and carried in the Legislative Council a law prescribing for the future general enlistment. Here at once the high-caste Sepoy saw an attempt to place him on the same footing as everybody else, and to ruin his religious peculiarities. All sorts of foolish rumours of the same description were rife. But at length it seemed to the prejudiced and ignorant minds of the soldiers that the attempt was being made in good earnest. It had been decided to introduce into the Indian Army the Enfield Rifle in the place of the old Brown Bess. The ammunition for the new arm consisted of a cartridge containing both powder and ball, and greased that it might pass easily down the fluted barrel. The terrible idea was whispered, and once whispered flew abroad and fixed itself indelibly in the minds of the Sepoys, that the grease employed contained the fat of hogs and of cattle. The mere handling of such abominations was bad enough, but as the cartridge had to be torn open by the teeth, the subtle defilement seemed to pass into their very mouths. Here was an evident plan for at once wiping out the distinctions of religion, and fitting all, Mahomedan and Hindoo alike, to become Christians. A complete panic seems to have seized the army. It was in vain that the regiments were assured that, except in the factories, none of the new greased cartridges had passed into native hands, in vain that they were assured that the composition used was wholly free from the obnoxious substances, in vain that they

were allowed to grease their own ammunition. Half satisfied with regard to the grease itself, their anxiety turned upon the paper in which the cartridges were wrapped, and which happened to be of a glossy surface. Nor could the chemical analysis which proved its freedom from grease remove the deep-rooted belief from their minds.

The first overt signs of the deep impression which this panic fear was exercising upon the Sepoy's mind were shown at Barrackpore, the large cantonment in the neighbourhood of Calcutta. Brigadier Hearsey explained at length the truth with regard to the ammunition and the absurdity of the dread of violent conversion, and succeeded for a while in calming the nascent disorder. But before many weeks were over, at the station of Berampore, near Moorshedabad, on February 25th, the men of the 19th

Mutiny at  
Berampore.  
Feb. 25, 1857.

regiment refused to accept their cartridges, and broke into open mutiny. The extent and completeness of the organisation of which this was but a token, was certainly not yet fully appreciated by the Government or by Lord Canning. But the general fact that the mutiny threatened extreme danger could not but be present to his mind. For among other effects following upon the wide extension of the English dominion came the necessity of trusting the more settled parts of the Empire to native troops, while the somewhat scanty supply of Europeans was drawn towards the frontier. At this time, between Calcutta and Allahabad, a distance of about 600 miles, there were no English regiments except one at Dinapore. The summary punishment of a disaffected regiment by disarmament or disbandment could only be carried out in the presence of a considerable European force. Lord Canning therefore at once despatched a message to call back one of the English regiments from Burmah. Pending its arrival, some weeks of the gravest anxiety elapsed. There was every sign that the disaffection of the 19th regiment, now being slowly marched back towards Calcutta, was shared by many of the troops in the large cantonment of Barrackpore, about 16 miles from the capital. The alarm in Calcutta was great, nor was it allayed till the arrival of the regiment from Burmah. Then at once measures were taken for disarming the 19th. But before this punishment could be inflicted, a single fanatical Sepoy of the name of Mogul Pandi, of the 34th regiment, had broken out at Barrackpore, and in the presence of his regiment, and of a native officer who stood by without interfering, had assaulted and murdered Lieutenant Baugh. The execution of Mogul Pandi, and after some delay of the native officer, was carried out, and inquiries tended to show

Murder of  
Lieut. Baugh  
at Barrackpore.  
March 29.



that it would soon be necessary to get rid of the whole of the 34th regiment.

Meanwhile events in other parts of India assumed a very threatening character, and the gigantic dimensions of the disaffection began to become evident. At Umballah complaints of the cartridges were rife, and night after night mysterious fires in the native lines or among the Government offices showed the excitement of the soldiery. At Lucknow Sir Henry Lawrence, who was attempting with his usual ability to undo the hasty work of his predecessors, found himself compelled to disband one of the native regiments. Nana Sahib, from Cawnpore, began to show unwonted energy of intrigue, and at Meerut, on the 24th of April, 85 troopers of the 3d cavalry, a matter of importance because they were chiefly Mahomedans, refused to accept the ammunition offered them, although it was of the old pattern. Though there was thus every ground for apprehension, the punishment of the 34th was carried out with success, and in the beginning of May the regiment was disbanded. In less than a week any notion that the difficulty would be tided over was blown to the winds, and the mutiny had burst out in its full horror. On the 9th of May the 85 troopers of the 3d cavalry were stripped of their uniforms, and taken to the jail there to work out their sentence of ten years' hard labour. In the presence of the English troops their comrades allowed the sentence to be carried out without resistance. But on the following day, as the Sunday evening closed, and as the English population were on the way to church, the native troops broke into rebellion. European and native troops occupied separate lines in the cantonment, those of the Sepoys being nearest the town. The insurgents called to their assistance all the city rabble, the jail was broken open, the native lines burnt, the bungalows of the English officers within the lines pillaged, and many of the inhabitants, men, women, and children, murdered. General Hewitt, who was in command, brought his European troops, after some delay, to suppress the revolt, but the native regiments had already departed, organised and with arms in their hands. No pursuit was made, and the city mob was allowed to revel in the work of destruction throughout the night. The mutineers marched direct to Delhi, a distance of about 30 miles. The native troops there fraternised with the new arrivals; some of the English officers were put to death, others retreated to the great magazine, and finding it no longer tenable blew it up, while such as remained alive took refuge in flight. The old King of Delhi was drawn from his seclusion. His restoration

Mutiny at  
Meerut.  
May 10.

to the throne was declared, and the mutiny of the army had become a national revolt.

Where, as in India, a very small number of a dominant race hold in subjection a vast territory peopled by millions of men, a general uprising of the conquered populations, encountered by little groups of officials in scattered stations spread widely over the whole country, involves a series of separate struggles, and changes the history of the movement into an account of the personal doings, the bravery, the fertility of resource, and the sufferings of individual men. The history of the mutiny has been well described by its chief historian as "a bundle of biographies." In the first half of the year 1857, in scores of isolated stations, our fellow-countrymen were living through the same experiences. Weeks of uneasy suspicion, rendered terrible by nightly conflagrations; an ever-present dread suddenly realised at some unexpected moment by shouts and firing from the native lines; the hastening of the officers towards the mutineers to be shot down by the men they had so fatally trusted; the onward rush of soldier and city rabble upon the jail; the glare of burning bungalows; the flight of the Sepoy regiments if English help was at hand; if not, the hurried escape of women and children anywhere from immediate death; or the gallant rally of some few men of indomitable courage, determined in their little fortress at least to die fighting;—such were the universal incidents in the mutiny. Sometimes it was quelled by the grape-shot of the European troops, sometimes checked by the marvellous gallantry of a few brave men, sometimes sweeping to death and destruction all, men, women, and children, of European race. In the midst of such horrors it was natural to look upon every coloured face as the face of an enemy. Yet many a lady owed the safety of herself and her children to the fidelity of her native servants; not a few fugitives were sheltered in villages or by native landowners; no inconsiderable number even of the native troops themselves proved faithful in spite of the enormous pressure brought to bear upon them.

Apart from the mutiny of the Sepoys, which, inasmuch as the regiments were composed of men of all races and widely distributed, was very general, the movement of revolt occupied chiefly the centre of India. At one end of the great valley of the Ganges the Punjab was kept from rising by the skill and vigour of its administrators, and at the other end Bengal itself, at the seat of Government, was but little disturbed. Between those districts, ascending the river, lie Behar, with its chief city of

General  
description  
the Mutiny.

Geographical  
limits of the  
disaffected  
district.

Patna, Oude, newly annexed, with Lucknow for its capital, and the North-West Provinces, including Rohilcund, and extending from the Himalaya across the river to below Jhansee. They contained the great Hindoo city of Benares, the important fort of Allahabad, Cawnpore, the administrative capital Agra, and the old imperial city Delhi. There had also been placed under the same jurisdiction territories reaching southward into the valley of the Nerbudda to the limits of the Mahratta State of Nagpore. The most important station in these territories was Saugor. South of the great body of the North-West Provinces, but somewhat wrapped round by the Saugor territory, lay what was known as Central India, the dominions of the protected Mahratta potentates Sindia and Holkar, with several other smaller states, of which Bopal was the most important. Sindia's capital was Gwalior, Holkar's was Indore. South of Delhi lay Rajputana, occupied by a considerable number of self-governing Hindoo Princes, under the suzerainty of England. In all these countries the shock of the rebellion was felt more or less severely. But its chief centres lay in the North-West Provinces and Oude. The importance of the movement in Behar lay in the interruption which, if successful, it would have caused to the line of communication between Calcutta and the rebellious centres; while, in like manner, any disturbance in Central India threatened the line of communication with Bombay, and should the disaffection have spread wider, opened a road for it into the Mahratta country, including the Bombay Presidency. The peculiar circumstances of Delhi and Lucknow, the one the place of assemblage for many mutinous regiments, and the home of the revived Mogul Empire, the other the capital of a newly annexed and thoroughly disaffected district, rendered them at first the most important points of interest. The central position of the revolted Provinces so completely separated these cities, that the events with which they were connected fall into distinct groups; and the troops employed against them formed separate armies working from opposite ends of the Empire. But although public attention was chiefly directed to Delhi and Lucknow, the condition of Central India and Gwalior was scarcely less critical. The restoration and maintenance of the English supremacy in those districts depended necessarily upon the assistance which could be afforded by the Southern Presidencies. But the Presidency of Bombay had its own difficulties. Largely composed of Mahratta States, and with an army recruited, like that of Bengal, chiefly from Oude, it was open to the same influences as the more northern Presidency. Fortunately the

energy and tact of Lord Elphinstone triumphed over his difficulties, and he was enabled to undertake, as will be seen, the reconquest of the Central Provinces. The Presidency of Madras was itself nearly free from the infection of the mutiny. Lord Harris, the Governor, was able, therefore, to use the troops at his disposal with marked effect in succouring the Europeans in Bengal.

The outbreak at Meerut proved to be a spark which exploded the smouldering mass of disaffection, and it blazed out at once in all directions. Before a month was over, in no less than forty stations the troops had mutinied with varying success. Such of them as got away unchecked from their cantonments gathered either at Lucknow or at Delhi, or when their work of slaughter had not been complete, they cooped up the few Europeans at the station in some entrenchment or fortress in which they had taken refuge. Thus at Agra, at Allahabad, and at Cawnpore, as well as in Lucknow, little garrisons of English were desperately holding their own. The line of communication along the great trunk road was entirely severed, and nothing but the determined loyalty of Sindia prevented his well-organised contingent at Gwalior from pouring down into the Ganges valley, and completing the destruction of the English. Rudely awakened to the terrible extent of the danger, the Government in Calcutta, which had at first perhaps thought somewhat too lightly of what had occurred, exhibited the greatest energy. It fortunately happened that the English expedition to Persia had proved a success, and that the troops which had been employed in the Gulf were already returning; eager despatches were sent to bring them quickly to Calcutta. Regiments were on their way to China, and an urgent message to Lord Elgin diverted them towards the more serious scene of danger. The Government of Ceylon was entreated to send what assistance it could spare, and regiments were hurriedly fetched up from Madras, bringing with them one of those men whose stern, even fierce energy, was at the moment so much required, in the person of Colonel Neill. Thus a powerful army was being gradually formed in the lower Provinces.

General outbreak of the Mutiny.

Meanwhile the English found an extraordinary source of strength in their newly acquired Province of Punjab. Upon annexing it, Lord Dalhousie had determined that its administration should be as perfect as possible. To find officials to whom to intrust it he had spared neither the civil nor the military service; the ablest men of both classes on whom he could lay his hands were there gathered. Over them he had at first placed,

The Punjab a source of strength.



in equal authority as members of a Commission, the two brothers Henry and John Lawrence, and Mr. Mansel. No two better men than the Lawrences could possibly have been selected. The noble and sympathetic character of Henry, his tenderness for the feelings and prejudices of the natives, joined with a firmness and decision which never wavered, had impressed itself deeply on the friends and subordinates with whom he worked. He had been thoroughly aware of the danger that lurked under the existing system of the native army, and, finding himself in the midst of a warlike population without the fine-drawn religious prejudices of the Hindoo, he had raised regiments on a different principle, allowing to the soldiers the use of their national costume, and placing them under the immediate command of a few picked English officers, on whose fitness as leaders he could rely. Thus had been formed bodies of irregular cavalry, and notably the corps of Guides, whose excellence and fidelity had been proved in constant activity on the frontier. After a while, it had seemed to Lord Dalhousie better that the joint Commission should give place to a single rule. And the transition period having passed, it was perhaps wise that the solid and statesmanlike ability, extraordinary self-devotion, and high administrative power of John Lawrence should have been preferred, and the sole commissionership should have been placed in his hands. It was undoubtedly a heavy blow to the elder brother, but he too had found a new and congenial position as superintendent of the difficult task of carrying out the great revolution in Oude. The change of government in the Punjab had at all events worked well. The firmest mutual reliance existed between the Chief Commissioner and his subordinates. No hasty introduction of English methods had checked the growing confidence between the people and their European rulers, engendered by the wise management of Henry Lawrence; nor had his military arrangements been interfered with.

In the furthest corner of the Province, in the post of danger at Peshawur, in the immediate neighbourhood of the  
**Energetic measures of John Lawrence.** Afghan passes, the ablest of the able group of Punjab officers were stationed. Herbert Edwardes, whose energy had been shown in the siege of Mooltau, was Commissioner there, having as his colleague in civil and political work John Nicholson, while the command of the considerable forces centred in the valley was held by a soldier of the firmest temper, Sydney Cotton. The full significance of the outbreak at Meerut, and the revolt of Delhi, was at once apparent to Sir John Lawrence. He

understood the absolute necessity of immediately re-establishing the *prestige* of England by the capture of Delhi, the imperial city. He wrote to Anson, the Commander-in-Chief, at that time in the Himalayas, eagerly urging him to get together troops at once, and advance upon Delhi, and called upon the three officers at Peshawur to advise on the most efficient method of preserving the Punjab from the infection of mutiny, and of despatching every available man to assist the Commander-in-Chief, in what he considered his all-important task. The upshot of the council was the immediate formation of a movable column to suppress the mutiny wherever it might arise, the disarmament of every doubtful regiment, the stern punishment of every open mutineer, and the large enlistment and rapid organisation of new native recruits to supply the places of the disbanded regiments. To the command of the movable column, regardless of all claims of seniority, Lawrence appointed Nicholson, with the rank of Brigadier. The energetic measures taken answered all the hopes of the Commissioner. Sikh regiments, whose fidelity never faltered, were rapidly formed. The mountain tribesmen were enlisted in a sort of militia. A terrible execution, at which forty mutineers were blown from the guns, carried terror to the hearts of the wavering Sepoys. The doubtful regiments at Peshawur were disarmed without difficulty, and when subsequently they broke away and attempted to join the other mutineers, Nicholson, with a party of police, in a fierce pursuit of twenty hours' duration, utterly destroyed them. Subsequently the movable column, inspired by his fiery energy, brought security to all the outlying stations.

Anson, though he knew the difficulties that lay in his way, and the smallness of the resources at his command, had not hesitated ; a force, chiefly of Europeans, was rapidly got together at Umballah. A siege train, brought in the nick of time across the Sutlej from the Government arsenal at Phillour, over a bridge which two hours later was swept away by the rising river, was added to the force, and it started on its way towards Delhi. The Commander-in-Chief did not live to accompany it. Suffering from ill-health, and weakened by the anxieties of the time, he fell an easy victim to the cholera (May 27th). His place was taken by Sir Henry Barnard, under whom the column advanced to meet the English troops from Meerut, within a few miles from Delhi. On the way the Meerut division defeated, on a rivulet of the Hindon, a body of rebel troops. The junction between Barnard and Wilson was effected, and after a successful battle, a ridge covering the north and

The siege of  
Delhi.

north-east side of the city was seized and occupied. On previous occasions Delhi had never proved a formidable obstacle to an advancing army. Lord Canning, at the other end of India, felt so sure that it would be immediately disposed of, that he sent instructions to the General to detach a portion of his troops to the North-West Provinces. It is just possible that, as in the case of Sebastopol, so here, an immediate assault might have produced great results ; and such a measure was urged by the younger and more vehement officers of the force. But Sir Henry Barnard, taking into consideration the extreme inequality of numbers, the terrible effect which would attend failure, and the difficulties involved in lengthened street fighting, determined against immediate action, and waited for reinforcements. It was from the Punjab alone that those reinforcements could come ; and as a first instalment the Guides, after one of the most extraordinary marches on record, in which they covered 580 miles in 22 days, entered the camp without any appearance of fatigue. But when all the troops that could be spared had been despatched, there still seemed but little chance of the capture of the city. The besieging force was in fact itself besieged. Again and again the ridge was assaulted ; always indeed with the same result, but always with a loss which the little army could ill afford. Sir Henry Barnard, weakened by his incessant exertions, before long, like his predecessor, fell a victim to disease ; and the supreme command, after a short interval during which it was intrusted to General Reed, devolved upon Archdale Wilson, the commander of the troops from Meerut.

So gloomy was the aspect of affairs, so inclined to despondency was the Commander, that there was even some thought of withdrawing from the siege. Sir John Lawrence, on whom all men relied, had been kept fully informed of every fact and every feeling, and for a moment the time appeared to him so critical that he even thought it might be necessary to concentrate our strength by withdrawing within the Indus. He had but lately, during the Persian assault upon Herat, contracted a treaty of friendship with Dost Mahommed, the Afghan ruler, buying his friendship by subsidies and gifts of arms. He believed that he could trust the friendship thus established, and proposed to make over to him the Peshawur valley, the possession of which was known to be his strongest desire. Such a scheme seemed to Edwardes and his friends simply suicidal. Full of interest in their own work, and somewhat puffed up by their own success, they considered the maintenance of the integrity of the Punjab the most important of all

Lawrence's  
proposal to  
abandon  
Peshawur.

things, looked with some scorn on what they considered the want of energy on the part of the besiegers of Delhi, and were deficient, perhaps, in that broader view of the necessities of the Empire which was influencing their leader. Their representations to him at all events made him pause. It was only as a last resource, if disaster threatened at Delhi, that he had dreamt of retirement. He determined to make one more effort to put off the terrible alternative. With a grand audacity he made up his mind to trust the Punjab wholly to his Sikh troops, and to the wise management of the administrative officers, and ventured to despatch to the great siege Nicholson, with his movable column, on which hitherto the safety of the country had rested, while a siege train of greater power than that already in position was ordered down from Ferozepore.

While Lawrence was thus directing all his efforts to reinforcing the troops at Delhi, and trusting that the energy of Nicholson and the arrival of the siege train would render certain the assault of the town, so long delayed, Lord Canning and the Central Government were sending forward to the front, as rapidly as possible, every man that could be spared in order to save the beleaguered garrisons in the North-West Provinces. The troops thus disposable were those which gradually arrived from Madras, from Persia, and from the Chinese expedition. The first to arrive were the Madras Fusiliers, under the energetic command of Colonel Neill. They could only be sent forward in comparatively small detachments, for the railway was not completed, and the transport service beyond it was slow. Securing Bengal itself on his way, by breaking up the native troops at Benares, Neill reached Allahabad on the 11th of June. But Allahabad was not in English hands. It was the first of those places in the north-west where the revolt had proved too strong for suppression, and where the English had been compelled to take refuge in fortresses and entrenchments. The relief of these besieged garrisons was the first business of the troops advancing from Bengal. Beyond Allahabad lay Cawnpore, upon the Ganges, and a little distance to the north was Lucknow, the capital of Oude. The fort of Allahabad had been only saved from the fury of the mutineers by the fidelity of a Sikh regiment. The insurrection around had assumed a national character, the ousted Talukdars had made common cause with the Sepoys, and there here appeared for the first time a man, known as the Moolvee, who could be in some way regarded as a national leader. The arrival of Neill infused fresh vigour into the garrison. He at once began offen-

Advance of  
European  
troops from  
Calcutta.

Relief of  
Allahabad.  
June 11.



sive operations ; by the end of June he had reconquered the city and the neighbourhood, and was getting together a force to push onwards for the relief of the other beleaguered Englishmen. He was not destined himself to command it. Lord Canning had intrusted that duty to General Havelock, a senior officer just returned from Persia. Somewhat hurt at being thus superseded, Neill nevertheless continued loyally to collect and organise the brigade till its commanding officer should arrive. On the last day of June Major Renaud was sent forward with the van of the relieving force. This force was also charged with the terrible duty of retribution ; and now began those fearful scenes which, inevitable though perhaps they were, render the story of the successful suppression of the mutiny so painful. The executions of the natives were apparently indiscriminate to the last degree. In two days forty-two men were hanged by the roadside. A batch of twelve were executed merely because their faces were turned the wrong way, and every village in the line of march was burnt.

The advance was a few days too late. On the 3d of July a spy had brought information that the garrison of Cawnpore had surrendered and had been mercilessly murdered. The commander of the troops in that town had been Sir Hugh Wheeler. In the immediate neighbourhood were large native cantonments, and at a few miles' distance at Bithoor lived Nana Sahib, the claimant to the dignity of Peishwa. Wheeler had seen the coming storm, and had been conscious that he was unable to resist it. He believed his safety to lie only in defence, in holding out till reinforcements should come to his relief. For this purpose he had made a rough entrenchment, to which in the case of mutiny the English might retire. The choice of its position had been unfortunate. At the western end of the town upon the river-side was a strong and defensible building used as a magazine. But instead of employing this as his citadel, Wheeler had thrown up a rude entrenchment at the other end of the city near the old cantonments. It enclosed two barracks, but one of these was thatched and liable to fire, and the entrenchment itself was too low to afford complete shelter, and was constructed of loose earth. Into this insufficient citadel he had withdrawn with such of the Europeans as had not been put to death at the first outbreak of the Mutiny, and with a small number of faithful Sepoys. And there for three weeks men women and children huddled together had endured the profoundest misery, with insufficient food, scorched by fearful heat, with water almost unattainable, and exposed to a constant fire

The defence  
of Cawnpore.

from the abundant ordnance with which our own magazine had supplied the rebels. The chief burden of defence had fallen on Captain Moore. Under his energetic direction every point of vantage had been secured and every attack repelled. Civilian, soldier, and women alike displayed a most absolute self-devotion. But one of the barracks was burnt, and the little garrison was gradually wearing away; their provisions were exhausted; to approach the well, which was outside the work, was almost certain death. Hope of relief seemed gradually to fade, and when at the end of three weeks a message came from Nana Sahib to the effect that if the garrison would capitulate he would supply the boats to allow them to drop safely down to Allaha-bad, the leaders thought their only course was to accept the offer. At the beginning of the outbreak so little had the mind of Nana Sahib been known that Wheeler had invited him as an ally to assist him in bringing the garrison into the entrenchments. But the Mahratta Prince had seen his opportunity. It was he who had stopped the mutineers from going off to Delhi, and had organised the attack on the Fort, and it was he who was now the acknowledged leader of the assailants. The capitulation offered was an act of cruel treachery. Surrounded by a threatening crowd, the little remnant proceeded to the river and entered the boats, only to find the river lined with enemies. All the men were killed except two, for one boat was swept down the stream, and from its crew two managed to escape. The women and children were all collected and put in a small house called the Beebee-Ghur. The stories which were rife of the fearful injuries done them appear to be untrue. Ill-used and insulted they were, and set to perform menial offices at the Nana's residence; worse injuries they were spared.

Massacre of  
the garrison.  
June 27.

It was the news of the massacre at the boats which met the advancing columns on the 3d of July. Renaud's column was thus marching direct upon a victorious enemy. Havelock with all speed set out with little more than 1000 men, and on the 12th of July came up with his advanced guard, the whole force having reached a point close to the city of Futteypore. Expecting to find Renaud's detachment only, the enemy came down in triumph and suffered from the hands of Havelock the first great defeat of that long series which marked the restoration of our power. Futteypore was given over to plunder. But there was no time to waste. The next day the army continued its advance, gained a second victory at the village of Aon, and passed the river.

Victory of  
Havelock  
at Futteypore.  
July 12.

On that same day Nana Sahib, urged by what reasons it is im-

possible to tell, decreed the slaughter of all the prisoners in the Bcebee-Ghur. Into the crowded room butchers were sent who cut to pieces every woman and child, about 200 in number, and cast them dead or dying into a neighbouring well. He then fought his last battle for supremacy. With a force of some 6000 men and much artillery he tried to check the advancing English. The skilful tactics of Havelock, who threw his whole strength upon the left wing, proved however entirely successful. The battle was a crushing defeat to the temporary power of the Peishwa, and the next day Cawnpore was again occupied by the English. But the recapture of Cawnpore, too late to save the Europeans, was but a first step towards the greater work of relieving the Lucknow garrison. So leaving Neill to support English authority in the reoccupied city, and to deal a bloody vengeance on the inhabitants, Havelock speedily moved across the river into Oude. His force was ridiculously small for the purpose, numbering about 1500 men, while for cavalry there were but 60 volunteer horse. He was already in indirect communication with Lucknow. He had received a memorandum written in Greek characters, from the hands of a spy, describing the position and condition of the garrison, and had returned an answer that he would relieve them within a week. Yet it was not without misgivings—only to be too surely fulfilled—as to the possibility of his task that on the 25th of July he set forward.

It was natural that Oude should be the very centre of the Mutiny. There more than elsewhere all the causes of dissatisfaction were collected. Perfectly aware of the danger, Sir Henry Lawrence used every effort to postpone the outbreak, and meanwhile prepared for any event. He turned the residency and another palace called the Machi Bawan, both lying between the city and the river Goomtee and commanding the bridges, into fortified positions, determining to withdraw thither with all the European inhabitants in case of extreme necessity. On the 30th of May the troops in the Lucknow cantonments for the most part mutinied. The vigour and skill of Lawrence and his assistants prevented a general outbreak, but all the native troops, regular and irregular, with the exception of about 500, broke away. Within the next few days every station in all the five districts of Oude passed out of the hands of the English. On the 12th of June Lawrence wrote that he was still holding the cantonments and his two city posts, but that every outpost had fallen, and that he was in daily expectation of being besieged by the confederated mutineers and their allies.

Massacre of  
Cawnpore.  
July 15.

Havelock's  
victory  
at Cawnpore.  
July 17.

Sir Henry  
Lawrence's  
preparations  
at Lucknow.

Just before writing this letter his health had so completely given way that he had resigned the command into the hands of a council of five, presided over by Mr. Martin Gubbins, the Financial Commissioner. A very gallant and energetic man, Gubbins was wanting in breadth of view. He determined to be entirely rid of the native troops, and had actually proceeded to disband and send to their home that faithful few who had resisted the mutiny of May 30. Lawrence was so distressed with this action that in spite of his failing health he at once resumed the command, recalled the Sepoys, and reorganised them into a little force, which proved faithful throughout all the critical time that was coming. He also, still pursuing his policy of trust, summoned the old pensioned Sepoys in the town to re-enlist. Old, broken, and wounded, some 500 of them came to offer their services. From among these Lawrence selected about 170, and added them to his faithful natives. Thus in deep anxiety, not yet besieged but quite unable to afford any assistance to others, Lawrence awaited the fate of Cawnpore. When Wheeler and his garrison capitulated, the mutineers who had been gradually collecting and watching events in Cawnpore at once moved upon Lucknow. Lawrence was not the man to await them passively. He believed strongly—in the case of Asiatic warfare at least—in offensive defence. Drawing his troops therefore into the residency from the cantonments, he organised a little force and pushed out to meet the rebels towards Chinhât, to the north of the city.<sup>1</sup> But his force proved too small for success, and its effectiveness was still further diminished by the disaffection of some of the native artillery. The mutineers, taking advantage of their large numbers, wrapped round Lawrence's force; it was worsted and compelled to retire with the loss of two guns and a howitzer. The enemy immediately occupied the city, and began to prepare for assaulting the Machi Bawan and the residency.

Lawrence  
defeated at  
Chinhât.  
June 30.

Even with the faithful natives the English force was not sufficiently strong to occupy the two positions. The Machi Bawan, with an immense amount of ammunition, was therefore blown up. On the 1st of July there were concentrated in the residency 765 native soldiers and 927 Europeans, including the officers of mutinied regiments, the civil officials, and members of the uncovenanted service who had contrived to make their way thither from the city, or from the various outlying stations. Besides these there were about 130 women and children who had taken refuge in the fort. Then began what is perhaps the most extraordinary siege

Siege of  
Lucknow.

<sup>1</sup> See plan of Lucknow, p. 321.



on record. The residency was a rough parallelogram, the outer circuit of which consisted of various houses joined by a rapidly made wall. Each of these buildings was converted into a post, and placed in charge of a certain number of men. Throughout the siege, such was the paucity of the garrison, these posts could never be changed or relieved. If some of the defenders died the remainder had still to maintain their position with their lessened numbers. If, as not unfrequently happened, their post was broken down, they had themselves to build it up again. The centralisation was maintained by the Assistant Adjutant-General, who went every night to every post, and reported to the Commander. There was also a reserve under the immediate command of the Brigadier, to be hurried at his orders alone to any spot of special danger ; by the 18th of August its numbers had been reduced to eighteen. The ladies and the headquarters occupied the buildings in the centre of the square. Two days after the beginning of the siege the garrison suffered an irreparable loss in the death of Sir Henry Lawrence. death of Sir Henry Lawrence, who was killed in his own room by a shell. His place was taken by Brigadier-General Inglis, who proved a not unworthy successor, making use with extraordinary skill and tenacity of will of the position which the foresight of his predecessor had prepared. Afraid of any divided authority, he insisted upon keeping the appointment of Commissioner vacant, and exercising supreme command ; and, aided by a readiness of resource and devoted courage on the part of all whom he commanded unequalled perhaps in any deed of war, he succeeded in holding his ground for 87 days against the overwhelming forces assailing him. His assailants were enemies not to be despised. They were well supplied with heavy ordnance. The buildings in their possession were within pistol-shot of his walls. They showed great skill in driving covering trenches to their batteries, and had frequent and sometimes successful recourse to mines. Fortunately they were less formidable in actual assault. It was three weeks before they could make up their minds to make an attack. Those three weeks had enabled the garrison much to strengthen their position, and to perfect their organisation ; and although the attack was made after the successful springing of a mine, and covered by heavy artillery fire, it was repulsed with comparatively slight loss on the part of the besieged. Again three weeks elapsed without assault. It was a time of increasing misery. The garrison was not sufficiently numerous to attend properly to the sanitary requirements of the residency ; overpowering stenches, a plague of flies, fever, cholera, and small-pox added to the sufferings of the

garrison, which was all this time cut off from all external communication. At last on the 25th of July a spy came in with a letter stating that Havelock was advancing with a force sufficient to bear down all opposition, and that he would arrive in five or six days. An occasional sound of firing on the Cawnpore road confirmed their hopes. They proved however vain. The month of August passed away, during which, though three great assaults were repelled, the constant toil and gradually decreasing supply of food began to tell heavily on the garrison. On the 28th a letter was received. It was not one to raise their hearts. General Havelock stated that he had no hope of relieving them for 25 days. Again under incessant fire for another dreary three weeks, the little band of heroes waited. On the 16th of September the same spy, whose name was Ungud, was sent out for the fourth time, and on the 22nd he came back with the joyful news that the relieving force might be expected in three or four days.

On the next day signs of its approach were perceived, and on the 25th became clear. The fire of the besiegers slackened, musketry and cannon were heard close at hand. Shortly after noon people were seen flying across the bridges with their baggage, and at four o'clock European troops were actually in view fighting their way through the principal streets. "And then," writes Captain Wilson, the Assistant Adjutant-General, "ensued a scene which baffles description. For 87 days the Lucknow garrison had lived in utter ignorance of all that had taken place outside. Wives who had long mourned their husbands as dead were again restored to them. Others fondly looking forward to glad meetings with those near and dear to them now for the first time learned that they were alone. On all sides eager inquiries for relations and friends were made. Alas! in too many instances the answer was a painful one." The relief had arrived, but proved to be little more than a reinforcement, incapable of driving the enemy before it, and in some way adding to the difficulties of the garrison by the increased consumption of their scanty supply of food.

Arrival of  
Havelock,  
Sept. 25.

On the 21st of July Havelock had set out from Cawnpore, and had brought his little army across the Ganges. On the 29th it had been able to make its first real advance, and at once had given the enemy a severe defeat. The want of cavalry prevented a sufficient pursuit, but after a few hours' halt Havelock at once, even in the terrible heat of July, pushed forward. A march of six miles brought him again in front of the rebels. He conceived a skilful plan which would have led to their complete de-

Reasons for  
Havelock's  
delay.

struction, but the regiment which should have cut off their retreat had not reached its position when the other parts of the arrangement had proved successful, and the enemy, though beaten, were able to withdraw. Havelock had on this day won two battles, but he had now with him for actual combat little more than 800 men, and already his communications with Cawnpore were threatened. He had learned the strength of the enemy, and considering that he would have to fight not only for every mile of ground between his present position and Lucknow, but through a mile and a half of streets when he reached the city, he came to the conclusion that he had undertaken an impossibility and withdrew to Cawnpore. Twice more in the space of a few days, as reinforcements reached him, he advanced on the Lucknow road and defeated the enemy. But the reason which had induced his first withdrawal had now become stronger. For the contingent of Gwalior had mutinied against Sindia; it might at any time cut the communications between Cawnpore and Allahabad, and the question appeared now to be rather whether Cawnpore could be maintained than whether Lucknow could be relieved. At Cawnpore therefore Havelock determined to remain, hearing from Sir Colin Campbell, the newly arrived Commander-in-Chief, that reinforcements would be sent him. At the same time he learned what must have been

Outram's  
arrival at  
Cawnpore,  
Sept. 15.

a severe blow to him, that Sir James Outram was coming to supersede him. On the 15th of September Outram, having on his road secured his communications with Allahabad, arrived at Cawnpore. The intervening time had been passed in organising the troops, which were now ready for the arrival of the General. But Outram, the most chivalrous of men, declined to rob Havelock of the glorious task he had so well begun. He issued a general order declaring that he left the command in his hands till the relief of Lucknow was accomplished, and would himself serve as a volunteer. With a little over 3000 men therefore Havelock on the 19th of September once more crossed the Ganges and set out on his final march to the city. With some fighting, but without any serious check, he swept forward, till on the 23rd he drew towards the southern side of Lucknow, and approached the strongly fortified palace of the Alambagh. From this the enemy were driven, and two days of continuous and triumphant fighting brought the longed-for relief to Inglis and his weary troops. The victory had been gained with very heavy loss; 700 men had fallen since leaving Cawnpore, among them the gallant General Neill. Thus it was that Havelock found himself unable to bring away in safety the women and children from the

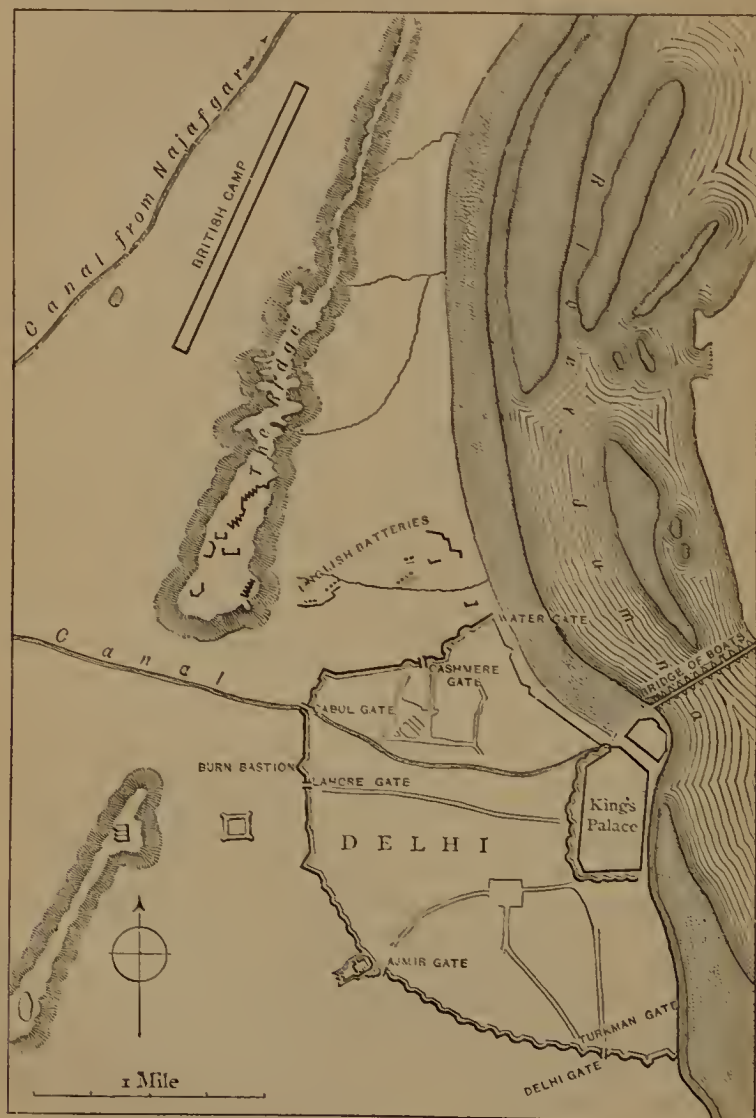
residency, and thought it wiser to wait a whole month longer till a more complete relief could be effected, confident meanwhile that thus reinforced there was no further danger of the fall of Lucknow

While thus at Lucknow English rule was being with difficulty re-established, the siege of Delhi—upon the other side of the revolted Provinces which broke the continuity of the Empire—was brought to a triumphant conclusion. The troops upon the Ridge had been in such straits that General Wilson had seriously thought of withdrawing them. The arrival of Nicholson put a new complexion on affairs, and cast all such ideas to the winds. His first exploit was a victory over the rebels who had got behind our position and were seeking at Najafghar to intercept the siege-train from Ferozepore. He found in Major Baird Smith, who was directing the engineers, a man as eager as himself to bring the siege to a conclusion. Their urgent representations induced General Wilson to allow operations to be at once hotly pressed, with a view to a speedy assault. The city lies on the Jumna, which washes its eastern side. The northern defences, against which the assault was to be directed, run nearly at right angles to the river as far as the Cabul Gate. The line of the wall there turns southward, coming first to the Lahore gate opening directly westward. On the arrival of the siege train, batteries were quickly erected so as to demolish the northern front of the city, and to allow of the approach of storming parties with some hope of success. Between the 7th and 10th of September the batteries were completed and opened fire, one towards the Water Gate at less than 200 yards distance from the wall. Its effect was naturally tremendous, and by the 13th it was thought that two sufficient breaches had been made in the Water Bastion and the Cashmere Bastion. The assault, which was intrusted to four columns, was twofold, upon the defences on the north-east and upon the Lahore Gate on the west. While Nicholson and Jones stormed the breaches in the neighbourhood of the Water Battery, Colonel Campbell was to enter the Cashmere Gate after it had been blown open by a party of engineers. A fourth column, under Major Reid, who had constantly borne the brunt of the assaults at the extreme end of the English Ridge, and who therefore was thoroughly acquainted with the ground, was to clear the suburbs at the west side of the city, and making its way through the Lahore Gate was to meet the troops coming in from the north-east. A fifth column was held in reserve. After weeks of waiting, and a delay which many of the more ardent spirits regarded as unnecessary, the critical time at length arrived. It was felt that failure would

The siege of  
Delhi.



be ruinous to the British Empire—that the Punjab, hitherto peaceful, would rise, and every discontented man in India believe that the fortune of England had failed her.



At early dawn on the 14th of September the three storming columns began their advance. With desperate fighting Nicholson forced his

way through the Cashmere breach, and Jones at the Water Bastion not only forced the breach but unexpectedly stormed a part of the wall itself, and once upon the ramparts proceeded to clear them as far as the extreme north-west corner, and there to hoist the British flag upon the Cabul Gate. Meanwhile the third column, preceded by its explosion party, advanced to the Cashmere Gate. Lieutenant Home and four men, each carrying a bag of twenty-five pounds of powder, pushed straight on to the gate, laid their bags ready for the explosion, and jumped into the ditch unhurt. The other engineer, Salkeld, likewise succeeded in laying his bags, but fell back shot through both arm and leg. The fusee was still unlighted; two sergeants in turn seized the porte-fire only to fall back mortally wounded. A third snatched it up, but finding that the fusee was already alight, sprang into the ditch at the very moment that the gate was shattered by the explosion. The signal was then given, and the third column, led by the 52nd, crossed the bridge just as the other breaches were taken, and pushed forward into the very heart of the city. Yet the success was not decisive. Major Reid's party, assaulted outside the wall, had been unable to make good its entrance. Nothing in fact but the north-eastern line of ramparts was in the hands of the English, and Colonel Campbell was obliged to seek safety by falling back. It was necessary, if the city was to be taken, that something should be done to make up for Reid's failure, and to open an access on the western face. Nicholson regarded the capture of the Lahore gate as necessary. He swept round inside the ramparts, but found that the approach to the gate was through a narrow lane with houses on both sides strongly manned. He would listen to no argument in favour of delay; he ordered the position to be at once assaulted. It was too strong, his men were driven back. A second time the attempt was made. The General rushed forward to rally his men and bring them again to the assault, and fell mortally wounded. The Lahore Gate at that time proved impregnable.

But at least a firm hold had been laid on a part of the city, and a solid base established for further operations. Even yet, it is said, such had been the heavy loss of his troops, General Wilson was thinking of withdrawing to the Ridge. The fatal design, if it was really formed, was frustrated by the eager remonstrances of Baird Smith and of Neville Chamberlain, the Adjutant-General. It was determined to work into the city chiefly by means of burrowing through the houses. For days this process went on. Still, though the English

Great assault.  
Sept. 14.

constantly advanced, the Lahore Gate, which led to the great central street of the town, could not be forced. A gallant effort made on it under the command of Greathed failed. But at length, upon the 19th, five days after the original assault, Alexander Taylor, the chief engineer under Baird Smith, obtained permission to bore through the neighbouring houses and gain a bastion known as the Burn Bastion, which commanded the Lahore Gate. The work was done, and with it the capture of the city may be said to have been completed. The next day the palace upon the river-side was taken, and the king and the rebel troops fled from the city.

The English victory was followed here as elsewhere by acts of bitter and cruel revenge. The city was pillaged by the Sikh soldiers, and martial law, carried out with little discrimination, hurried hundreds to the gallows. Of these but little was heard. One deed of ill-judged and uncalled-for severity stained the reputation of the conquerors. The old king, betrayed by his chief advisers, fell into the hands of Hodson, a man of the greatest dash and bravery, but of somewhat reckless and unscrupulous character. Having pledged himself to spare the king's life he unwillingly kept his word. But to the king's sons he would give no such pledge; and bringing them towards the city from the tomb of Humayoun, where they had taken refuge, he caused them to descend from their palanquins, and pistolled them with his own hands.

The close of September thus saw the success of the English arms at Delhi and Lucknow, the two great centres of rebellion. But the mutiny and the widespread national revolt which had accompanied it were by no means suppressed. While the fate of Delhi still hung in the balance, and day by day the chances of the English success were apparently growing smaller, insurrections, postponed awhile either by fear or by the skilful management of English administration, had been breaking out in all directions. With difficulty George Lawrence had succeeded in saving the arsenal at Ajmeer, and in keeping the Rajput Princes in outward loyalty. In the Central Provinces, Sindia and Holkar themselves had been true to the English, but the troops at Indore had mutinied, and the line of communication with the Nerbudda had only been kept open by the advance of a column from Bombay. The Gwalior contingents, scarcely restrained by the authority of Sindia, were threatening to throw off his allegiance and attack Agra and Cawnpore, in the first of which Colvin, the Lieutenant-Governor, occupied the fort, and was still exercising some authority over the city, while the second,

Fall of Delhi.  
Sept. 19.

Murder of the  
king's sons.

General view  
of the state  
of affairs in  
September.

the most advanced point of the unbroken English dominions, was of the last importance, not only as the base of all operations for the succour of Lucknow, but as the centre from which the force for the permanent reconquest of the revolted Provinces must advance. Fortunately, Mr. William Tayler had been able to retain Patna, and Frederick Gubbins and Neill had restored order at Benares, so that it was possible to send troops without interruption upwards from Calcutta. When Sir Colin Campbell had reached India in August to take up his duties as Commander-in-Chief things were at their very worst. Delhi was still untaken, Lucknow still unrelieved, while the policy of trusting the Sepoy regiments outwardly as far as possible, though secretly feeling the deepest mistrust of them, compelled the Government to keep in the Lower Provinces such European regiments as it had, and prevented the despatch of reinforcements. The Commander-in-Chief had therefore to spend much time in organising such an army as should insure success. Not only had he to await the arrival of troops, but also to establish means of transport, and to supply nearly everything that was necessary for an army in the field. During September and the beginning of October he was incessantly employed in sending troops to the front, and though Delhi had now fallen, the partial relief of Lucknow had but added to his difficulties by locking up a considerable body of troops which would otherwise have been available.

At length, with every man he could procure, including a naval brigade under the command of Captain Peel, on the 27th of October Sir Colin Campbell set out for Allahabad. On the 3rd of November he reached Cawnpore. Thither, pushing down from Delhi, a column had arrived after defeating the enemy at Agra, and now under the command of Sir Hope Grant was some way upon the road towards Lucknow. The final relief of the garrison there was the first task which Sir Colin Campbell set himself. It was attended with extreme danger. For the Gwalior contingent had on the fall of Delhi thrown off all allegiance to their Prince, had combined with the troops under the Ranee of Jhansee, and had placed themselves under the able command of Tantia Topi, the right-hand man of Nana Sahib. With the exception of the Moolvee at Lucknow, Tantia Topi was almost the only man among the insurgents who exhibited military capacity. He at once threatened Cawnpore. It was thus, with his base of operations left in imminent danger, that the Commander-in-Chief had to make his advance. On the 12th he arrived at the Alambagh. This strongly fortified enclosure was occu-

Sir Colin  
Campbell's  
campaign.



pied by upwards of 900 men detached from Outram's forces. When they were incorporated with the advancing troops they raised the number of Sir Colin Campbell's army to about 5000. An Englishman of the name of Kavanagh had made his way out of Lucknow with information which induced the Commander-in-Chief to determine to make his assault upon the suburbs of the city lying along the river, instead of forcing his way straight inwards as Havelock had done. His unexpected flank movement somewhat disordered the enemy; but a series of large buildings, palaces, and mosques, each of which had been turned into a powerful fortress, made the advance

He rescues the  
garrison at  
Lucknow.  
Nov. 17.

extremely difficult. Even by the evening of the 16th it was only after the storming of a mosque called the Shah Najif, an action described by Sir Colin Campbell as almost unexampled in war, that the relieving force felt that its success was certain. Nor was it till the following day that the residency was actually reached. There still remained the difficult task of bringing off the helpless convoy of women and children. Under cover of a bombardment, which drew away the attention of the enemy, the garrison so long imprisoned was withdrawn behind the outposts arranged to cover its retreat. No disaster attended the movement, except the death of General Havelock. A man of deeply religious and enthusiastic temperament, his advance in the army had been slow, and he had but just reached the great object of his ambition, the command of an army in the field. When his career was thus prematurely closed, he had lived long enough to show that he possessed all the best qualities of a general. Sir James Outram was left behind with a force to hold the Alambagh; and not without anxiety as to what might be happening in his rear, Sir Colin Campbell hurried back towards Cawnpore. As he approached it the sound of guns warned him that his arrival was none too soon. During his absence Tantia Topi and the Gwalior contingent had come down upon General Windham in Cawnpore and had cut off his communications with Sir Colin Campbell. Left to himself, he adopted the determination to attack rather than to await an attack. But he was not strong enough to withstand an enemy so superior in numbers. He found himself forced back upon his entrenchments, and the town was again in the hands of the rebels when Sir Colin Campbell's returning troops

His victory at  
Cawnpore.  
Dec. 6.

appeared just in time to prevent complete disaster. The convoy being at once despatched to Allahabad, a battle was fought, in which the most dangerous part of the enemy, the Gwalior contingent, was entirely broken up, and but for

an error on the part of the general to whom the duty of intercepting them was intrusted, the fugitives from the other part of the army would have been annihilated. As it was they succeeded in falling back upon Bithoor. The error was, however, partially retrieved by a vigorous pursuit headed by Sir Hope Grant. Several successful engagements, by which the communication with the north-west was



opened and the Doab, or territory between the rivers, cleared, left the English general free to turn his attention either to Rohilcund or to Oude.

His own desire was to reduce Rohilcund during the winter months, leaving Lucknow for the following year. With wiser political insight Lord Canning saw that the very head of the mutiny was Oude, and insisted upon its immediate and complete subjection. In Lucknow,

under the command of the Moolvee and of the Begum, who had assumed the royal title, were concentrated most of the rebel troops of Oude. For Jung Bahadur, the virtual chief of Nepal, had offered his assistance, and attacked the country with his Ghoorkas on the north, while General Franks, moving from the east, had driven all before him in a brilliant march, during which he had four times conquered a largely superior force. Outram, stationed at the Alam-bagh, had proved himself able to hold the rebels in check, and to resist their frequent vehement assaults. The force of the enemy thus driven in from all sides amounted probably in Lucknow at this time to 150,000 fighting men. The force with which Sir Colin Campbell now undertook his final assault upon the city was very different from the small and hastily collected bodies with which he and Havelock had previously fought their way to the beleaguered garrison. He was now able to dispose of 20,000 men and 180 guns. With this large force at his command he assaulted the city in accordance with a well-laid and scientific plan. The main attack was, as before, to be directed against the east (or more correctly the south-east) face of the city. In expectation of this movement the enemy had constructed several strong lines of defence, covered at their left, or north-eastern extremity, by the river. But Sir Colin Campbell observed that, trusting to the river, the lines were not carried beyond it, and that an army crossing to the northern bank would be able to turn the position. While therefore the main attack was directed against the front of the enemy's defences, Sir James Outram, acting on the northern side of the river, successively turned the three strong lines of which they consisted; and though not without very severe fighting, lasting for three or four days, the rebels were at length entirely defeated and driven from the town, which was firmly and finally occupied by the English troops. After the final capture of Lucknow the tide of victory turned. The re-establishment of order and the British rule in Oude and the North-west Provinces, with whatever difficulties it might yet be attended, was now certain.

Capture of  
Lucknow by  
Sir Colin  
Campbell.  
March 22, 1858.

Reduction of  
the Central  
Provinces.

Meanwhile in the Provinces of Central India the British power had been reasserting itself amid the same difficulties and with the same triumphant result. The action of Sir Colin Campbell had been constantly hampered by threatened assaults from the revolted Gwalior contingent. After his victory at Cawnpore it had withdrawn under Tantia Topi and Rao Sahib, the nephew of Nana Sahib, to the fortress of Calpee, where,

in a strongly fortified position, it had established an important arsenal. The whole country southward was in rebellion. The troops of Holkar had mutinied, but Colonel Durand had so far mastered their insurrection that the English maintained themselves at Mao, and kept open the line of the Nerbudda and connection with the Bombay Presidency. Durand had been Acting Commissioner during the absence of Sir Robert Hamilton, who returned to India in August, and having consulted with the authorities in Calcutta, resumed his work at Indore in December, in order to carry out the plan agreed upon for the reconquest of the Central Provinces. It had been decided that two columns, the one from Madras the other from Bombay, should push across the country and reach the great rivers, the one at Calpee the other at Banda. The Madras column was to be under Whitelock. The commander of the Bombay column, Sir Hugh Rose, came to Indore in company with Hamilton, and at once began his advance. Few military operations have been more brilliant than the successful march

Sir Hugh Rose's  
march.  
Jan. 1858.

of his army. On the 6th of January he left Indore, and advanced eastward in the direction of Saugor. On his way thither he besieged the stronghold of Rathgar, and defeating a relieving army sent against it by the Rajah of Banpore, captured it on the 29th. On the third of February he relieved Saugor, which had now been besieged for nearly eight months. He thence turned northward, forced his way with constant fighting through the difficult passes at Madanpore, formed a junction with the 2nd brigade of his division, which, following a different course, had stormed the strong city of Chandaree, and with his forces thus collected pushed on towards Jhansee. The Ranees of Jhansee was one of the chief opponents of the English, and had been guilty at the first outbreak of the mutiny of the treacherous massacre of some fifty English, men, women, and children. It was of the last importance that her stronghold should be taken. It was a place of extraordinary strength, lying a little to the westward of the Betwa river, and consisted of a strongly fortified walled town, and beyond that of a fortress upon high ground of still greater strength. It was occupied by 11,000 men, Sepoys and native levies. Against it Sir Hugh Rose could bring a force not much exceeding 1500. It was invested by the cavalry on all sides, and batteries were directed against its eastern wall. For seventeen days an incessant fire was kept up by both sides. For breaching purposes only two eighteen-pounders were available, but after a while a barely practicable breach was effected. But just as the English commander

Siege of  
Jhansee.



was thinking of an assault, news of a most disturbing character reached him. For Tantia Topi had come out from Calpee, had captured Charkaree, the residence of a friendly Rajah, and was now advancing with twenty-eight guns he had there captured and 22,000 men, many of them belonging to the drilled troops of the Gwalior contingent, to relieve Jhansee. Sir Hugh Rose, small though his force was, determined that he would not relax his siege operations for a moment. He collected a small covering army and advanced to meet Tantia Topi. The numbers of the enemy were so vastly superior that both flanks were far beyond the English line, and threatened completely to envelope it. Seeing the danger, Sir Hugh Rose attacked each flank with a body of cavalry. Both attacks were successful, and as the wings fell back repulsed, his infantry in the centre rushed to the charge, and the first line of the enemy turned and fled. Tantia Topi

Victory over  
Tantia Topi.  
April 1.

seems to have seen that the day was lost. He set fire to the jungle, and, under cover of the flames and smoke, withdrew his second line. But the English horse artillery and cavalry dashed through the fire, and the pursuit was not closed till every gun had been taken, and the enemy's force withdrawn beyond the Betwa. The victory was almost immediately followed up by an assault upon the town. The defence was desperate, but the stormers

Jhansee taken.  
April 5.

forced their way in, and on the 4th of April the Ranee, despairing of relief, fled to join Tantia Topi at Calpee. During the whole of the siege, under a hot sun, the English troops had never been able to change their clothes. A rest of a fortnight, during which the troops were reorganised, was necessary before the final effort to capture the great rebel stronghold of Calpee could be made. When Sir Hugh Rose resumed his march he found himself opposed at a place called Kunch by Tantia Topi and the indefatigable Ranee. A fresh victory cleared his road to Calpee. This fortress is situated amidst a network of ravines. The bluffs between them had been strongly entrenched. Behind them lay a series of temples which had been turned into fortresses. Behind them again lay the town and the fort. Judging it imprudent to assault it directly, Sir Hugh Rose moved his force to a point a few miles lower down the river Junna. The enemy did not wait to be assaulted.

Calpee taken.

After some days passed in skirmishing, they designed a most skilful attack. They determined to take advantage of the ravines, which would entirely screen their movements, and by a feigned attack upon the left draw the English troops in that direction, while, marching in secret through the ravines, the main body was to force

its way along the river-side, fall upon the right, and annihilate it. But Sir Hugh Rose was not deceived. The very formidable assault upon the left did not induce him to withdraw any troops from his right. It was fortunate; for suddenly from their shelter such masses of the enemy appeared that the English were for a while driven back, and it required a charge headed by Sir Hugh himself to check the rebel advance. But once checked, their defeat was complete. The attack on the left ceased when that on the right was defeated, and the enemy not only fell back, but evacuated the town and fortress.

Whitelock had meanwhile with less difficulty completed his march to Banda. The plan laid down appeared to have been carried out in every point. Sir Hugh Rose and the Commander-in-Chief believed the campaign was over; the General even gave up his command and obtained sick-leave. Before he had parted with his troops he was suddenly called again into action. The Ranee had hit upon a scheme of strange audacity which she had induced Tantia Topi and Rao Sahib to embrace. Knowing the difficulty with which Sindia was keeping his post at Gwalior, she pushed forward at once with her beaten army, opened negotiations with the people and troops in the capital, induced them to throw off the allegiance of Sindia, defeated him when he tried to stop her by force of arms, declared Nana Sahib Peishwa, and established herself in Gwalior. Sir Hugh Rose, breaking through all conventionality, resumed his command, determined to reduce the city before the June rains should render fighting impossible. Before he reached it, another English force marching from the southward under Brigadier Smith, had fought and won a battle in which the gallant Ranee had been killed. Dressed as a man, and leading her troopers, she had been carried away with them as they fled, her horse fell with her, and she was cut down. A battle before the walls showed Sir Hugh that he might safely advance, and before the close of the day the city was occupied.

Death of the  
Ranee and cap-  
ture of Gwalior.  
June 19, 1858.

The capture of Calpee and Gwalior, the crowning victories of the great march of Sir Hugh Rose, broke up organised rebellion in Central India, and in those portions of the North-West Provinces which lay on the south of the Jumna. Henceforward the operations in that part of the country consisted of the movements of pursuing columns, directed chiefly to the capture of Tantia Topi. During the whole of the rest of the year, pursued and hunted by several English columns, the great rebel leader moved rapidly to and fro, sometimes advancing

towards the north-west, sometimes appearing in Rajputana, sometimes making his appearance on the Nerbudda, frequently fighting and keeping the insurrection alive. At length, early in the year 1859, he gave up the struggle and went into hiding, and in April was surrendered by the most important of his adherents, Maun Singh.

Death of  
Tantia Topi.  
April 18, 1859.

Results somewhat of the same kind had on the north of the rivers attended the fall of Lucknow. Eager to complete the suppression of the Mutiny, Lord Canning urged the Commander-in-Chief to advance immediately into Rohilcund. Sir Colin Campbell, not without misgivings, yielded to his arguments, and pushed forward at once, leaving Sir Hope Grant in Oude, and despatching Lugard to bring to order the west of Behar, where the skilful tactics of Kunwar Singh were creating a fresh danger. Since its rebellion Rohilcund had owned the rule of a chief, resident at Bareilly, called Khan Bahadur Khan. Upon this capital various columns were to concentrate. One from Roorkee in the extreme north-west, one from the south-west, while the Commander-in-Chief advanced from the south-east. It was hoped that thus the enemy would be driven to one point and finally defeated and destroyed. The expectation was not thoroughly fulfilled. The Moolvee, who had command at Shahjehanpore, on the road to Bareilly, managed to avoid an engagement, and to evacuate the town before the arrival of the English. He even returned to Shahjehanpore when Sir Colin Campbell advanced to Bareilly, and though again compelled to withdraw, afforded no opportunity for a decisive battle. But though thwarted in his attempt at dealing a final blow to the rebellion, Sir Colin Campbell and his lieutenants had by the end of May practically restored Rohilcund to the English rule, and confined the strength of the rebellion to Oude. Any hope of success the rebels may there have had was probably lost when, on the 5th of June, the Moolvee was shot in a quarrel with a native Rajah. Of the three important leaders, by the middle of 1858, Tantia Topi was thus a hunted fugitive, the Moolvee was dead, and the third, Kunwar Singh, alone was keeping up the Mutiny in Western Behar.

But the reduction of Oude had yet to be completed, and Kunwar Singh and his followers to be suppressed—a work which was not concluded till the beginning of the following year. The success of this chief had obliged Sir Colin Campbell, immediately after the capture of Lucknow, to despatch a brigade against him. He had been victorious over Milman at Assemghar,

Reduction of  
Behar and Oude.

and a small force under Lord Mark Kerr which the Governor-General had sent against him from Allahabad had only succeeded in partially checking him. The duty of reducing Behar was intrusted to Lugard, and proved difficult and wearisome. Kunwar Singh constantly evaded decisive battles, and crossing the Ganges found shelter in the vast jungles which surround Jagdespore, his own home. Invariably dispersed when encountered, the rebels immediately re-united, and the whole country swarmed with bands of marauders. It was only by driving roads through the jungle, and by organising a force of mounted riflemen at the suggestion of Sir Henry Havelock, that the country was at length cleared, and by November the rebels destroyed. In the course of the campaign Kunwar Singh had fallen. In the meantime, while Behar was thus being reduced, in October, when active measures again became possible, a number of columns were sent into Oude, and eventually Sir Hope Grant and Sir Colin Campbell succeeded in driving the main bodies of the rebels, and Nana Sahib among them, over the Nepal frontier. But they found no security there. The loyalty of Jung Bahadur allowed the English troops to continue their pursuit within the Nepal territory, where the rebel armies were finally broken up and dispersed.

Although the Mutiny and its attendant revolt had been chiefly confined to the Bengal Presidency, it must not be supposed that the danger had been slight in the other parts of India. The same action which had proved so irritating to the chiefs in the North-West had been at work in the Southern Mahratta country in the Bombay Presidency. What is known as the Inam Commission had carried out the same strict inquiry into titles, as the Revenue Board had set on foot in the North-West Provinces. 35,000 estates, large and small, had been examined by this Commission, and in 21,000 cases sentences of confiscation had been pronounced. The discontent thus excited had shown itself in mutinies and in revolts, and it was only by the excellent government of Lord Elphinstone, and the skill of Mr. Seton Karr and Colonel Jacobson, that a great Mahratta movement which would naturally have centred round Nana Sahib was prevented. The danger was scarcely less in the great Mahomedan territory of the Nizam of Hyderabad. In June and July 1857, conspiracies had been discovered there, insurrection broke out, and the Residency was assaulted. It was firmly met and suppressed by Major Davidson. But that it went no further is chiefly due to the consistent loyalty of Salar Jung, the Prime Minister. He was a remarkable man, believing strongly in the

Danger in the  
Bombay  
Presidency,

and at Hyder-  
abad.



possibility of native states being well ruled by natives, but acknowledging the necessity of some such paramount authority as that exercised by the English. It was with his determined support and assistance that Davidson was able to suppress disaffection, and even to employ the Hyderabad contingent to reinforce the army of Sir Hugh Rose, in whose splendid services it bore its full share.

No portion of our history is more full of stirring incident than the Indian Mutiny. At no time did Englishmen exhibit more fully their characteristic tenacity and fertility of resource. At no time, it must be confessed, did they show in more cruel fashion their fixed belief in themselves and in the rightfulness of their cause, and their incapacity for understanding the rights or feelings of those opposed to them. In the grim struggle for life or death conscientious discrimination entirely disappeared. The contest seemed to lie between two savage races capable of no thought but that, regardless of all justice or mercy, their enemies should be exterminated. Deeds of cruelty on one side and the other were perpetrated, over which it is necessary to draw a veil, and a spirit of bloodthirsty recklessness was exhibited, which in calmer times fills the mind with horror. Such was the natural result of the position occupied by the English in India. The rightfulness of the position may well be questioned ; but if it be once granted that it is justifiable, then the murderous treachery of the natives, the acute character of the danger to which the English were exposed, the necessity for asserting our supremacy at all hazards, give a satisfactory excuse for all that was done. This was the view which England took. Any cruelty caused by excess of zeal was condoned. No praise was too great to lavish on the splendid work of those who had saved the Empire. Yet the mutineers who were shot from the guns, the hundreds of unarmed Sepoys who were cut to pieces in pursuit, or hanged in cold blood after capture, were brave men fighting after the nature of their kind for a national liberty which they loved, or for a religion in which they devoutly believed.

The Mutiny was still unrepressed when Parliament assembled in February 1858. But the popular feeling that the Indian revolt with all its horrors was traceable to misgovernment was too strong to be restrained. The worst of the crisis appearing to be over, the Ministry felt it necessary to introduce a Bill upon the subject. There was a widespread feeling that one of the chief evils in Indian administration was the double system of government, and it appeared to many a monstrous thing that the rule of so vast a portion of our Empire should be in the hands of a mercantile

Palmerston's  
India Bill.  
Feb. 12, 1858.

company, even though its powers were largely restrained by the concurrent jurisdiction of a department of the Government. The general voice demanded that the divided authority of Crown and Company should cease, and that the government should be consolidated in the hands of the Crown alone. The Directors of the Company drew up an able petition against the abolition of the Company, pointing out the advantages which had accrued from their government, and claiming credit for their worthy management of India. This view was upheld by those who represented the Indian interest in Parliament. They pointed out that every instance of aggressive policy was due to the coercive influence of Parliament, and not to the will of the Directors ; while not a few statesmen of high rank, and among them John Stuart Mill, believed that the withdrawal of the check exercised by the Directors, and the transference of all power and patronage to the Government, would be injurious to the best interests of India, by bringing it at once into the sphere of party politics : "and thus converting the administration of that country into a thing to be scrambled for by the second and third class of English Parliamentary politicians." But in spite of ably supported arguments in this direction, the general sense of the glaring anomalies of the double system, and of the want both of rapid action and direct responsibility which it entailed, was too strong to be resisted. The prevalent feeling found expression in the speech of Sir George Lewis, Chancellor of the Exchequer. All the good deeds of which the Company boasted were, he declared, subsequent to 1784, subsequent, that is, to the time when the Company was subjected to Parliamentary control. The double government begun by Mr. Pitt in that year, perfected by Mr. Dundas in 1793, reduced the Company to complete political subordination. In 1813 their monopoly of trade with India was removed ; in 1833 their monopoly of trade with China. Originally a trading company, having accidentally acquired governing powers, the establishment of the Board of Control had reduced them to the condition of subordinate governors retaining their original capacity for trade. On the renewal of their charter in 1833 their powers had been still further diminished, and one-third of the Court of Directors consisted of nominees of the Crown. Thus stripped of its original commercial monopoly, and closely restricted in its powers of government, the Company remained only as a piece of effete and cumbrous machinery serving no end except to hamper the administration. Lord Palmerston thought it necessary therefore to introduce a Bill for transferring the whole government to the Crown.

But he was not destined to carry out the measure : an unexpected defeat drove him from office. On the 14th of January an attempt had been made to assassinate the Emperor of the French. While he was driving with the Empress to the Opera-House, three bombs were thrown under his carriage with such terrible effect that, though he himself escaped unhurt, ten innocent persons were killed, and no less than 156 more or less wounded. The chief of the conspirators was Orsini, an Italian refugee. Naturally the greatest indignation was felt at this cruel and reckless assault, and when it appeared that the plot had been concocted and the bombs made in England, the anger of the French was turned upon their allies, who had allowed such a crime to be hatched undisturbed under the cover of hospitality. On the 20th of January, Count Walewski, the French Foreign Minister, wrote a despatch to the English Ministers, in which in strong words he called attention to what had happened, and while refraining from indicating any particular measure, demanded that "her Majesty's Government should assist in averting a repetition of such guilty enterprises, by affording a guarantee of security, which no state could refuse to a neighbouring state, and which the French were authorised to expect from an ally." In introducing this demand the despatch had asserted that this fresh attempt, like those which preceded it, had been devised in England, and went on to say of the attitude of the demagogues established in England, "it is assassination elevated to a doctrine, preached openly, practised in repeated attempts, the most recent of which has just struck Europe with amazement. Ought then the right of asylum to protect such a state of things? Is hospitality due to assassins? Ought the English legislation to contribute to their designs and their plans? and can it continue to shelter persons who, by their flagrant acts, place themselves beyond the pale of common rights, and under the ban of humanity?" The despatch remained without a written reply. At the same time addresses of congratulation on his escape poured in upon the Emperor, and among others several from the French army. They were couched in most exaggerated and injudicious language. One demanded "an account of the land which contains the haunts of the monsters who are sheltered by its laws. Give us the order, Sire, and we will pursue them even to their strongholds." Another said, "Let the miserable assassins, the subordinate agents of such crimes, receive the chastisement due to their abominable attempts, but let also the infamous haunt in which machinations so infernal are planned (presumably London) be

Orsini attempts  
to assassinate  
Napoleon.  
Jan. 14, 1858.

French anger  
turned against  
England.

destroyed for ever." Much more importance than they deserved was given to these effusions by their appearance in the official *Moniteur*.

If there is one point on which the English public are sensitive, it is the right of asylum; and the words in Walewski's despatch, although he made no particular demand, seemed certainly to suggest a limitation of that right, while the braggart language of the French officers, endorsed apparently by the French Government,

Popular irritation against France.

seemed to be an undisguised threat which popular opinion regarded as all the more ungenerous if, as it was supposed, France was seizing the opportunity of our difficulties in India to play the bully. The irritation on both sides of the Channel was very great, and in neither case unreasonable. It is certain, that the extreme freedom with which our hospitality is extended to political offenders, had in this case, as in others, been misused; nor can foreign nations be expected to understand the completeness of individual freedom allowed in England, or to be satisfied with the reply that the Government is answerable only for the maintenance of the municipal law. It seems at all events obvious that if our laws render such crimes as those of Orsini easy, there is something erroneous in them.

While the angry feeling was at its height, Lord Palmerston asked leave to introduce a Bill with regard to conspiracy to murder. It was not a very severe measure. As the law then stood, such conspiracy in England was a misdemeanour only, and punishable by fine and imprisonment. In Ireland it was a capital offence. The Bill proposed to equalise the crime in the two countries, making it in both cases a felony, punishable by transportation or by imprisonment with hard labour, and to apply it to all persons with respect to conspiracies to murder without regard to the place where it was intended that the murder should be committed. The Premier declared that the Cabinet was acting simply on the conviction that our law wanted reform in this respect, and without any reference to the communications from France. But the irritated public saw in the conduct of Lord Palmerston, always supposed to regard France and the French Emperor with undue partiality, a base truckling to the demands of that nation. The failure of the Government to give a definite reply to Walewski's despatch, the introduction of a legal reform by the Premier, instead of by the law officers of the Crown, were regarded as proofs that this was the real character of the proposed Bill. It was explained that the change had nothing to do with the French demands, that a verbal reply had been given to the despatch, that the Emperor had apologised for what he said was

Palmerston proposes to amend the Conspiracy Laws.



the accidental introduction in the *Moniteur* of the truculent addresses of his colonels; and Lord Palmerston very reasonably argued against the petulant rejection of the required improvement merely because our neighbours had allowed themselves to lose their temper. His arguments so far prevailed that leave was given to introduce the Bill by a majority of 200. But the victory was only temporary. Before the introduction on the 14th of February of the second reading of

Popular objec-  
tions to it.

the Bill, the popular feeling had declared itself against it as being entirely inadequate, and merely a sop to allay the anger of the French. Mr. Milner Gibson therefore moved an amendment to the effect that the House regretted that the Government had not felt it their duty to reply to the important despatch of January 20th before introducing any alteration of the Conspiracy laws. That is to say, he expressed the opinion that a definite protest against any infringement of the right of asylum should first have been made, and then any flaw in our municipal law corrected. Disraeli, who had voted for the introduction of the Bill, declaring now that the question was changed, that it lay not between England and France, but between the House and the Government, strongly supported the amendment. The junction of the Tories with the more advanced Liberals secured them a majority, and the amendment was carried against Government by 19 votes. Never unduly tenacious of office, Lord Palmerston at once resigned.

Palmerston re-  
signs, Feb. 19.

It is of course ridiculous to suppose that such men as Lord Palmerston and Lord Clarendon, whose fault lay rather in overvaluing the importance of English interests than in overlooking them, should have been guilty of negligence in the maintenance of the English right of asylum. They had a difficult part to play (rendered more difficult by the violence of the Emperor and the French), in at once maintaining the existing alliance, and fully vindicating the dignity of England. The very popular character of the English Parliament, while it renders it a true representative of the national feeling, lays it open to the gusts of temporary passion which are apt to arise in a Democracy. To such a passing burst of feeling Lord Palmerston fell a victim. That his Ministry had in fact acted both judiciously and firmly may be gathered from the admission contained in a letter from Lord Derby to the Queen after Lord Clarendon had spoken in vindication of the outgoing Government. "Lord Clarendon," he writes, "made an admirable speech in explanation of the course which the late Govern-

Causes of  
Palmerston's  
fall.

ment pursued, and which, had it been delivered in the House of Commons on the subject of the amendment, would probably have deprived Lord Derby of the honour of addressing your Majesty on the present occasion." As a matter of fact, in spite of his personal friendship for the Emperor, Lord Palmerston was always on his guard against him, and fully aware of the inventive and plotting character of his mind. A year or two after this he declared that "the Emperor's mind was as full of schemes as a warren is full of rabbits." But the Anglo-French alliance was undoubtedly very dear to him, and during much of the preceding autumn he had been engaged in negotiations for the purpose of preserving it, in face of the differences of opinion which arose in the two Courts with regard to the treatment of the Danubian Principalities.

In his private conversations Louis Napoleon made no secret of his wish for a general revision of the Treaties of Vienna (in 1815). He regarded them as directed entirely against France, and their maintenance as the established law of Europe as a constant cause of irritation to his people. There can be no doubt that he desired an alteration in the map of Europe, and the extension of French boundaries. He of course knew that such a measure could only be carried out by the consent of the great Powers. And it seems not improbable that the general outline of his policy consisted in a great exhibition of power directed in turn against each rival nation, and the subsequent establishment of friendly relations with Napoleon's schemes. Circumstances had enabled him to set his scheme on foot by establishing a close alliance with England. He had thus been able to defeat the Russians. But no sooner had his power been shown than, beginning even at the very Peace itself, he had given strong proofs of his willingness to form a close friendship with that country. He listened kindly to the constant stream of friendly flattery which was poured on him by the Russians; he received a visit from the Archdukes; he contemplated a meeting with the Emperor at Berlin. Austria was the country to which it appeared he would next turn his attention, and apply to it the same system as he had employed towards Russia. As already mentioned, his scheming mind contemplated a rearrangement of Europe. He had quite lost all personal interest in the maintenance of the Turkish Empire, but he did not desire that Constantinople should become Russian. He conceived the idea of placing the Principalities under one sovereign, a stranger, in the belief that a Power so placed would act as a sufficient check upon Russian

advance. It would, however, obviously have been a step in the direction of the destruction of the Turkish Empire, and would have raised a new force in the immediate neighbourhood of the Austrian Dominions. But the Austrians had of late found the Turks good neighbours, and did not believe in the strength of such a State. They therefore clung closely to the terms of the late Treaty of Paris, by which self-government, under the suzerainty of Turkey was guaranteed to the several Principalities, the Porte undertaking to convoke a representative Divan in each State in which the wishes of the people should be expressed as to their definite organisation. So far had the split between France and Austria gone, that Louis Napoleon had even suggested to England an alliance between England, France, and Russia, from which Austria should be excluded. Whatever the wisdom of the French scheme—and subsequent events seem to show that it was wise—on this point there could at that time be no doubt as to the action of England. The Crimean war with all its losses had been fought for the integrity of Turkey. Austria had played a very substantial part in bringing that war to a successful issue. It was impossible for the English Government to dream of any arrangements which should injure the Turkish Empire, even if its opinion had not coincided exactly with that of Austria as to the necessity of guarding against Russian advance. The elections for the Divan, held in pursuance of the Paris Treaty, had produced a strong majority in favour of the continued separation of the Principalities, and consequently in opposition to the French view. The French did not hesitate to charge the Sultan with manipulating the electoral lists, and, in junction with Russia and Sardinia, threatened to withdraw their ambassador if the elections were not annulled.

Thus it appeared that upon the Eastern question France and Russia were opposed to England and Austria, and that the alliance originally founded for the maintenance of the integrity of Turkey was on the point of dissolution. The friends of the alliance, and it may be the Emperor himself, who could not yet certainly afford to do without England, suggested a personal visit of a private character to be paid by Louis Napoleon to the Queen at Osborne. Thither also Lord Palmerston and Lord Clarendon went, and in the course of a few days, during which the friendship between the royal families became apparently very sincere, conversations were held with the Ministers, and more effectually still with Prince Albert, and a compromise was arrived at by which the

Visit of  
Napoleon to  
Osborne.  
Aug. 1857.

English consented that the elections should be annulled, while Napoleon agreed to give up the idea of the union of the Provinces.

The final settlement of the government of the Danubian Principalities in the following year was itself a full illustration of Napoleon's views. The Divans elected after the rectification of the electoral lists pronounced definitely and strongly for union, and at the conference of the great Powers held in Paris for the settlement of the question, France, Russia, and Sardinia showed themselves strongly in favour of such an arrangement. It was in vain that Napoleon was reminded of the compact arrived at at Osborne. Although it had been reduced to writing, Walewski had declined to sign it, and it was now practically repudiated. The Conservative Government at this time in office had adopted to the full the policy of maintaining the integrity of Turkey. In spite, therefore, of the efforts of Mr. Gladstone in Parliament to secure what was almost universally acknowledged to be for the advantage of the Principalities themselves, their union under a foreign prince, the English plenipotentiary combined with Austria to press their separation. The result was a sort of compromise which proved entirely delusive. Under a central committee the Principalities (which were to be called the United Principalities) were each to be governed by its own Prince or Hospodar, and its own elective assembly. The institutions for the two Provinces were the same, and the apparent separation speedily disappeared when both elected the same man as their Hospodar. For the time the difficulty was got over. But it was rendered plain to all parties concerned that Napoleon nourished a strong dislike to Austria, that the fundamental basis of the Anglo-French alliance had in fact disappeared, and that from the scheming mind of the Emperor, constant renewals of similar complications must be expected.

Settlement of  
Wallachia and  
Moldavia.



## CHAPTER VII.

LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY, February 28, 1858.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	Lord Derby.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Chelmsford.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Lord Salisbury.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Lord Hardwicke.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Mr. Disraeli.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Mr. Spencer Walpole.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Stanley.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Malmesbury.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	Mr. Jonathan Peel.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Sir John Pakington.
<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	Lord Ellenborough.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Mr. Joseph Henley.
<i>First Commissioner of Works,</i>	Lord John Manners.
<i>Postmaster-General,*</i>	Lord Colchester.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,*</i>	Duke of Montrose.

\* Not in Cabinet.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	Lord Eglinton.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Mr. Napier.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	Lord Naas.

The following changes subsequently took place :—

<i>President of the Board of Control,</i>	Lord Stanley, May 1858.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Sir E. Bulwer Lytton, May 1858.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Mr. Sotherton Estcourt, March 1859.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Lord Donoughmore, March 1859.

ON Lord Palmerston's resignation, Lord Derby found it possible to form a Ministry and undertake the Government. The management of the House of Commons fell to Mr. Disraeli as Chancellor of the Exchequer, and by his skill the Conservatives were enabled to remain in power till the close of the session in presence of a hostile majority.

Lord Derby's  
Ministry.  
Feb. 28, 1858.

The Ministry was at first directly charged with two duties, the destruction of the double government in India, and the formal reply

to Count Walewski's despatch. Lord Malmesbury undertook the second of these duties, and called attention to those strong expressions which the French Minister had used, and which, as he said, had not unnaturally been understood to imply not only that the offence complained of was not recognised as such by the English law, and might be committed with impunity, but that the spirit of English legislation is such as designedly to shelter and screen the offender from punishment. To this letter Count Walewski replied emphasising strongly the desire of the French Government to maintain the alliance, and disclaiming all idea of putting undue pressure upon England. "My despatch," he wrote, "of the 20th of January had no other object than to draw attention to a state of things which was to be regretted, but I carefully abstained from expressing any opinion as to the measures calculated to remedy it, and I have been unable to understand how certain expressions of that despatch have been so misunderstood. As the intentions of the Emperor have been misapprehended, his Majesty's Government will abstain from continuing a discussion, which, from being prolonged, might prejudice the dignity and good understanding of the countries, and he appeals purely and simply to the loyalty of the English people." On the receipt of this despatch, Mr. Disraeli declared in Parliament that the threatened discord between the two countries had been got over, and the incident closed. The alliance was yet too valuable to the French Government to allow of its being broken by an outburst of popular temper, so long, at all events, as the Emperor could hold it in restraint.

Reply to  
Walewski's  
despatch.

This question was scarcely settled when the Government proceeded to its second task, and produced what is known as the India Bill No. 2. It proved a complete failure. Like the Bill of Lord Palmerston, it established for the Government of India a President with the rank of Secretary of State, and a Council, but the Council was to consist of fifteen instead of eight members, all of whom were intended to be in some way representative men. Half were to be nominated, but each man was to be drawn from some particular class. The other half were to be elected, some by all men in England who had served the Government for ten years in India, or who were proprietors of a certain amount of Indian railways or stock; the rest were to be elected by the Parliamentary constituencies of London, Manchester, Liverpool, and Belfast; a qualification based upon residence in India or upon trade with that country, was also required for the members elected. Leave was given to bring

Failure of  
India Bill  
No. 2.

in the Bill though there were very slight signs of approval, and the Easter recess was allowed for its consideration. During that time it became evident that it was entirely distasteful to the nation. It was marked by a misplaced ingenuity which robbed it of the simple character requisite in so important a measure; and it was very generally felt that the introduction of election by Parliamentary constituencies of members to represent not them, but the interests of Calcutta and Bombay, was an entire misapprehension of the principles of representation, and a mere piece of clap-trap for the purpose of winning Liberal votes. When the Bill was brought in after the recess, there appeared to be no chance whatever of its being passed, or of the Ministry avoiding a great and fatal defeat. But as a mere piece of party tactics, it might well be doubted whether the defeat of Government would have been advisable. The fall of Lord Palmerston's administration had been brought about by the disorganisation of the Liberal party, by the disagreement of its chief leaders, Lord Palmerston and Lord John Russell, and by the mistrust felt by the more advanced section of Liberals, both as to the foreign policy and reforming tendencies of Lord Palmerston. There was nothing in the present question which could afford a solid basis for reorganisation.

From a higher point of view, as all parties in the House were on the whole agreed as to the necessity of the proposed change in the Indian government in some shape or other, it was, as Lord Palmerston said, far too serious a matter to be made the shuttlecock of political parties. Under these circumstances, instead of driving the Government to extremity, Lord John Russell proposed to proceed by way of resolution, that is to say, that the principles should be discussed and settled in the House, and that a Bill which would thus become the joint production of all parties, based upon the decisions arrived at, should then be introduced. As a matter of course the Chancellor of the Exchequer sprang eagerly at the opportunity of avoiding defeat, so eagerly indeed as to cause some amusement in the House. He went so far as to propose that Lord John Russell should himself bring in the resolutions. But as it was generally felt that the responsible Ministry should undertake this duty, Mr. Disraeli expressed his willingness to produce them himself, and a few days later proceeded to do so. After considerable discussion a Bill which, under the circumstances, was necessarily something of a compromise between the two preceding Bills, was passed. The territories and powers of the East India Company were to be vested in the Queen; her sovereignty was to be exercised through one of her

Unanimity of  
parties on the  
principle of the  
Bill.

principal Secretaries of State, assisted by a council of fifteen members, of whom seven were to be elected by the Court of Directors from their own body, and eight nominated by the Crown. Appointments to the Civil Service were to be thrown open, and to be filled by competitive examination. The same system was to be applied to the engineers and artillery. The Indian revenues were not to be applied to defray the expenses of military operations outside India. Orders directing the commencement of a war in India were to be communicated within three months to Parliament if sitting, if not sitting within a month of its next meeting. All the Provinces of India were to be placed under the authority of the Governor-General, henceforward to be called the Viceroy, but at the same time were to retain their own civil government. The change was proclaimed in India in the following November, and Lord Canning assumed the title of Viceroy.

The India Bill  
passed,  
Aug. 3.

The passage of this very important Bill had been interrupted by an incident which had nearly overthrown the Ministry. It involved the policy pursued by Lord Canning upon the suppression of the Mutiny. Almost immediately upon the capture of Lucknow, he had issued a proclamation in which he had declared the whole of the land of Oude, with the exception of that held by six proprietors, forfeited to the Crown, which would dispose of it as it thought fit. Life was secured to all landowners at once surrendering to the Chief Commissioner, provided that their hands were unstained by English blood murderously shed: for any further indulgence they were to throw themselves upon the mercy and justice of the British Government. This appeared to many men, and among others to Sir James Outram, far too stringent a measure of confiscation. In his view it entailed the certainty of an endless guerilla warfare. He did not in fact understand Lord Canning's intentions. The Governor-General was far from meaning to deprive any large number of landowners of their property. But he wished to establish once for all a clear groundwork, freed from all complications arising from previous circumstances, for the reorganisation of the conquered Province. He so far yielded to Outram's objections that he introduced into the Proclamation, as actually published, a clause announcing that liberal indulgence would be extended to those who came speedily forward in support of order. A copy of the original Proclamation without the added clause was sent to England, but was followed almost immediately by a private letter to Mr. Vernon Smith, at that time head of the Board of Control,

Excitement  
caused by  
Canning's  
proclamation of  
March 3.



explaining Lord Canning's views with regard to it. When this letter reached England the change of Ministry had taken place, and while the Proclamation passed as a State paper into the hands of Lord Ellenborough, the new President of the Board, the letter was unwisely kept in Mr. Smith's hands. Without the key the Proclamation in all its apparent severity struck Lord Ellenborough in the same light in which it had struck Sir James Outram. Unfortunately, the new President was a man fond of showy writing, and of exertions of authority. He wrote a despatch through the secret committee of the Company to Lord Canning, in which, in very bitter words, he expressed his dissatisfaction with the policy he was pursuing. Such a despatch should certainly not have been written to a man of Lord Canning's position and well-known clemency. But the matter became much worse when the obnoxious language was published, and Lord Canning, in the midst of his extraordinary difficulties, found himself disowned and reprimanded by the home authorities. The outcry raised against Lord Ellenborough was so great that he was compelled to save the Government by sending in his resignation (May 13). Even this did not prevent Mr. Cardwell from bringing forward a motion of censure. But when the suppression of the private letter became known, and it was understood that in the Proclamation when issued a merciful clause, which Lord Ellenborough had not seen, had been introduced, it was felt that there was so much to be urged in favour of the President's view, that the ill-cemented union of sections which would have supported Mr. Cardwell fell to pieces, and the assault upon Government collapsed.

The session was rendered further remarkable by the final settlement of the long-vexed question as to the admission of the Jews to seats in the House. Lord John Russell, brought in a Bill for altering the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, for the purpose of relieving the Jews from the necessity of using certain words in the oath, and in spite of some warm opposition the clause relative to the Jews was carried by a large majority. The Bill, however, met its usual reception in the House of Lords. It was amended by the omission, upon the motion of the Lord Chancellor, Chelmsford, of the clause which admitted the Jews to the advantages of the Bill. As the Commons refused to accept this amendment, a dispute between the Houses seemed likely, when happily Lord Lucan hit upon a compromise, and suggested that a Bill should be introduced allowing either House by its resolution to modify the form of the oath required from its own members. Ten times since

Admission of  
the Jews to  
Parliament.  
July.

1833 the Bill had been sent to the Upper House, and been rejected. It did not seem prudent to resist longer, and the Government expressed their assent to the compromise. A Bill in accordance with it was therefore rapidly passed, and on the 26th of July Baron Rothschild took his seat for the City of London.

The Government had successfully passed through one session, yet the majority of the House was in opposition to it, and its lengthened tenure of office was impossible unless it could find some means of changing this state of affairs.

Disraeli's  
Reform Bill.  
Feb. 1859.

The great events of the last few years had drawn the public mind a good deal away from domestic questions, and had brought into office that section of the Liberals which shared Lord Palmerston's dislike to further progress in Parliamentary reform. But as the comparative success of the Crimean war, the close of the little wars in Persia and China, and the suppression of the Mutiny had removed for the time questions of a more wide and imperial character, activity in domestic politics had again arisen. The Conservative Government, well aware that the reformers were little pleased with the way in which the Whigs had treated their favourite question, and calculating upon the division between the parties of Lord Palmerston and Lord John Russell, hoped to secure the majority which they required by themselves undertaking to bring in a Reform Bill. The opportunity was a good one, and a sound and simple Bill might have answered their expectations. But when on the 28th of February Mr. Disraeli introduced his measure, it proved to contain fanciful arrangements which to the scrutinising eyes of the Opposition, seemed to be directed to the sole object of securing a Conservative majority. What was new in the Bill was the extension of the franchise to the possessors of personal property; £10 a year in the funds, £60 in the savings-bank, pensions of £20 a year were to give the right of voting, which was to be extended also to graduates, ministers of religion, lawyers, and doctors. At the same time the £10 household franchise was to be extended to the counties. For the purpose the Conservatives had in view the Bill was an unwise one. It was at once too wide and too narrow. Its introduction was immediately followed by the resignation of two of the Ministers (Mr. Henley and Mr. Walpole). And Lord John Russell, seeing his opportunity, proposed a resolution reprobating on the one hand the interference with the old principle of freehold franchise, and on the other the maintenance of the high qualification in cities and boroughs. This resolution was very skilfully drawn, so as to unite all classes of opponents to the Bill, and after a debate rendered memorable by the

great speeches of Sir Edward Bulwer Lytton, and Mr. Cairns, Solicitor-General, the division showed that the Government were in a minority of thirty-nine in one of the fullest Houses on record.

The Ministry  
defeated.

March 31, 1859.

Called to office under peculiar circumstances, and in a Parliament elected while they were in Opposition, the Government did not think it necessary at once to resign, but determined to appeal to the constituencies. The result did not answer their expectations, although their ranks were somewhat strengthened.

Derby resigns.

June 10.

On the reassembling of Parliament a vote of want of confidence was moved, and carried by a majority of thirteen. The Ministry had no choice now but to resign.

It was not a very easy matter to supply their place. The disorganisation of the Liberal party, and the discord existing between its two acknowledged heads had been the cause of the success of the Conservatives. Unless the discord could be healed, a strong Liberal Government could not be formed. Aware of this, the Liberal party had succeeded in bringing about a reconciliation between its leaders. Lord John Russell and Lord Palmerston had promised to come to an agreement that whichever of the two was charged with the formation of a Government, should have the co-operation of the other. But the

Granville fails  
to form a  
Ministry.


Queen, not perhaps aware of the arrangement, and feeling, as she said, that it was highly invidious to choose between such eminent statesmen, intrusted Lord Granville with the formation of a Ministry, hoping to enlist both the rivals under his banner. His negotiations were not successful, and the choice fell on Lord Palmerston, who succeeded in forming a remarkably strong Ministry, although the determination of Lord John Russell to hold the Foreign Office deprived it of the assistance of Lord Clarendon.


It was a time when a strong Ministry was very necessary, for the affairs of Europe were full of difficulty, and war between France and Austria had already broken out. It was the bursting of a storm which had been long brewing. In

Need of a strong  
Ministry be-  
cause of foreign  
affairs.

his desire to revise the Vienna Treaties and make alterations in the arrangements of Europe, the Emperor had naturally turned his attention to the state of Italy. He probably was really anxious for the freedom of that country. It afforded, moreover, the best ground on which to give effect to his long-rankling dislike of Austria. Either by direct possession as in Venetia or Lombardy, or through the instrumentality of the Grand Dukes, the Austrian influence was paramount through a large portion of the Peninsula, and was employed in the disastrous maintenance of bad government, and in

the repression of the sentiment of national independence and unity which had taken possession of the Italians.

Since the battle of Novara in 1849, Sardinia, which had placed itself at the head of the national movement, had con- Growth of Sar-   
tinually grown in strength and power. Firmly adhering dinia.

to constitutional government, under the wise management of Cavour and the honest and straightforward policy of King Victor Emmanuel, it had forced itself into a place of some importance in Europe. It had fought beside the Western Powers in the Crimea, and had taken the opportunity of the Conferences which led to the Peace of Paris, to lay before Europe the claims and aspirations of Italy. Though peace was as yet unbroken, there was every sign that sooner or later the question between Sardinia and Austria must be settled by war. Assisted by large subscriptions from the rest of Italy, the fortress of Alessandria had been fully armed. The fortifications of other strong places had been pressed forward. At Spezzia a great naval armament had been created. And in 1857 diplomatic relations between the two Courts, which had been renewed after the Peace of Paris, were again broken off. Steadily opposing the more violent efforts of Mazzini and the Republicans, Cavour had led all the moderate Liberals of Italy to look with longing hope to the establishment of a constitutional kingdom under the Sardinian House. Conscious that single-handed the risk of attacking the Austrian power was greater than he could wisely run, he had found, as he believed, a firm supporter in the French Emperor. The attempt of Orsini threatened for the instant to ruin this hope. It Alliance be-   
was supposed that it was principally in anger at the tween Sardinia  
and France. Emperor's delay, and at the obstacles he was thought to raise to the free development of Italy that the assassination had been contrived. Orsini was undoubtedly one of the Republican refugees from Rome. The Emperor caused a very sharp despatch to be sent to Sardinia demanding (what he could only suggest to England) a change in their law, for the protection of foreign rulers. The misunderstanding, which might easily have interrupted the friendship of France and Sardinia, was removed by a straightforward autograph letter from Victor Emmanuel. It is even possible that Orsini's attempt, abortive though it was, furthered the cause for which he died. Certain of his letters which came into the Emperor's hands are said to have added fresh life to his vacillating desires for Italian freedom. He was further moved by his desire to withdraw the French garrison from Rome. In conjunction with the Austrians, his troops were upholding the



Pope against the change of government ardently desired by the Roman people. But the advice, which he thought himself justified under the circumstances in pressing upon the Pope, was disregarded, and the influence of Austria seemed paramount. He was weary of supporting a Court where he was unable to make his voice fully heard. He demanded a private interview with Cavour, which took place in July at Plombières. It would seem that he went even beyond the hopes of the Italian Minister. Cavour still looked forward to a peaceful diplomatic settlement, but he did not feel himself justified in refusing the powerful assistance which the Emperor offered him, and an arrangement was arrived at by which the Emperor agreed to give armed assistance to Sardinia in the case of a just war.

Secret Treaty  
at Plombières.  
July 1858.

The arrangement was kept entirely secret even from the Emperor's own Ministers. But indications observed by diplomatists during the autumn led to a feeling that war was imminent. According to the Emperor's calculations, and for the furtherance of his fixed idea of a changed Europe, the time was propitious. He believed, and the flattering professions of friendship which had been lavished on him justified his belief, that he might count upon the support of Russia, especially as the conduct of Austria in the Crimean war, and at the subsequent Treaty, was still rankling in the mind of the Czar. The jealousy existing between Prussia and Austria as rival claimants to the first place in Germany seemed to promise at least the neutrality of Prussia ; while with regard to England the well-known sympathy existing there with the national movement in Italy, seemed to secure to him the complete if not enthusiastic restoration of that close alliance which late events had so severely shaken. Europe was warned that the critical moment had arrived when, at the reception of the Ministers on New Year's Day 1859, Louis Napoleon roughly informed the Austrian Ambassador that the relations between the countries were exceedingly bad. And the line the war would take was indicated when on the 10th of January, at the opening of the Sardinian Chambers, the King informed his Parliament that the greatness of the position he had gained was not exempt from perils, for while respecting treaties, he was not insensible to the cry of suffering which reached him from so many parts of Italy.

✓ Breach between Austria and France.  
Jan. 1859.

The diplomatic world was at once thrown into a state of excitement. The well-known ideas of Napoleon, and the profound mistrust felt in him, caused his words to be heard with the greatest

alarm. Excited by his own ambition, and, as it was generally believed, by the necessity of upholding his position at home by an active foreign policy, it appeared only too probable that the first infraction of the Vienna Treaties might easily lead, if successful, to a corresponding effort to secure the Rhine frontier, and bring with it a great European war. But the Emperor found that the calculations on which he had relied were ill-founded. The Prussian King had just been compelled by failing intellect to give place to his brother. The change of ruler had brought with it a change of Ministry and policy. Men of more liberal and wider views had been called to the Government. The Russian influence had been largely removed, and Prussia took up a national position, laying aside for a while its Austrian jealousies. The Conservative Government of England strongly supported by the Court, regarded it as impossible in any way to encourage an uncalled-for assault upon an old ally such as Austria, and the late ill-feeling called out by the events accompanying the Orsini plot proved for a while too strong for Italian sympathy. Discovering his mistake, the Emperor cast about at all events ostensibly for means of withdrawing from his difficult position. He continued to declare his peaceful intentions. He denied that he was placing his army on a war footing. He allowed, nay even urged, the English to despatch Lord Cowley as a mediator to the Austrian Court. Yet as so frequently happened in his career, he was weak and undecided at the moment when called to give active effect to the schemes he had been long pondering. In the present instance there was a whip held over him constantly pressing him forward. Cavour possessed the written agreement of Plombières, and threatened if he were deserted to publish it, and ruin the Emperor's credit both at home and abroad. Thus at the very time that Lord Cowley was engaged at his suggestion in attempting to bring about a peaceful arrangement at Vienna, he induced Russia to propose that a Congress should be summoned, that Congress which in one form or other he had so persistently demanded for the rearrangement of European boundaries. The advantage of this Congress to Napoleon, apart from any territorial arrangements which might be discussed in it, lay in this, that if it should come to any conclusion as to the state of Italy, he could plead the mandate of Europe as an excuse for eluding his engagement at Plombières; if, as seemed likely, Austria should make some mistake, or exhibit irritation in some breach of the peace, his hands would be untied, and he might proceed, without being open to blame, to support his Italian ally.

Napoleon  
hopes to elude  
his difficulties  
by a Congress.

In spite of the risk that such a Congress might involve a revision of existing treaties, such as the Treaty of Paris, the desire for peace induced the great Powers of Europe to consent to its being summoned. But there were still great difficulties in its way. Austria, not wholly averse to war, and determined that if the Congress was called her own position should not be injured by it, insisted upon two points, —that Sardinia should disarm, and that the representatives of the Italian States should be excluded. Cavour rejected the suggestion made to him by England to disband his troops on these terms; and, when a proposal of a general disarmament was made, France only accepted it upon the condition that the Italian States should send their plenipotentiaries to the Congress. At length England arrived at a compromise which it was thought might be acceptable: that there should be “a previous, immediate, effective, and simultaneous disarmament” on the part of Austria, France, and Sardinia, the carrying out of which should be intrusted to certain commissioners; that immediately on the commissioners beginning their work the Congress should be convened, and the Italian States invited to send representatives. As far as the disarmament went, the great Powers agreed to these terms, and, as the suggestion came backed by the universal voice of Europe, Cavour yielded. But on the other point, the admission of Italian representatives, Austria was unmoved. As, therefore, the Congress appeared impossible, on the very day on which Cavour had announced his assent to disarmament the Austrian Court took the matter into its own hands, and despatched a peremptory summons demanding the immediate disbandment of the Sardinian troops. As a matter of course Cavour refused the demand, and ten days later the Austrian army crossed the Ticino. Napoleon’s hope was fulfilled, Austria had saved him from his awkward predicament; he was free to assist an ally thus attacked, and on the 30th of April the French troops entered Turin.

Failure of the  
Congress.

War breaks  
out.  
April 1859.

The hasty conduct of the Austrian Court immediately changed the current of public opinion; and it was to the belief that the late Conservative Government had been playing into the hands of Austria, that the success of the Liberals in the election completed the last day of May must be largely attributed; yet the charge was ill-founded. In the midst of the extraordinary confusion Lord Derby’s Government had followed a consistent and not unwise course. The policy of Louis Napoleon was so tortuous, the mistrust in his ulterior designs so reasonable, and the danger to be apprehended from a great Euro-

pean war so terrible, that no Government can be blamed for using all its endeavours to preserve untouched those treaties which, broken though they had been, still formed the only groundwork for the settlement of Europe. If the Ministry is open to any blame they must share it with English statesmen of all parties, and with most of the leaders of public opinion in every European question which has arisen of late years. They miscomprehended the forces actually at work in Europe, and devoted their energies to a well-meaning but erroneous effort to force back that spirit of nationality which they should have recognised as the moving spring of foreign politics.

Real object of  
the war.



1861  
 1862

## CHAPTER VIII.

### LORD PALMERSTON'S MINISTRY, June 1859.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Palmerston.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Campbell.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Granville.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Argyll.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Gladstone.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Lewis.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Newcastle.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Russell.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Sidney Herbert.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Charles Wood.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Somerset.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Milner Gibson.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Elgin.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.

#### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Carlisle.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Brady.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Cardwell.

The following changes took place in August 1861 :—

<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Lewis.
<i>Postmaster-General</i>	. . . . .	Lord Stanley of Alderley.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Cardwell.
<i>Lord Chancellor of Ireland,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Westbury.
<i>Chief Secretary of Ireland,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Robert Peel.

In April 1864, Mr. Cardwell became Colonial Secretary, and Lord Clarendon Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster.

THE consolidation of the Liberal Party produced a ministry of most unusual strength, if strength is to be estimated by the ability of the individual ministers. It is possible, however, that this very ability may be a source of weakness rather than of strength. Able men have wills and opinions of their own, and for the passage of great measures a Cabinet ready to acknowledge the complete supremacy of a great Premier is

Character of  
 Lord Palmer-  
 ston's Ministry.

likely to be more effective than one in which each individual feels a right to uphold his own particular view. The head of such a ministry should be a man of unusual tact and readiness of resource, so to mould the measures brought before the Cabinet as to attract support rather than to afford room for criticism and opposition. Of necessity the work of such a Cabinet under such a leader will be somewhat conservative and somewhat colourless, and its excellences show themselves rather in good administration than in striking legislation. It is thus that the duration of this last Cabinet of Lord Palmerston's long life was distinctly a time of domestic quiet, during which national desires were allowed to grow, but their execution was kept in abeyance till the death of the popular and skilful manager broke the chain which bound together the somewhat discordant elements of the Ministry, and allowed, after a short interval of Opposition, a reconstituted Liberal Party to take possession of the Government and give vigorous expression to the silent growths of the preceding period. The most important member of the Ministry, setting aside the Premier, was Lord John Russell, whose long and consistent career as an advanced Whig gave great weight to his counsels. His name was so indissolubly connected with parliamentary reform, that although he had at one time declared his belief in the final character of the Reform Bill of 1832, his position in the Ministry seemed to afford security that the constantly recurring claims of the reformers would not be neglected. He was, however, essentially a Whig, and not a Radical. The more advanced party looked for the support of their objects to Mr. Gladstone, the Chancellor of the Exchequer. Originally a Conservative, he had formed one of the small band of able men who had followed Sir Robert Peel, and was now devoting himself to the development of the financial schemes of his teacher. His unrivalled mastery of details, and a commanding eloquence which could invest even dry financial statements with interest, peculiarly fitted him for this work. But it was not in the sphere of finance alone that the progressive character of his mind, and the unflagging power of growth which characterised it, made itself felt. Already it was clear that upon many important points he was inclining to accept the Radical creed. It was perhaps his deeply sympathetic character, his rapid comprehension and appreciation of the various points of view from which a question may be regarded, which were the chief source of Mr. Gladstone's influence. He possessed in an extraordinary degree the power of returning to his audience, elaborated and beautified, their own ideas,—and the press rendered

that audience co-extensive with the nation. It was this gift which made him a great democratic statesman. The immature and formless will of the people constantly found in him an exponent of unequalled power, and received from his genius and earnestness the form and life which was necessary for its realisation. But as yet, sitting as he did as the representative of the University of Oxford, somewhat hampered by his old connections and his former utterances, it was only in his financial measures, and in the occasional expression of opinion not reduced to action, that his democratic fire was visible. Thus it happened that the conservative element in the Cabinet, with its determined policy of inaction, was entirely predominant. The acquiescence of the nation in the temporary cessation of active progress was caused in a great degree by the peculiar feeling with which Lord Palmerston was regarded. His courage and light-heartedness, his good-humoured readiness to receive and return the blows of his political enemies, even his very failings, his prejudices, his self-assertion, were so thoroughly English that they rendered him the most popular of Ministers. The mingled respect and liking with which the veteran statesman was regarded induced even ardent reformers to submit to his quiet authority, and to postpone more active measures till age, which was rapidly creeping on him, should compel him to retire from political life.

Perhaps an even more efficient reason for the comparative immobility of domestic legislation is to be found in the great interest of the events which were happening outside the country, attracting of necessity the popular attention away from the country itself, and in the remarkable series of financial measures, which seemed, in their success and in the constant increase of revenue which accompanied them, to set even the most untoward conditions at defiance. Absorbed in the great events going on around it, satisfied with its own growth in material prosperity, the nation was for a time willing to let well alone. But it must not be supposed that the life of progress was checked because it did not show itself in public acts. On all the great subjects which were subsequently to make their appearance as the critical questions of the time—national education, the position of the Church, the relation between capital and labour, compulsory temperance, the rights and wrongs of Ireland, and Parliamentary reform,—public opinion was gradually forming; and the spirit of improvement, checked for a while, was becoming only the stronger from its temporary repression, and was

Interest absorbed in foreign affairs.

ready to burst out in full vehemence when the opportunity should arrive.

But conservative or not in its tendencies, it was impossible for a Cabinet which had made its way to power by the rejection of the Reform Bill of its opponents to avoid attempting to produce a more satisfactory one of its own, and Lord John Russell, who was thoroughly in earnest on this point, early in the Session (March 1) asked leave to bring in such a Bill. It contrasted strongly in its simplicity with the varied and fanciful measure of the late Government. It proposed that an occupation franchise of £10 should be introduced in the counties, that the borough franchise should be lowered to £6, that some 25 boroughs should be partially disfranchised and the vacant seats thus procured distributed among county divisions and larger boroughs. The only new principle contained in the Bill was the representation of minorities in those places which returned three members. But the Bill excited no enthusiasm either within the House or without. The Premier, who would undoubtedly have been glad to allow the question of Parliamentary reform to drop entirely from his programme, absented himself studiously from the House during the debates. The Conservatives had recourse to their old tactics, and threatened to introduce a vast number of amendments in Committee. The Session was drawing to a close without any settlement of the question; and when it appeared that an amendment by Mr. Mackinnon would be carried to postpone consideration of the Bill till after the new census, which, it was argued, would give a better basis of calculation, Lord John Russell, pleading the lateness of the season, withdrew the Bill (June 11); nor did the Government again attempt to grapple with the question. Several times during its long continuance, private members made motions leading to reform, but the Cabinet, encouraged by the general apathy of the nation, was contented to carry on the current business without further efforts at legislation on a large scale.

Failure of  
Russell's Re-  
form Bill.

From this inaction may be excepted the vigorous efforts of Sir Richard Bethell, subsequently Lord Westbury, at reforming the law. He began, as Attorney-General, by introducing a Bill for the improvement of the Bankruptcy Laws, including the appointment of a Chief Judge in bankruptcy so that this branch of the law might be self-contained, and for the removal of the distinction between bankruptcy and insolvency. The Bill met with great opposition, especially from the lawyers in the Upper House, who insisted upon expunging from



the Bill what its author had considered as its most important advantage, the creation of the Chief Judgeship. The amendments of the Lords were rejected by the Commons. But on the suggestion of the Attorney-General, who was anxious that his Bill should not be wholly ruined, a compromise was offered by which the Chief Judgeship was retained. But even this was overruled by the Upper House, and rather than lose the whole advantage of his work, Bethell persuaded the Commons to accept the Bill mutilated as it was. His next measure was the solidification of the Statute Law with regard to criminals. Obsolete and useless Acts of Parliament were expunged, and contradictions removed. But, as Lord Chancellor, Lord Westbury aimed at a much greater and more complete process. He projected the examination and compression of the whole Statute Law, by which he hoped to reduce forty-four folio volumes of Acts of Parliament to ten. And even greater than this was his proposal that an attempt should be made to consolidate and codify the common or unwritten law. Common law consists of a vast number of recorded judicial decisions contained in some 1200 volumes of reports. It was suggested that these should be divided into three sections according to their dates, and thoroughly sifted by competent persons. The Lord Chancellor was unfortunately unable himself to carry on his great scheme. His sharp tongue and sarcastic manner had always rendered him unpopular. Some appointments, in making which he had no doubt been culpably careless, were seized upon with avidity as means of attack. In July 1865 a majority in the House of Commons supported a vote of censure against him, charging him with "a laxity of practice, and a want of caution whereby great encouragement had been given to corrupt practices, and conduct which, even in the absence of any improper motive, was highly reprehensible, and calculated to throw discredit upon the administration of the high offices of state." Lord Westbury naturally thought it necessary under such circumstances to resign, and after an explanation of great dignity, in which he claimed credit for the measures of reform he had proposed, and regretted that he was unable to inaugurate the great measure he had at heart, the formation of a digest of the whole law, he laid down the seals, leaving his unfinished work to his successor.

The Reform Bill was not the only legacy which Lord Palmerston's Government had inherited from its predecessor, and if the Ministry showed no earnest endeavour to carry out the one, no such blame can be attached to the able

Westbury's  
measures of  
Law Reform.

Change in the  
Government  
of India.

administration of Sir Charles Wood with regard to the other. The destruction of the double Government in India proposed by Lord Palmerston's Government at the close of the Mutiny had been carried out during the short administration of Lord Derby. The change was practically a slight one. The power of the Company had already become so nominal that its entire disappearance was a matter rather of words than of facts, yet it involved important questions, and had at least the effect of bringing Indian affairs more prominently before the mind of the public. Its finance, its army, its judicial system, became in turn the subject of great anxiety and warm discussion.

The balance between receipts and expenditure had been nearly attained in the year before the Mutiny. A deficit of £170,000 seemed immaterial, especially as much of the outlay was on public works from which a subsequent return might be expected. But the Mutiny upset all calculations. The year 1857-1858 showed a deficiency of £9,000,000, and the following year a deficiency of £12,000,000; so that even without taking into consideration the compensation claimed for the loss of private property during the Mutiny, the two terrible years had left a deficit of not less than £21,000,000. It was felt not unnaturally to be a question whether India was still to remain entirely separate from the English Exchequer or not, and whether the deficiency existing in its revenue could be supplied wholly from its own resources. Lord Stanley, the Indian Secretary of Lord Derby's Government, without proposing any change in the existing system, which had been to charge the Indian debt on the Indian Exchequer only, hinted in no obscure words that as three-fifths of that debt was held by Europeans and English capitalists, it was a matter of doubt whether it would be possible to continue the separation. The revenue of India had not the same elastic character as the English revenue. It arose from land, and could therefore increase only as new land was cultivated, a slow and uncertain process, or by additions of territory which no man desired; from opium, a precarious and variable source; from salt; and from a few customs duties. The mercantile classes were therefore as a whole scarcely taxed, and thus increased prosperity had little influence upon the revenue. The remaining resource—lessened expenditure—seemed scarcely possible if the present large armaments were to be maintained. For the present all that Lord Stanley suggested was the authorisation of a loan to India of £7,000,000. The loan was granted, but it was obviously only a temporary expedient, and the duty of bringing the finances into order was left

Efforts at  
reform of the  
Indian revenue.

to Lord Palmerston's administration, and to Sir Charles Wood as Indian Secretary. Accordingly, in the autumn of 1859, Mr. James Wilson was appointed financial member of the Legislative Council of India, charged with the duty of attempting an equalisation of income and expenditure. Such a plan he matured, and produced before the Governor-General's Council in India. His scheme included an increase of taxes, a graduated tax upon traders, and an income-tax. His propositions received general approval, but Sir Charles Trevelyan, at that time Governor of Madras, believing that the balance might be obtained by reduction of expenditure, without new taxation, wrote and published a minute to that effect. The publication of such a document could not but be regarded as an act of insubordination, and much as they valued Sir Charles Trevelyan, the Government thought it necessary to recall him, only however to send him out a few years later as financial Minister, with the opportunity of carrying out his own views. Reductions in expenditure, especially in military expenditure, proved possible. £6,800,000 had been withdrawn from this item before the middle of 1861; and conscientious efforts continuing to be directed to financial reform, in 1864 Sir Charles Trevelyan was able at length to show a surplus. The additional taxes had little to do with this result. The proceeds of the tax on traders proved quite insignificant, and the income-tax was so distasteful to the inhabitants of India, that at last Lord Northbrook, during his Viceroyalty (in 1872), thought it better to abolish it. It has been chiefly by means of retrenchment that any advance has been made towards producing a well-balanced Indian Budget.

In close connection with the efforts to bring the finances of India into order was the reorganisation of the army. The suppression of the Company had implied that the Indian army should be taken over by the Government. The feeling against this change of masters was so strong, and was exhibited in so insubordinate a manner, that many of the European regiments were broken up. The movement was so general as to be spoken of as the white mutiny. It became a question whether it was desirable to keep up a local army as distinguished from the Queen's army. The old Indian servants who formed the Council in London, and of whom Sir John Lawrence was one, were strongly in favour of preserving the local force. But Sir Charles Wood, probably with better judgment, overruled their opinion, and determined that the armies should be amalgamated, and the distinction between Indian troops and Queen's troops abolished. At the same time, however, a large native

Reorganisation  
of the Indian  
army.

force was still maintained, officered by men volunteering for permanent service in India.

It has been mentioned that the inaction of the Government in domestic legislation was partly caused by the distraction of public attention in foreign affairs. Among these may be reckoned the disturbed condition of Europe, wars and rumours of wars in the East, and the great American contest with its attendant results on English trade.

Interest in  
foreign  
politics.

Lord Palmerston had entered upon office in the midst of the Italian war, and his sympathies were entirely with the French Emperor as he pursued his successful march from Montebello to Solferino. It seemed as though he would fulfil the programme with which he had started, and would "sweep the Austrians from the North of Italy up to the Adriatic." But Napoleon himself had no intention of thus completing his work. There is no doubt that he found his difficulties greater than he at first expected. The resistance of the Austrians had been firm, and the losses of his army proportionately large. The four great fortresses known as the Quadrilateral lay still before him. The attitude of Prussia and Germany was threatening, and even Russia, which had told him that it could not unmoved see Austria come victorious from the war, displayed no alacrity in assisting in the defeat of that Power. Moreover, the time had come for Napoleon to repeat with regard to Austria the game he had already played with Russia, and purchase by a show of generosity the friendship of his conquered rival. He applied to England, urging the Ministers to suggest an armistice. The terms he proposed were the cession of Lombardy to Sardinia, and the establishment of Venetia as a separate State under an Archduke. But Lord Palmerston declined to be used as a cat's-paw to enable the Emperor to escape from his difficulties. Venetia was not yet conquered, and it was not likely that Austria would yield it without a further struggle; and as the Premier wrote to Lord John Russell, "the scheme throws wholly out of the question the wishes of the Italians themselves, and we are asked to propose to the belligerents a parcelling out of the nations of Italy as if we had any authority to dispose of them." Napoleon had therefore to find his own way out of the difficulty, and on the 8th of July 1860 an armistice was concluded, and a meeting arranged with the Emperor of Austria. It was held at Villafranca on the 11th. The agreement arrived at was even less advantageous to Italy than that which Lord Palmerston had rejected. Lombardy was to be given up, but the

Napoleon's war  
in Italy.



Duchies were to be restored to their late rulers ; and Venetia, still remaining a part of the Austrian Empire, was to become one of a confederation of Italian States under the Presidency of the Pope. There seems to have been some sort of verbal arrangement that the restoration of the Dukes was not to be effected by force. The preliminaries thus sketched were to be completed at Zurich. The armistice was a terrible blow to the well-wishers of Italy. Cavour at once resigned. Lord Palmerston expressed his deep disapprobation of the terms in a strong letter addressed to Count Persigny, the French Minister, in which he showed unanswerably that the admission of Austria to authorised interference in the affairs of Central Italy rendered its position there even more dangerous than it had previously been. He even went so far as to communicate officially to Vienna, in August, the opinion that the employment of either French or Austrian forces to put down the clearly expressed will of Italy would not be justifiable. But grievous though the disappointment was, the language Napoleon used was perhaps more true than he intended when he declared that he had at least rendered Italy henceforth mistress of her own destinies. Italy took him at his word. The spirit which the war had roused was too strong to be subdued, and the Italians themselves established that Northern Kingdom he had falsely promised them.

For Italy had not been idle during the war. Though in the South the critical time was postponed, the seeds of future freedom were laid when in May Francis II. ascended the throne of Naples, rejected all the advances of Sardinia, and determined to follow to its inevitably fatal result the despotic conduct of his father. But Leopold of Tuscany, pursuing the same course, was driven from his capital, and, together with the Duke of Modena, was forced to take refuge in the Austrian camp, while the Duchess of Parma and her son escaped to Switzerland ; and even from Bologna, in the States of the Church, the Cardinal Legate had found it necessary to withdraw ; for the Austrians having been compelled to concentrate their troops, the fall of the rulers they had propped up followed as an inevitable result. The provisional governments of the Duchies at once placed themselves at the command of Sardinia. Victor Emmanuel accepted the responsibility, and in Florence, Parma, Modena, and even in Bologna, Commissioners were ruling in his name.

The unexpected conclusion of the war, and the terms of the armistice, threatened again to subvert this arrangement. Victor Emmanuel,

*Progress of  
Italy during  
the war.*

though bitterly disappointed, and in spite of Cavour's protest, accepted the armistice, and it was not without a vast amount of diplomatic intrigue that the hopes of the Italians were at length realised. With complete unanimity they refused to receive back the rulers of the Duchies, and quietly and calmly carried on provisional governments in the name of the Sardinian king. Meanwhile, Napoleon found that he had made a mistake, and as usual had recourse to England to get him out of the scrape, pressing eagerly for a Congress which might override the stipulations of Villafranca. The real question at issue was whether these stipulations for the restoration of the Dukes should be forced upon the Italians or not. In the view of the English Government, if a Congress was summoned, its duty was to secure the interests of the Italian people, and not those of this or that ruler. They consented therefore to the Congress only on the definite understanding that all their influence would be directed to prevent force being employed for the purpose of imposing upon the Italians any form of government or constitution. With a view to secure this object, Lord Palmerston contemplated a preliminary arrangement between England, France, and Sardinia. No such alliance however proved necessary ; Austria yielded to the determination of the Western Powers, and the Italian States having declared their wishes by unmistakable majorities, were annexed to the Sardinian monarchy. A Northern Kingdom of some 11,000,000 inhabitants was thus formed.

Formation of  
the Italian  
Northern  
Kingdom.

To all appearance England had been co-operating with France in this matter. But it was open to Napoleon to say that its interference had thwarted his policy ; it had certainly rendered the restoration of the Italian Dukes impossible, and had established on his frontier a more important Power than he had contemplated. Even before the battle of Solferino the blot of selfish ambition which stained his Italian policy had been visible. He had already suggested that Savoy should be annexed to France. The disapprobation with which the suggestion was received had induced him to withdraw it ; but now he again raised the demand, asserting that it was necessary for his protection, and that as the English had been instrumental in establishing the Power which he dreaded they had no right to object. Unable to reply to this argument the English Government yielded. And Cavour, who had returned to office, thinking that the great advance made towards his prime object—a united Italy—was worth the sacrifice, braved the bitter anger of the Italian patriots and gave his consent to the cession,

Annexation of  
Savoy to  
France.

upon condition that the will of the people of Savoy was first taken. Their vote proved in favour of France ; and Savoy, with Nice, became part of the French Empire.

A measure such as this tended largely to increase the mistrust which even Lord Palmerston was beginning to feel towards the Emperor, especially as the cession contained territories which had hitherto been included in the guaranteed neutrality of Switzerland. The failure of all efforts to induce Napoleon either to give a new frontier to Switzerland, or to allow the adjacent provinces to be neutralised, seemed to throw a threatening light upon the policy of aggrandisement he was pursuing. The dread of his future intentions was most strongly felt in Germany, where it was not unreasonably thought that once embarked on the business of rectifying frontiers, he would speedily be led to claim the Rhine Provinces ; and in England, where his desertion of Italy had created a profound impression, while his persistent effort to increase his power on the sea was regarded as a covert threat. But in Italy itself the feeling against him was most pronounced. Venetia had been left in the hands of her Austrian tyrants ; the misgovernment of Rome was still upheld by French troops ; the ancient home of the Sardinian monarchy had just been taken from it. Help from France could no longer be hoped for by the Italian patriots ; whatever was done must be henceforward done by themselves. The South of Italy, under Francis of Naples, was in a worse condition even than the North had been under its Austrian rulers, and Francis refused all advice. In vain France and England urged upon him the necessity of reforms ; in vain the idea was suggested to him of close alliance with Sardinia, and the solution of the Italian question by the formation of two kingdoms of North and South Italy. In the spring of 1860 dissatisfaction, fed no doubt by the events in the north, came to open expression, and insurrection broke out in Sicily. An opportunity seemed to be offered for the armed intervention of Sardinia. But at this time the discussions as to the cession of Savoy were still going on. It was the business of Cavour to secure the advantages he had won and to risk nothing by overhaste. Jealousy of an increased Italian kingdom threatened at once to bring the French against him. A war of independence could scarcely avoid interfering with the Papal rights which France upheld, and the very question at present in the course of settlement proved the selfishness of French help, and that the interests of the Empire rather than the interests of Italy were likely to be considered. With true prudence the great statesman

General  
mistrust of  
Napoleon.

refused at first to move. It was not even the Italian Governments but the Italian people who must henceforth help themselves. Garibaldi, the old defender of Rome, and the leader of the volunteers in the late war, smarted under the separation of his birthplace, Nice, from the Italy for which he had so earnestly fought ; and, trusting to enthusiasm rather than to political combination, he secretly equipped at Genoa two steamers, and with a force of about 1000 volunteers embarked for Sicily. Landing on the 14th of May, in little more than two months he had entirely overthrown the Neapolitan Government in the island. By the end of July Messina, the last city of importance, had fallen into his hands. In June the King of Naples had offered to retrace his steps, to grant a constitution to his country, and to ally himself to Sardinia. The offer came too late. Success in Sicily had roused the Neapolitan feeling too far to allow of any such arrangement, and in August Garibaldi proclaimed his intention of carrying his arms across the straits into Naples. His movement met with extraordinary success. Though his 20,000 men were badly disciplined and badly provided, and could scarcely have withstood the opposition of disciplined forces, the disaffection of the Neapolitan army prevented any such opposition from being offered. Early in September he entered Naples in triumph, and the King was compelled to retire with such troops as remained faithful to him to the fortress of Gaeta.

Garibaldi's  
success against  
Naples.

Cavour had now a difficult game to play. There can be little doubt that he had secretly favoured Garibaldi's movements. But the extraordinary success which had attended the partisan chief, and the enthusiasm he had roused, threatened the gravest dangers. The General had no scruple in declaring that he would not check his course till Rome and Venetia were freed, and he could lay the crown of united Italy at Victor Emmanuel's feet.

Triumph of  
Cavour's  
policy.

Full of dislike for Cavour and his diplomatic ways, he even despatched a messenger to Turin demanding his dismissal. Joint action on the part of the soldier and politician was impossible. But Garibaldi, left to himself, would inevitably shock the interests of France in Rome, precipitate a war with Austria in Venetia, and bring upon Italy the disapprobation of every Court in Europe. The only chance of avoiding such disaster appeared to be to produce such an arrangement as would bring Garibaldi, if he advanced, into collision with the troops of Victor Emmanuel. At this crisis Cavour took the courageous step of breaking through the trammels of international law. He used as a pretext the formation by the Pope of a mercenary



army of foreigners for the purpose of maintaining his temporal power. Cavour demanded their instant dismissal, and meeting, as he expected, with refusal, poured his troops at once into Umbria and the marshes. The Sardinian troops were everywhere successful; Lamoricière, the French General of the Papal forces, was defeated and shut up in Ancona, and when the Italian fleet appeared off the city, rendering flight impossible, he surrendered. In less than three weeks the whole of the Papal troops were captured or disbanded, and the Piedmontese army moved across the road of the Garibaldians as they advanced towards Capua and Gaeta. The bold step which Cavour had taken had thus succeeded. The further advance of irresponsible conquest was rendered impossible. But it was so grave an infraction of the ordinary rules of international action, that Cavour thought it necessary to defend it in a circular despatch of great ability sent to the various Courts. His explanation of the difficulties of Sardinia, and the necessity which he felt, even for the protection of Europe, of preventing the Italian movement from degenerating into anarchy, met with sympathy in England, a sympathy tempered only by a fear lest France should again find in Italy a means of aggrandisement. An assurance on the part of Cavour that he would never again summon French arms to his assistance, that the rumoured surrender to France of the island of Sardinia was not dreamt of, and that he would restrain Garibaldi from assaulting Venetia, satisfied the minds of the English Government. The French Emperor expressed his disapprobation by withdrawing his ambassador from Turin, strengthening his troops in Rome, and assisting the Neapolitan King in Gaeta by the presence of his fleet. But the principle of the sovereignty of the people with regard to the choice of their rulers was too important to him to allow of active interference. He could scarcely deny to the people of Naples and the Papal States the right on the exercise of which he rested his claims to Savoy. The other Courts of Europe protested against Cavour's action, and the Pope lavished excommunications on the invaders of his territory. With the full sympathy of England alone Cavour proceeded on his course. In October he demanded from Parliament powers to annex, if they wished it, the Provinces of Southern and Central Italy. For the present he proposed to postpone further action with regard to Rome and Venetia, for the sake of securing what had already been won. A check in the advance of the insurrectionary troops fortunately gave time for this more regular intervention, and when, on the 26th of October, Victor Emmanuel and Garibaldi met at the little town of Teano, the meeting was

hearty, and the General without difficulty handed over to the King the completion of his work. It is true that he at first urged that he should be appointed Dictator of Naples for two years, and that Cavour should be dismissed. But he yielded to the straightforward sense of the King, and withdrew to his home in the island of Caprera. In February 1861, the French fleet having been withdrawn, Gaeta yielded, and on the 18th of that month the first Italian Parliament, drawn from a nation of 22,000,000 of inhabitants, assembled at Turin, and Victor Emmanuel assumed the title of King of Italy.

Victor  
Emmanuel  
King of Italy.  
Feb. 1861.

The conduct of England during this difficult crisis had on the whole been successful. Its sympathy had no doubt been of great use to the Italians; and although Lord John Russell's strongly expressed objection to any attack upon Venetia had given rise to some complaint, the country had been successfully guided in peace through a difficult time, and the friendship of the new Kingdom of Italy secured. But this success had not been gained without a considerable shock to the friendship between England and France; for the course of events had seemed to throw a somewhat sinister light upon the views of the Emperor. His restless conduct, his absorption of Savoy and Nice, the want of consistency which was observed between his assertions and his acts, coupled with his well-known determination to destroy, if possible, the Treaty arrangements of 1815, had excited a strong belief in the probability of an invasion from France. Lord Palmerston himself shared the apprehension, or at least thought it necessary by demonstrations of strength to check such an idea, if it existed, in the Emperor's mind. For this purpose he gave every support in his power to the establishment of volunteers. The movement, sanctioned in May 1859 under the Conservative Government, had spread with great rapidity. Before a year was over 180,000 men were enrolled in the rifle and artillery corps, of whom 40,000 were stated to be fit to take their work in the battlefield, and 15,000 from the capital alone were reviewed in Hyde Park by the Queen. But Lord Palmerston insisted upon preparations of a more costly character than the creation of a citizen army. In the first place the army and navy estimates had been largely increased. From £12,500,000 in 1859 the army estimates had in 1860 risen to £14,000,000, for the payment of 240,000 men; while the navy, which in the former year had cost a little more than £9,000,000, received in 1860 nearly £12,000,000. The case made out for these increases was a good one, if England was to compete in its

Preparations  
in England  
against French  
invasion.

armaments with foreign powers. For the day of large armaments was beginning. European troubles had called for the formation of large armies. France alone had 600,000 men actually in arms. The case of the fleet was even stronger. The introduction of steam had practically rendered the reconstruction of all navies necessary, and in the race England had not kept that forward place which it had always been our policy to maintain. In 1860 there was but little difference in the strength of the steam fleets of France, of Russia, and of England. And if, as even Mr. Cobden had suggested, where the French had two ships England ought to have three, a large outlay was certainly necessary. But Lord Palmerston was not content even with this. If our naval supremacy was to be maintained, its citadels, which were the dockyards, must, he thought, be secured from the unexpected assaults which steam power, in the hands of our enemies, rendered possible. A Commission had been sitting upon this point, and in accordance with its report the Premier recommended an outlay during the next four years of no less than £9,000,000 upon the complete fortification of the chief naval arsenals.

The conduct of England, in the difficulties which arose in the North of Europe, was by no means so successful as it had proved in Italy.

*Difficulties in  
the North of  
Europe.*

The Ministry was in fact confronted by the same sort of national aspiration as that which, in the case of Italy, it had been able to support. The national feeling of Germany had been of late years constantly rising. It is true that, unlike Italy, it was not suffering from any foreign occupation, or any national tyranny. But it was suffering deeply from the feeling of the political weakness which was the result of its constitution and of its subdivision among many sovereign states, and was longing for some form of national unity. Unable, in the presence of the rival claims to leadership of the two great Powers of Prussia and Austria, to arrive at any satisfactory system of united government, it could at least give an expression to its desires by attempting to bring into more immediate connection with the central body any fragments of the German nationality which were broken off from it. It was this which lay at the bottom of the lengthy and intricate Sleswig-Holstein question. And although England saw with extreme displeasure the attacks of a vast and powerful people upon a little kingdom such as Denmark, attacks which could scarcely be regarded as other than wanton aggressions, it was impossible to check the strong German feeling upon the subject, especially as both Austria and Prussia sought, by supporting the feeling, to establish new claims for the leadership which each desired.

That Prussia was already in the powerful hands of Bismarck was enough to prevent success from attending any intervention, which, while shrinking, as was well known, from the employment of force, confined itself to suggestions, advice, and threats.

The Sleswig-Holstein question, which had played so large a part in the difficulties of 1848, had again come to a crisis. An effort had been made in 1852 to complete the probably impossible task of satisfying at once the desire of those who sought the autonomy of the German Duchies and their indissoluble union with Sleswig, and the national determination of the Danish Government to maintain the kingdom in its integrity. On the one hand negotiations had been carried on, in the course of which Denmark had given a promise to Prussia and Austria that Sleswig should not be incorporated with the Kingdom of Denmark proper, and that, in the new constitution it was establishing no part of the Kingdom should be subordinate to another. On the other hand, by the Treaty of London (Dec. 30, 1852) the succession to the Danish monarchy had been arranged, and its integrity sanctioned by most of the great Powers of Europe. Attempts to give effect to its promises, on the part of Denmark, had hitherto proved unavailing. Again and again the German Diet had declared itself dissatisfied with the arrangements suggested. A plan, which it must be confessed was clumsy enough, for establishing in the four Provinces of Denmark four separate equal Parliaments, which in matters connected with the general monarchy should be called on to sanction identical Bills, was put forward by Lord Russell, but rejected by the Danes. At length, in March 1863, an ordinance was published, and thrown into form by a constitution in November of the same year, securing what appeared to be the completest self-government for Holstein. But the very completeness of the self-rule of one of the Duchies seemed to imply the closer connection of the other with the main body of the State. Upon this ground the German Confederation, and what was more important, the great Powers Prussia and Austria, protested against the arrangement, and proceeded so far as to threaten "Federal execution," that is, occupation by the Federal troops, unless the constitution was immediately abrogated.

Things had reached this point when the sudden death of Frederick VII. of Denmark occurred. It would have seemed proper that the stipulations of the London Treaty should have been at once carried out, and that Christian IX., the appointed heir of the Glücksberg branch of the royal family, should immediately take possession of the throne, and with it of the Duchy of

The Sleswig-Holstein question.

Death of the King of Denmark. Nov. 1863.



Holstein. But, taking advantage of the national feeling in Germany, and in Holstein itself, a pretender appeared in the person of Frederick of Augustenberg, a member of an elder branch of the royal family, whose father at the time of the London Treaty had abdicated his rights. His cause was warmly espoused both by the Diet and by the Liberal Opposition in the Prussian Chambers, at that time in the majority. In December Saxon and Hanoverian troops on the part of the Confederation entered Holstein, and in January the federal commissioners established Frederick in the Ducal Government at Kiel. But the Diet of the Confederation was not allowed to keep the matter in its hands. Bismarck had lately been called to the head of the ministry in Berlin. Believing, like the King his master, that military strength was necessary for Prussia, he had fallen out completely with the Chambers, which refused the supplies he considered necessary. He was regarded at the moment as the arch-opponent of all liberal advance, even in the direction of a united Germany. It was not so. Bismarck desired that unity as earnestly as the wildest theorist. But he was before all things a practical statesman, and was determined that Prussia should stand at the head of the nation when united. His experience as representative of Prussia at the Frankfort Diet had taught him that the chief obstacle to Prussian advance was the influence of Austria upon the smaller States, and its consequent command of the majority of the Diet. To follow the lead of the Diet would be merely to strengthen the hands of Austria. To induce Austria to adopt a policy apparently in opposition to the Diet would be to weaken the influence of his enemy. He determined therefore from the first to treat the Sleswig-Holstein question as an international rather than as a federal matter. He persuaded Austria to join in this line of action, and to demand, under pain of war, from the King of Denmark, the fulfilment of its promises made in 1852. Leaving on one side the disputed claim for the Sleswig-Holstein succession, he proposed in the Diet that the immediate withdrawal of the Constitution of November with regard to Sleswig should be required, and, when this was rejected, in company with Austria he took the war into his own hands.

It was of course impossible that a little kingdom such as Denmark could withstand the invasion of two great Powers. In spite of the gallant defence of the fortress of Dippel, the invaders carried all before them upon land, though suffering some losses at sea, and Jutland, with the exception of the extreme north, fell into their power. The only hope for the Danes lay in the interference of the

neutral Powers, parties to the London Treaty, and Lord Russell at once attempted to assemble them in Conference. At length upon the 28th of April the Conference met in London. An armistice for a month was agreed to, and on the 12th of May the real business of the Conference began. It at once became evident that there was but little hope of saving Denmark from heavy losses. For the Prussian Plenipotentiary repudiated the Treaty of 1852, which was the guarantee of the integrity of Denmark. He took up the position which Bismarck had from the first occupied, declared that it was an international quarrel between Denmark and the great German Powers, and that war having broken out, the Treaties between them were abrogated. The neutral Powers, on their side, held that the Treaty of London still existed. It was however plain that unless the neutral Powers were ready to enforce their view, their arguments would be but of slight avail. Suggestions were indeed made for the maintenance of the union of Holstein with Sleswig, either still connected with the Danish monarchy or freed from that connection. But as both these plans involved the surrender to Germany either directly or indirectly of a large part of Sleswig occupied by Danes, and of another part where Danes and Germans were mingled, they were at once rejected. Lord Russell then produced the English suggestion. It was a compromise, and certainly must have convinced the Danes of the futility of reliance upon English aid. Lord Russell gave up the problem of harmonising provincial self-government with national unity, and advised, for the avoidance of future disputes, that the Danes should yield absolutely Holstein, Lauenburg, and the southern or German part of Sleswig.

Failure of the  
London  
Conference.  
June 1864.

The practical withdrawal of English assistance left the Danes helpless. Henceforward it was a mere question of boundaries, of how much or how little they should surrender. Yet they had all along declared that there were limits of concession beyond which they could not go. While therefore accepting Lord Russell's frontier, they positively refused to entertain the idea of surrendering the Danish part of Sleswig included in the counter-proposition of the Germans. They would not even allow of arbitration on the point. The feeling with which the Danes accepted the part forced upon them was shown by the speech of the King at the opening of the Rigsrad in June 1864: "We have recently learnt how little the clearest right reckons in Europe, and how isolated we are. We therefore acceded to the painful sacrifice of the country south of the Schley; the enemy demands more, but we refuse, being

Denmark  
deserted and  
crushed.

conscious that the people are with us. May God grant that in a certain place (meaning England) the sympathy for us may grow into active support." Hostilities were renewed in June. Again resistance proved hopeless. The Isle of Alsen was taken, and Fredericia abandoned, and without allies Denmark found herself compelled to yield. A Treaty of Peace was concluded at Vienna, by which the three Duchies, including the islands belonging to Sleswig, were ceded to Prussia and Austria.

The Treaty was pregnant with great results for Germany, for out of it arose the contest for supremacy between the two great Powers, Austria and Prussia, which was closed in 1866 upon the battlefield of Sadowa.

To the English Government it brought unpopularity and disgrace. The English people had been deeply moved by the struggle of the little kingdom in the grasp of its powerful oppressors. The Ministers on whom they relied to give expression to their desires had contented themselves with a bustling and officious interference, an interchange of hard words, to be closed only by a meek surrender, and a complete diplomatic defeat. The conduct of Lord Russell, Lord Derby thought might be best expressed by the words "meddle and muddle," while Disraeli found in the negotiations ground for a motion of want of confidence of a more than usually stinging character. "The course pursued by Government has failed to maintain," he said, "their avowed policy of upholding the independence and integrity of Denmark, and has lowered the just influence of the country in the capitals of Europe, and therefore diminished the securities for peace." It was only by the skill of Lord Palmerston, who, passing lightly over the points at issue, expatiated on the financial triumphs of the Government, rather than on the merits of the case, that a scanty majority was won for the Ministry.

It was not only in the affairs of Denmark that the diplomacy of the Government met with a severe rebuff. Early in the year 1863 an act of tyranny on the part of the Russian police drove Poland to rebellion. The conscription for the army, which under any circumstances presses heavily upon a people, had been used in Poland as a means of political repression. In one night more than 2000 men of the middle class had been seized and forced into military service. It was an act described by Lord Napier, the English Ambassador at St. Petersburg, as "a design to make a clean sweep of the revolutionary youth of Poland, to shut up the most energetic and dangerous spirits in the restraints of the Russian army; simply a plan

Consequent  
discredit of the  
English  
Ministry.

Insurrection in  
Poland. 1863.

to kidnap the insurrection and carry it off to Siberia or the Caucasus." The Grand Duke Constantine was at that time Viceroy of Poland. It was known that he intended to make this violent use of the conscription, and a central committee had already been formed, and had issued calls upon the people to resist. When the blow was struck this advice was taken, and the insurrection broke out in several parts of Poland at once. The number of the insurgents was small compared with that of the army opposed to them, but the whole country was involved in a network of conspiracy. The combatants assembled rapidly in the woods, cut off detachments, won or lost engagements, and disappeared from the field, only to reappear suddenly with similar results elsewhere. The people however proved unable to resist the large forces which the Czar could bring against them. By degrees the insurrection was suppressed, with circumstances of violence and cruelty which, combined with the immediate cause of the rising, excited in Europe the strongest sympathy for the oppressed Poles, and abhorrence for the Russian Government. Bismarck and Prussia were included in the general disapproval. He had joined in a convention with Russia by which the troops of the oppressor had right of passage through the Prussian territories, and the fugitive Poles were to be given up.

Again England thought fit to come forward as the champion of oppressed nationality; and the Government seemed fully to sympathise in the expressions of disapproval of the action of Russia, which in debate after debate found utterance in the two Houses of Parliament. But again when it came to action the Ministry laid itself open to that failure which must generally attend diplomacy unsupported by force; again the Foreign Office appeared criticising, arguing, and lecturing without result. It took its stand upon the Vienna Treaties of 1815, which, according to its interpretation, placed Poland in the hands of Russia upon the condition of its receiving a national constitution—a condition which had been flagrantly disregarded. Lord Russell even went so far as to lay down six points, embodying a perfect amnesty and complete constitutional arrangements, as the basis of discussion at a Congress of the signatories of the Vienna Treaties which he proposed to call. The Russian Minister, politely enough, but very firmly, refused to listen to such suggestions, although they were supported in some degree both by France and Austria. Sure indeed that no armed intervention was intended, for even the most violent assaults in the English Parliament were coupled with declarations in favour of peaceful inter

The futile  
remonstrance  
of England.



vention only, he had no difficulty in assuming a high tone. He declared that the Czar had always had the happiness of the Poles at heart, that some at least of the points suggested had been already granted, that it was false to suppose after the fashion of England that one sort of government suited every country, and that before any concessions could be considered order must be restored. The insurrection, he declared, was the work not of the Poles themselves, who were well affected and improving in prosperity, but of reckless agitators supported by the revolutionists of all countries, who were pressing on a propaganda of their views under the influence of an irresistible terrorism. That there was some truth in this assertion can scarcely be denied. The position taken up by the English Government, the *via media* of liberal constitutionalism which it always recommended, is difficult to maintain. The Treaties of 1815 had been an attempt to re-establish, with some attention to new liberal doctrines, the old system of dynastic rule. Every attempt to encourage the growing feeling of nationality is inevitably a blow aimed against that system. Of necessity those who have supported the attempt have found themselves in alliance with the most vigorous and determined opponents of the system, the leaders of revolutionary thought. It is not always that a great and commanding statesman such as Cavour is to be found capable at once of using and dominating his dangerous allies. By falling back upon the Treaties of 1815 to support a national movement, Lord Russell was in fact taking up an untenable position, and as the breach of treaty should logically lead to war, he was laying England open, unless indeed war was intended, to the very complete rebuff which it encountered. It may also be doubted whether the knowledge that foreign nations are sympathising with them, and that negotiations are on foot which may perhaps lead to armed assistance, does not excite in insurgents hope and determination to continue a course which only ends in their own destruction.

With various results, and various degrees of success, the Government had at least succeeded, amid the complications of Europe, in keeping England in peace. It was not, however, able to avoid some wars of secondary importance which seem inseparable from the wide spread of its Empire.

The Chinese War, which had been brought to a conclusion as it was hoped by the Treaty of Tientsin in 1858, had broken out in an exaggerated form in the following year. Mr. Bruce, the brother of Lord Elgin, had been appointed Minister Plenipotentiary under the Treaty, which had stipulated that a British

✓ War in China.  
1859.

Embassy should be established at Peking. It had been thought wiser to waive this last condition, and while preserving the right of visiting Peking as occasion required to establish the British Embassy at Shanghai. But it was Mr. Bruce's duty to proceed first to the capital for the purpose of exchanging ratifications of the Treaty ; and the extreme dislike of the Chinese to treat with foreign nations upon terms of equality rendered it probable that they would have recourse to every shift to avoid this visit. The French and English plenipotentiaries (for the nations were acting in common) were therefore supplied with a considerable escort of gun-boats under the command of Admiral Hope. When the allied squadron arrived off the mouth of the Peiho river, it was found that the forts destroyed in the previous year had been reconstructed and much strengthened, and fresh booms and obstructions placed across the river. As all demands for the removal of these obstacles were refused, the Admiral was instructed to force them. But the squadron was not sufficiently strong for the purpose. It encountered a powerful and furious cannonade, and several of the gun-boats were sunk or disabled. An attempt to take the forts by landing a body of men failed disastrously. The assailants had to wade through mud up to their waist, and as they straggled forward were exposed to an overwhelming fire ; their scaling ladders were smashed or left sticking in the mud ; and though a little band succeeded in pushing on to the further side of the last ditch by which their course was obstructed, the troops were compelled to fall back with a loss of a third of their whole number, including three-fourths of the officers who had landed.

Defeat of the  
Chinese.  
June 1859.

A more disastrous failure could scarcely have happened, not so much on account of the immediate effects, as because the necessity of restoring their *prestige* drove England and France to one of those exhibitions of force against a weak and semi-barbarous people which add so little to the credit or honour of great nations. Lord Elgin and Baron Gros resumed their position as plenipotentiaries for the two countries, and Sir Hope Grant and General Montauban were placed in command of a considerable body of troops, French, English, and Indian, to insist upon the execution of the late treaty, and obtain reparation for the repulse encountered. Apology, and the restoration of guns or material captured, the admission of the Western Ministers to Peking, and the ratification of the Treaty of Tientsin, with an indemnity of 4,000,000 taels, were the terms laid down for immediate acceptance. The ultimatum was absolutely rejected, and in August

1860, the combined fleets and armies proceeded to force their way to the capital. Not without desperate fighting, the Treachery of the Chinese. forts were taken, and Tientsin reached, whence it was determined to advance to Tangchou, a few miles from Peking, and there, and there only, to treat. As the army approached, Mr. Parkes and Mr. Wade, Lord Elgin's secretaries, went forward and met the Chinese commissioners. An agreement was arrived at by which the army was to halt within five miles of the city, whither the ambassadors should then repair and sign the convention. Mr. Parkes and his comrades rode back to the place appointed to show the troops their camping-ground, were astonished to find it already occupied by a large Chinese army, and hastened again to the High Commissioners to demand the meaning of this breach of faith. Meanwhile the army on arriving at the appointed ground found itself in presence of the Chinese forces. Sir Hope Grant, apprehensive of the safety of the Englishmen who were within the Chinese lines, attempted to avoid a collision, but information that the escort attending the European emissaries had been treacherously assaulted, and a French officer murdered, induced him to put an end to his delay. He attacked and defeated the Chinese. Mr. Parkes and those with him had on their return to Tangchou been seized, some of them hurried up the country where they were barbarously murdered, Mr. Parkes himself with Mr. Loch being confined with every indignity in the foul common prison at Peking. Lord Elgin of course refused to negotiate unless the prisoners were restored, and allowed three days for their surrender and the signature and completion of the Treaty. As the Emperor's brother, Prince Kung, who was superintending the action of the Chinese, continued to refuse his demands, on the 6th of October the army advanced, and captured and pillaged the summer palace, which was filled with vast wealth of rich manufactures and curiosities. The stroke was so far successful that Mr. Parkes and the other prisoners confined in Peking were two days afterwards released; and when every disposition had been made for the bombardment of the capital, the Chinese lost heart and surrendered the city, which was at once occupied by the allied troops. The barbarous treatment to which the prisoners were subjected then first became known, and Lord Elgin thought it necessary to order the complete destruction of the summer palace, and to demand the immediate payment of a considerable indemnity for the murdered men. Complete success of the English. The opposition of the Chinese was so completely broken, Oct. 1860. that no further hesitation was shown; and on the 24th of October

a convention was signed by which apology was made for the obstruction of the river in the preceding June; the Treaty of Tientsin completely ratified, the war indemnity being doubled; the Port of Tientsin opened to British trade; and a small territory in the Province of Canton ceded to the English to be held as a dependency of Hong-Kong. On the exchange of ratifications, the allied forces evacuated the city and withdrew.

England was involved also in brief hostilities with Japan. The policy of that country was even more exclusive than that of China. Previous to 1858 the trade had been limited to the Dutch, who occupied an island in the Bay of Yokohama, beyond which they were not allowed to pass. But in that year, on his way home from concluding the Treaty of Tientsin, Lord Elgin signed at Yeddo a treaty of commerce and friendship with the Tikoon or Governor of Japan. By this, in the course of the next five years, five ports were to be opened to British subjects, a diplomatic agent was allowed to reside in Yeddo, and consular agents in the other open towns. Although the friendship was cemented by the visit to England of Ambassadors from Japan in 1862, the jealousy of the natives continued, and it was found necessary to remove the seat of the English Embassy from Yeddo to Yokohama. Mr. Richardson, a member of the Embassy, and some friends were riding upon a road where by treaty foreigners were allowed to go, when a "Damio," or noble, and his suite came past them. Though the Englishmen withdrew to give him room, the native soldiers fell upon them and murdered Mr. Richardson. This was on the 14th September 1862. As soon as possible after the event the English Minister demanded £100,000 as compensation from the Tikoon, and £25,000 from the Prince of Satsuma, the Damio implicated. The Tikoon acknowledged his responsibility, and paid the £100,000 with a full apology. But the Prince refused to pay the indemnity, and after the lapse of some months, during which hostility began to show itself, and the ports were closed to Europeans, the English agent called upon the Admiral of the station to proceed against Kagosima, the capital of the refractory Damio. The Admiral by way of reprisal seized some Japanese steamers, upon which batteries from the shore opened a heavy fire upon the English ships. The fire was returned, the palace bombarded, and unfortunately the greater part of the town burnt. Upon this resistance ceased, the Prince yielded, promising to apprehend and punish the offenders, and the Japanese Government again opened all the ports with the exception of Yokohama.

War in Japan.  
1862.

Murder of Mr.  
Richardson.





Another little war in 1864 nearly produced a Ministerial crisis.

War in  
Ashantee.  
1864.

At the instigation of the Governor of Cape Coast Castle on the African Gold Coast, an expedition was organised against the King of Ashantee, who had made an attack on the friendly tribe of Fantees. The pestilential character of the country worked havoc among the English troops, and the expedition returned without having effected anything, at a cost of many lives and much money. The Government was assailed for having carelessly neglected the proper precautions, and a motion by Sir John Hay, which was practically a motion of censure, was lost only by the narrow majority of seven. The feeling with which the ineffectual diplomacy in Europe, coupled with the somewhat hasty assertion of British rights against semi-barbarous people, was regarded by one section of the people is illustrated by the tone of the debate on this motion. "The responsibility lies," said Sir John Hay, "on the Cabinet, the men who had betrayed Denmark and truckled to Germany, who had convulsed China and devastated Japan, who ten years ago had sent a British army to perish of want and cold in the Crimean winter, and had now sent some hundreds of British troops to perish of hunger, thirst, fever and want of shelter, in the burning plains and pestilential swamps of Central Africa." But the disapprobation was chiefly a party feeling. There is no reason to suppose that the Opposition would have acted on any different principle had they been in power. They had again and again declared that war in Europe was impossible, and it is the unfortunate necessity of our position in close contact through our trade with barbarous and semi-barbarous nations, that we should at times assume the attitude of the bully, and employ force, the only argument likely to prove effective.

Government  
blamed.

Firm attitude  
of Government  
during the  
American War.

Far more important, and more absorbing in its interest than diplomatic wrangles, or small and distant warfare, was the terrible crisis through which the United States was passing. And the Government deserves great credit for its action during the difficulties of the time. It followed a cool and dignified course in the midst of the most excited popular feeling, and in presence of bitter suffering brought by the war upon our own people. The triumph of the Republican Party, and the election of Abraham Lincoln as President of the United States, at the close of 1860, may be regarded as the immediate cause of the secession of the Southern States. From that time till the spring of 1865, when the fall of the Confederate capital Richmond, and the

surrender of General Lee closed the encounter with the triumph of the North, the two sections of the great Republic were engaged in warfare on a gigantic scale.

The division between the Northern and Southern States had been of long standing. On commercial questions their interests were directly opposed. The North was a manufacturing country, the people of the South were without manufactures, and were the producers of raw material. In the supposed interests of manufactures a protective tariff was established, which in some instances was practically prohibitory. The effect was naturally to raise the price of every manufactured article which the Southerner required, and to oblige him to exchange his raw products disadvantageously in the European markets. But hand in hand with the commercial question went the question of slavery, an institution forming an inherent part of the civilisation of the South, and closely connected with the form which its industrial life assumed. For many years the struggle between the slaveholders and the abolitionists had been acute. The rage for abolition had become a fanaticism, and excited a corresponding feeling among those who held that abolition was an assault on the most obvious rights of property. As Territory after Territory demanded admission among the sovereign States of the Union, the battlefield on which this question was fought had been found in the establishment or abolition of slavery by the constitution of each new made State. An attempt, by what is known as the Missouri Compromise, to fix as a limit between the two systems 36.30° of north latitude had failed as civilisation rolled westward; and the heat with which the rights of the slaveholders were supported when Kansas was demanding admission to the Union had produced something little short of civil war. At length in 1856 the election of Buchanan to the Presidency over the abolitionist candidate Fremont, seemed to throw into the hands of the South the chance of securing their supremacy.

The election of Lincoln in 1860 appeared to snatch from them the prize they had thought secured, and almost immediately South Carolina began to speak of refusing to submit to Northern domination, and of the necessity of disruption. Buchanan's last message on December 3d, 1860, was intended to suggest a compromise. Disruption involved the gravest constitutional questions. It depended upon the character of the Confederation of the United States. As each State was recognised as sovereign, as each had joined the Confederation voluntarily, it was held by the advocates of separation that

Causes of the  
war.

✓

Secession of the  
Southern States.

it was within the rights of each to secede of its own will from a contract into which it had voluntarily entered ; on the other hand the dominant party in the North asserted that the contract was for ever, that the limits of State sovereignty as contrasted with national sovereignty were clearly marked, and that the right of secession did not lie within them. Again the question was at issue which must inevitably occur in composite nations ; and to those who regarded the greatness of the American Republic as of higher value than the gratification of provincial patriotism there could be no doubt as to the side which should command their support. But the irritation caused by political defeat, and the very natural abhorrence to submit to the domination of a party which seemed for its own selfish purposes to be hampering their commercial prosperity, and in its one-sided fanaticism to be threatening them with a vast confiscation, blinded the eyes of the Southerners, and made them ready at once to accept the constitutional view which was so entirely in harmony with their wishes. One after the other with great rapidity the Southern States followed the line marked out for them by Carolina. By May 1861, eleven States had broken from the Union. The pretext, as we gather from the declaration of South Carolina, was the interference or threatened interference of the Federal Government with the institution of slavery sanctioned by the constitution of the States. The principle involved was the right of secession.

The war was thus two-sided ; to some a war against slavery, to others a war for the maintenance of the Union. It was this twofold issue which confused public opinion in England. While hatred of slavery attracted it towards the North, sympathy with those who thought themselves oppressed attracted it towards the South. But other and less creditable reasons tended much to increase among the wealthier classes the favour in which the Southern cause was held ; with their usual misapprehension of the true meaning of the word, they supposed that the Southerners came nearer to satisfy the ordinary definition of gentlemen than their Northern brethren. Descended as a fact from settlers of a higher social rank than the New Englander, their form of civilisation had given them something of the manners and external culture which belong to a leisured class. The wealthy Englishman, forgetful of the shallowness of this veneer, felt that he had more in common with the well-descended planter than with the rough and energetic man of the North, to whom he attributed the pushing vulgarity of the self-made man and that national self-assertion

Feeling of  
England on the  
War.

which both politically and socially was regarded as the most odious characteristic of the American. Certainly, for one reason or the other, partisanship of the South was the common tone of English society. It cannot be denied that the North was inclined to act in a high-handed fashion. The Southern States had speedily formed themselves into a Confederation, and elected as their President Jefferson Davis; they seized the national property, called out troops, and supplied their want of a fleet by giving commissions to privateers. But the North, in spite of the complete organisation thus begun, insisted upon treating the Confederate States merely as rebels. It was upon this difference of view that the first difficulty of England and other European countries arose. The Ministry had to decide whether the Southerners should be treated merely as rebels, or whether they would extend to them the rights of a belligerent Power. Lord Russell early declared that England had determined to maintain not only strict neutrality but close silence in the dispute. No doubt the susceptibility of the Northerners rendered it advisable that England should, in this case at all events, abstain from that moral interference in which it indulged so freely in European quarrels. Our Ambassador, Lord Lyons, was instructed to give no advice, although always on fitting occasions to urge the desire of the English Government for a peaceful solution of the existing differences. It was also thought right, on the 14th of May, to put out a Proclamation of strict neutrality, and to prohibit English subjects from enlisting or supplying privateers, or in any way affording assistance to either party. But the circumstances of the case did not allow the Government to rest merely in this position. English privateers were sailing under the flag of the Southern Confederacy. The Northern Government had declared a blockade of the Southern ports, and it became necessary to state publicly whether the same rights were to be extended to these vessels as would be given to those of a country engaged in war, or whether they should be treated as pirates, and whether the blockade was to be respected or not. In May 1862 Lord Russell explained that in the view of the Cabinet belligerency was not so much a principle as a fact, that when any mass of a population engaged in war reached a certain force and consistency it was entitled to be treated as a belligerent, and that the Southern Confederacy appeared to satisfy those conditions. And further, some weeks later he informed the Commons that orders had been given to prohibit armed ships and privateers both on one side

Determination  
of the Ministry  
to maintain  
neutrality.



and the other from bringing their prizes into English ports, thus treating both parties in exactly the same manner. But it still remained a question whether the Southern Confederacy should be recognised as a nation. The friends of the South continually pressed that this should be done. But the Government consistently held the position which it took up at the first, that the time had not yet arrived for so complete a measure.

It was a matter of great difficulty to preserve this neutrality. From the first, and throughout the whole lengthened contest, the Northern States regarded the attitude of England as unfriendly. The neutrality was indeed on the verge of being brought to a close and changed into hostility by the action of the States themselves. The Confederacy were despatching commissioners to plead their cause in Europe. Unable with safety to pass through the blockading squadron, Mr. Mason and Mr. Slidell, accredited respectively to England and France, made their way to Havana, a neutral port, and there embarked in the *Trent*, an English and therefore neutral ship. On the passage to Europe the *San Jacinto*, a Union ship of war, came up with the *Trent*. The right of search was claimed and exercised; and with some roughness, and in spite of the protest of the English Admiralty agent in charge of the mails, the Commissioners were carried off to New York. This was an obvious infraction of international law. But the Americans assumed a hostile and threatening tone when the restoration of the Commissioners was demanded. War appeared so inevitable that Lord Palmerston thought it right to despatch a considerable body of troops to Canada; the militia and volunteers of that province were put upon a war footing; and all England was for a while eager to vindicate its insulted honour. Fortunately, though in a grudging and contemptuous manner, President Lincoln and Mr. Seward, the Secretary, took a prudent course and gave up the captives. In this case the French acted a most friendly part, and earnestly supported the representations of the English Ministry.

The conduct of the Northerners and the events of the war seemed alike calculated to strengthen the hands of the partisans of the South.

Success of the  
Confederates in  
1862.

The Northern armies had made no impression on the seceded provinces, and had suffered a heavy defeat at Bull Run. The Confederate forces hung threateningly round Washington, and the Federal squadron in the James river, had in one short hour been destroyed by the *Merrimac*, a steamer roughly thatched with railway iron. The one great success of the

Northern arms, the capture of New Orleans, had afforded General Butler an opportunity of issuing a proclamation so outrageous as to excite the disgust of all Europe. In their determination to maintain the Union, the people of the North had submitted to grave infractions of the Constitution; the powers of the Courts of Justice seemed almost in abeyance, the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act was held to lie in the power of the President, and the prisons were crowded with political offenders, among whom some Englishmen were numbered. To complete the blockade of Charlestown, stone-ships had been sunk across the harbour, and it was regarded by the English as an act of vandalism thus to destroy a commercial port. Meanwhile the cessation of intercourse caused by the blockade was beginning to tell with serious effect upon the cotton industry of Lancashire. Already prices were rapidly rising, and that terrible season known as the cotton famine had commenced. Again the demand was raised throughout the country and in Parliament for recognition of the independence of the Confederacy, and still more strongly for a declaration of the inefficiency of the blockade. But the Ministry held firm. They were able to assert that suffering as they were, the working men of England were true to their conviction that right lay with the North, and able with equal certainty to point to the fact of the want of cotton as a proof that, in spite of the determined efforts of certain English speculators to run the blockade, its efficiency could not be questioned.

The Ministry  
hold firm to  
neutrality.

The difficulties avoided one year reappeared in greater strength the next. For the very length of the struggle afforded a support to the argument that conquest of the South was impossible, and that the action of England should be governed by that fact. At the same time the relations between England and the North were subjected to a great strain. The persistent efforts of English speculators to run the blockade, and obtain the great advantages which the enormously high price of cotton in England and of European goods in the Southern ports offered, with good reason irritated the Northern Government, and induced them to adopt a high tone in their intercourse with England, to which it was found difficult to submit. The Federal cruisers were charged with capturing English vessels trading with Matamoros on the Mexican frontier, and the Federal Admiralty Courts with injustice in their decision with respect to such captures. But the chief cause of irritation lay in the form of naval warfare which, regardless of the difficulties it inflicted on neutral countries, the Confederate States

Strained relations between  
England and  
America.  
1863.

adopted. Vessels were built for them in neutral ports, were subsequently met at some fixed point of rendezvous by officers bearing Confederate Commissions, and having means to supply them with armaments. The ships then, without ever touching at a belligerent port, proceeded on their course of plunder with a success which went far to destroy the mercantile navy of the North. In the year 1864, Mr. Shaw Lefevre estimated the number of Northern ships destroyed by the cruisers at 187, and their value at £3,000,000. The best known of these cruisers was the *Alabama*, but there were several others, such as the *Georgia*, the *Florida*, the *Shenandoah*, and the *Rappahanac*, almost equally destructive. While the *Alabama* was building at Liverpool, the Government had had information of its destination, and were preparing to detain it, when it suddenly put to sea, and under the able command of Captain Semmes it became a scourge to the American shipping. Nothing could convince the Americans that the Government had in this case done its duty. The detention under similar circumstances of the *Alexandra* was noticed only to show the course that ought to have been previously pursued, and language was used both by the Press and by the American Administration which could scarcely fail to excite strong feelings of animosity in England. Interest and injured national feeling were speciously supported by political considerations. Mr. Roebuck did not scruple to state his belief that United America was too powerful a country, and likely to be the bully of the world, and that the separation of the North and South was therefore politically desirable. The Government was plied with arguments drawn from the wishes of the Emperor of the French. He had, in 1862, urged that England, France, and Russia should attempt a mediation, but had encountered a refusal from Lord Russell, who declared the time for mediation had not arrived ; and if the account of private conversations subsequently produced in Parliament is to be credited, the Emperor had even desired to join with England in the acknowledgment of the independence of the South. It was urged that if the South should prove successful the rejection of these overtures would place France in a position of close friendship with the victorious Confederacy, and England in the position of its enemy. Nor was the final success of the South at all improbable. The upper classes of England clung to the belief that it was impossible it should be conquered, and the course of the war still seemed favourable to it. The chief command of the army of the Potomac, on which the duty of assaulting the Confederate capital, Richmond, fell, had not yet passed into the

hands of a capable general. In June the Confederate forces had been able to assume the offensive, to cross the Potomac, and threaten Washington. They were indeed checked at the great battle of Gettysburg, and fell back again across the river, but the Federals in Virginia had made no advance, while political disturbances and fierce riots in New York caused by the conscription seemed to point to an approaching collapse.

Still amidst all these difficulties, the Ministry held their ground, took their stand upon law, defended their action with regard to the privateers by alleging that those cruisers which had escaped from the English dockyards had done so by accident, or by the unavoidable ignorance of the administration, and that those which had been retained were retained in strict accordance with law. On the political side of the question the Government was equally determined. No assaults could move them from their view that the fate of the Union was better left to be settled by the Americans themselves than by means of mediation, and that the issue of the war was far too doubtful to form a groundwork for political speculation. In the year 1864, though the same difficulties continued, and the same questions came to the front, the wisdom of this course began to show itself. Generals had at length been found who knew how to use the vast resources of the North to good effect. Roughly speaking, the plan of the Northern War had been to surround the Confederate States, and force their opponents in-wards upon their capital. While the main army was pressing upon Virginia, and the fleet was blockading or assaulting the line of the eastern coast, troops were forcing their way down the Mississippi to complete the circuit by reaching New Orleans, which was already in Federal hands. The very strong fortress of Vicksburg had long proved an insurmountable obstacle in this direction, but Generals Grant and Sherman had been able to reduce it, and a great success had met the Federal forces in Tennessee, at the battle of Chattanooga. While Sherman was left to pursue the campaign in the West, Grant was intrusted with the army of the Potomac, which thus fell under the hands of a general who understood perfectly the sources of Northern strength. Less skilful than his opponent Lee, he was possessed of the most dogged tenacity of purpose, and, conscious of his numerical superiority, continued, without regard to losses, to pour attack after attack upon the dwindling forces of the Confederates. Meanwhile Sherman, having captured Atlanta, the capital of Georgia, suddenly broke loose from his communications, and,

Turn of the  
tide in 1864.



out-manceuvring his opponents, started on a march of three weeks to the sea-coast. His force, lost to view for a time, reappeared almost uninjured at Savanna. The Federals had thus a new base of operations upon the sea, and, advancing northward, pushed their opponents before them towards the ever-lessening circle, of which Richmond was the centre. It was plain that the strength of the Confederates was exhausted. Deprived of all support from abroad, without trade or manufacturing industry of their own, and with a population which, as far as its white element was concerned, was small, it is evident,

Final success of  
the North.  
April 1865.

on looking back, that from the first their cause was hopeless. The hour of exhaustion had now arrived.

On the 4th of April 1865, Lee evacuated Richmond, and marched away pursued by Grant's victorious army, and the Confederate capital, which had offered so long and firm a resistance, was occupied by the Federal troops. Secession existed no longer except in the two armies of Lee and of Johnson. While Grant went in pursuit of the one, Sherman turned all his efforts against the other. On the 7th, Lee was compelled to surrender. A few days later Sherman, discountenanced by the Government in his effort to bring about an honourable arrangement with his beaten foe, drove Johnson to an unconditional surrender. Sheer lack of men brought the heroic but mistaken struggle of the Confederates to an end. The war had exactly occupied the Presidency of Abraham Lincoln. Secession had followed immediately upon his first election; he had but just entered upon his second term of office when the fall of

Death of Presi-  
dent Lincoln.

Richmond completed the triumph of his policy. He did not live to enjoy his victory, or to direct by his wisdom the difficult task of reconstitution which lay before the American people. Ten days after Richmond had been occupied (and before Sherman's work was completed), the pistol of the assassin put an end to his life. A self-made man, he had forced his way step by step up the social scale, and by his sound sense, unswerving determination, and unshaken trust in the strength of the cause he was supporting, enabled his country to weather as terrible a storm as any nation has ever encountered. He has won for himself, by the greatness and simplicity of his character, a place in the affections of the Americans second only to that of the great founder of the Republic.

The Government must have felt extraordinary relief when it was able to declare to the House that belligerent rights were withdrawn, and when it found itself no longer compelled to pursue a course which brought upon it inevitable censure from one side or the other. The

irritation indeed felt by both North and South was so sharp that, whichever party had proved ultimately victorious, some years must have elapsed before friendly relations could be thoroughly established. So excited had both North and South been against the English, that a cessation of hostilities on the basis of a joint war against England had been seriously proposed in the midst of the struggle. Indeed it was perhaps fortunate for the cause of peace that England had withdrawn speedily from a joint expedition in which it had engaged in 1862 with France for the purpose of "restoring order" in Mexico. This phrase, which is not uncommon in English transactions, meant compelling the Mexicans to pay the interest of their debt chiefly held by English and French speculators. The intention of our French allies to force the Imperial form of government upon the Mexicans fortunately led to our withdrawal from active co-operation, and saved us from sharing in the disasters which terminated in the death of the temporary Emperor, Maximilian. The Americans throughout protested against the interference of Europe in American questions. But what they grudgingly put up with from the French, to whom for some reason not very intelligible they felt a certain friendship, might easily have proved too much for their self-restraint had the perpetrators been the hated English.

Irritation of  
both North and  
South against  
England.

Apart from political considerations the cessation of the war brought unspeakable relief by alleviating the pressure upon the manufacturing industries of Lancashire. If praise is due to the Government for its calm determination to preserve the neutrality of England in the midst of the strong passions engendered by the war, still greater praise must be given to the Lancashire operatives for the noble resignation with which they bore the suffering inevitably forced upon them by the closing of the Southern ports. With the single exception of a somewhat formidable riot at Staleybridge and Duckingfield, the behaviour of the many thousands of unemployed men, accustomed to high wages, and suddenly reduced by no fault of their own to live on a pittance derived from charity, was marked by sober and orderly self-restraint. By far the larger portion of the cotton used by English manufacturers was derived from the Southern States of America. The cessation of the supply from that source necessitated the stoppage, partial or total, of a large proportion of mills, and the entire withdrawal of work, and consequently of means of subsistence, from many thousand operatives engaged in the cotton manufacture and its dependent trades. That such would be the result of the war had

The Cotton  
Famine.

been foreseen, and Lord Palmerston had early taken measures to encourage as far as possible the arrival of a supply from other cotton-growing countries, such as India, Egypt, and the west coast of Africa. But to force trade into new channels is a work of time ; and the different length of the cotton fibre thus introduced necessitated changes in machinery which could not be made at once, and which mill-owners, not certain how soon the war might cease, were naturally unwilling to carry out. By the middle of the year 1862, the pinch had begun to be felt. New Orleans cotton, which even as late as the beginning of the year had been selling at less than a shilling the pound, had nearly doubled in price. The Poor-Law returns began to show a vastly increased number of recipients of parochial relief. There seemed but little chance of a speedy conclusion to the war, and Government thought it wise, as a matter of precaution, to introduce a measure authorising a rate in aid, by which the area of rating was extended so as to relieve the pressure on distressed parishes by the contribution of neighbouring districts. Some opposition was made by Mr. Cobden and others, who preferred that the money should be raised by loan, and the expenditure thus spread over a number of years, during which

**Legislative  
measures of  
relief. July  
1862.**

it was probable that trade might revive. But the general feeling in favour of affording assistance in some shape was so strong that a spirit of conciliation showed itself, and finally a Bill embodying both propositions was passed. When the rates of a parish exceeded 3s. in the pound, it might demand assistance from the general funds of the union ; when the rates of a whole union exceeded 3s. in the pound, it might raise loans subject to the approval of the Poor-Law Board, and secured upon the future rates. These measures were renewed the following year with some relaxations. It was well that this precautionary measure was taken. Before the end of the year the distress had largely increased. It apparently reached its highest point at about the close of 1862 : in December of that year some 500,000 persons were receiving regular relief, and the weekly loss of wages was estimated at £168,000. From that time onward the suffering began to decrease, and by the close of the following year the number of recipients of relief was reduced more than half. The decrease was due in part to the resumption of work consequent on the increased cotton supply from other than American sources, partly to very considerable emigration, assisted by various colonial and foreign agencies, partly to the absorption of workmen into other trades, and to migration to districts where work was to be found.

Still the maintenance of several hundred thousand unemployed workmen would probably have been a task too great to have been performed by legislative means, had they not been seconded by an extraordinary exhibition of voluntary charity. The undeserved misfortune which had fallen upon the operatives, and the dignified and silent resignation with which they had met it, excited widespread sympathy. At the beginning of the year meetings were held in the great towns of Lancashire which led to the establishment of a central relief committee in Manchester. At the Mansion House in London another committee was established; while besides these two chief agencies many local relief organisations were set on foot. Into the hands of these committees subscriptions drawn from every corner of the English dominions, and even from foreign countries, were lavishly poured. The Colonies, India, Australia, Canada, and every country in Europe, joined in increasing the fund. Nor were money subscriptions alone sent. Food and clothing were given in profusion, and in the midst of her own fierce difficulties America sent more than one ship laden with provisions to the suffering workmen. Mr. Wilson Patten, Member for North Lancashire, in April 1863 stated that the amount received "from every source, was made up as follows: In clothing and provisions £108,000, subscriptions from different localities £306,000, private-charity £200,000, Mansion House Committee £482,000, the Central Relief Committee £959,000—in all, £2,055,000; in addition to which there had come from the Poor-Law Board £680,000, making a total of £2,735,000. Of this, £845,000 was still on hand." The distribution of this large sum was carried out with great wisdom, and chiefly gratuitously, by a very complete organisation. A General Committee sat at Manchester, composed of the High Sheriffs and Lord-Lieutenants of the counties, the Bishops whose dioceses included the cotton districts, the Mayors of the municipal boroughs, and a number of other influential men of all ranks, and presided over by the Mayor of Manchester. The actual work was carried on under Lord Derby by an Executive Committee of twenty-four, carefully chosen, so as to consist of men of all political and religious creeds, and of landed proprietors, capitalists, and employers of labour. Under this Committee worked more than a hundred local Committees. The distribution was carried out on the most careful principles. The work was of no common difficulty. In the words of Lord Derby, "The Committees had not only to distribute the alms intrusted to them by public munificence, but so to distribute them

Wise distribu-  
tion of the  
charitable  
subscriptions.



that on the one hand they may not place the honest and industrious on the same footing with the idle and profligate, and on the other hand that they may not abuse public liberality by making their funds contribute to the relief of those who have unexpended means of their own." The view taken of their duties was a liberal one. Their object was to maintain the self-respect of the people, to prevent them from considering themselves as paupers, and to keep the population as far as possible in its old condition ready to take advantage of the first turn of trade. They did not allow the children to be removed from school, but undertook the payment of their fees. They refused to countenance any large application of their funds to the purpose of emigration, although occasionally assisting intending emigrants by personal grants. It can scarcely be questioned that the wide sympathy exhibited by the wealthier classes tended largely to the admirable conduct displayed by the workmen. To this must be added the feeling on their part that they were suffering for a good cause. In the midst of all their misery they never swerved from their desire for the triumph of the Northern States, which meant to them the abolition of slavery. One other measure of relief was attempted with considerable success. The unemployed workmen themselves expressed a wish to receive work rather than charity, and it was found possible to employ with advantage upon useful and necessary works, many of them of a sanitary character, about 20,000 men. A few days' practice was found sufficient to render them efficient labourers, and able to earn at regularly measured work, wages varying from 10s. to 12s. a week. The honest independence of these men is shown by the fact that the money in the savings-bank had been nearly all withdrawn before they came for relief; while the wisdom with which the fund was employed seems proved by the absence of any sickness of an important character during the famine. The opportunity was taken to instruct the people in sanitary arrangements, and to see that they were carried out. Absolute want was so completely staved off, that the Registrar-General in April 1863 could report that "while the deaths had been more numerous than usual elsewhere, the single exception was to be found in that division of England where the staple industry on which half a million of persons were dependent had been overthrown, and for a twelvemonth four-fifths of that number had subsisted, unless the pittance had been aided by previous earnings or sale of household stock, on less than 4d. a day per head. It will be gratefully admitted," he added, "that the legal provision for the distress, and the spontaneous liberality of their countrymen, have hitherto sufficed to maintain the people in health."

It might have been supposed that so severe a blow as the suspension of the American cotton trade would have produced a disastrous effect on the national finances. Such, however, was not the case. In some respects it affected English commerce even advantageously. One of the charges against England most constantly on the lips of the Americans had in it something of truth. The activity of the Confederate privateers had largely crippled the mercantile marine of the Northern States, and thrown much of the carrying trade into English hands. The necessity of making good, if possible, the deficiency of American cotton from other sources, had led to the opening of new, or the extension of old markets. The high prices of cotton and of some other colonial products had given rise to much speculation, and joint-stock trading had received a vast impetus. Certain difficulties and evils had resulted from this. The close of the war caught the speculators unawares, and a good deal of loss and some ruin was the consequence. The trade with new markets not yet accustomed to receive English goods had been chiefly a ready-money trade. The export of bullion had been large, and the bank had been compelled to keep its discount at a very high rate, varying from six to nine per cent. But, although something like a monetary crisis had seemed imminent in 1864, the precautions of the bank had proved sufficient, and the time had been successfully tided over. But the increase of trade, either resulting naturally from the war, or from the speculation it engendered, would scarcely have been sufficient to compensate for the losses it entailed, had it not been for the sound and brilliant system of finance pursued by the Chancellor of the Exchequer throughout his tenure of office.

The removal of all restrictions upon trade and the simplification of the tariff were Mr. Gladstone's primary objects. But the state of Europe in 1859 was not such as to allow of any diminution of the revenue or of any economy in expenditure. On the contrary, there was a strong and rapidly growing feeling that the defence of the country was not adequately provided for, and that larger grants for the army and navy were necessary. There was a general apprehension that an invasion from France was imminent. Lord Lyndhurst had impressed the danger upon the public by a great speech in the House of Lords, and the Premier and the Court undoubtedly shared in the view that large outlay for defensive purposes was required. With this prospect before him, the Chancellor of the Exchequer thought it necessary to avoid this year any diminution of receipts ;

Effect of the  
war on trade.

Brilliant  
finance of  
Mr. Gladstone.

Budget of  
1859.

and, even as it was, he calculated the deficiency of receipts as compared with expenditure at over £4,000,000. To supply this want he continued the course, which Sir Robert Peel had begun, of avoiding loans and raising the required sum by direct taxation through the income-tax. The £4,000,000 required he proposed to obtain by raising the tax upon incomes over £150 per annum from 5d. to 9d. As he had previously recognised the inequality of a tax falling alike on precarious and realised incomes, and had spoken of the income-tax as a temporary measure, his propositions naturally laid him open to charges of inconsistency. But he was able to prove to the satisfaction of the House the necessity of his measures, and to secure the acceptance of his Budget.

With the exception of the determination which it showed to meet the charges of the year by the receipts of the year, there was nothing of a very striking nature in the Budget of 1859. It was not till the following year that Mr. Gladstone was enabled to give full effect to his principles. In the autumn of 1859 negotiations for a Commercial Treaty with France were set on foot. They were intrusted to the management of Mr. Cobden. The Emperor of the French had himself accepted the doctrines of free-trade. But the opinion of his subjects was too strongly in favour of protection to allow him to act fully in accordance with his views. His object in negotiating the Commercial Treaty was to obtain as great an extension of free-trade principles as was compatible with this state of public opinion. In exchange for every relaxation made by the French, a corresponding advantage was to be obtained from England. For the full success of free-trade its universal adoption is necessary. But as the English financiers believed that every advance in that direction was a distinct advantage, they hailed with pleasure the opportunity of enforcing by treaty even its partial adoption. France engaged to reduce, partly in the current year, partly in the following year, the duties on nearly every article of English production, so that no duty upon any one of those articles should hereafter exceed thirty per cent. *ad valorem*. An immense market was thus thrown open to England. On the other side, England engaged, in the words of Mr. Gladstone, "to abolish immediately and totally all duties upon all manufactured goods, with a limited power of exception which was to be exercised only with regard to two or three articles. There will be a sweep, summary, entire, and absolute, of the duty on what are known as manufactured goods, from the face of the British tariff." Further,

Commercial  
Treaty with  
France.

the duty on brandy from foreign countries was to be equalised to the Colonial duties, a change from 15s. to 8s. 2d. a gallon; and a very large reduction was to be made on the duties on foreign wines. The Treaty had been made during the recess, and therefore still wanted Parliamentary ratification. But as the Budget was framed entirely with reference to it, Mr. Gladstone Budget of  
1860. took a very early opportunity of producing his financial schemes along with the Treaty. On the 10th of February, in a speech of extraordinary effectiveness, he explained the Government propositions. Although the expenses of the Chinese war had reduced the surplus for the current year to the small sum of £65,000, an unusual diminution of the public charges caused by the termination of annuities and amounting to more than £2,000,000 seemed to afford a good opportunity for reducing taxation. But the object which the Chancellor of the Exchequer had in view was not the immediate reduction of taxation, but rather such alterations and reforms in the customs as should tend to increase the wealth of the nation, and render it more able to bear its burdens. The action of the French Treaty would at first cause a considerable loss, still further likely to be increased by the changes in the tariff which were in contemplation. Altogether, setting the losses caused by the decreased tariff against the advantages derived from lessened cost of collection, and a somewhat increased consumption, the diminution in the revenue arising from the proposed alterations could not be estimated at less than £2,108,000. In addition to this the very high duty on tea and sugar was a war tax, and must therefore naturally cease; while if the income-tax, also a temporary tax, was allowed to drop, the whole amount of deficit from changed tariff and lapsed duties would reach the formidable sum of £11,508,000. Instead therefore of allowing the temporary taxes to lapse, the Chancellor of the Exchequer proposed to continue for fifteen months at their present high rate the duties upon tea and sugar, and to renew the income-tax at 10d. in the pound. The effect of his proposed changes in simplifying the tariff, Mr. Gladstone stated as follows: "In 1845 the articles subject to customs duties were 1163. In 1853 the number had been reduced to 460, and in 1859 to 419. After the changes now proposed are adopted, the whole number of articles remaining on the tariff will be 48. There would be a relief from indirect taxation of about £4,000,000. And with a very limited exception there would be a final disappearance of all protective and differential duties, and the consumer would know that every shilling he paid would go to the revenue." In the course of



his speech, Mr. Gladstone said that he believed the effect of the tariff in 1861 and 1862 would be to enrich the revenue to a much greater extent than many anticipated. The prophecy was abundantly fulfilled. Though the Commercial Treaty was only in operation during a part of the year, the value of British goods exported to France had increased from £4,754,000 to £7,145,000, and the following year it had risen to no less than £9,210,000.

The Budget, admirable though it was, and great as was the approbation lavished upon the speech with which it was introduced, was destined not to pass into law, and its rejection involving a constitutional question of some importance excited a strong feeling against the Upper House. Among the duties to be removed was that upon paper. The repeal of this tax, which was regarded as a sop thrown to the more Radical party in the country, had encountered a determined opposition in the House of Commons, based upon the ground that under existing circumstances, when large reductions of the customs were suggested, and unusual expenditure on the military services seemed necessary, it was unwise to part with so large and steady a source of revenue. And this opinion appeared to gain ground, for whereas on the second reading of the Bill repealing the tax the Government had a majority of more than fifty, on the third reading the majority had dwindled to nine. This, no doubt, encouraged the Lords to oppose the Budget. It was however so well established a constitutional practice to leave the management of the finances in the hands of the Lower House, that it was thought necessary to vindicate the rights of the Lords on this occasion. Lord Lyndhurst in a weighty speech asserted (what was no doubt the constitutional law in the matter) that the initiation of financial legislation lay with the Commons, that the Lords had no right to alter or to reject a part of a Money Bill, but that they had the right to reject it as a whole ; as the remission of the paper-tax came before them as a separate Bill, it was within their power to reject it while accepting the rest of the Budget. There was however this peculiarity in the present case, as was pointed out on behalf of Government by Lord Cranworth, that this was a Bill for relief, and not for increase of taxation. The Lords took Lord Lyndhurst's view as to their rights, and the view of the Opposition as to the policy of the Bill, and negatived it by a majority of eighty-nine. This result produced great excitement. By many it was thought that the remission of the tax was so hazardous that the Lords had exercised a wise discretion in rejecting it ; nor, though it was allowed that in

so doing they might have acted in opposition to the spirit of the Constitution, could they be said to have gone beyond their strict rights. But to the more advanced Liberals, supported by the cheap Press whose interest was largely involved, it seemed that a severe blow had been struck at the majesty of the Commons, and a loud clamour was raised which might easily have produced a formidable contest between the Houses. The Lords had in fact put themselves in the somewhat odious position of obstructing a remission of taxation which the Commons had thought desirable, and in which they alone were primarily interested. That the dispute produced no bad result was due to the tact of Lord Palmerston. While the public were expecting some violent assertion on the part of the Cabinet, whose financial projects had been wrecked, Lord Palmerston first suggested that a committee should be appointed to report on precedents, and immediately upon their report, which was produced the same evening, he gave notice of three resolutions, asserting—First, the right of the Commons alone to grant aids and supplies, and to limit them as to matter, manner, measure, and time; secondly, that although the Lords had sometimes exercised the power of rejecting such Bills by negating the whole of them, such conduct was justly regarded by the Commons with peculiar jealousy; and, thirdly, that the House had in its own hands the power so to impose and remit taxes as to maintain its rights inviolate. These judicious resolutions—which vindicated the rights of the Commons, allowed the rights of the Lords, and pointed out a way by which they could be harmonised—were successfully passed through the House, and the storm was allayed. Some further effort was made to reawaken the question. But Mr. Gladstone, although protesting against the proceedings of the House of Lords, which he stigmatised as “a gigantic innovation,” supported his chief in allowing the question to rest for the present, and contented himself with triumphantly carrying against the Opposition the rearrangement of the customs.

Dispute  
between the  
Houses avoided  
by Lord  
Palmerston's  
resolutions.

The interest attending the Budget of 1860 was but little diminished when Mr. Gladstone produced his financial proposals for the following year. It still remained to be seen whether he could press his system for the reduction of indirect taxation further, and whether he would take the opportunity to renew his contest with the Lords on the Paper Bill. He estimated for the coming year that there would be a surplus of nearly £2,000,000. This he proposed to employ in repealing the duty on paper, and in

Budget of  
1861.

taking off the penny which had been added to the income-tax in 1860. It was again the remission of the tax on paper which excited most attention. A successful agitation had been carried on during the autumn and winter, and, although it could be done only at the price of maintaining for a while the unpopular duty on tea, the people were on the whole determined that the remission should this year be carried. The more eager partisans of the rights of the Commons urged that the Bill should be sent up as before, and the quarrel renewed. But Mr. Gladstone wisely took advantage of the suggestion contained in the resolutions of the preceding year, and declared his intention of throwing all the propositions of the Budget into one Bill, which the Lords must either accept or reject in its entirety. The aristocratic portion of the House, and the Conservatives always inclined to support the Peers, strongly opposed this course. It was by a majority of only fifteen in a crowded House that it was accepted. But the majority though small was decisive, the Opposition yielded, and the Peers passed the Bill. The remarks with which Mr. Gladstone closed his speech are unusually interesting, as marking the divergence between his views and those of his political leader, and his dread of financial prodigality. While congratulating the House upon the general condition of the country, he thought it necessary to raise a note of warning against the danger which lay "in an increased susceptibility to excitement, and in proneness to constant and apparently boundless augmentations of expenditure." He was alarmed lest the very success of his measures should produce recklessness, and remove all obstacles to that increased outlay on warlike preparations, for which, under the name of "national defences," a large part of the nation was calling. No less a sum than £9,000,000 was thought necessary for this purpose, a sum which it was determined to raise by gradually contracted loans. It was no wonder that a prudent financier looked askance at so grave an infraction of one of his fundamental principles, or that a statesman already leaning towards the Radicals disliked the attitude of military competition which this vast expenditure appeared to imply. Unfortunately neither the financial schemes nor the pacific intentions of Mr. Gladstone were allowed free play. The outbreak of the American civil war rendered even increased expenditure upon our army necessary for our safety as a neutral. The despatch of troops to Canada after the affair of the *Trent* cost no less than a million, and the cotton famine dealt a blow at the most prosperous industry of the country.

It was under grave disadvantages that the Budget of 1862 was

produced. Yet it proved by no means unsatisfactory. Already the Commercial Treaty with France was beginning to show its effect. Within a single year our export trade with that country had increased with gigantic strides ; while in spite of the enormous loss on American trade, the general prosperity of the country was such that there was an increase in the revenue of <sup>Budgets of 1862 and 1863.</sup> not less than £2,000,000. The additional expenses incident upon the war had, however, eaten up this increase. With only £150,000 in hand, and with the probability of the continuation of similar expenses, there was no possibility of introducing any important changes in the Budget. In fact the seed had been already sown, and for the next few years there was little to do but to reap the harvest. In 1863, the estimated surplus was £3,741,000, caused partly by increased receipts, partly by diminished expenditure upon the army and navy, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer was able at last to diminish the taxes on which he had relied to supply the deficiency arising from the great reductions in the customs. The duty on tea, the reduction of which the Opposition had always urged against those reductions actually made, was brought down to 1s. in the pound, and a penny was taken off the income-tax, which thus fell to the same rate as when originally proposed by Sir Robert Peel. These alterations, which were the chief propositions of the Budget, were most favourably received. They had indeed been generally expected. Some additional propositions by the Chancellor of the Exchequer did not find the same general favour. Those whom he addressed were too closely interested in the club-life of London society to confess the justice of classing clubs with other places for the supply of wines and liquors, and the proposal to tax them had to be withdrawn. Nor did the public approve of including under the action of the income-tax charitable property. Mr. Gladstone's exposition of the wasteful expenditure which often attended the possession of such property, and the strong assertion of his disbelief in the supposition that taxation would limit their efficiency, failed to convince his hearers. The alterations made by the Budget were therefore restricted to its two main features, the reduction of the income-tax and of the duty upon tea. It was the exposition of the state of the country rather than the originality of the Budget which gave it its interest. Mr. Gladstone was able triumphantly to point out the success of the system he had followed. Both the import and the manufacture of paper in England had largely increased, and the export had in one year risen by 34,000 cwt. An increased revenue of £30,000 had



been derived from the lessened wine-duties, while the Commercial Treaty, the effect of which upon a whole year's revenue was now for the first time visible, had been successful almost beyond belief. It had more than compensated for the loss of the American trade; for although we had by a strange change of fortune been supplying the United States with cotton, the loss in the value of exports to America had been £6,000,000 during the past year. If with the export of British goods the indirect export of colonial produce into France was included, our trade with that country showed an increase of more than £12,000,000 in the same time. But looking beyond that single success the increase of the wealth of the country, as shown by the income-tax, was even more extraordinary. In 1842 the assessed income was £156,000,000; in 1861, upon the very same area, the assessed income was £221,000,000, and that increase had arisen during the latter part of the period. "In ten years, from 1842 to 1852, the taxable income of the country increased by six per cent., but in eight years, from 1853 to 1861, the income of the country again increased by twenty per cent.; that is a fact so strange as to be almost incredible. . . . The real and new cause which has been in operation has been the legislation of Parliament setting free the industry and intelligence of the British people." Mr. Gladstone thought himself able to add that he had reason to believe that the average condition of the British labourer had improved during the last twenty years in a manner unparalleled in the history of any country.

The Budgets of the two succeeding years were little more than repetitions of those of 1863. On both occasions in introducing them, Mr. Gladstone emphasised the extraordinary advance of national wealth, and traced it directly to the system which he had pursued. In each case he had a surplus of more than £2,000,000 to deal with; in each he was enabled to reduce the income-tax, till in 1865 its rate was only 4d. in the pound. Originally established as a temporary tax to cover deficiencies and allow of great alterations in commercial legislation, the income-tax might now be regarded as a fixed source of revenue; and although Mr. Gladstone frankly pointed out its faults and dangers, its rough justice, its inquisitorial character, the temptation to extravagance in Government which it afforded, he concluded that at this low rate, and sparing as it did the income of the labourer and the artisan, it was a just and valuable piece of fiscal machinery. In 1864 this reduction was coupled with a reduction of the sugar-duties, in 1865 with a still further reduction of the duty upon tea. In both years the Opposition pressed the

Budgets of  
1864 and 1865.

superior claims to reduction of the malt-tax, which was said to press heavily upon the agricultural interest. But on this point Mr. Gladstone was firm. Its repeal would cost the revenue a very heavy loss, the advantage to the consumer would be scarcely perceptible, nor was it desirable that spirits and beer should be freed from tax if any indirect tax at all was to be preserved. A concession to the agricultural interest was however made by freeing from duty malt used as food for cattle.

Successful finance such as this, the maintenance of peace the fruits of which were already to be seen in the lowered military estimates, the absorption of general interest in the critical condition both of Europe and America, and the constant growth of material wealth, satisfied the wishes of the governing classes, and checked all tendency to move exciting questions. This quiescent feeling was still further fostered by the certain prospect that before long the veteran statesman, who was thus peacefully closing a career marked at one time by extreme activity and pugnacity, must soon retire from the management of affairs. Burning questions might wait till he had passed away, and his more ardent successor had found freer opportunity to give effect to his own ideas. The dissolution in July of the Parliament, which had now been sitting for six years, would alone have reopened the discussion of the political questions which had been slumbering so long. But the advent of a stormier time was rendered still more certain when in October Lord Palmerston, whose health had been for some time fading, died at the ripe age of eighty-one; and thus the cessation of party warfare, and the apparent political apathy caused by the general acquiescence with which his government had been received, came to an end.

Political  
apathy during  
these years.

Death of Lord  
Palmerston.  
Oct. 18, 1865.

The death of Lord Palmerston was the more important because there was every probability that the Prime Minister would in future be more completely master of the Government than had of late years been the case. In December 1861 the Prince Consort had died in the full vigour of his age.

Effect of the  
death of Prince  
Albert.

Occupying no official position, and unrecognised in any theory of the Constitution, the Prince as confidential adviser and secretary of the Queen had for many years exercised a paramount influence. Although at times the object of considerable popular jealousy, there is every reason to believe that the influence thus gained was beneficently and wisely employed. Full of the best German traditions, he held, in common with the greatest rulers of the Prussian

House, that the possession of the Crown, on the importance of which he laid great stress, brought with it corresponding duties of the severest kind. The constitutional government of England appeared to him but a somewhat modified expression of the same view. He mastered the system with an ease rarely found in foreigners, and fully accepted its principles. The permanence of the Crown in the midst of shifting administrations he considered of peculiar importance in supporting the continuity of foreign policy, while at home the possession of the traditions of government, and the knowledge of precedent which its experience gave, were fitted to render it a most useful element of stability. The Prince used his power to give reality to these advantages ; and undoubtedly under his guidance the political importance of the Sovereign was largely increased. The unanimous testimony of all who came in contact with him bears witness to his unflagging industry in mastering the political questions of the day, to the constant assistance which his knowledge and experience afforded to the Foreign Ministers of both parties, and to the completeness with which the Queen acted in every difficult crisis upon his advice. Nor was it only politically that the loss of the Prince Consort was felt. He had devoted himself with rare success to the improvement and culture of the people, and most of the advance in artistic taste, in love of music, and in general appreciation of what is beautiful, on which the country can justly pride itself, is due directly or indirectly to his influence. To the Queen his loss was irreparable. It is impossible as yet to estimate her influence upon public affairs since her husband's death, but it may be safely said, that while she has borne herself so as to win the respect of all parties, and attempted to follow the line of conduct which he would have advised, the severe shock which his death caused her, and her consequent partial withdrawal from public life, have lessened the political power of the Crown, and directed the love and respect of her people rather to her qualities as a woman, than to her ability as a reigning Queen.

The questions which were apparently to assume prominence in the new Parliament were the reform of the representation, and the position of the English Church. In May 1865 Mr. Disraeli, in view of the impending dissolution, had issued an address to the electors of Buckinghamshire. Ignoring the quiescent period which had since elapsed, he narrated the failure of the last Conservative Government to pass measures on Church rates, and on the enlargement of the Parliamentary suffrage. The present Administration had been formed, he said, pledged to the

Disraeli's elec-  
tion speech.  
May 1865.

total abolition of Church rates, and to a measure of Parliamentary Reform which should secure the lowering of the borough franchise. Implying, though not distinctly asserting, that neither of those pledges had been redeemed, he indicated these two subjects—the one involving the maintenance of the National Church, and the other the maintenance of the ancient Constitution of England—as the chief topics of party discussion in the new Parliament. He would not have thus emphasised the importance of the Church, had he not known the efficiency for electoral purposes of the cry of “the Church in danger,” and recognised that there were circumstances which would give it a certain plausibility.

For the English Church had been passing through a very critical period. The great Tractarian movement had been for a time productive of complete anarchy. The tenets of its supporters, the stress which they laid upon the authority of the Church and tradition, excited the bitter hostility of the Evangelicals, who regarded the Bible as the sole paramount authority. The discussions which necessarily arose upon this point, far from weakening the liberalism against which the Tractarian movement was at first avowedly aimed, gave rise to a party within the Church which rested its creeds on critical inquiry, and was characterised as the Broad Church. At the same time, the æsthetic tastes and love of mediævalism of the Tractarians drove many of them to excesses of ritual, which separated them from the older High Church party. Four or five distinct sections thus arose in the Church. Yet in the midst of this disintegration, the teaching of the Tractarians had produced a decided effect. The theory of the importance of the Church was so acceptable to the clergy that it speedily made its way among them, and High and Low joined in the stoutest defence of orthodoxy. The æsthetic teaching which had accompanied the Tractarian movement was also so reasonable and attractive, that its effect was universally felt. There were, no doubt, certain extremes adopted by a few who became known as Ritualists. But setting these aside, great and valuable reforms were very generally adopted. Old churches were restored, and stripped of the galleries and pews which defaced them, new Gothic churches were everywhere built, and surpliced choirs and musical services introduced. With regard to the relation between Church and State, there was more diversity of opinion. Yet the greater number of the clergy, even though many of them were convinced of the justice of the claims of the Church to independence, and were eager to support its spiritual authority, contented themselves with

Effects of the  
Tractarian  
movement.



attempts to give life to their meetings in Convocation, and submitted, though with much grumbling, to the temporal authority of the Privy Council. But there were a few who began to think the tyranny unsupportable, and desired disestablishment. On the laity, on the other hand, the increasing pretensions of the Church were producing a strong effect. They inevitably roused a feeling of antagonism among those who did not accept them. The Church appeared to be forcing itself more and more into the position of an exclusive sect, and thus laid itself open to such attacks as were implied in the constant efforts to get rid of Church rates, and to open the churchyards to dissenters.

The publication of two books of liberal tendency afforded the ground on which the divided opinions of the Church exhibited themselves. The echoes of the disputes arising from them filled the whole of Lord Palmerston's Ministry. In 1860 a series of Essays by authors well known in the Oxford world made its appearance. The publication was attended by a notice that the writers were not acting in union, and were responsible for their own writings only, but as all the Essays were conceived much in the same spirit, the work was regarded with some justice as a declaration of the views of the Broad Church. The Essays contained little, if anything, that had not been said before either in Germany or in England, but their tone, the free handling of Scripture which they appeared to recommend, and the application to the Bible of the ordinary methods of criticism which they adopted, were something new within the limits of the English Church, and emanating as they did from men of such distinction as Dr. Temple, Dr. Williams, Mr. Wilson, Mr. Baden Powell, Mr. Mark Pattison, and Professor Jowett, the Essays excited an amount of interest and hostility which perhaps they scarcely deserved. The clergy at once assumed an attitude of active hostility to them. Largely signed petitions prayed the Archbishops to devise means for banishing from the Church the authors of such heresies, and the matter was brought forward in Convocation. But suits being instituted against Dr. Rowland Williams and Mr. Wilson, the question became a legal one. A decision in the Ecclesiastical Courts incriminating both writers on two points, though absolving them on the rest of the articles alleged against them, produced an appeal to the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council. The judgment of the Committee delivered by Lord Westbury, and based upon strict legal grounds, reversed the judgments of the Courts below; it had not been proved, in the opinion of the Privy Council, that the assertions of the Essayists had

**Rise of the  
Broad Church.**

**Excitement  
caused by  
Essays and  
Reviews.**

either contradicted, or been plainly inconsistent with, the Articles or Formularies of the English Church. With this opinion however the leaders of the clergy, the Archbishops, did not agree, and in spite of it they issued pastoral letters in accordance with their own opinions. The vast majority of the clergy agreed with the Archbishops, and at length, in June 1864, both Houses of Convocation formally declared "a synodical condemnation" of the volume, "as containing teaching contrary to the doctrine of the United Church of England and Ireland, in common with the whole Catholic Church of Christ." No action of Convocation is valid without the consent of the Crown; and the legality of this judgment was questioned in the House of Lords, where Lord Houghton inquired whether the Government intended to take any steps in consequence of what had been done. An opportunity was thus given to Lord Westbury to explain the legal position of Convocation. He used his opportunity somewhat mercilessly, and spoke in a bitter and jeering tone, which did much to increase the dislike of the clergy for that lay supremacy under which many of them were already fretting. The subordination of the Church could scarcely be expressed in harsher terms than those which the Lord Chancellor employed. "There are three modes," he said, "of dealing with Convocation when it is permitted to come into action and transact real business. The first is, while they are harmlessly busy, to take no notice of their proceedings; the second is, when they seem likely to get into mischief, to prorogue and put an end to their proceedings; and the third, when they have done something clearly beyond their powers, is to bring them before a Court of Justice and punish them." The Lord Chancellor pointed out, however, that the drawing of the judgment was such as to render it practically nugatory, and contemptuously explained that the Government had no intention of interfering. But though thwarted in the Courts of Law, and brought up rudely in their attempt to give independent effect to their action in Convocation, the orthodox party believed that in Oxford an opening for a more successful assault upon their opponents was offered. Dr. Pusey, Dr. Ogilvie, and Dr. Heurtley combined to institute a suit against Professor Jowett in the Chancellor's Court, for heresy. It marks the advance of the High Church party that Dr. Pusey had himself been suspended, in 1843, for heterodoxy, and that Dr. Ogilvie, now acting with him, had taken a personal share in his condemnation. The case was tried before Mr. Mountague Bernard, Assessor in the Court. The objection that the Court had no jurisdiction in spiritual matters was overruled; but the Assessor went on

to declare that it was not fitting that the case should be carried any further. The general feeling against any form of religious persecution, and the desire, among the laity at all events, to avoid any restriction of the wide inclusiveness which is the chief advantage of a National Church, was too strong to be disregarded.

Meanwhile Dr. Colenso had in 1862 published a work upon the Pentateuch and the Book of Joshua which still further illustrated the growth of liberal opinion within the Church, while the disputes arising from its publication brought into still greater prominence the difficulties which beset the relations of Church and State. The Bishop's work was a rationalistic criticism of the Pentateuch, leading to the conclusion that large portions of these books were not strictly historical. The Colonial Metropolitan, the Bishop of Cape Town, pronounced sentence of deposition against Dr. Colenso, who then brought his case to England. He was received with great animosity by the English clergy. A Committee of the Upper House of Convocation was appointed to inquire into his book, most of the Bishops inhibited him from preaching in their dioceses, the Archbishop warned his clergy against him. Against this treatment Colenso raised a protest; he was being judged, he declared, unheard. But eventually, in May 1864, his petition against the jurisdiction of the Bishop of Cape Town came before the Privy Council, and in February of the next year the Lord Chancellor pronounced judgment. He carefully avoided settling the doctrinal points at issue, but declared the proceedings of the Bishop of Cape Town null and void. By strict interpretation of law, neither the See of Natal nor the See of Cape Town existed at all; the Bishops held their position under patent from the Crown, and the Crown had no power to create a Bishopric in a colony possessing an independent legislature. The decision, strictly legal as it was, seemed to leave the questions at issue untouched, and gave Dr. Pusey the opportunity of expressing his pleasure at finding that the Church of Africa was thus free, and emphasising his opinion that the temporal jurisdiction was the great source of weakness of the Church of England. In fact, if these two cases brought into strong relief the value of a final appeal to a lay jurisdiction capable of interposing an obstacle in the way of persecution, they rendered no less obvious the powerlessness of the Church in matters of discipline and doctrine. It was only natural, that men who set great store upon the authority of the Church should begin to desire for it a position of more independence. On the other hand, the loud and somewhat illiberal clamour which had been raised, and

the questionable steps which had been taken to enforce Church authority, led many thinking men to dread the predominance of clerical influence, and, in face of the evident determination of the Church to oppose itself to the progress of thought, to question the possibility of its existence except as one among many religious sects.

The efforts repeated year by year to obtain the abolition of Church rates were a further source of anxiety to those who were eager for the complete maintenance of the Church. For many years the imposition of a tax for the support of the Church fabric on all householders of a parish, whatever might be their religious opinions, had been exceedingly distasteful. In many parishes in the North of England it had been practically dropped. The decision of the Law Courts in 1843, in the case of the parish of Braintree, had affirmed the legality of such a tax, though imposed by a minority of the parishioners. Legal relief being thus unobtainable, the matter had been brought before Parliament, and divisions had been taken, showing an increasing feeling in favour of the total abolition of the rate. But Mr. Disraeli had thrown himself strongly upon the side of the Church, and had declared that the existence of a National Church was involved in the maintenance of the rate. The support thus given had enabled the defenders of Church rates to withstand the threatened measure. But it was only by the narrowest majorities. In 1861 Sir John Trevelyan's Bill for the abolition of Church rates had been rejected only by the casting vote of the Speaker; in the following year an adverse amendment was carried by a majority of one; and in 1863 an increase to a majority of ten in favour of the maintenance of the rates was regarded as a great triumph. The parties were, however, sufficiently closely balanced to give colour to Mr. Disraeli's assertion that the Church was threatened.

Not less well-grounded was the implied censure on the sluggishness of the late Ministry, contained in Mr. Disraeli's speech. The Government, which had so long been in power, had deceived the hopes of its more advanced supporters by ceasing, after its one weak effort, to speak of the question of Reform at all. Again and again Mr. Locke King and Sir E. Baines had attempted, as private members, to bring about a reduction both of the county and borough franchises. In every case the Government had found means either to reject the proposed measures, or to avoid the question. An answer had always been found in the fact that there were no visible signs of strong agitation among the working men; yet it was known that two at least of the Cabinet, and those two the

Efforts to  
abolish Church  
rates.

Revival of  
political  
interests.



most important members of it, felt that some extension of the franchise was necessary. To Lord Russell the completion of the measure he had initiated in 1832 was a matter of conscience, and Mr. Gladstone had somewhat astonished the world by his assertion, in the year 1864, that he too regarded an extensive Reform Bill as necessary, and that, so far from thinking the absence of agitation a reason against it, he saw a truer wisdom in doing what he considered an act of justice before it was called for, rather than in waiting for an agitation which could not but rouse angry passions, and be carried on with immense loss to the working class. It was certain that if the Liberals obtained a majority in the new elections, a Reform Bill would be imminent. It was equally certain that the introduction of such a Bill would lead to a split in the Liberal party. The language of Mr. Lowe made it plain that some at least among those who had followed Lord Palmerston believed that the want of agitation implied want of wish, and that an extension of the franchise to a lower class was in itself an evil. But in fact, the reason for the apparent want of interest among the working classes in political matters was to be found in their absorption in questions of a different sort, and it was this probably which influenced Mr. Lowe.

Aware that no political change was at the time possible, of sufficient completeness to allow of legislative interference in their favour, the workmen were devoting all their attention and energy to free themselves from the tyranny of capital. It is impossible that political reforms affecting the poorer classes should be undertaken without bringing to the surface and emphasising social questions. The upper classes and the well-to-do find interest in mere political questions, in the play of Party, and in the possession of power. But working men, though by no means devoid of political views, are apt to regard the questions that arise chiefly from their own point of view, and to desire the power which political status gives chiefly as a means of rectifying the social evils from which they suffer. So it happened now. The awakening which the national conscience had undergone on the passing of the Reform Bill had not been confined to politics, but had touched social questions of all sorts. The great Bill could not be considered as final. Its very principle that the franchise should be extended to all who were fit to exercise it implied the admission of class after class as they acquired that fitness. But such a process of absorption is necessarily slow and gradual. As a matter of fact it was the middle class which had reaped nearly all the benefits of the

Practical  
politics of the  
working  
classes.

change. The great and beneficial alterations in commercial policy had added enormously to the wealth and power of the trader and producer. But the very success which had attended them had led to a one-sided admiration of the principles which had been developed, and to an unquestioning worship of that form of political economy which regards the welfare of the country as dependent chiefly on the amount of its riches, and leaves the distribution of the riches acquired to the free play of competition. This system appears to give undue power to the capitalist and employer, and to throw the workman helpless into his hands. For, as the object aimed at, the acquisition of riches, depends upon the difference between the cost of production and the price obtainable for the finished article, it is obvious that cheapness of production is desirable; and, as labour is one of the chief elements in production, the cheapness of labour becomes a prime necessity. There thus arises, on the part of the capitalist, the desire to pay as little as possible for the labour he employs, and a complete severance follows of the interests of capital and labour. As a result a bitter antagonism springs up between those whose interests are in fact identical, and who in the nature of things should act in the closest partnership. If such a contest is allowed to follow its natural course, the workmen must inevitably be beaten, and the tyranny of capital be established. The weakness of labour in the struggle arises from the necessity under which the workman lies to find an immediate sale for his labour, which is the sole commodity he has to offer. To fail in finding this immediate market means starvation. The man possessing capital, or the means of immediately employing labour, is therefore master of the situation. On the part of the workman it is a case of forced sale; and if worked to its extreme, the system, supposing, as is the fact, that labour is superabundant, obliges the workman to accept anything the capitalist offers him. He must accept this or starve. The limit of wages with free competition is therefore only reached when it is so low that the workman thinks it better to risk the chance of starvation than to work on such miserable terms. The limitation of competition would appear to be the only possible cure for such a state of things. It arises naturally in the case of skilled labour; the supply is not unlimited, the competition is not complete. For the limited supply the capitalists compete among themselves; the price of it, that is the wages, are raised. But competition can also be limited by an agreement among the workmen to raise the amount of payment which they think preferable to starvation. If the workmen in any given trade

Tyranny of  
capital.

omitted

will combine, and refuse to accept less than a certain wage, the capitalist requiring their services must give it, or lose the advantage of the employment of his capital.

It is upon these principles that Trades Unions were founded, and strikes became an institution. The workmen had early seen that combination was a means of advancing their interest. But the law had been very hard upon such combinations. They were treated and punished as conspiracies. The natural result followed; they became conspiracies, attended with outrage and the exhibition of bitter animosity between employer and employed. As early as 1826 the severity of the law against combinations in restraint of trade had been softened by statute. Subsequent legislation had carried this improvement further, and as Friendly Societies the Trades Unions were now recognised. A better field for the development of the plans of the workmen had thus been opened, and it was in this direction, rather than towards political improvement, that their attention was now largely directed. The spread of Trades-unionism had been wide and rapid. In 1861 such societies existed in 405 towns, and numbered nearly 2000. Their annual income was over £1,000,000, and they included a large majority of skilled workmen. Though still regarded by many people with much dislike and mistrust, and often spoken of in terms of most unwarranted reprobation, they were for the most part well-organised, well-managed societies, in the hands of very able men, the flower of the class. Their leaders were true representatives freely elected; paid agitators though often spoken of scarcely existed. The management in which many shared was an excellent political training. Their principles, which forbade overtime, and led to an equalisation of wages, required in the better workman much self-denial, and in the general mass of Unionists much self-restraint, and a spirit of discipline and obedience. Under their influence, in spite of many apparent failures, great improvements had been secured. The weapon they employed was the strike, or organised refusal of a body of workmen to accept work till their demands were granted. Those demands were usually a rise of wages or shorter hours, and sometimes both.

It might seem that such a process entirely turned the tables, and placed the tyranny in the hands of the workmen. But in that direction also a limit exists, and the rise of wages must come to an end when it reaches that point at which the capitalist would prefer to lose the use of his capital, rather than pay the sum demanded. A strike thus became a rude method of settling

Rise of Trades  
Unions.

Strikes and  
Lock-outs.

what the wages of a certain trade should be. Ignorance of the state of trade, and of the amount of profits earned by their employers, frequently misled the workmen; they demanded more than the employers would or could give, and consequently failed. But not unfrequently the event proved that their judgment had been right, and they obtained the object for which they had struck. It was not to be expected that a great combined action, entailing much individual suffering and loss, could be carried out by men, the mass of whom were but little educated, without some disorder and some violence. Non-unionist men, who were brought to fill the vacant places, were sometimes ill-used; a silent but very effective coercion was brought to bear on men who would gladly have continued their work; and occasional disturbances arose among the unemployed workmen. Of these the masters made the most. To the strikes they opposed the lock-out. They closed their yards and factories, in order to throw upon the funds of the Unions the burden of supporting the ejected workmen. It was thus hoped that necessity would drive the strikers to yield. Every attempt was made to rouse public opinion on behalf of the capitalist, by emphasising the folly of the workman who lost his wages, by exaggerating the disorders among the unemployed, and by threatening England with permanent disaster if the course of trade was thus interrupted, and the price of production forced up. But the workmen found eloquent defenders, and among them Mr. Bright, the chief apostle of free-trade and competition. In more than one great speech he vindicated the Trades Unions, and recognised that strikes were justifiable. "It has never yet been proved," he said in 1860, "that Trades Unions or Strikes are always bad. I daresay that in nine cases out of ten, for aught I know in ninety out of a hundred, a strike had better be avoided. But the strike is the reserved power, and if I were a working man, I should never say I would surrender my right in combination with others to take such steps as are legal and moral for the advancement of my interests, and the interests of those who worked with me." Strikes were for some years constant in nearly every trade throughout the north of England. Those which excited most attention were that of the Amalgamated Engineers in 1852; the strike in Preston in 1854, in which, after a resistance of thirty-seven weeks, the strikers were beaten; the builders' strike in 1859, for a reduction of work to nine hours; and in 1865, the strike in the iron trade in North Staffordshire. The masters of South Staffordshire on that occasion came to the support of their fellows in the North, and blew out their furnaces in the hope of compelling the men to yield.



But after several months they found it necessary for their own interest one by one to yield, and the men were triumphant.

Divested of its rough exterior, and of those repulsive incidents connected with it which brought it into such evil repute, **Good effected by Trades-unionism.** Trades-unionism would seem to be a very earnest, even a noble, effort for the improvement of the position of the working classes. The present economic divisions are accepted by it; there is no desire of the working man to encroach upon the advantages or duties of capital; the state of the workman is recognised as honourable. As both capital and labour are requisite for production, there should be no antagonism between the two; they should co-operate. But the peculiar condition of one of the constituents in this partnership is its need of immediate returns, and its incapacity to bear the shocks of variable trade. It requires to be secured a permanent and regular, if small share, of the joint advantage of production, and to be guarded from all unnecessary risks and dangers. The duty of capital is to supply these needs. Its enormous advantages should go hand in hand with large responsibilities, while the disadvantages of the workmen should be counterbalanced by freedom from responsibility, by steady and equable payments, and by employment so limited as to leave time for the enjoyments of life and the cultivation of the qualities which a citizen should possess. To secure these ends, to diminish competition among the workmen themselves, and to ensure a more wide diffusion of employment, the points insisted on by the Trades-unionists were the minimum of wages and the suppression of overtime and piecework—demands which require great self-denial on the part of the better workmen,—the limitation of the hours of work, and the removal of reckless management which, for the sake of a little larger profit, frequently risked the workman's life. It is unfortunate that the high ground of theory occupied by the admirers of Trades-unionism was frequently, in fact very generally, deserted by the men themselves. They neither understood the theory nor did they in any way reduce it to practice, but acted neither better nor worse than the generality of men, putting before themselves as their avowed object to get as much as possible for their labour—the commodity they had to sell—and giving as little as possible in exchange for their wages. The means which they employed not unfrequently as will be seen subsequently degenerated into rude brutality.

The second great effort in which the working classes were engaged for the purpose of improving their condition rested on very different

principles. It depended, like Trades-unionism, upon combination, and took to itself the title of Co-operation. There is little doubt that it had its origin in views of a socialistic character; and the enthusiasm and self-denial with which it was supported, the almost sacred character with which its principles were invested by those who held them, are proofs of the true and vigorous instincts of the working men. When co-operation first made its appearance it was in close union with a desire for education, temperance, and thrift, and was connected with all the great liberal movements of the time, such as free-trade and the abolition of slavery. But when divested of these accessories, which do not essentially belong to it, co-operation appears to be an effort to get rid of the antagonism of capital and labour by embodying them both in the same people, and rendering the workman himself a capitalist. That is to say, it leaves the relations between capital and labour untouched; for the capitalist workman inevitably begins before long to employ labour, and the whole question arises again. This weakness in the effort, in the midst of all its great excellences, is seen clearly in the fact that the success of the movement has been largely restricted to distribution, that is to say, it has succeeded only when there has been no co-operation, in the proper sense of the word. It has succeeded admirably in supplying many poor men with good and honest articles, in keeping them from debt, in forcing on them a means of saving, and in accumulating in the hands of a large number of people very considerable capitals which would otherwise have been in the hands of a few. But when that point has been arrived at, the employment of these large capitals has presented an insuperable difficulty, unless they are to be used exactly like private capitals with all the evils of competition.

Rise of  
Co-operation.

Although there had been certain earlier efforts in the same direction, practically the origin of the movement is to be found in the establishment, in 1844, of the Pioneer Society in Rochdale. Twenty-eight men, finding a capital of £1 each, began purchasing their own supplies, and dividing the profits in proportion to the amount of purchases. It is this principle which has been in nearly every case followed by co-operators. A fixed interest is paid on the capital advanced, and every purchaser buying at the ordinary market rates receives back, at the end of the year, a percentage on the amount of his purchases. The shares are usually £1 shares, and this percentage on the purchase is kept back till the £1 is paid, and then retained if the member so wishes it and added to

Success of the  
Rochdale co-  
operators.

his capital invested in the concern. The member is thus compelled to save whether he wishes it or not up to a certain amount, and is induced to save afterwards. Repeated legislation for the benefit of the working classes, such as the Factory Acts, the Ten Hours Act, and the Acts of 1846 extending legal protection to Friendly Societies, allowed the rapid development of the principle. The return in December 1864 shows 500 registered Co-operative Societies in the towns and villages of England, with a share capital of £685,000, a business of £2,742,957, and a realised profit of £225,500. The average profit was large, and the Pioneers, after providing for interest on loans and shares, their education fund, and their reserve fund for charity and depreciation, were paying 2s. 4d. in the pound on members' purchases. In the same year a further step was taken by the establishment of the English Wholesale Society, which supplied the co-operative retail shops on co-operative principles. The success which had attended "stores" managed by the workmen themselves in their own interest was thus very great. Doubts as to general success of Co-operation. The strength of the system had been thoroughly tested by the cotton distress, and it passed successfully through the trial. But when applied to the great problem, the relation of labour and capital, the system proved less successful. Unfortunately, the cotton famine had occurred just as the Rochdale Pioneers had set on foot a first-rate cotton mill; and although it was one of the last to leave off work and the first to resume it, its character was changed, and it was no longer owned by the workmen who worked in it. The system has since largely grown, is still being enthusiastically pushed, and is still producing excellent results. The accumulations of capital are very large in the hands of the different stores, but the method of its employment, and the means of extending the principle to production, are still undecided questions, dividing the opinions of the co-operators themselves.

In conjunction with these direct efforts to advance the interests of their class, many of the leaders of the working men were earnest supporters of the Temperance movement, which seemed to lead indirectly to the same result. Growth of the Temperance movement. The evils arising from drunkenness are so obvious, and the amount of wages expended in liquor so vast, that for a good many years, especially since the preaching of Father Mathew, the attention of social reformers had been directed towards the mitigation of the evil. Many societies for the support of temperance, or of total abstinence from intoxicating drinks, had been established. In the Northern

States of America the movement had been more pronounced, and in 1851, by what is known as the Maine Liquor Law, the sale of alcoholic drinks had been entirely forbidden in the State of Maine. In 1852, encouraged by the success which, it was asserted, had attended this measure, certain gentlemen established a Committee, over which Mr. Walter Trevelyan presided, to carry on an agitation for the establishment of a similar measure in England. The result was a large organisation known as the Alliance. Under the guidance of this association a vigorous agitation was carried on, with all the apparatus of meetings, lectures, and the distribution of tracts. The principle urged was permissive prohibition, and after the adherence to the plan of a very important number of the ministers of religion in England, and, as far as could be ascertained, of a preponderance of other classes, in the year 1864 a Bill was brought into the House embodying this principle. It proposed to confer upon the ratepayers of cities, boroughs, parishes, and townships, the power to prohibit the common sale of drinks. A majority of two-thirds of the votes of the ratepayers would be necessary. This was the first introduction of that Permissive Bill which has since afforded so constant a subject of agitation. Attacking as it did very powerful interests, and placing in the hands of the ratepayers an extraordinary power over property already invested in a lucrative trade, it was as a matter of course rejected by the House. It secured however the support of forty members, and the Alliance, far from being disheartened, continued to pursue its objects vigorously. Like many other of the questions which about this time came to the front, the legislative enforcement of temperance is still unsettled. But its appearance adds one other proof to the growing importance of social questions consequent on the more democratic course on which England had entered. It may be classed among the efforts at self-improvement supported by the people themselves.

But it was not only to themselves that they might look for advance. The recognition of the claims of the poorer classes is visible alike in the legislation and in the private effort Philanthropic efforts. of the time. While laws were enacted to facilitate united action on the part of the workmen, protection afforded to women and children, and the hours of labour shortened, sanitary improvements culminating in the great work of London drainage were pressed forward. Philanthropists, at the head of whom Lord Shaftesbury stands in noble pre-eminence, were bringing to light the horrors of the gang system and employment of child labour for agricultural purposes in



the Eastern Counties, establishing ragged schools for the civilisation of the poorest part of children of cities, and drawing attention to the necessity of the improvement of workmen's houses. A rich American, Mr. Peabody, set a noble example in this direction by giving, in 1862, £150,000 for the benefit of the poor in London, a gift which he subsequently increased to £350,000, with which model dwellings for the poor were erected. In 1861 the Government had afforded an easy means of encouraging thrift, by the establishment of a savings-bank connected with the Post-Office. Its ramifications were thus spread into every corner of the kingdom, and the migratory habits of the working class conveniently met. The interest offered was not large, but the security, which, in the case of Friendly Societies, was often deficient, was of course perfect. At the suggestion of Lord Derby in 1864, it was made the condition in all Bills sanctioning metropolitan railways, that cheap trains to bring working men to their work should be run.

Another sign of the improvement which had taken place in the accepted standard of national requirements was the grant for the purpose of national education, which year by year increased, and the very considerable interest felt in the attempt made in 1862 to render it more effective.

Efforts to  
improve  
education.

The minute of the Committee of Privy Council, under which, since 1847, Government assistance to education had been given, had only proved partially successful. The status of the schoolmaster had been much raised, a good deal of help had been given him in the course of his professional training, and the standard of school-teaching improved. Yet when the result upon the pupils came to be examined, it was very disappointing. According to a report of a royal commission in the year 1861, whereas 2,200,000 children ought to have been brought into the inspected schools, no more than 920,000 actually attended them, and of these only 230,000 could be considered to have received adequate instruction in the elements of reading, writing, and arithmetic. The system had called out much voluntary effort, had placed good teaching within reach of many of the poor, but had neither induced nor compelled them to take advantage of it. The grant was given to any school which satisfied the inspector as to its general efficiency. Various opinions might easily be held as to what constituted efficiency. The children were examined in classes; a few clever boys ready at answering covered the deficiencies of the rest of the class. Consequently the master was tempted to direct his attention to a few able and willing pupils, and, except as to discipline,

to neglect the rest. The method of dispensing the grant was also complicated. To cure these defects, Mr. Lowe, as Vice-President of the Committee of the Council on Education, produced what is known as the Revised Code. To secure simplicity, all the various forms of grant were to be reduced to one capitation fee. This was to be given for every child who had attended a fixed number of school times, and had satisfied the examiner. Each child was to be examined separately, in reading, writing, and arithmetic only, and the payment depended entirely upon the result. The partial teaching which had followed upon the old system was thus rendered unavailing for the purposes of the grant. At the same time, the higher subjects required by the old minute, having been for the most part very superficially taught, were swept away, and the grant was given for the thorough knowledge of reading, writing, and arithmetic only. When its objects are taken into consideration, the changes made by the Revised Code seem wise. The object of the national expenditure was to secure the wide spread of elementary knowledge ; and the great principles of the code received pretty general approval. Against its details and methods, a very strong opposition was raised. The withdrawal of grants upon certificates, of assistance to pupil-teachers, and of extra payment to the master for instructing pupil-teachers, was looked upon as an attack on vested interests. That the grant should depend upon definite knowledge, irrespective of what was called general efficiency, was thought to leave out of sight many of the best parts of education. The system of grouping children by age was considered as highly inconvenient ; it was thought that the responsibility of paying the pupil-teachers, now thrown upon the managers of the school, would prove too heavy a burden for them ; and although the rules with regard to religious instruction had not been at all relaxed, fears were expressed that this was the beginning of secular education. Content to save the principle of the measure the Government gave way on most of these points. The grant was to be divided between knowledge and regularity, the grouping of the pupils was to be left to the managers. Any deficiency in the stipend of the teachers was to be made up by the Parliamentary grant ; and a school belonging to the Church of England would lose its grant if religious instruction were neglected. With these modifications the Revised Code was accepted by Parliament.

The Revised  
Code passed.  
March 1862.

## CHAPTER IX.

LORD RUSSELL'S MINISTRY, November 6, 1865.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Russell.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cranworth.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Granville.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Argyll.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Gladstone.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir George Grey.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Cardwell.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Clarendon.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Hartington.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Earl de Grey and Ripon.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Somerset.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Milner Gibson.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Stanley of Alderley.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Goschen.
<i>President of the Poor-Law Board</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Charles Villiers.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Wodehouse.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Brady.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Chichester Fortescue.

WHATEVER truth there may have been in Mr. Disraeli's views, they had failed in any way to influence the election of 1865. The result showed an increase of the Liberal majority, which was reckoned at seventy-seven. Perhaps of more importance to the Liberal party than its numerical increase, was the defeat of Mr. Gladstone at Oxford. Hitherto somewhat tied by the traditions of the party, and conscious that his opinions had outstripped those of the constituency which he represented, he had felt himself obliged to exercise a considerable self-restraint. His rejection by the University, and his election in Lancashire, left him more free to follow his own bent. As he himself told his new electors, he stood before them "unmuzzled." The death of Lord Palmerston, which placed the Premiership in the hands of Lord Russell, left the leadership of the Lower House to Mr. Gladstone, and the opportunity was thus given him of assuming that command-

Lord Russell's  
Ministry.  
Nov. 6, 1865

ing position in the Liberal party which he has ever since occupied. The accession of Lord Russell to the Premiership necessitated some slight changes in the Administration. Lord Clarendon became Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. Mr. Chichester Fortescue succeeded Sir Robert Peel as Secretary for Ireland. Mr. Forster began his official life as Under-Secretary for the Colonies, and Mr. Goschen, who had been returned at the head of the four Liberal Members for the City of London, after holding for a short time the Vice-Presidency of the Board of Trade, was summoned to the Cabinet as Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. The Ministry seemed destined to a long life ;—before eight months were over it had been driven to give place to the Conservative Opposition. Pledged as he believed to a measure of electoral reform, Lord Russell, with honest but impolitic haste, had forced the question to the front, had produced a Bill which excited the opposition of many sections of the House, and had fallen a victim to an adverse combination of Conservatives and Liberals. But his brief tenure of the Premiership had not been uneventful. The agricultural interest had suffered a severe blow by the prevalence of the cattle plague ; a financial crisis had been warded off only by a relaxation of the restrictions on the Bank of England ; a threatened outbreak of the blacks in Jamaica, and its cruel suppression, had excited much bitter feeling in England ; and Irish discontent had reached a crisis demanding the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act.

The terrible murrain, known as the cattle disease or rinderpest, had appeared in London about the end of June. It rapidly spread through England, and even invaded Scotland. A Commission was appointed to take evidence upon it, and recommended that very stringent measures should be taken, including the suppression of all transit of cattle, and the cessation of importation from abroad. The Government refused at first to accept the responsibility of carrying out the report, and thought it better, by means of Orders in Council to give large powers to local authorities, and to throw upon them the responsibility. It was no doubt a very serious thing suddenly to change the character of the meat-supply, and in fact to substitute dead-meat markets for cattle-markets in all the great centres of population. The remedies, as locally applied, proved insufficient. The terrible scourge continued its course, and when the Commissioners issued their second report, they stated that the total number of recorded cases (and the returns were avowedly imperfect) amounted to upwards of 120,000, of which 90,000 had proved fatal. Under these circumstances Government yielded, and in the

The cattle  
plague.



spring of 1866 the Home Secretary, Sir George Grey, introduced a Bill accepting most of the recommendations of the Commissioners, authorising the slaughter at the port of arrival of all foreign cattle, and allowing compensation to the owners for the loss sustained. With certain amendments, which rendered it still more stringent and lowered the compensation to be given, the Bill was passed. In spite of precautions the plague continued throughout the year, although gradually diminishing; but some compensating advantages attended the heavy losses which it entailed. The sanitary condition of farms, and of the establishments of milkmen, began to attract increased attention. The abuses of live cattle-markets in cities, and especially in London, were lessened or removed by the introduction of dead-meat markets. And as the sheds of the cow-keepers in or near London had proved to be centres of the disease, a whole new branch of trade, which has since been very largely developed, was opened to the agriculturists in the milk-supply of large towns.

The commercial difficulties of the country were not to be traced to any diminution in the amount of trade, but to the success which had attended the late financial measures, coupled with a **The commercial crisis.** largely increased employment of the principle of limited liability. Nearly 250 limited companies, either wholly new or formed from private concerns already existing, had been established during the year. It was the failure of the largest of these companies, the firm of Messrs. Overend and Gurney, the bill discounters, which brought on the crisis. The apprehension and distress in the city is described as extraordinary. The rate of discount had already reached nine per cent., but on the 11th of May the Governor of the Bank informed the Chancellor of the Exchequer that in the course of one day upwards of four millions had been advanced to bankers and bill-brokers, and the reserve diminished one-half, a sum scarcely exceeding £3,000,000. The Ministry thought it prudent to avert the impending ruin by allowing an issue of notes, beyond the limits fixed by law, at ten per cent. discount. Again had it been found impossible to resist the pressure of the mercantile world, and to uphold in the time of difficulty the requirements of the Bank Act. The relaxation produced the effect desired; confidence was gradually restored. Though many failures marked the course of the year, and gave proof of the insecure extreme to which speculative trading had been pressed, the commerce of the country was in the main sound, and the difficulty passed away.

More important in some respects, because more directly dependent

upon the action of England as an Imperial Power, than the visitation of disease or the fluctuations of trade, were the events occurring in Jamaica and in Ireland. Very different in importance as the temporary disturbance in Jamaica and the in-  
The Jamaica  
insurrection.
creasing discontent in Ireland were, they are not without some curious points of resemblance. Though comparatively trivial, the outbreak in Jamaica and its suppression throw a not altogether pleasant light upon English methods, when applied to the government of a subject race. There was displayed on a small theatre the same arrogant sense of superiority, the same bigoted trust in the divine right of the landowner, the same unrestrained eagerness in revenge for the death of an Englishman, which has characterised unfortunately English rule wherever it has been planted. The disturbances were confined to the district and parish of St. Thomas in the East. There were local grievances arising from a dispute between Mr. Gordon, a native proprietor, and Baron Ketelholdt, the custos of the parish. Mr. Gordon, a dissenter, and apparently a reformer of abuses and  
Causes for the  
outbreak.
unpopular among his fellows, had been deprived of his place among the magistrates, and prevented from filling the office of churchwarden to which he was elected. The expenses of the suits against him had been defrayed from the public purse. The native Baptists, the sect to which he belonged, were angry with what they regarded as at once an act of persecution and a misappropriation of the public money. Indignation meetings had been held, at which Mr. Gordon had used language of an inflammatory character, but couched in general terms, and with denunciations so veiled in Scriptural expressions that they could scarcely be regarded as implying any wish on his part to proceed to extremities. They had however fallen on ignorant and willing ears. For behind this quarrel, which would not of itself have produced much result, there lay more general grievances. There was a widespread though probably ungrounded feeling that wages were unduly low. The native labourer was no doubt an idler, and the smallness of his receipts was due to the inefficiency of his labour. But there was a real grievance in the difficulty of obtaining redress through law administered entirely by landlords; and as a natural consequence there had grown up a strong mistrust of the law itself, and a complete alienation between the employer and the employed. To this was added a feeling on the part of the class above the ordinary labourer, known as the free settlers, that they were unduly rented, and obliged to pay rent for land which they should have held free; and there was a very general though vague expectation that in some

way or other the occupiers would be freed from the payment of rent. The insurrection broke out in October. A quarrel arose during the sitting of the Petty Sessions at Morant Bay, and a policeman had been beaten. Warrants were issued for the apprehension of Paul Bogle and some others of the alleged rioters, who lived at a place called Stoney Gut, some five miles distant. The attempt to serve the warrant produced a formidable rescue. Some four hundred men, armed with cutlasses and sticks, rushed from a chapel where Bogle was in the habit of preaching, beat off the policemen, and took some of them prisoners. On the next day, when the Magistrates and Vestry were assembled in the Court-House at Morant Bay, a crowd of insurgents made their appearance, the volunteers were called out, and the Riot Act read; and after a skirmish the Court-House was taken and burnt, eighteen of the defenders killed and thirty wounded. The jail was broken open and several stores sacked. There was some evidence that the rising was premeditated, and that a good deal of drilling had been going on among the blacks under the command of Bogle. From Morant Bay armed parties of the insurgents passed inland through the country attacking the plantations, driving the inhabitants to take refuge in the bush, and putting some of the whites to death. The Governor of the Island at the time was Mr. Eyre. He at once summoned his Privy Council, and with their advice declared martial law over the county of Surrey, with the exception of the town of Kingston. Bodies of troops were also at once despatched to surround the insurgent district, and in the opinion of the Commissioners intrusted to examine into the case afterwards

*Its cruel suppression.* the military operations were well arranged, and well carried out. But if in a military point of view successful, they were attended with excessive acts of severity which can scarcely be excused. 439 persons fell victims to summary punishment, and not less than a thousand dwellings were burnt; besides which, it would appear that at least 600 men and women were subjected to flogging, in some instances with circumstances of unusual cruelty. But the event which chiefly fixed the attention of the public in England was the summary conviction and execution of Mr. Gordon. He was undoubtedly a troublesome person, and there were circumstances raising a suspicion that he possessed a guilty knowledge of the intended insurrection. They were however far too slight to have secured his conviction before a Court of Law. But Governor Eyre caused him to be arrested in Kingston, where martial law did not exist, hurried on board ship and carried to Morant Bay, within the

proclaimed district. He was there tried by a court-martial, consisting of three young officers. Their sentence was sanctioned by Brigadier Nelson, the officer in command, and he was immediately executed. Although the abuses of power which had attended the suppression of the insurrection did not escape notice, there was at first a general feeling of approbation of the energetic and successful action of the Governor. A formal expression of this feeling was even made in Parliament. But as by degrees fresh proofs of uncalled-for severity were brought to light, the opinion of the Liberal party changed, and the country rang with vehement denunciations of the Governor and his agents. It was found necessary to appoint Commissioners to inquire into the circumstances. Their report, a temperate statement of facts, brought out the really dangerous character of the movement, praised the promptitude and vigour of Governor Eyre, but concluded by stating that, in the opinion of the Commissioners, martial law had been continued for an unnecessary length of time, that the punishments were excessive, the executions unnecessarily frequent, the floggings reckless and sometimes positively barbarous, and the burning of houses wanton and cruel. With regard to Mr. Gordon, they declared the evidence of his guilt to be insufficient, and expressed a belief that though his language had been culpably violent he had not intended to proceed to the length of rebellion. Upon this report it was thought well, by those who disapproved of what had been done, to institute proceedings against Governor Eyre himself, and some of those who had acted under his orders. The legal proceedings lingered on for several years. Again and again the Grand Jury refused to bring a true bill against Mr. Eyre, and although on one occasion the charge of Chief-Justice Cockburn was full of severe strictures upon the undue employment of martial law, the jury even then concluded that the Governor had done only what he honestly thought was necessary for the preservation of the Colony. Eventually, in 1872, after a Parliamentary discussion, Government paid Mr. Eyre's legal expenses, and thus publicly exonerated him from blame. Public feeling in England was considerably divided on the question, but as usual the general opinion of the upper classes was in favour of the assertion of authority, and ready to condone much cruelty and illegality, if only it conduced to the maintenance of English supremacy.

Early in the session of 1866, and during its continuance, Irish affairs had been the topic of considerable debates in the House of Commons. The continued poverty of Ireland, and the ceaseless



stream of emigrants leaving its shores for America, had been pointed out, and the usual difference of opinion as to possible cures had shown itself. Absenteeism, the paucity of leases, the want of some tenant right or law to ensure compensation for tenants' improvements, the unthrifty character of the tenants, the unsatisfactory position of the Protestant Church, and the peculiarities of the climate, had all in turn been emphasised as the causes of the admitted evil. But no consensus in favour of any of the various cures suggested had been arrived at sufficient to allow of the introduction of a remedial measure. The view of the Government indeed, as expressed by both the Secretary of Ireland and by the Premier, had been one of hope. The harvest was declared to be satisfactory, and trade and manufacture extending over the country. But any appearance of returning content was, in fact, delusive. The ill success of the open movement of Young Ireland, and the measure of repression with which it had been attended, had had the effect of turning into secret channels the feeling of opposition to England which still existed in all its strength. The secret society known as the Phoenix had been discovered and suppressed, only to be succeeded by the far more formidable organisation known as the Fenian Brotherhood. Arranged with more than usual skill as a secret association, it differed from former Irish organisations of the same kind in this, that its strength lay not in the country itself, but in the Irish who had made America their home, and that its object was overt military rebellion. The flood of emigration from Ireland to the States had never ceased. The Irishman had carried with him all his old rancour against England. He had found himself with his fellow-countrymen able to play an important part in the party politics of his new country. Filled with a new sense of importance, he formed the hope of employing his influence to force hostility to England upon the American Government, and believed that in the irritation which had arisen between the countries from the circumstances of the great civil war he had found his opportunity of so doing. In that war the Irish had taken a large part. They were found indiscriminately in both armies. The lessons of the war had not been lost upon them. To their old national characteristics, the Irish-Americans had added the power of combination and discipline, and the somewhat reckless enterprise of the partisan soldier. Although, as will be subsequently seen, the movement was futile, and even attracted ridicule by its want of success, it was by no means a thing to be laughed at. When the heated partisanship

Rise of the  
Fenian move-  
ment.

Danger arising  
from its Ameri-  
can connection.

which attends American politics is remembered, it will be evident that one of the contending parties might easily have been induced to secure the votes of the Irish by co-operation in their plans. The as yet undecided question of the *Alabama* claims might easily have given popularity to such a course of action, and the open frontier of Canada afforded an easy scene of operations. The danger was however much diminished when the want of fidelity, which so constantly destroys secret societies, began to show itself. The Government received very full information of the designs of the Brotherhood, and was prepared to meet them. A sudden raid on the 15th of September was made upon the office of *The Irish People*, which was the organ of the Brotherhood. O'Donovan Rossa, the proprietor, and several others in connection with the paper, were apprehended, and the whole contents of the office carried off by the authorities. At the same time, in Cork, with similar rapidity of action, some twenty men were arrested, and shortly afterwards the house, in which James Stephens "the Head Centre" in Ireland lived, was searched by the police, and Stephens with Kickham and certain other important members of the conspiracy arrested. In November a Special Commission was opened in Dublin and in Cork to try the prisoners, and abundant evidence was found to convict the larger part of them, and to lay open the full designs of the organisation. It became evident that the movement was not only directed towards the independence of Ireland, but to the entire overthrow of the existing state of society, and the general division of property. There was no hesitation on the part of the juries to find verdicts. The prisoners were condemned to various terms of penal servitude. The only failure on the part of the Government was caused by the escape of Stephens, who, aided by partisans among the prison officials, contrived to break out of Richmond jail, and to elude all efforts at recapture. He does not appear to have been a man of very firm character. At all events, the lesson he had received prevented him from ever afterwards assuming a prominent position among the Fenians. But these first apprehensions seemed by no means to put an end to the danger. More arrests were made, while the large ramifications of the Society became more and more obvious. Under these circumstances Lord Wodehouse, the Lord-Lieutenant, informed the Government in London, that the Chancellor, and Mr. Fortescue, the Secretary, entirely agreed with him on the necessity of suspending the Habeas Corpus Act, and that immediately. The agents of the Society were scattered over the country swearing in members, and

Arrest of the  
leaders.

ready to take the command. Of these American-Irishmen, thoroughly reckless men, possessed of considerable military experience, about 500 were known to the police. There were also some hundreds of men brought over from England and Scotland, and receiving 1s. 6d. a day, waiting for the time of action. Manufactories of pikes, bullets, and cartridges had been discovered, and, the worst feature of all, attempts were being made to seduce the troops. The letter containing this information was laid before the House of Commons on Friday the 16th of February, with an intimation that the Government proposed to suspend the Habeas Corpus Act in Ireland, and to make arrangements for carrying it at once through all its stages, so that it might be in the hands of the Irish Government on the morning of Monday the 19th. Very little opposition was encountered. Both Mr. Bright and Mr. Mill expressed their feeling of shame that the maladministration of England should have rendered such a measure necessary, but declined to oppose it. Only six votes were given against the introduction of the Bill, and it was passed without further discussion. With the same rapidity it was hurried through the Upper House. The document, appointing Commissioners to give the royal assent, was already in the hands of Lord Granville with the Queen at Osborne. Notice was telegraphed to him that the Bill had passed, and he at once obtained the Queen's signature. The House of Lords was kept sitting to give time for the messenger to bring the paper to London, and early on the Sunday morning the Commissioners duly made their appearance, and the Bill became law. The effect of the suspension of the Habeas Corpus was considerable and immediate. Large numbers of the Irish-Americans at once took flight. Yet the conspiracy had gone too far to be entirely checked. It even assumed the dangerous form of an invasion of the Canadian frontier. At the end of May some 1200 men crossed the Niagara river, and were with some difficulty checked by the loyal volunteers. The attempt, though at first it appeared fraught with danger, brought to light the delusive character of any hope which the Fenians might have formed of enlisting the Americans on their side. The United States Government refused to allow hostile operations against a friendly Power to be carried on along its frontier, and took vigorous measures to suppress the outbreak. Although it was thus proved that the movement was wanting in that support which could alone make it really dangerous, the reckless men who directed it continued their operations in Ireland itself, and it fell to the lot of Lord Russell's successors to continue the suspension of the

Suspension of  
the Habeas  
Corpus Act.

Habeas Corpus Act, and to deal with more than one important difficulty of Fenian origin.

It was the question of Reform which threw the further conduct of Irish affairs into new hands. Since the failure of Lord Russell's Bill in 1860, the question, as far as the Government was concerned, had been allowed to rest. Lord Palmerston himself regarded with disfavour any extension of the franchise. His popularity, and the quiet satisfaction with which his long tenure of office was attended, had prevented any active efforts to bring the question to the front. His death broke the charmed quiet. Lord Russell felt himself pledged to immediate movement, and the restless activity of Mr. Gladstone was certain to bring that statesman to his support. Accordingly it was indicated in the Queen's Speech that reform of the electoral franchise was in contemplation, and on the 12th of March the Chancellor of the Exchequer introduced the measure. No less than six times, he said, the speech from the Throne had recommended a revision of the representation, and the time had now arrived for carrying it out. He explained, however, that a complete revision was a work immense in itself, and attended with great difficulties. At the time of the great Reform Bill two years had been practically sacrificed for the purpose of passing it. He proposed therefore, leaving all side questions to further consideration, to proceed at present with that part only of the scheme which consisted in the lowering and arrangement of the franchise. The propositions were simple in character. It was intended to reduce the county franchise to £14, which it was estimated would add about 171,000 persons to the electoral lists. As a reward for thrift £50 deposited in the savings-bank for two years untouched was to give the right of voting; some 15,000 electors would thus be added. In towns (the most important, perhaps, of the points to be arranged) the franchise was to be lowered from £10 to £7. What were known as the compound householders (men hiring houses, the rates of which were paid by the landlord), occupiers of parts of houses, and lodgers, were all to be admitted to the franchise if the value of their holding was a clear £7 a year, not as before estimated on the rates but upon the rental. Rather more than 200,000 would thus be added to the borough constituencies, making a total increase of some 400,000 new voters.

It is rather strange that a Bill of such very moderate dimensions should have occasioned the fall of the Ministry. But, in fact, it was its very moderation which was the cause of its weakness. It failed to

Lord Russell's  
Reform Bill.



excite that popular enthusiasm which was required to compel the Liberal party to accept it heartily, and to act in unison. It had all the appearance of a compromise. It seemed as though its framers had attempted to satisfy that portion of their supporters which desired a lower franchise, without shocking the strong party of Palmerstonian Liberals, on whom their majority largely depended. The successful passage of the Bill would moreover have implied an immediate dissolution, a step which a newly elected Parliament could hardly be expected to approve of. A somewhat strange result followed. The so-called Liberals of a Conservative turn of mind, feeling no pressure from without, regarded themselves as free to act according to their pleasure, and certain of them headed by Mr. Lowe and Mr. Horsman attacked the Bill with violence, declaring, as was indeed somewhat true, that it rested on no great principle, was merely a new step towards throwing all power into the hands of mere numbers, a course which must inevitably lead, if pursued, to a completely democratic suffrage. The impassioned eloquence of Mr. Gladstone, and the nervous oratory of Mr. Bright, were alike in vain. In vain too was the ridicule which he threw upon Mr. Horsman as the chief of a new party who had retired into his political cave of Adullam, and called about him every one who was in distress and every one who was discontented. The "Adullamites" proved sufficiently strong, when joined to the Conservatives, to allow the passing of the second reading of the Bill by the narrow majority of five only. Mr. Gladstone had staked the continuance of the Government upon the success of his measure. He had passed the Rubicon, he said, and broken down the bridge, and burnt his boats. Small though the majority was, he determined to continue in office while the Bill passed into Committee. But, as was certain under the circumstances, it there encountered a fire of amendments of all sorts; and at length Lord Dunkellin, a Liberal, succeeded in carrying against the Ministry an amendment substituting rating for rental. The change would have been very trifling, but as much stress had been laid upon the superiority of a rental to a rating franchise the Government could not refuse to consider it as a vital matter, and at once resigned.

General  
opposition to  
the Bill.

Resignation of  
the Ministry.  
June 26, 1866.

## CHAPTER X.

### LORD DERBY'S MINISTRY, June 1866.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Derby.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Chelmsford.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Buckingham.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Malmesbury.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Disraeli.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Spencer Walpole.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Carnarvon.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Stanley.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	General Peel.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cranborne.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Sir John Pakington.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Stafford Northcote.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Montrose.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Devon.
<i>President of the Poor-Law Board,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Gathorne Hardy.
<i>Chief Commissioner of Works,</i>	. . . . .	Lord John Manners.

#### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Abercorn.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Blackburne.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Naas (Earl of Mayo).

The following changes took place in March 1867 :—

<i>President of the Council,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Marlborough.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Buckingham.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir John Pakington.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Sir Stafford Northcote.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Corry.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	. . . . .	Duke of Richmond.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	. . . . .	Colonel Patten, May 1867.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Gathorne Hardy, May 1867.
<i>In the Cabinet, without office,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Spencer Walpole, May 1867.

The following changes took place in February 1868 :—

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Disraeli.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	. . . . .	Mr. Ward Hunt.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	. . . . .	Lord Cairns.

THE defeat of the late Ministry had been caused by a union of the Conservatives with a section of the Liberal party. The Conservatives were in a minority in the House, and the "Adullamite party" refused to join in the new arrangements. Thus, though Lord Derby found no

Lord Derby's  
Ministry.  
June 1866.

forming a satisfactory Ministry, with Mr. Disraeli as Chancellor of the Exchequer and Leader of the Lower House, it remained to be seen how government could be carried on in the face of a hostile majority.

It was not till the 9th of July that any declaration of the principles of the Ministers could be made. It was therefore impossible that in the few remaining weeks of the session any legislation of importance should be undertaken. But short as the period was, it afforded opportunity for an exhibition of popular feeling, which was not without its effect upon the future conduct of the Ministry. Although the enthusiasm of the constituencies in favour of reform had not been sufficient to compel a firm cohesion among the Liberal members, the defeat of the Government measure, and the fear lest the object so nearly obtained should be snatched from them, had excited much angry feeling among the Radicals and the working class. It seemed to be taken for granted that the new Ministry, even should it try to handle the question at all, would treat the reform of the electorate in a Conservative spirit. Leagues and associations for the purpose of furthering the popular wish were created, the most important of which was the Reform League. It was determined to hold a monster demonstration in Hyde Park, under the presidency of Mr. Beales, the head of the League. Mr. Walpole, the Home Secretary, determined to prevent the intended meeting. The people were forbidden to assemble in the Park, the gates were closed, and a large body of police placed on duty. Processions headed by bands moved towards the Marble Arch. Mr. Beales and his friends demanded admittance, which was refused on the authority of the police. The leaders withdrew to Trafalgar Square, and there held an orderly meeting. But expectation of disturbance had collected a large crowd round the Park, among which were naturally many disorderly persons. The sympathy of the crowd was entirely with the demonstrators, and there was a strong feeling that the exclusion of the people from the Park was a strained use of authority. While the leaders therefore quietly withdrew, the mob broke into disorder, threw down the railings of the Park, and rushed tumultuously into the inclosure. It was thought necessary to bring soldiers upon the scene, but they were not employed. Indeed, though the excitement was great, and many of the inhabitants of London fancied that the reign of anarchy had begun, there was little serious rioting. But the disturbance was enough to show the danger which might easily arise from any refusal to handle

Reform demonstrations  
and processions.

the matter of reform, or from any overstrained use of authority in opposing what the people regarded as their rights.

The agitation thus begun was continued during the year. Meetings, and demonstrations, and long-drawn processions, in which the Trades Unions took a marked part, were of constant recurrence. The effect produced on the mind of Mr. Disraeli, who was employed during the recess in preparing his reform scheme, was very visible when his plan saw the light. Very early in the session of 1867, having caused those passages of the Queen's Speech to be read which had reference to reform, and which urged that it should be undertaken in a spirit of moderation, he proceeded to explain what the meaning of the passages was. Conscious of the necessity of settling a question which had caused the overthrow of more than one Ministry, and was constantly interfering with the course of business, the Government intended to lift it if possible above the level of party discussion, and to call upon all parties of the House to join in settling it. For that purpose it was proposed that a series of resolutions should be introduced and passed, and a Bill founded upon them. It is easy to attack Mr. Disraeli for adopting this form of procedure, to point out that Government was in fact shirking its responsibilities, and refusing to stake its existence upon a Bill of primary importance on which it was very probable that it would be defeated. And such were the charges heaped upon him at the time. His action was regarded as that of merely a skilful party leader. Beginning his Parliamentary career without any of the advantages which birth or connection give, Mr. Disraeli had undoubtedly fought his way to the front by attachment to party, and by a somewhat unscrupulous use of great talents and of an unusually sharp and bitter tongue. But it may well be doubted whether his views were not upon the whole broader and more statesmanlike than those of any other Parliamentary leader of the time. He had a clear conception of the Constitution of England, which he regarded as depending upon the co-ordinate power of various classes and the absence of the predominance of any one class. He was full of dislike, a dislike which he had expressed even in his youngest days, for the Whig party, whose liberal professions he regarded as hollow and resting on self-interested motives; nor did he feel stronger attachment for the Manchester Radicals, whose aspirations appeared to be limited to the middle class. The Reform Bill of 1832 had in his eyes the great flaw that it had disfranchised by many of its provisions the labouring class, while the attempts to improve upon that measure had all been

Disraeli's views  
on Reform.



in one direction, tending merely by a lowered franchise to enforce the principle that the will of the numerical majority should be the true source of power, and leading as he believed to the overthrow of the balance of the Constitution. It was with the hope of redressing the grievance of the lower classes which he acknowledged, but of restraining the domination of numbers which he abhorred, that he now attempted to settle upon broad grounds the great question at issue. As he himself subsequently stated, he had passed the last few years in educating his party, or, as he explained in a letter, "his party had been educated by events." But it was not to be expected that the process should have been absolutely successful, or that all those who habitually regarded the lowering of the franchise as an evil, or a step towards democracy, should be able to distinguish any vital difference between the elaborate method in which the extension was now to be carried out, and the simpler and more direct plan upheld by the Radical party. However, he succeeded apparently in

Resolutions on  
Reform brought  
in. Feb. 11,  
1867.

persuading the Cabinet to allow him to produce the resolutions, on which, if carried, the Government Bill was to be founded. They contained the propositions that the number of electors in counties and boroughs should be increased; that this should be effected by reducing the qualification both in counties and boroughs, and adding other franchises; that while more direct representation of the labouring classes was wanted, the predominating power of any one class or interest was contrary to the Constitution; that the occupation franchise should be based on rating; that the principle of plurality of votes was desirable; that the distribution of seats should be revised without the complete disfranchisement of any borough; that provision should be made to prevent bribery and corruption; and that the use of polling papers should be allowed.

These resolutions were brought in on the 11th of February. On the 25th Mr. Disraeli proceeded to explain them, and to indicate the use to which he intended to put them. A £6 rating franchise in the boroughs, a £20 rating franchise in the counties, and four fancy franchises—based on education, on the possession of £50 in the public funds, or £30 in the savings-bank, and the payment of 20s. direct taxes,—producing, it was calculated, an addition of 400,000 new voters, were the essential parts of his proposition. It was very coldly received. Procedure by resolution was objected to; the figures were questioned; the fancy franchises laughed at. It became so evident that strong and probably success-

Disraeli's  
explanation of  
the measure.  
Feb. 25.

ful opposition would be encountered that on the following day the Government yielded, and promised to bring in a complete Bill on the 18th of March. Before that day arrived the Cabinet was for a while broken up. The probability of dissensions among the Ministers had been foreseen; and the public were not much surprised when they heard upon the 4th that Lord Cranborne, Lord Carnarvon, and General Peel, had resigned. Their places were speedily filled. Sir Stafford Northcote became Secretary of State for India, the Duke of Buckingham Colonial Minister; Sir John Pakington was transferred from the Admiralty to the War Department, and Mr. Corry took his place as First Lord of the Admiralty. The story of ministerial difficulty was explained, and a good deal of ridicule thrown upon the Government, by the speech of Sir John Pakington at Droitwich when seeking re-election. At the same time the reason of the weakness and unsatisfactory character of the measures indicated on the 25th of February was brought to light. From the first, a certain number of the Cabinet had shrunk from the step to which Mr. Disraeli was leading them. General Peel had openly declared his disapproval. Their objections had been for a while silenced, and Sir John Pakington at all events believed on leaving the Cabinet on Saturday the 23d of February that there was a unanimous opinion with regard to the Bill which was to be explained on the following Monday. But suddenly, at about half-past one on the Monday, the Cabinet was hastily got together, and informed that General Peel, Lord Cranborne, and Lord Carnarvon, had withdrawn their adhesion to the determination which had been arrived at; it would appear that during the Sunday a close examination of the figures had proved that in some boroughs household suffrage would have resulted. What was the Government to do? In less than half an hour the Prime Minister was pledged to address his party; at half-past four the statement in the House of Commons was to be made. Disraeli was ready for the emergency. Uncertain apparently from the first of the success of his educational process, and determined at all hazards to have the credit of settling the question, he had drawn up an alternative measure to be produced "in the event of the rejection of the large and liberal scheme of the Ministry." That smaller plan being ready at hand was the one explained by him on the 25th of February. Its cold reception had proved to him that its success was more than doubtful, and he therefore determined to risk the disapprobation of his colleagues and to fall back upon his first and wider plan. The knowledge of this determination produced its natural results, the dissentients in the Cabinet

resigned ; and when the appointed day arrived it was the original and larger measure which was produced.

As explained by the Chancellor of the Exchequer on the 18th of March the object of the Bill was to strengthen the functions of the House, and to establish them on a broad and popular basis. It had no tendency, he said, towards democracy. A residence of two years, and the personal payment of rates, were to be the conditions of the borough franchise ; 237,000 voters would thus be at once added to the borough constituencies. Upwards of 480,000 householders who did not pay their own rates would be left unenfranchised, but, as every facility would be given them to take their direct share in the public burdens, it was to be supposed that a very considerable number of these would also be added to the list of voters. The same four additional franchises as had been before mentioned were to be given, which it was expected would add more than 320,000 voters ; and it was estimated that on the whole, what with householders and those possessing a vote under these fancy franchises, as they were called, the addition to the borough constituencies would amount to more than a million. Plurality of votes, that is to say, the right of any one possessing a vote under the fancy franchise as well as under the borough or county occupation franchise to register two votes, formed a part of the Bill. It was intended that the fancy franchises should serve as a counterpoise to the occupation franchises, and increase the number of voters without changing the balance of power. The Bill was of course at once assaulted as being intricate and confused. Mr. Gladstone (and Mr. Bright agreed with him) declared that there was a difference amongst householders, and that the true way of arriving at a principle on which to fix the lower limit of the franchise was to take a sum, £5, as the value of a house on which rate should be paid, both the liability to the payment of rates and the possession of the franchise ceasing at that point. The partisans of the Bill on the other hand urged that residence and rating, that is, the personal bearing of a portion of the public burdens, formed the real and constitutional limit. In opposition to this view, it was urged that as the assessment of the rates was in the hands of the vestries the right to vote would practically be controlled by the middle classes. On the second reading (March 25) Mr. Gladstone, stating the general agreement that the question should be settled in the course of the year, summed up the alterations which would be required to make the Bill acceptable. He demanded a

The Reform  
Bill brought in.  
March 18.

Gladstone's  
amendments  
carried in Com-  
mittee.

lodger franchise; some means of preventing the traffic in votes of the lowest class of householders; the abolition of all distinction between the personal ratepayer and the compound ratepayer, of the tax-paying franchise, and of the double vote; the county franchise, he said, must be reduced, and the use of voting papers must be given up. The second of these demands meant the adoption of his favourite plan of limiting both rating and the franchise at £5. But with the exception of this, the list of requirements included the rejection of all those safeguards with which Mr. Disraeli had thought to hedge round the extended franchise. The confession of the Chancellor of the Exchequer that there were many things in the Bill which he did not regard as of vital importance led to the belief that he would yield everything upon the application of sufficient pressure, and encouraged the Opposition in their determination to alter the Bill very completely in Committee. Their first movement encountered a somewhat unexpected check. At a meeting of the Liberal party it had been arranged that Mr. Coleridge should introduce an amendment to give effect to Mr. Gladstone's favourite change as to rating. But to many of the stronger Liberals this somewhat arbitrary marking off of what Mr. Bright had spoken of as the residuum did not commend itself. A meeting held in the tea-room of the House of Commons determined that the amendment should not be supported. This split among the Liberals was fatal to Mr. Coleridge's amendment. But one by one Mr. Disraeli's securities disappeared. The principle of double voting was thrown over by the Government; the two years' residence as a qualification for the borough vote was reduced by an amendment to one year; the education and tax-paying franchises were after a little resistance struck out; a lodger franchise was introduced; and the discussion at last centred upon the sole remaining condition—the personal payment of rates—which stood between the proposition of the Bill and a simple household franchise. Over “the compound householder,” as he was called, there was an apparently endless dispute. It was plain to one party that he practically paid his rates through his landlord, and that to insist upon his paying them again in order to obtain his vote was an injustice. But, on the other hand, personal payment of rates was regarded as the very principle of the Bill. The difficulty was solved by an unexpected amendment moved by Mr. Hodgkinson that the compound householder should be altogether destroyed, and that in Parliamentary boroughs composition should wholly disappear. The other parts of the Bill were handled nearly as roughly. The county



franchise was lowered to £12 ; the minimum population allowing of two members was raised from 7000 to 10,000. The suggestion of the use of voting papers was dropped ; three members were given to four large towns ; and by a subsequent amendment in the House of Lords, an arrangement for the protection of minorities was introduced, by which in towns having three members each elector was restricted to voting for two of them.

The Reform  
Bill completed.  
Aug. 15, 1867.

When the Bill was finally passed the state of the franchise was this : in boroughs all male householders rated to the poor-rate, all lodgers resident for one year and paying £10 of rent, possessed the vote, and in counties all persons owning property of £5 annual value, or occupiers paying £12 a year. In their determination to pass some Bill, the Conservatives had thus reduced the franchise in boroughs to the simple household franchise which had so long been their bugbear, and had taken a step towards democracy longer than their opponents had ever ventured to suggest, and more complete than even Mr. Bright or Mr. Gladstone would have desired. Though Lord Cranborne and Lord Derby himself spoke of the measure as a leap in the dark, and Mr. Lowe grumbled at the necessity it involved of educating the new masters of the country, the simplicity of the Bill as carried, and the definite character of the principle on which it rested, had at least the advantage of setting the question at rest for a considerable number of years. It cannot be denied however that it gave a very decisive proof of the direction in which the public mind was moving, and that it forms a real epoch in the constitutional development of the country. Whether for good or evil England had become a democracy. Nothing was wanting to the completion of the process of change but the equalisation of the county and borough franchises, and the rearrangement of the constituencies which naturally attended that measure.

Though the Reform Bill was undoubtedly the chief work of the Ministry, there were other matters, mostly handed on to them by their predecessors in the Government, requiring their serious attention.

Other impor-  
tant interests.

They had indeed accepted office at a time of considerable gloom and difficulty. A commercial crisis, so severe that it had necessitated a tampering with the Bank Act, was not yet over ; the year 1866 was marked throughout by many disastrous failures, although general trade and credit were not seriously injured ; the cloud of Fenian insurrection still hung over Ireland, and compelled the continuation of the suspension of the Habeas Corpus ; the cattle plague, though gradually yielding to the stringent

measures taken against it, was raging in many parts of England ; the cholera was beginning to show itself ; and abroad, the great war in which the leadership of the German nation was being decided called for the most careful conduct on the part of our Foreign Office. In respect of none of these questions was it possible for the Government to pursue a line of conduct which differed much from that of the late administration. With regard to foreign policy it is indeed to be observed that though the method in which it is conducted affords constant ground for party attack, the main objects sought by successive Governments have nearly always been the same ; and not unfrequently a newly appointed Ministry has practically confessed that it could do nothing better than pursue the lines which as an Opposition it had found it convenient to attack. In the present case, though not without a jeering allusion to the meddlesome and ineffectual advice which Lord Russell had offered to foreign Courts, the Premier practically owned that non-intervention was as much the principle of a Tory as of a Liberal administration, and that in the fight of giants which was going on in Germany the best course for England was to stand aloof.

Bismarck, who had long been preparing to assume for Prussia the leadership of the German nation, had seen in the Sleswig-Holstein disputes an opportunity at length afforded for carrying out his views. He seized upon it with remarkable skill ; few pieces of diplomacy have been so successful. It would be assuming too much perhaps to assert that Bismarck saw clearly from the first the line which he subsequently pursued, or that he pursued it throughout with the unscrupulous intention of producing a war with Austria. It is certain however that his main objects were the creation of a United Germany under the leadership of Prussia, and as a necessary step the destruction of the existing Federal Constitution and the exclusion (in all probability not without war) of Austria from the commanding position that country at present occupied. Every event as it occurred was turned with consummate ability towards the attainment of these ends. From the first Bismarck had refused to regard the Sleswig-Holstein question as one of Federal interest. It was as an international quarrel that he had treated it, and as such he had induced Austria to join in it. The close of the war by the Treaty of Vienna (Oct. 30, 1864) confirmed this view, and left Austria and Prussia the joint possessors of the conquered Duchies. The Convention of Gastein (Aug. 14, 1865), by which the joint occupation came to an end—Sleswig being

Success of Bismarck's German policy.

placed wholly in Prussian, Holstein wholly in Austrian hands,—was conceived in the same spirit. In both the Treaties Austria had been persuaded to take the false step of separating itself from the Federal action of the Diet. When almost immediately it began to resume its connection with the Federation, and to support the claims of the Duke of Augustenburg to the combined Duchies in pursuance of the policy of the Diet, Bismarck was at once able to complain of an infraction of the Gastein Convention. No secret had been made of the intention of Prussia to treat the Duchies as conquered Provinces, and to admit the Duke of Augustenburg only upon conditions suiting the Prussian views; in his refusal to accept those conditions the Duke was supported by the Diet and by Austria. In his quarrel with Austria Bismarck did not intend to stand alone. The dispute between the two great German Powers was watched with anxiety by the Italians. It appeared probable that an opportunity would occur for completing the unity for which they longed by the conquest of Venetia. It was their obvious policy to attach themselves to Prussia; and an alliance was contracted between them (April 8, 1866). Meanwhile both sides were arming and moving troops towards the frontier. Efforts were as usual made to prevent the threatened war, and an arrangement was arrived at for mutual disarmament. But, although Austria began to withdraw her troops from the Prussian frontier, while Italy threatened her on the south it was impossible for her to disarm. Bismarck had contrived to put her in the wrong, and to throw upon her Government the burden of refusing to put her troops upon a peace footing. A second effort at peacemaking led to a like result; France, England, and Russia attempted to bring the disputants to a Conference. Again Austria appeared as the objecting Power. In accepting the Conference Austria made it a condition that no territorial changes should be considered. It was indeed impossible for the Imperial Government to surrender without compensation either what it had won in the Sleswig-Holstein war, or the remnants of the Italian dominion, yet it was well known that such cessions would be required at the Conference. International intervention having thus failed, Austria attempted to treat the question as one of Federal interest, and had recourse to the Diet. No step could have been more entirely favourable to the objects of Bismarck. The majority of the Princes upheld the Austrian cause, and demanded of Prussia a declaration of pacific intentions. Regarding such an assumption of superiority as intolerable, Prussia at once withdrew from the Federation and occupied Holstein with its troops. Bismarck

thus found it possible to assault at one blow both the Federation and Austria with the full certainty that the attention of the most important of his enemies would be distracted by an Italian war.

The war which ensued astonished Europe by the rapidity of its events and the completeness of the results which attended it. On the 14th of June the Frankfort Diet decreed the mobilisation of the Federal army. The next day the Prussians entered Saxony and took Leipzig. From the 20th to

War between  
Austria and  
Prussia.

the 23d of June three Prussian armies entered Bohemia from the north and from the east, and a gradual march of concentration began. Benedek, a general of high repute, commanded the Austrians. His attempts to check the advancing Prussians, while still separated, were unsuccessful; his troops were gradually forced together, and he finally found himself, in the neighbourhood of Königgrätz, separated from the combined army of the North and the Elbe under Prince Frederick Charles by a rivulet near the village of Sadowa, which gave its name to the battle. The Austrians held their ground well, and it seemed as though the Prussian advance had been checked, when suddenly the correctness of the combination devised by Von Moltke became apparent, the army of the Crown Prince coming from the east fell upon the Austrian right and rear, bringing about a complete catastrophe, and inflicting a defeat of the most crushing character upon the Austrians. The battle was fought upon the 3d of July, and was to all intents and purposes the completion of the war. Opposition within the limits of Germany had been destroyed by the capitulation of the Hanoverians at Langensalsa; and though a gleam of victory had fallen upon the Austrian arms at Custoza, where they had defeated the Italians, and again a few days later in a naval engagement off Lissa, the Emperor was glad to obtain the intervention of France, to surrender Venetia to Napoleon to be handed over to the Italians, and to make use of his mediation in completing an armistice and peace. The preliminary Treaty of Nikolsburg was signed on the 26th of July, the final Treaty of Prague on the 23d of August. Prussia obtained all that it desired. The existing German Bund was dissolved, Austria withdrew from the new arrangements of Germany. A northern and a southern confederacy were formed. At the head of the northern was Prussia. Sleswig and Holstein—with the exception of the northern district, the fate of which was to be settled by a popular vote—were transferred to Prussia, together with a large sum to defray the expenses of the war, a part of which was paid by Saxony. In six weeks Prussia had entirely defeated her two enemies,



had assumed the leadership of North Germany, and had incorporated with her dominions, Hanover, Hesse Cassel, Nassau, Hesse Homburg, and the Duchies on the Elbe. This great result, apart from the excellent organisation of the Prussian troops, is to be traced to the combinations planned by the eminent strategist Von Moltke at Berlin, and to the possession, in the breech-loading needle-gun, of a weapon which secured the Prussian soldier a terrible advantage by its rapidity of fire.

The policy of non-intervention, which had been adopted by the Government in the case of the German war, was maintained with respect to difficulties arising in Italy, where the addition of Venetia to the kingdom had again excited in the minds of enthusiastic patriots a desire to complete the union of the Peninsula, and to acquire Rome as

England maintains a policy of non-intervention.

the capital. The King of Italy was bound by his treaties with the French Emperor to respect the little dominion which had been left to the Papacy; and although the constant opposition of the Pope to the reforms set on foot by the Italian Ministry, and his refusal to recognise the Italian King, could not but cause considerable irritation, Victor Emmanuel honestly kept to his engagements. Italian volunteers however, at the head of whom Garibaldi placed himself, gathered round Rome, and determined to march against it. Though Garibaldi was arrested by the Italian Government and sent back to his island of Caprera, in October he escaped and joined the volunteers, who were then advancing towards Rome. The French Emperor under these circumstances thought it necessary that the army of occupation, which had been withdrawn at the close of 1866, should be again despatched to the support of the Pope. There was some risk that the Italian and French armies would come into collision. Fortunately in conjunction with the Papal troops the French General defeated the Garibaldians at Mentana before the Italians had intervened. The cause for any immediate action on their part was thus removed, but the French army remained at Civita Vecchia, a constant source of difficulty and irritation to the Italian nation. The English Government declined to take any very active part in this quarrel. With regard to the breach of Convention which was asserted as an excuse for the French expedition, they considered that they were not called upon to give an opinion, the question being one which lay between the countries interested alone. Lord Stanley went so far however as to inform the Emperor that he considered the expedition would have a bad effect in this country, and to express his hope that it might be withdrawn. The suggestion of a conference he rejected on

the ground that it was useless to enter into conference without some definite programme, and that no such programme existed. The excitement caused by the death of the Emperor Maximilian of Mexico (June 19, 1867) called forth a still more definite assertion of the policy of non-intervention. When interrogated on the subject, Lord Stanley declared that, while deeply deploring the death of a gallant and amiable gentleman, he saw very grave objections to recording any judgment of the House upon his execution, and asked whether notice was to be taken of every case where the claims of one party, after a protracted civil war, had been followed by an unwise and sanguinary act of vengeance; whatever the power and influence of the House might be, it was only the Parliament of the United Kingdom, and not of the world.

On one point alone was England compelled to take an active part in questions of Continental interest. Luxemburg was ruled by the King of Holland as Grand Duke, and had formed a part of the German Confederation. On the re-formation of Germany, and the establishment of the North German Confederation under the leadership of Prussia, France felt that the strong fortress of Luxemburg—garrisoned as it was by Prussian troops—was little less than a standing threat. The Prussian Government acknowledged that the dissolution of the old Confederation reinstated the Grand Duke in his sovereign rights, and expressed its willingness to take into account the just susceptibilities of France. A Conference of the Powers who had signed the Treaty of 1839 guaranteeing the territory to the King of Holland was therefore assembled in London, and with unusual rapidity and unanimity a Treaty was arrived at, by which the neutrality of Luxemburg was established, the Prussian garrison withdrawn, and the fortifications destroyed, the arrangements being guaranteed collectively by the contracting Powers. It was urged against Lord Stanley that he was thus entering into engagements capable of indefinite extension. But his action was generally approved as leading immediately to peace, and laying no further burden upon England than had practically rested on it since the Treaty of 1839. It will be seen therefore that on the whole the only difference between the action of the Conservatives and the Liberals in the Foreign Office lay in the less pronounced and busy character of their intervention in the affairs of the Continent. In essentials both parties agreed in confining that intervention to advice and in pursuing a policy of peace.

Conference to  
guarantee the  
neutrality of  
Luxemburg.  
May 1867.

The session of the spring of 1867, which had been so largely

Confederation  
of the British  
North American  
Provinces.  
Feb. 1867.

occupied in the question of Reform, had allowed of one other important measure, more important perhaps in the possibilities which it implied than was at the time felt. Lord Carnarvon, the Colonial Minister, had the good fortune to bring to completion a work which had occupied his predecessors for some years, and to introduce and carry a Bill for the Confederation of the British North American Provinces. It may perhaps be regarded as a legitimate completion of the plans of Lord Durham. The idea was mentioned in his Report; its realisation was rendered easier by the thorough self-government which he had advocated. It was not however a new idea even then. It was very natural that, lying on the borders of a great Federation such as the United States, the scattered Provinces of British North America should think of imitating it. Again and again in various local provincial legislatures the question had been mooted, and the efforts of English Colonial Ministers directed towards carrying it out. The various obstacles which had from time to time arisen were at length removed, and the Confederate Dominion of Canada was now called into existence. The new Constitution, while claiming to resemble the English Constitution, bore in fact a closer resemblance to that of the United States. A House of Commons and a Senate constituted the central Parliament. The Senate consisted of seventy members nominated for life by the Governor-General, the House of Commons of members elected by the populations of the provinces, at the rate of one member for every 17,000 persons. The executive was vested in the Crown represented by the Governor-General. The Confederation at first included the two Canadas, Nova Scotia, and New Brunswick; but other Provinces were allowed to join it at their pleasure, an opportunity accepted sooner or later by all the local legislatures, with the exception of that of Newfoundland. It was found possible to draw a line between those matters which should be regarded as local and left to the Provincial legislatures, and questions of more general policy over which the central Government had control. Considerable variety was thus allowed; and various systems—affecting even the methods by which the members of the central House of Commons were elected—are still maintained in the different Provinces. The numerical basis of representation, the free admission of new Provinces, and the diversity of local institutions, give an elasticity to the Confederation which alone can render such an arrangement possible. The connection with the Home Government is virtually confined to the acceptance of a Governor-General sent from England.

In all other respects, in the full command of their law, their commercial policy, their taxes, and their military establishment, the inhabitants of the Dominion are virtually independent.

The idea of Federation thus illustrated was far-reaching. It still remains to be seen whether the principle it involved does not afford a solution to the great problem of maintaining a vast and in some respects incongruous empire consisting of colonial states already grown, or rapidly growing, to dimensions which fit them for independence, and already furnished with all the apparatus for separate self-government. But difficulties still lie in the way of the completion of an Imperial system. The foreign policy of England may expose its outlying dependencies to the dangers of wars in which their interests are in no way involved. The commercial policy of England may demand concessions to a system unsuitable to colonial conditions. Against such dangers it would appear that independence rather than federation affords the better safeguard. On the other side it would be difficult for England to allow either its foreign or commercial policy to be largely influenced, as would be the case were a central Parliament established, by the votes of representatives of countries with interests depending upon conditions of society different from its own, and liable to disputes which the increased colonisation of continental countries render probable, upon matters apparently immaterial to the inhabitants of the mother country. A closer feeling of national union, a greater amount of civic self-denial, than is yet to be found in either England or its colonies, would appear to be necessary for the realisation of any scheme of Imperial Federation. Yet it is not certain that over a more limited area the adoption of some form of Federation may not facilitate the much desired union of members of the empire whom differences of race, institutions, and usages, unfortunately tend to keep apart.

Although in all probability the confederation of the Canadas was the consequence of the view of colonial government prevalent in the Liberal party, it was in strict accordance with the enlarged notion of the Imperial position of England which was so strong a characteristic of Mr. Disraeli. Before the year was out an opportunity occurred of still further emphasising this view. Unexpectedly in November the Parliament was summoned for an autumn session to consider the means already adopted and to be adopted for an attack against the King of Abyssinia.

Our difficulties with that country were of some standing. Abyss-

Possibility of  
the extension  
of the Federal  
system.

Disraeli's  
view of Im-  
perial policy.



sinia is a country occupied by a race claiming as their first sovereign the son of the Queen of Sheba and King Solomon. In the midst of surrounding Mahomedan and Negro Powers it has maintained the Christian religion in the Coptic form. Internal dissensions had arisen among the chiefs, and Ras Ali, the late Grand-Vizier, had contrived to raise himself to a position of more or less generally accepted supremacy. His success was partly due to the assistance of two Englishmen, John Bell and Walter Plowden. At Plowden's instigation he had opened correspondence with England; and in 1850 Plowden, dignified by the name of Consul, had contracted a Treaty with him, aiming at the suppression of the slave-trade and opposition to the advance of the Turks in the direction of Nubia. But the empire of Ras Ali was of short duration. One of his subordinate chiefs of the name of Kassai rose in insurrection against him, defeated him, obtained the mastery over the other chiefs, and ascended the throne under the title of Theodore. The name Theodore implied a good deal. A traditional prophecy told that a former king of that name should return and restore the ancient glories of the House of Solomon, and root out the Mahomedan invaders; and it was as the representative of the Coptic Christians in opposition to the growing power of the French Catholic missionaries that Theodore made his appearance. On the fall of their late patron, Plowden and Bell had joined the usurper. As long as they lived his reign was fairly good and successful. But before 1861 both of them had fallen in battle (for the empire was a constant scene of insurrections), and from that time onwards, Theodore left to himself appears to have been nothing but a capricious tyrant. The English Government however thought it well to continue their relations with him. Mr. Cameron was sent to replace Mr. Plowden as Consul, and in various capacities—as artisan missionaries authorised by Bishop Gobat of Jerusalem, as Scotch missionaries, or, as in the case of Mr. Stern, as agents of the London Bible Society—a certain number of Europeans entered the country. The conduct of Consul Cameron does not seem to have been sufficiently careful considering the character of the man with whom he had to deal. A letter despatched by Theodore to the Queen was treated with little respect and received no answer; while Cameron, moving to and fro in the country, fell under suspicion of intriguing with the Turks. At length Theodore, who appears to have listened somewhat readily to calumnies brought to his ears against the Europeans, in the year 1864 apprehended the greater

part of them and imprisoned them in the fortress of Magdala. To rescue them the English Government thought it necessary to send a formal mission under Lieutenant Prideaux and Mr. Rassam, a Persian Christian. Though he encountered some difficulties at first, Mr. Rassam ultimately obtained access to the King, and succeeded as he believed in smoothing all obstacles in the way of the release of the prisoners. But at the moment of departure hastily summoned as though to bid farewell to the King, he himself and all the Europeans were suddenly apprehended and again thrown into prison. Beyond their detention they were not badly used ; but no representations on the part of the English Government, which acted with extreme patience, could induce Theodore to surrender them. He probably had a notion that as long as he kept them they would serve as hostages, and give him a certain hold upon the English Government. At length, weary of negotiating, Lord Stanley in the spring of 1867 despatched an ultimatum, demanding their surrender in three months, and proceeded at once to prepare for armed intervention.

It was felt and asserted by the Government, that although to be entangled in a war with so miserable a potentate was not a desirable thing, the *prestige* of England suffered by the ill-treatment of its envoys and citizens, and that *prestige* was a factor in the British power in the East which could not be neglected. In the form which the preparations took, the idea of the Imperial character of the country and its close connection with the East was further illustrated. The operations were to have their base in India ; 12,000 men, of whom 8000 were to be of the Indian army, were placed under the command of Sir Robert Napier, an engineer officer of much Indian repute. Sailing from Bombay, the troops were landed in the neighbourhood of Massowa in January 1868, with orders to march straight to the fortress of Magdala, and after having rescued the prisoners to return at once without any idea of conquest or annexation. The strength and completeness of the expedition was intended chiefly to force upon the Eastern mind the invincible power of England and the danger incurred by any ill-usage of British subjects. As the power of Theodore had been gradually undermined by his reckless tyranny, it is possible that a much smaller force would have proved sufficient. But the difficulties of the country were almost unknown ; any failure, even momentary, would have ruined the objects in view. Sir Robert Napier carried out his duties with extreme thoroughness. The army was moved on by degrees, strong camps were established at intervals, and communications thoroughly

Successful  
management  
of the war  
by Lord Napier.

secured. Scientific appliances overcame the want of water and the difficulties of transit, and finally an advanced column was pushed forward to Magdala. An assault from the remnant of Theodore's army was repulsed with little loss. Any terms short of complete surrender on the part of the King were refused, and a successful attack upon the fort, in the midst of which Theodore put an end to his own life, brought the expedition to a triumphant conclusion. Before the end of May the English force was again upon the Red Sea. If there was little glory to be won in fighting against so weak an adversary, England could at least congratulate itself that one of its little wars had been carried on in a difficult and almost unknown country with prudence and completeness, and with very slight loss.

To authorise the steps already taken, and to find means for the expenses of this war, an autumnal Parliament was summoned on the 19th of November. To this work it chiefly confined itself. The sum required was estimated at £2,000,000, and, as during the recess the preparations had been actively going on, the House had little choice but to accept the Government resolution granting that sum. It was wisely determined to throw the burden as far as possible upon the revenue of the country, and an extra penny was therefore added to the income-tax. But the Opposition complained of the necessity forced upon them, and of the employment by Government of money not yet granted. A further difficulty arose upon the declaration of the intention of the Ministry to throw a portion of the expenses upon the Indian Exchequer. They argued that the question was virtually an Indian one, that the necessity of the war arose chiefly from the effect which the impunity of Theodore would have upon the Eastern mind, and that therefore the interests involved were the interests of our Eastern Empire, rather than of England itself. This view found favour in Parliament, and the arrangements of Government were accepted.

During the whole of the year 1867 it had been found necessary to continue the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act in Ireland. The Conservative Ministry upon entering office in 1866 had been compelled to adopt without change the policy of their predecessors in that country. The danger to public order threatened by the continuation of the Fenian movement was still too evident to allow the Government to divest itself of the extraordinary powers which had been placed in its hands. The firm exercise of authority, and the failure of the Canadian raid, seemed for a while to have considerably lessened the activity of the Fenians, and

Autumn ses-  
sion, Nov. 1867.  
Expenses of the  
war.

Continued  
danger from  
Fenianism.

indeed the gradual restoration of confidence and quiet appeared so probable, that on the opening of Parliament in 1867, words had been put into the Queen's Speech expressing a hope that no extraordinary powers would be any longer requisite. But almost at the very time that the words were uttered events were taking place which showed the fallacy of such a hope. On the 4th of February there was a rising in Kerry; the coastguard station was attacked, and the insurgents were only defeated by the employment of troops. It was plain that the smouldering embers of discontent were again on the point of bursting into a flame. The renewal of activity may perhaps be connected with a great meeting of Fenians held in America in January, at which the conspirators determined to carry the war into England. On the 11th of February information was received that an attempt would be made to surprise the Castle at Chester and carry off the arms and ammunition which were stored in it. The information proved to be true. From the trains in all directions strangers were observed pouring into the town. It was believed that by five o'clock in the afternoon as many as 1500 were collected. But precautions had been taken, special constables in great number enrolled, and the arrival of 500 men of the Guards despatched from London set at rest the deep anxiety under which the citizens were labouring. Finding themselves forestalled the conspirators had gradually withdrawn. One or two men were arrested in Chester, and sixty-seven others as they crossed from Holyhead to Ireland. Although it had proved abortive, the daring character of the threatened attempt—taken in connection with the renewed outbreaks in Ireland—induced Lord Naas, the Irish Secretary, to confess that the expressions in the Queen's Speech had been erroneous, and to ask for a renewal of the suspension for three months longer. Again it appeared that the Government had underrated the power of the conspiracy, and in May the Secretary thought it better to ask Parliament to authorise the continuation of the arbitrary power of Government for a whole year.

Futile attempt  
at Chester.

During all that time uneasiness and occasional outbreaks continued in Ireland, and the attempt to transplant the struggle to English soil was maintained. The reckless audacity with which this plan was pursued, and the carelessness for the loss of innocent life which characterised it, were illustrated by the successful rescue in the immediate neighbourhood of Manchester of two Fenian prisoners, and the partially successful attempt to blow up Clerkenwell prison. The



first occasion recalls the conduct of bush-rangers in the old convict colonies of Australia. Both the time and the route by which the prisoners were to be removed were known, and as the van, escorted by seven or eight unarmed policemen, was proceeding along Hyde Road, it was attacked by a considerable number of men well armed with revolvers who had gradually collected in a neighbouring public-house. Four of the policemen were shot, Sergeant Brett who sat inside the van was murdered by firing through the door, the keys taken from him, and the prisoners released. The assailants were led by a young man of the name of Allen. The greater part of his comrades got off in safety, but he was himself captured, and with two of his companions convicted and hung. There was about this attempt at least a show of audacious courage, though the possession of revolvers in an assault upon unarmed men somewhat lessens the claim to admiration. The attempt at Clerkenwell can lay claim to no extenuating circumstances. A barrel of gunpowder was exploded under the wall of the jail to afford to Burke and Casey, two prisoners within, a means of making their escape. It was unsuccessful, but produced the death of four innocent people and the severe injury of 120 more. The wickedness was equalled only by the clumsiness of the conception. It was expected that the prisoners would be walking at that time behind the demolished wall. A warning which had been given to the Governor of the prison had induced him to keep them from the spot. The care which prevented their escape almost certainly preserved their lives. For a while the excitement in London was very great. Thousands of special constables were sworn in, and for some days there was a constant dread of some further calamity.

English statesmen could not regard such a long and vigorous though ineffectual struggle as being causeless. The condition of the country which could allow of such deep dissatisfaction, and could fill Irishmen who had sought a home abroad with so persistent a hatred to England, evidently required the closest attention. But the pressure of the Reform Bill and the necessity for carrying out to the full the repression of disorder prevented the completion of any remedial measures during the year. More than one considerable debate took place in Parliament upon Irish matters, but only served to make plain the difficulties which the subject offered, and the divergence of opinion as to the best method of removing them. While some thought that the question was entirely agrarian and the cure

Rescue of  
Fenian  
prisoners at  
Manchester.  
Sep. 18, 1867.

Attack on  
Clerkenwell  
Prison. Dec. 13.

Causes of Fenianism.

to be found either in a great transference of property or increased security of tenure by the introduction of long leases, others thought that the question was a political one resting mainly upon the feeling of their inferiority forced upon the Irish, and most clearly represented to their mind by the dominant position of the Irish Church. At no time probably has the very complex character of the Irish problem been more clearly shown, or the impossibility of curing the evils which beset the country by any single act of the legislature, or by any series of acts tending in one and the same direction. For the Fenian movement seems to have been different from any of those which had preceded it. It was not agrarian, for a very small proportion of those apprehended during the suspension of the Habeas Corpus were of the agricultural class. It was not religious, for the priests of Ireland were distinctly opposed to it. It was social in the sense that it aimed at an entire change of the conditions of property. But before all it was national, aiming at nothing short of the independence of the Island. It was the outcome of the cherished hatred of English rule, transplanted to a foreign country whither the ablest and most energetic of the Irish had betaken themselves. Amid the free institutions of America divergences in religious creed had been forgotten, and democratic ideas far beyond those which had ever found any real expression in the life and government of the United States had been nourished, for the partial dissolution of society in the civil war had engendered a belief in force and a strange carelessness both of life and of order. The movement which arose under these conditions was one which rejected all compromise, and shrank from no excesses either by covert or by overt war. Ireland was no longer to be satisfied with English concession or regenerated by English legislation, but was to be established in complete independence under the shadow of the great Republic from which the movement started. Unfortunately there were only too many real grievances in the Island calling for remedy. As a means of obtaining national independence the movement had proved abortive. English statesmen persuaded themselves that its efforts had been thoroughly suppressed; there was a tendency even to laugh at the completeness of its failure. This conclusion was a false one. The feelings which had inspired the movement and been called into active life by it did not die out, but became a new element in the tangled web of Irish discontent. But its apparent failure led to a misapprehension of the depth and completeness of Irish aspirations for independence; the Parliamentary leaders continued as of old to press for this

or that amelioration or concession as the one thing necessary for the restoration of Irish loyalty ; and the battle continued to be fought upon the old fields of Parliamentary reform or religious equality or improved land tenure, but always upon the fundamental hypothesis that the end at which to aim was the production of a complete similarity between the two countries.

It was however plain that the Irish question in some shape or other would chiefly occupy the attention of the Parliamentary session of 1868. It remained to be seen how the dexterity of Mr. Disraeli, at the head of a Ministry in face of an Opposition considerably superior to itself in numbers, would succeed in maintaining his position by avoiding points likely to produce a union among the broken sections of his opponents. He had already in similar circumstances guided his party with success through the difficulties of the Reform Bill. He had now before him the more difficult task of legislating for Ireland. It needed only the selection of some central and generally accepted reform as the battle-cry of the Opposition to drive him from his place. The failing health of Lord Derby had already practically placed Mr. Disraeli at the head of the Government ; and only a fortnight after the meeting of Parliament it was publicly notified that Lord Derby's resignation had on the 25th of February been accepted by the Queen, and that Mr. Disraeli had assumed the office of First Lord of the Treasury. Lord Cairns was appointed to the Chancellorship and Mr. Ward Hunt to the post of Chancellor of the Exchequer which Mr. Disraeli had vacated ; in other respects the Ministry continued as before. The programme of the Government, as announced in the preceding autumn, had included various Bills for the completion of Parliamentary Reform in Ireland and Scotland, for the prevention of corrupt practices at elections, for national education and other matters, and the Government proceeded at once to introduce some of these measures. But they had none of them advanced far on their course when they were interrupted by the introduction of the Irish question, which had already been acknowledged by Lord Stanley to be the critical question of the time.

On the 10th of March Mr. Maguire proposed a motion on the state of Ireland which elicited from Lord Mayo (late Lord Naas), the Irish Secretary, an explanation of the policy which the Government intended to pursue. He denied both the disaffection of the agricultural classes of Ireland, and the causes to which it was attributed. He pointed out the exclu-

Critical position of the Ministry.  
Feb. 1868.

Debates on the condition of Ireland.

sively Irish character of the Irish Executive : the Bench, the Municipal authorities, and the Constabulary were all Irish. He proved by statistics a gradual improvement in Ireland, a steady rise of rent and of wages, an increase of its cultivated area and of the value of its live-stock. He illustrated the care which England took of Irish interests by the fact that £18,000,000 had been advanced by the Treasury for improvements, and substantiated his assertion of the absence of agricultural disloyalty by the facts that agrarian crime had sunk from 1000 cases in 1844 to 87 cases in 1866, and that of the 1100 men arrested during the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act only 24 had got their living by the land. It was natural that with such views the Secretary should propose no large remedial measures. Fenianism, a conspiracy of alien growth, must, he said, be combated by a continuation of the strong powers placed in Government hands by the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act, a measure not of repression, but of protection to the Irish peasant from disastrous foreign influences. The existing system of land tenure should not be disturbed, although some means for securing compensation for improvements, increasing leases, and encouraging written contracts, would probably be desirable. But as there were no doubt grave differences of opinion upon many points, a Commission would be issued to inquire into the relations of landlord and tenant, and a second to report upon primary education. He proposed to establish a new Catholic University, and with regard to the Irish Church, while awaiting the report of a Committee at present sitting on it, he indicated that there could be no necessity for hasty disestablishment, and that even though policy and justice might demand an equalisation of Church establishments, it was not by confiscation, but by a readjustment of the property, that such a result should be obtained. The announcement was one which tended to bring out to the full all the different views of the Opposition. Mr. Mill demanded the establishment of a peasant proprietary, and laughed at the idea of a paid Irish priesthood. Mr. Lowe threw scorn on the idea of peasant farmers and declared that the sectarian university was a mere sop to the Ultramontane clergy. Mr. Horsman declared that the Bill was one of mere procrastination ; and Mr. Bright, pointing out the full meaning of the co-existence in Ireland of material prosperity and extensive disloyalty, traced the phenomenon to the twofold cause of the absentee landlords and the alien Church.

In the midst of the chaos of opinion, it began to be evident that the one point on which the Liberal party might be brought to agree



was the necessity for the disestablishment of the Protestant Church in Ireland ; and with his usual ability as the spokesman of the party, Mr. Gladstone somewhat surprised the world by accepting that measure as the rallying point of the Opposition, and, while criticising in no very certain manner the other projects for Irish improvement which had been produced, announced with deep solemnity his conviction that the Irish Church as a State Church must cease to exist. This declaration of opinion has been frequently spoken of as the expression of a remarkable and sudden conversion, and as a denial of all the former convictions of his life. A letter in which four years previously he had declared the question of disestablishment in Ireland to lie beyond the field of practical politics, was alleged in proof of his rapid change of front ; yet there are utterances of his with regard to the Colonial Church which might certainly have led to the belief that he had no strong prejudice in favour of the curtailment of the full liberty of the Church by State intervention, and the letter itself so strongly urged against him implies that already at the time when it was written the writer was convinced of the theoretical advantages which would arise from disestablishment in Ireland. The step which at that time lay beyond the sphere of politics had since then become the one practical point on which party politics could be made to hinge, and as such was at once taken up by Mr. Gladstone. At all events it proved admirably adapted for its purpose. The nationalist who saw in the Church "the badge of conquest," the Roman Catholic who regarded it as an unfairly privileged rival, the secularist who regarded as erroneous all attempts to connect government with religion, the High Churchman who hated the principle of State control over ecclesiastical freedom, and the man of common-sense who recognised the glaring anomaly of a national Church including a mere fraction of the nation, were all able to combine in an assault upon the institution, and to persuade themselves that its destruction was the most important step towards the reconciliation of Ireland.

The leader of the Opposition having found firm ground for action followed up his declaration of opinion by the introduction of three resolutions. The first contained the gist of the matter. It declared that in the opinion of the House it was necessary that the Established Church of Ireland should cease to exist as an establishment, due regard being had to all personal interests and to all individual rights of property. The other two were in fact corollaries of it, and stated that subject to the fore-

Demand for the  
disestablish-  
ment of the  
Irish Church.

Gladstone's  
three resolu-  
tions on the  
Irish Church.

going consideration it was expedient to prevent the creation of new personal interests by the exercise of any public patronage, and to confine the operations of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners of Ireland to objects of immediate necessity, pending the final decision of Parliament, and that an address should be "presented to Her Majesty praying her to place at the disposal of Parliament her interest in the temporalities of the Archbishoprics, Bishoprics, and other ecclesiastical dignities and benefices of Ireland and in the custody thereof." The 30th of March was appointed for the debate on the resolutions. Before the day arrived Mr. Disraeli had found an opportunity in a letter to Lord Dartmouth of stating that the crisis of which so much had been said was in England rather than in Ireland, "for the purpose is now avowed, and that by a powerful party, of destroying that sacred union between Church and State which has hitherto been the chief means of our civilisation and is the only security for our religious liberty." This expresses the chief ground of opposition to the measure. The Prime Minister asserted, not without attracting much contemptuous commentary, that the Ritualists and the Roman Catholics were in league to destroy the Church of England. He believed in the advantage of endowments partly, as he said, as a means of preventing Government from degenerating into mere police, partly because the interference of the State secured a large amount of religious freedom within the limits of the Church itself; and he saw—what his opponents at the time vigorously denied but what appears to be unquestionably true—that the principles involved in the attack upon the Irish Church must sooner or later justify an attack upon the Church in England as well. The reasonableness, even the abstract correctness, of his views seem to have made him forget or despise the special circumstances which rendered the abolition of the Church in Ireland little short of a necessity. For in fact the conditions which alone gave truth to the Premier's views were entirely wanting. The higher aims implied by a junction of Church and State are obtainable only when the enforcement of them is supported by national feeling, and a Government sinks to something even lower than a mere police administration when its union with religion consists only in the maintenance of a hollow institution repugnant and even insulting to the general sense of the people governed.

Disraeli's views  
on disestablishment.

There was no difficulty in proving that such was the condition of the Irish Church. Its maintenance produced no practical oppression, but its existence and recognition by Government was a standing

memorial of the cause of all Irish difficulties — the rule of the minority. Neither its history, nor its present condition, justified for a moment its claim to nationality. Called into existence by the forcible appointment of Protestant Bishops by the Tudors, endowed with the forfeited property of patriotic rebels by the early Stuarts, officered chiefly by men of English birth and training, and for years supported by penal laws of the greatest stringency, it remained the Church of probably not more than a tenth of the nation. In Connaught the Anglicans were but 4 per cent. of the population, in Leinster 11 per cent., in Munster 5, and even in Protestant Ulster only 20 per cent. In hundreds of parishes there was no church, the incumbent was an absentee and the duties required for the care of the dozen or so members of the congregation were performed for some slight pittance by a curate. In 1849 Mr. George Moore could say in Parliament, "I myself pay tithes in eight parishes; in the whole of these there is not one church, one glebe, or one resident clergyman. I am not aware that there is a single Protestant in the whole eight parishes, and I do not believe that divine service according to the Protestant ritual has been celebrated in any of them since the Reformation." A revenue of about £600,000 drawn from tithes and land was in the hands of this empty and pretentious corporation. Many times propositions either for its reformation or for a division of its property had been brought before the House, only to be met by the Government, whether it were Whig or Conservative, with a direct refusal to consider the question, or by a declaration that the time for considering it had not yet come. Of such a character had been the reply given by Sir Robert Peel in 1844, and the letter of Mr. Gladstone in 1864.

Circumstances had now convinced that statesman that the pressing necessity which Sir Robert Peel had refused to recognise, and the time for Parliamentary action which he had himself declared to be still distant, had at length arrived. Once convinced of this, he set to work with his usual energy. The union of the Opposition rendered the eventual success of the resolutions almost a matter of certainty, when they came to be directly opposed on principle. But Lord Stanley as the spokesman of Government attempted to raise a side issue on a very reasonable ground; and when, on the 30th of March, Mr. Gladstone moved for a Committee of the whole House to consider the Acts of Parliament relating to the establishment, Lord Stanley produced an amendment to the effect that, although modifications in the temporalities of the Church of Ireland might on the report of the Commis-

Condition of  
the Irish  
Church.

sion appear necessary, any proposition tending to the disestablishment and disendowment of that Church ought to be reserved for a new Parliament. The late Reform Bill created a vastly extended constituency, and it was not unreasonable to hold that so important a constitutional change as the destruction of the Irish Church should be reserved for what was now allowed to be the true representation of the country. A four days' debate resulted in a large majority in favour of Mr. Gladstone's motion, and on the 13th of April the first resolution was carried by a majority of sixty-five. Two such severe defeats would under ordinary circumstances have been followed by the immediate resignation of the Ministry, and such was the course which the Liberals considered to be imperatively forced upon Mr. Disraeli. It might on the other hand have produced a dissolution. Mr. Disraeli did not immediately adopt either course. In spite of the bitterest invectives he neither resigned nor dissolved. In his explanation on the 4th of May he stated that in his interview with the Queen he had first advised dissolution, at the same time offering to resign; that the Queen had taken time to consider, and had decided to decline his resignation, but to authorise him to dissolve if the state of public business required it. Rather unreasonably the Liberals, very angry at being deprived of immediate power, attacked the Premier with bitter violence, accusing him of forcing the Queen unconstitutionally to the front, of keeping in his hands a penal power of dissolution if Parliament displeased him, of having been ready to appeal to the existing constituencies in spite of Lord Stanley's motion, and of having advised a dissolution upon no great principle, since the majority in the House was clear, but merely for the purpose of establishing as he hoped his own Ministry. The Premier and his friends denied all idea of the penal use of dissolution, and while declaring their intention to vote against further measures of disestablishment professed themselves willing to facilitate the completion of the Reform measures so as to allow of a dissolution in the summer and an appeal to the new constituencies in the autumn. Mr. Gladstone thought it necessary to push forward his measure. His two remaining resolutions were carried, together with a suspensory Act to prevent new appointments in the Church of Ireland, and to restrain the proceedings of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners. A solid groundwork as he thought would thus be laid for immediate legislation in the new Parliament. The suspensory Act was thrown out in the House of Lords, but the majority with which it was carried in the

Government  
defeated in  
debates on the  
Irish Church.

Disraeli refuses  
to resign.



House of Commons gave a fresh indication of the complete superiority of the Opposition in that House.

In accordance with the promises of the Government the Reform Bills for Scotland and Ireland were completed. By the Irish Bill the franchise in the boroughs was lowered from £8 to £4; no alteration was made in the counties, and a lodger franchise of £10 annual value was created. Objection was made to the maintenance of the £12 franchise in counties as being too high, and to the introduction of the £4 rating in boroughs, while household suffrage had been granted in England, but the Government carried its measure, which added about 28,000 voters in the boroughs, and slightly lowered the number in the counties. With regard to Scotland the Government proposed a Bill similar in principle to the English Bill. The borough franchise was to be extended to all householders paying rates. In the counties the ownership of land of the clear annual value of £5, or the occupation of a holding of £12 was to confer the franchise. Seven new seats were to be given to Scotland and to form an addition to the members in the House. It was upon this point that opposition arose. An increase of the representation was much disliked, and finally it was agreed that seven small English boroughs should be disfranchised and their representatives given to Scotland. Another change of some importance was made in Committee. The rating qualification attached to the franchise was removed, but the occupation qualification for counties raised to £14. With these alterations the proposition of the Government was carried. A Bill arranging the boundaries of boroughs completed the Reform legislation.

The indications given by Mr. Disraeli before the last election as to the probable topics which would occupy Parliament had proved correct. Public attention had been directed almost exclusively to the representation and the Church. The wide Reform Bill which had been passed had brought one of those questions to a satisfactory conclusion. On the other, indissolubly though almost accidentally bound up with the difficulties of Ireland, the fate of the Ministry was hanging. But on one point at least in connection with the Church a settlement had been arrived at. The vexed question of compulsory Church rates, which since 1833 had constantly been before Parliament, was set at rest. In this case as in that of the representation the solution took a liberal form, in spite of the known wishes of the party in power. Mr. Gladstone, adopting a suggestion let fall by Mr. Bright, had introduced a Bill on the

Irish and  
Scotch Reform  
Bills carried.  
July 1868.

Abolition of  
Compulsory  
Church rates.

19th of February embodying a sort of compromise. Some of the details were changed in the Upper House but the principle was accepted; and by the Bill as passed, while all power of compulsory enforcement of rates was taken away from the vestries, and thus the grievance of the dissenters removed, the machinery of the vestries remained untouched, and they were allowed to raise voluntary rates. A body, the name and powers of which were well known was thus maintained, and in many instances where dissenters were few little if any practical change resulted.

The necessary business having been got through, Parliament was prorogued on the 31st of July on the understanding that a dissolution should take place as soon as possible, and an appeal be made to the new constituencies. The Ministry were able to introduce at least one satisfactory clause in the Queen's Speech when they stated that it had proved unnecessary for

Dissolution of  
Parliament and  
new elections.

some time to exercise in Ireland the exceptional powers granted to the Executive, and that no person was at that time detained under the provisions of the Act for the suspension of the Habeas Corpus. The elections, which immediately followed the dissolution in November, were naturally watched with great interest, as the result of the new Reform Bill was as yet uncertain. In Scotland and the English boroughs it secured a great success for the Liberal party, but in the counties the Conservatives obtained considerable triumphs. Mr. Gladstone was defeated for South-West Lancashire, Lord Hartington lost his seat for the Northern division of the same county. Upon the whole return the gain of the Liberal party was about 15, and the Parliament was estimated to consist of 389 Liberals and 272 Conservatives. An examination of the total number of votes recorded showed a Liberal majority of 524,709. The minority clause had in most cases produced the result intended, but in Glasgow and Birmingham the Liberal majority was so overwhelming that three members of that party were in each case elected. It is observable that there were no less than

Resignation of  
Ministry.  
Dec. 4, 1868.

227 new members in the House. The preponderance of his opponents was so clear that Mr. Disraeli wisely determined to avoid the waste of time which must have attended his reappearance in the House as Premier at the head of a certain minority, and resigned on the 4th of December before the meeting of Parliament.

## CHAPTER XI.

MR. GLADSTONE'S MINISTRY, December 5, 1868.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	Mr. Gladstone.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Hatherley.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Lord Ripon.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Lord Kimberley.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Mr. Lowe.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Mr. Bruce.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Granville.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Clarendon.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	Mr. Cardwell.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	Duke of Argyll.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Mr. Childers.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Mr. Bright.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	Lord Hartington.
<i>President of the Poor-Law Board,</i>	Mr. Goschen.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	Lord Dufferin.
<i>Vice-President of Committee of Council on Education,</i>	Mr. W. E. Forster.

### IRELAND.

<i>Lord Lieutenant,</i>	Lord Spencer.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Mr. O'Hagan.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	Mr. Chichester Fortescue.

The following changes took place in July 1870, on Lord Clarendon's death:—

<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Lord Halifax.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Kimberley.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Granville.

The following changes took place in February 1871:—

<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Mr. Goschen.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Mr. Chichester Fortescue.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	Mr. Monsell.
<i>President of the Local Government Board,</i>	Mr. Stansfeld.
<i>Chief Secretary for Ireland,</i>	Lord Hartington.

The following changes took place in October 1872:—

<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Selborne.
<i>Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	Mr. Childers.

The following changes took place in September 1873:—

<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Mr. Gladstone.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Mr. Lowe.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Mr. Bruce (Lord Aberdare).

AS a matter of course on Mr. Disraeli's resignation Mr. Gladstone, for whom a seat had been found at Greenwich, was

called upon by the Queen to form a Ministry. With unusual rapidity he collected a Cabinet, including with the chief leaders of the Whigs several of the most important members of the more advanced Liberal section, among them Mr. Bright. The new Premier, in his address to the electors of Greenwich, pointed out as objects of special attention certain errors as he conceived in the new Reform Bill, especially the want of proper security for free voting ; the question of education, in the Universities, in the grammar-schools of the middle class, and in its primary branch ; economy and retrenchment, disregarded as he declared by his predecessors ; and lastly, and of most importance, the Irish question in its twofold aspects of the Church and the Land.

Gladstone's  
Ministry.  
Dec. 9, 1868.

The events of the last session made it necessary that the settlement of the Irish Church should become the prominent measure of the new Parliament. Its disestablishment had formed the rallying-point of the broken forces of the Liberal party ; Mr. Gladstone's resolutions with regard to it had caused the fall of the Conservative Ministry ; it was for the especial purpose of carrying it out that he had been called to power, and early in the session, on the 1st of March, he rose to explain to the House his intentions with regard to it. From that day to the end of July it formed the chief topic of discussion both in Parliament and outside. Seldom has a Bill excited more interest or more vehement opposition. It seemed to touch some of the principles most tenderly cherished by a large number of Englishmen ; the union of Church and State, the supremacy of Protestantism, the sanctity of property. Robbery and confiscation were words freely used with regard to it—words rendered more bitter in their meaning because the robbery was applied to sacred things and carried with it to many minds the entire dissociation of politics and religion. The measure, as explained by Mr. Gladstone in a speech of extreme lucidity, involved many difficult details, but consisted virtually in the transference of all the property of the Irish Church to the nation, the restoration to a new and independent Church body of a sufficient portion to satisfy all vested interests, and the appropriation of the surplus to the relief of unavoidable calamities and sufferings not provided for by the Poor-Law. The wealth of the Irish Church consisted of the tithes, of lands, and of money. The tithe—already commuted to a rent-charge—was to be purchased by the landlords, and was estimated to produce £9,000,000. The lands or permanent rents were valued at £6,250,000. On the whole, including the

Bill for the  
disestablish-  
ment of the  
Irish Church  
introduced.  
March 1869.



"regium donum," or gift to the Presbyterians, and the Maynooth grant, which were to be withdrawn as a natural consequence of the disestablishment of the Church, the sum amounted to about £16,000,000. The disestablishment was to take place on the 1st of January 1871. All incumbents, including the Bishops, were to be compensated for their life interests. The same rule was to apply to curates, their stipends having been previously deducted from the income on which the compensation to the incumbents was calculated. Those churches which were in good repair and could be used were to be left in the hands of the new Church body, as were also the parsonage houses, subject to the repayment to the State of the building charges already advanced by Government. Private endowments given since the year 1660 also remained in the hands of the Church. In all, Mr. Gladstone calculated in the course of the debates that Parliament would restore about £10,000,000 to the Church, when re-formed as a voluntary association. The income of the surplus was according to the preamble of the Bill not to be applied to religious purposes, but to meet unavoidable calamity, and should be used, it was suggested, for the support of schools for the deaf and dumb, lunatic and idiot asylums, and various forms of hospitals. The opposition was based upon the grounds already indicated. Mr. Disraeli spoke of the Bill as one of sheer confiscation, reiterating his abstract admiration for an endowed religion, for the dignity with which it invested the civil government, and the comparative freedom which it secured. But there was about his opposition a want of earnestness which seemed to prove that he recognised the certainty of defeat. Nor were his arguments difficult to answer. The union of the Protestant Church with the State in Ireland had certainly produced no good results on the government; it had tended to accentuate religious differences and render them political, and the Establishment had signally failed in all the duties of a national Church. With regard to confiscation, the supporters of the Bill could answer that when money has been given to Corporations for a special end, and that end has neither been attained nor appears possible of attainment, or when the property thus given does not seem to have been rightly used, it is the duty of the State to intervene. The arguments on both sides were urged with much ability during long and brilliant debates; but the state of parties in the new Parliament rendered the passage of the Bill a certainty, no important amendment was carried in committee, and it passed the Lower House by a majority of more than a hundred.

The public had detected an air of unreality in the defence of the Church in the Lower House, for the certainty of the conclusion had prevented the adoption of that tone of earnestness which the strong feelings excited outside the walls of Parliament demanded. In the Upper House, where the fate of the Bill was by no means so certain, the case was different. The debate on the second reading was marked by unusual earnestness and ability, but the majority of the Lords felt that the national will had been too clearly expressed to allow of the entire rejection of the Bill. It was therefore passed, but with the well understood intention that considerable changes should be forced upon the Government in committee. Accordingly many important amendments were introduced, both in committee and subsequently on the third reading. They included an alteration of the date, postponing for a year the time of disestablishment ; the substitution of a lump sum for the personal commu-

The amend-  
ments of the  
Lords defeated.

tation of incumbents' stipends ; the restitution without payment of the parsonage houses and glebes ; the inclusion of all endowments, whether Crown or private, in the sum to be restored to the Church body, and the removal of the date 1660 to a point considerably earlier ; and lastly the appropriation subject to the approval of Parliament of the surplus to religious purposes. It was calculated that these amendments would on the whole add £4,000,000 to the £10,000,000 which the Commons had consented to restore, and that in a manner which would render the Bill little short of a measure of re-endowment. Thus amended, the Bill passed the House, coupled however with a protest on the part of forty-two peers headed by Lord Derby briefly summing up the chief arguments against the Bill : the danger of beginning the severance of Church and State, the shock which would be given to the security of property, the alienation of the loyal Protestants, and the weakness of a voluntary Church to withstand the organisation of Rome. The amendments appeared so vitally to affect the principle of the Bill that the Government regarded them as inadmissible, and when they were brought down to the House of Commons Mr. Gladstone moved that all the most important of them should be rejected. The indirect opposition of the Lords had roused the angry feelings of the Liberal party both in the House and in the country. Mr. Gladstone had no difficulty in carrying his motion, and as the Lords appeared to be equally firm in their determination to maintain their amendments, a decided and dangerous breach between the two branches of the legislature appeared imminent. To the general surprise the crisis was avoided. Lord Cairns rose in the House

of Lords and explained that, considering the dangerous position of affairs, he had taken upon himself the responsibility of entering into negotiations with Lord Granville without consulting his friends; the result had been a compromise which he recommended his party to accept. Under the show of compromise it was in fact a surrender. Instead of the additional £4,000,000 the new Church was to be satisfied with £850,000; a lump sum of half a million was to cover all the claims for private endowments; the old date of disestablishment was to be maintained; while the definite appropriation of the surplus to any specific objects, whether religious or charitable, was omitted from the Bill, and its employment left in the hands of Parliament. Mr. Gladstone as a matter of course supported the arrangement which his colleague had made, and recommended the House to accept the compromise at once. His suggestion being complied with the Bill became law, and the great question of disestablishment was set at rest.

Mr. Gladstone had seen in the condition of the Irish Church, full as it was of obvious anomalies, the best means of gathering his party around him. He had been successful; and finding himself at the head of a powerful majority, he did not shrink from attacking the far more difficult question of the land. It was generally recognised that the political agitation in Ireland found its chief support in agrarian discontent. All parties in England were anxious to believe that the pronounced disloyalty of the Fenian movement was a thing of foreign growth, and it was customary to point triumphantly to the fact that but a small number of the agricultural population had been involved in it. There was some truth in this view. The priesthood had declared itself opposed to Fenianism, and the bulk of the people took no active part in it; but on the other hand there was no sign of popular opposition to the movement, nor any attempt to support the power of the law. Even granting the slightness of the co-operation afforded by the agricultural classes to the Irish-American propaganda, it remained to be explained why the Irish emigrants in America were burning with hatred against the English Government, and why there was sufficient sympathy with this feeling among the farmers and peasantry of Ireland to allow of any reasonable hope of a successful insurrection.

The answer to both questions was to be found in the concentrated animosity existing between the landlord and tenant class, a hostility so pronounced and so long-lived that it was expressed without exaggeration in the commonly used words, "the land war." There were

Reform of the  
Irish land  
laws.

many reasons for this severance of classes. For the most part placed in possession of their property after conquest and confiscation of which the memory was not forgotten, and by changes in the law which had suddenly obliterated the whole pre-existing system of tribal property, differing generally from their tenants in religion and in race, frequently absentees, and the representatives of a stern ascendancy supported by penal laws of fearful severity, the landlords of Ireland had failed to acquire that position of friendly and unquestioned superiority which they held in England. But old and historic animosity could scarcely have survived through several centuries had not the land system tended constantly to preserve it. Theoretically the land law of Ireland was much the same as that of England. Practically applied in a country where the conditions of life were dissimilar, its working produced very different results. In Ireland, as in England, the land was legally the absolute possession of the landlord, to use as he would, to let on any terms he pleased, and to whom he pleased. In Ireland, as in England, the occupier was supposed to enter into a free contract with the landlord for the use of the land. In England the supposition was practically true. The tenant was usually a man of substance, free to move to any part of the country he might prefer, a business man, in fact, whose trade was agriculture. Failing the opportunity to employ his capital in that particular business, other means for its employment were readily open to him. In Ireland the tenant was in the vast majority of cases a poor man, with just capital enough to carry on a little farm by his own labour, and without any other possible means of livelihood. While in the one case the landlord was compelled by the competition of capital to limit his demands for rent, and to treat his tenant as an equal party in a free bargain, in Ireland the competition lay wholly on the other side; the tenant must have land or starve, the landlord was absolute master of the position. This primary difference went hand in hand with a second of even more importance. In England the landlord let to his tenant a *farm*. He erected the buildings and kept them in substantial repair; he carried out, or assisted in carrying out, all improvements; at the end of the contract between himself and his tenant it was not unreasonable that he should regard the improvements as his own. In Ireland, though there were exceptions, the prevalent custom was that the landlord should let the *land* only; the tenant put up such buildings as he required, and carried out improvements at his own cost; in very many cases the whole value of the property came from

The Irish and  
English land  
systems con-  
trasted.



the tenant's labour. Yet legally, as in England, upon the close of a tenancy the landlord appropriated the whole of the buildings and improvements. Circumstances had brought it about that the common tenure of the farmers in Ireland was tenancy at will. They were without lease or other written contract, and liable to be removed from their holdings at six months' notice. There were no doubt considerable tracts of land where the English system existed in its proper form; on some estates there were large farms with the improvements and buildings paid for by the landlord, and occupied by farmers of substance holding leases; but generally speaking, what may be called the Irish system prevailed, consisting of small holdings, some very small, occupied by men themselves labourers, improved at the cost of the tenant and held at will.

From these conditions arose an opposition in the mind of the tenant between law and right. He was unable to persuade himself that that law was righteous which enabled his landlord, by the mere exertion of his will, to rob him of the fruits of his industry, and turn him, stripped perhaps of all his property, loose upon the world. The greater part of the atrocious agrarian crimes of Ireland are traceable to this cause. Eviction implied not only probable starvation, but carried with it a legal robbery against which the tenant had no redress. The inequality of the law drove him to seek for justice in other directions, and associations, at first violent and open, but subsequently even more dangerous in their secrecy, with a terrible and inexorable code of vengeance, filled Ireland with barbarous murders in the effort to give effect to the wild popular idea of justice. It is not necessary that there should have been many acts of harshness or injustice to excite the angry feeling of the people; a few notorious instances occurring from time to time would be sufficient to show only too plainly the possibility of such action, and to excite in the tenants a general feeling of insecurity, and a widespread abhorrence of the law which tolerated and supported such arbitrary conduct. It would be unjust to speak of the landlords as a class as tyrannical or cruel. In many cases estates were kindly managed, and the custom which regarded the improvements as the property of the tenants was respected. But there were too many examples of a contrary description. The horrors of the famine had given rise to a strong conviction that the population of the island was excessive; and not only in pursuit of better rents, but in the full belief that they were really improving the condition of the country, landlords had entered upon the process of

Inevitable consequences of the Irish system.

clearing their estates, and carried it out undeterred by the terrible results of eviction. Less praiseworthy objects had sometimes led to similar results; there were cases in which the tenantry of estates were kept under continual notice of ejection, and thus practically entirely at the command of their landlords; there were instances of evictions for political reasons, for religious reasons, or for infractions of the arbitrary rules of the estate. The very efforts of the English Parliament to relieve the country from the pressure of poverty, and to introduce more capital, had increased rather than diminished the evil. By that series of Acts which were incorporated in the Landed Estates Act, the legislature had intended to relieve the insolvent landlords, and to supply their place by a class of wealthier men. But with freer sale, the possession of land had become desirable merely as an investment, and considerable landed property had passed into the hands of men determined to make the best of their purchase, and to work their land to the best advantage for themselves, irrespective of their tenants.

There is little doubt that the clearances and the Encumbered Estates Act had in part produced the effect desired.

The wealth of the country had considerably increased, the value of the live-stock upon the land had nearly doubled, wages had since the time of the Devon Commission risen more than a half, and although rents had increased they were lower in proportion to the product of the land. But it is not always when at its lowest depression that a people or a class are most conscious of the ills from which they suffer. The very improvement in his material condition rendered it more grievous to the Irish peasant farmer that he might at any moment be legally robbed of the fruits of his labour and outlay. The extreme demand based upon this feeling was for fixity or perpetuity of tenure. To many men, who regarded such an arrangement as too great an encroachment upon the rights of property, something closely analogous to it, and already existing in some parts of Ireland, appeared necessary. For there was one part of the country in which the inequality of the law was somewhat repaired by usage. By what was known as "the Ulster custom," the tenant was allowed to continue his holding, though without written agreement, so long as the rent was paid, and to part with it if he so chose upon payment for the goodwill by the incoming tenant, and thus practically to receive compensation for his improvements. The crying injustice of the law was indeed so generally felt that in many other parts of Ireland, under various

Demand of the  
tenants for  
fixity of tenure,  
freedom of  
sale, and fair  
rent.

forms, some custom of the kind existed. But it was after all a custom only, and though generally observed, was liable to be disregarded. The law could not recognise any limitation of a freehold, or allow to the tenant any joint interest with the landlord in the land. To give the Ulster custom the sanction of law would have satisfied in part, but only in part, the requirements of the Irish tenants. For their conception of property in land was widely different from that held by the greater part of Englishmen. They did not recognise the landlord's right to do what he pleased with his land; they understood that he had a claim to a fair rent, and were at this time certainly willing to pay it. But, subject to the payment of the rent, they thought the occupier had a real interest in the land. This interest they considered that the occupier had a right to sell. The rent they thought should be fixed, not by competition, in which, under the peculiar circumstances of the country, the tenant must always be at a disadvantage, but by some external and disinterested authority. Their theory led in its completeness to those three demands which subsequently became so prominent, fixity of tenure, freedom of sale of the tenant's interest, and a fair rent fixed by an authoritative Court.

It is not to be supposed that the evils of the Irish land system had escaped full notice in Parliament. When the country was settling down after the terrible crisis of the famine, after the evictions which had followed that crisis had lessened the population, and given an opportunity, of which only too large an advantage had been taken, for consolidating properties, Mr. Napier, the Conservative Attorney-General for Ireland, had in November 1852 produced a Bill, which, had it been carried, would have gone far to secure that compensation for improvements which was the great object of the tenant. The support of Lord Derby's Government carried the Bill through two readings in the Commons, nor did the change of Ministry influence it, and in August 1853 it was read a third time. It was, however, dropped after the second reading in the House of Lords. Again in the following year it passed the Commons, but the feeling in regard to property in the Upper House again proved too strong for it, and after a hostile report from a select committee it was thrown out. The Ministry of Lord Palmerston was unfavourable to any changes with regard to land. Liberal in name, it was essentially a Conservative Ministry, its chief characteristic was its desire to allow things to remain unchanged. It resulted that every attempt made towards legalising the Ulster

Failure of previous efforts at land reform.

custom failed. A Bill for the purpose introduced by Mr. Maguire in 1858 was stigmatised by the Premier as "a Bill to transfer the property of one set of persons to another of a different class;" and in 1860 the Government taking the matter in hand even passed a Bill affirming the principle that arrangements between landlord and tenant should rest entirely on contract, that with regard to past improvements the tenant should have no claim for compensation, while for improvements in the future no compensation could be claimed unless they were undertaken with the landlord's consent.

The disestablishment of the Church had not escaped the fate which constantly attended the tardy concessions of England to Irish claims. Instead of producing order or exciting any feeling of gratitude among the people, it appeared only to encourage further agitation, and to increase the lawless disturbance of the country. The suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act had been allowed to lapse at the beginning of the year 1869. Several of the more notorious of the Fenian convicts had been amnestied, and had at once proceeded to declare their uncompromising hatred to England, and to inaugurate a fresh agitation. The number of agrarian outrages rapidly increased, and before the year closed it had been found necessary to send additional troops across the Channel. In recommending an alteration in the land law, Mr. Gladstone laid himself open to very obvious comment. His opponents were not only able to stigmatise his conduct as a mean concession to disaffection, they could point out the complete failure of the conciliatory step already taken, and could charge the Government with laxity in the performance of its primary duty, the suppression of open disorder. Nor could Mr. Gladstone deny the existence of increased crime. But while admitting it, and even allowing that his legislation by raising hope had added to the excitement, he took the high ground that the great curative measure he was recommending was in itself just; and that its effects, though they might be slow, must ultimately appear.

As Mr. Gladstone had undertaken to govern Ireland in accordance with Irish ideas, he could hardly accept as the basis for improving the land system much less than the view implied in the Ulster custom. But he was not only bound to legislate as far as possible to suit Irish ideas, he was also bound by his economical views, and by his connection with a party of wealth and standing, to support as fully as possible the rights of

Increased  
excitement in  
Ireland.  
1869.

The problem  
Mr. Gladstone  
had to solve.



property. The problem he felt himself obliged to solve was to harmonise views so antagonistic as those implied by the fixity of tenure which the Irish tenant demanded and those expressed in the English meaning of the word "freehold," and secondly, the Irish conception of a fair rent with the English economical belief in the sanctity of free contract. When the Bill was laid before the public it became evident that in the attempted compromise the Government had been obliged to incline considerably towards Irish ideas. The measure seemed to allow that in Ireland at least the accepted view of absolute property in land was untenable, and to acknowledge definitely not only this right of an occupier to the improvements he had made, but also to his occupation. The Ulster custom was taken as the basis of legislation with regard to tenancies at will. Where that custom existed it was to receive the force of law; where analogous though less definite customs obtained, they were to be recognised if the tenant was disturbed by his landlord except for non-payment of rent; and, where no such custom existed, compensation for improvement and for disturbance, according to a certain scale, was rendered imperative, and courts were established to settle questions which would certainly arise under the Bill. Thus far it would seem that the measure was a first step towards a system of dual ownership. But upon granting long leases a landlord might free his property from the restrictions which legalised custom laid upon it, and a second part of the measure was directed to the establishment of a proprietary instead of a tenant class. Public loans, to be repaid by instalments spread over a number of years, were to be authorised for the purpose of enabling tenants to purchase their holdings. The necessity of legislating upon the land in Ireland was so generally felt that the Bill was received with general acquiescence, and passed the second reading by a very large majority. Such opposition as it encountered was offered in committee. The point which afforded the great opportunity for a party division was the compensation allowed for disturbance, as distinct from that allowed for improvements. This was as Mr. Disraeli pointed out a real change in the nature of property in land. The scale of compensation, which varied according to the value of the holding from seven to two year's rent, acknowledged the right of the occupier to the actual possession of that proportion at least of his holding. The tenant thus became a joint proprietor with the landlord. Mr. Disraeli's argument was at the time contradicted by the supporters of the Bill, who declared that the compensation was only

The Irish Land  
Bill introduced.  
Feb. 15, 1870.

allowed to cover the loss which eviction caused. But his contention that the concession would lead, as dual ownership has constantly done, to increased irritation on the part of the tenant, and to a general refusal to pay rent, proved only too prophetic. The division showed the strength of the Government, which obtained a majority of seventy-four in favour of the enactment of the Bill upon this point. Indeed, although a vast number of amendments were proposed in both Houses, none of them were carried which at all vitally affected the measure, and by the 1st of August it had passed through all its stages. Great and almost revolutionary though it was, it did not produce all the good which was expected of it. The landlords found means to thwart its operation. The purchase clauses became ineffective, because the owners of property preferred to sell even at lower prices to fellow-owners rather than to their tenants. They took advantage also of loopholes which had unfortunately been left, enabling them to contract themselves out of the action of the Bill. Their liberty of action with regard to their tenants was restricted only by a pecuniary fine, which proved insufficient to deter them from pursuing their old course, and as a matter of fact evictions, instead of decreasing, became more numerous under the operation of the new law.

While the Land Bill was still before the House, after its second reading, and before it passed into Committee, it had been thought necessary to introduce and rapidly pass a Bill known as the Peace Preservation Act for the suppression of disorder. The use of firearms was forbidden in proclaimed districts, the powers of the police were considerably increased, magistrates were intrusted with a large summary jurisdiction, and a change of venue in trials was authorised. The Government was also given the power of suppressing newspapers, subject to the necessity of justifying its action if the owners of the paper proceeded against it.

The Peace Preservation Act.  
April 4.

The defects in the land law were not at first obvious. The satisfaction which it gave to the Irish, in conjunction with the stringent enactments of the Peace Preservation Act, produced a period of comparative quiet. But it was evident that the twofold discontent of the Irish was not satisfied in either of its branches. It was no doubt much to the tenant that he should secure the advantages of his own improvements, but it was the land itself at which he really aimed; and the power of eviction, still left in the hands of the landlord, and even implicitly allowed upon condition of compensation being paid, appeared to

Unsatisfactory results of the new legislation.

leave the tenant's tenure as uncertain as ever. There were in fact plain signs that the new land law did not go nearly far enough to destroy the agrarian agitation, that the religious equality granted by the disestablishment of the Irish Church, and the desire to let bygones be bygones, evidenced by the amnesty afforded to the Fenian prisoners in 1869, were not regarded as an adequate reply to the aspirations of the national party. Armed as they were with the powers of the Peace Preservation Act, the Government were obliged to appeal to Parliament in the very year that the Land Act was passed, for a Committee to examine into the outrages of the Ribbon Society in West Meath. In that neighbourhood all the ordinary phenomena of Irish agrarian discontent were visible, murders and outrages, and the impossibility of obtaining satisfactory verdicts upon the criminals. On the other hand, the defeat of Fenianism, the avowed object of which was separation and independence, afforded opportunity for the rise of a new demand, a sort of ill-defined compromise between actual separation and close union with England, which took the name of Home Rule. The Parliamentary advocacy of this scheme was in the hands of Mr. Isaac Butt, who in successive sessions, with considerable effect, but without any exact definition of what he wanted, pressed its claims upon Parliament. The Fenian leaders, if not active in their support of the movement, which fell no doubt far short of their objects, quietly acquiesced in it. At no time, however, during the leadership of Mr. Butt did the Home Rule movement assume a very threatening aspect, or appear to touch the feelings of the people very closely. It was not until it fell into the firmer hands of Mr. Parnell that it passed out of the sphere of theoretical discussion.

The stream of reform which had been pent up during the long Ministry of Lord Palmerston was now at its full flood. The two great Irish Bills, involving as they did such important questions as the connection between Church and State, and the absolute character of property, had necessarily taken the first place in public interest. But the programme of the Government as laid down in the Queen's Speech at the opening of Parliament (Feb. 8, 1870) had included an immense variety of subjects, so many indeed that it was impossible to handle them all.

The Ministry at all events cannot be charged with delay. Only two days after the introduction of the Irish Land Bill, the great question of National Education was brought forward. England had been gradually awakening to a sense of its

Rise of the  
Home Rule  
movement.

The large  
Government  
programme.

Educational  
reforms.

deficiency in national education, and to the necessity of improving it. It was well ascertained that the country was in this respect far behind many continental nations. The marvellous successes of Prussia were commonly traced to the trained intelligence of the men composing its armies, and it was felt that if England was to maintain its forward position in the world, the education of the people could be no longer left in its present unsatisfactory condition. In Mr. Forster had been found an able and earnest exponent of this feeling, and on him, as Vice-President of the Committee of Council on Education, devolved the duty of introducing and supporting the great measure by which the Ministry purposed to redeem its promises. This Bill may be regarded as a part of a general scheme involving all classes of education, and portions of which had already been before the public. Already, in 1862, the training places of the wealthy few, the Universities and public schools, had passed into the hands of Commissions with a view to modification and reform. The movement had been carried further, and had touched the secondary education. There were scattered over England a vast number of grammar-schools and educational foundations intended for the middle classes. There was every reason to believe that the resources thus offered for education were largely wasted and misapplied. In 1865 a Schools Inquiry Commission, of which Mr. Forster was a prominent member, had been issued. The report of this Commission had brought to light abundant abuses. The education offered by the grammar-schools was frequently not at all that which the people in the neighbourhood required. Incompetent or idle masters, content with their fixed stipends, allowed their schools to fall into entire decay. The very requirements of the Founder's Will in many cases formed an obstacle to improvement. The Commissioners not only exposed the abuses, but entered into minute arguments as to the remedies. Mr. Forster introduced a Bill more or less in accordance with these suggestions, and although in its passage through Parliament it lost considerably in completeness, its main principles were preserved. Commissioners were appointed with power to make new schemes; and although in 1874 a reactionary movement was made with the object of reversing the liberal religious principles on which the Commissioners were acting, its practical effect was merely to transfer their power to the already existing body of Charity Commissioners. In their hands new schemes have continued to be created, and many of the flagrant abuses which had disgraced the old foundation schools have been removed. Even before the

Bill for  
Secondary  
Education,  
1869.



appointment of the Endowed Schools Commission, the deficiencies in secondary education had been so obvious that in 1858 the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge had each of them set on foot a system of local examinations, by which the efficiency of secondary schools, whether private or endowed, was tested. By these means both the educational machinery and its employment were largely improved.

Of more general importance was the Bill of 1870 for national elementary education. The small grant which nearly forty years before had been made to support the National and the British and

Elementary  
Education Bill,  
Feb. 1870.

Foreign School Societies had swelled into an annual sum of £500,000, and the Committee of the Council on Education had grown into an important department of the administration. But voluntary effort, even when subsidised by the State, had failed in its object. Much had no doubt been achieved, but statistics showed only too plainly how far the country still was from possessing an efficient system of public education. It was calculated that in many of the large towns scarcely more than a third of the children received regular teaching. All schemes for a truly national system had hitherto made shipwreck on what was spoken of as the religious difficulty. The various religious denominations could agree upon no general system of undogmatic religious teaching, and the general feeling of the country was strongly opposed to the views of the extreme Liberals, who were eager that education should be divorced from religion, and be entirely secular. The subject had come into prominence in 1869 on the motion of Mr. Melly for a commission of inquiry. The Government had withstood the demand on the ground that sufficient information was already at hand, but had given an implied promise of early legislation. It fell to Mr. Forster to redeem this pledge. His object, as he himself explained, was to cover the country with good schools without the waste of public money. The Bill which was to solve this problem proposed to take advantage of the existing voluntary system, but to supply at the public cost its proved deficiencies. The first thing to be done was to find out what was wanted. For this purpose England was to be divided into districts, and the amount of school accommodation afforded with that required in each compared. After the lapse of a year, during which voluntary effort might be further exerted, the deficiencies were to be supplied by the compulsory erection of schools. In calculating the amount of accommodation offered by any district, only those schools which accepted Government inspection and a very stringent conscience clause were reckoned. Accommodation being

thus supplied, it became a question how it was to be paid for. Mr. Forster, believing that the work of general education would be too great for the Central Government, proposed to place the expense upon a local rate, the administration of which along with the management of the rate-established schools should be in the hands of a School Board, elected by the vestries, or by the Town Councils in municipal boroughs. The School Boards were authorised to make by-laws to compel attendance, and to establish free schools where necessary, as exceptions to the general principle that parents should pay for their children's education. Thus far there was little in the Bill to excite opposition. The machinery suggested, and the compromise by which the systems of voluntary and rate-paid schools were allowed to co-exist, met with very general approval. But the ultimate success of the measure depended upon the solution of the much-vexed religious question. Granting that the voluntary schools were allowed under the condition of a conscience clause to continue dogmatic teaching, what was to be done in those schools which were to be supported by general rates? Long discussion and much popular agitation had to be got through before an answer was arrived at. The programme of the Birmingham Education League demanded that education should be free, compulsory, and secular. On the two first points there was no strong popular feeling in its favour. It did not seem unreasonable that parents should be called upon to assist in educating their children. The power of permissive compulsion intrusted to the School Boards was as much as the country was inclined to bear. But many of the leaders of the dissenting bodies, jealous and afraid of the influence of the Church, were decidedly in favour of the complete separation of religious and secular instruction. Mr. Forster was, however, firm upon the point. After a period of watchful observation of the course of public feeling, he declared himself convinced that, as a whole, the people of England were strongly opposed to the entire omission of religion in education, and too warmly attached to the Bible to allow its use to be dropped. He therefore accepted an amendment, brought forward in Committee by Mr. Cowper Temple, preventing the use of any Catechism or dogmatic formulary in the rate-established schools. Beyond that, he declared, the Government would not go, and finally it was agreed that unless religious instruction was forbidden by the School Board of the district, the teachers might read and expound the Bible, avoiding the use of Catechisms or written creeds.

The Bill, as completed, thus provided school accommodation for

all the children in England, at schools subject to careful Government inspection. It maintained the existing voluntary schools, and allowed them, subject to a stringent conscience clause, to give denominational religious teaching. It provided undenominational religious teaching in the Board Schools, subject to the permission of the Board, but laid no constraint upon the children to attend it. It continued the payment of fees, subsidised by Government grants, in the case of all schools whether supported by voluntary subscriptions or by rates. It gave to locally elected School Boards the administration of the rate-paid schools, and the power of compelling the attendance of children at some certificated school. The method of electing the School Boards was much discussed. The original proposition was modified by the introduction, for the first time in public elections, of the vote by ballot; and it was arranged that London should be formed into a single district, in which all ratepayers should have votes. Mr. Forster exhibited in his management of the Bill an unwearied assiduity, an ability, and an earnestness, which excited universal admiration. It proved, on the whole, a very great success. No doubt it did not succeed in giving England a perfect system of elementary education, and, in the advance of liberal thought, several of the views put forward at the time with little hope of result have found a large number of supporters; the desire for free compulsory education has become very generally diffused. The somewhat inelastic and mechanical character of the training given, the result of centralisation, is a subject of not unreasonable complaint, and the large expenditure incurred by the School Boards, especially in London, has brought them some unpopularity. But upon the whole, whatever its defects, there can be no doubt that by placing the opportunity of schooling within the reach of all, by exerting pressure upon parents and placing before them the duty of training their children, and by insuring at least a fair amount of efficiency to the training given, the Bill has exerted a very great and beneficial influence.

The principle that education should be national and unsectarian, which was accepted in this series of measures, reached its final extension when at length in 1871 the long-vexed question of religious tests at the Universities was settled. Thrown out by the House of Lords in 1870, it was reintroduced in the same terms by Mr. Gladstone in the following year, and in spite of the opposition of Lord Salisbury, who succeeded in carrying by a small majority in the Upper House a new test to be laid on all

Results of  
Mr. Forster's  
Bill.

Abolition of  
religious tests  
in the Universities.  
1871.

holding college offices, the Bill was carried in the Lower House and ultimately accepted by the Lords. By this Bill, while clerical fellowships were still continued, all lay students were admitted to the Universities on precisely equal terms.

The three great measures which had marked the first years of Mr. Gladstone's Government had been upon the whole recognised as necessary, and had secured large majorities in the House, though, like all other reforms, they had excited much hostility among the interests which they had unavoidably attacked. The interests of the Church and of landed property had been, it was supposed, assaulted by the two great Irish measures, while the Nonconformists viewed with much dislike the religious compromise of the Education Act. But the reforming energy of the Government was by no means exhausted. In rapid succession Bills were produced which, however desirable in themselves, immediately excited strong opposition, and required for their success a combination of firmness, with delicacy of handling, which they did not receive. At the same time the management of foreign affairs, of necessity difficult in the presence of the great war raging in Europe, assumed a form which to many appeared derogatory to the high position of England. Though the Ministry was able to hold its position for some years longer, as early as the beginning of 1871 the full tide of its popularity had begun to ebb.

Unpopularity  
of Government.  
1871.

With public attention fixed upon the astounding events of the war in France, and Paris in the agonies of the winter siege by the German armies, it is not strange that the military condition of England should have become a prominent topic of discussion. A very natural though somewhat unreasonable sympathy for France went hand in hand with an exaggerated dread of the power and ambition of its successful rival. The self-command and moderation, which is Bismarck's greatest claim to our admiration, was not yet known. To not a few it seemed only too probable that the conquest of France was but a stepping-stone to an assault on England. A serious doubt was felt, not without justification in the faulty system of our military administration, as to the efficiency of our means of defence. An agitation for army reform, supported by the press and by several well-known public men, arose, and was taken up by the Ministry. The duty of throwing into shape the general feeling in this respect fell to Mr. Cardwell. The first notification of what was intended was given when the army estimates for the year 1871 were moved. The Government demanded £15,851,700,

Agitation for  
reforms in the  
army.



The Army  
Regulation Bill  
introduced.  
Feb. 1871.

or an increase of very nearly £3,000,000 upon the sum demanded the preceding year. It was explained that the army would be increased by 20,000 men, that a considerable addition would be made to the number of the field guns, and the grant to volunteers largely raised, but that of the whole sum about one-third would be given towards the increase of artillery and ammunition, and of the transport service. On demanding so large an addition to the estimates, it was necessary for Mr. Cardwell to explain at some length the scheme of army reorganisation, for which the grant was required. The result of his plan would, as he estimated, give England an army of 497,000 men: 135,000 regulars, 139,000 militia, 14,000 yeomanry, 9000 first army reserve, 30,000 second army reserve, and 170,000 volunteers. But in order to carry out the changes in contemplation it was necessary to settle some preliminary principles, such as the need of a sufficient army, the method of enlistment, and the relation of the auxiliary to the regular forces. It was argued that the character of the English Empire differs from that of any foreign country; its wide extension, and the consequent recurrence of small wars renders the presence of its army, though not in great numbers, necessary in all parts of the world. It did not therefore appear desirable that the universal and compulsory service which filled the successful armies of Germany should be adopted; a regular body of paid troops always in a state of complete efficiency would supply the wants of England at once more cheaply and more efficaciously. On this ground alone, even without the additional arguments drawn from the great distaste of Englishmen for compulsory service and its undoubted and expensive interference with the ordinary business of life, the Government recommended with general approbation that the principle of voluntary enlistment should be maintained. But the regular army, being in a great degree used abroad, was insufficient for purposes of defence; it was backed up by the auxiliary forces—the militia and the volunteers. The national force, as it may be called, the militia, the original army of England, was still under the authority of the Lords Lieutenant of the counties. But no complete and general organisation could be arrived at, nor any system by which the two branches of the service could be brought into close relation, unless this divided command was destroyed, and the Commander-in-Chief and the War Office recognised as the sole paramount authority. That all the forces should be brought under one uniform system and placed under one command, was therefore a second point pressed by the Government and willingly accepted. But even so, any real amalgamation

remained impossible as long as commissions in the regular army were a matter of purchase, and in the militia a matter of gift. Many other reasons seemed to point to the wisdom of the abolition of the purchase system. It had become fully recognised by all civilians that the excellence of an army depended chiefly on the excellence of its officers, and that no process except that of selection could prevent old and inefficient officers from holding high command. The growing feeling in favour of merit without regard to wealth, which was one of the best points in the democratic growth of the time, was shocked at the idea of meritorious soldiers of good capacity left in subordinate posts, and superseded, irrespective of their capacity, by rich men. Of this feeling Mr. George Trevelyan had made himself the spokesman, and again and again had excited popular indignation by narrating such cases as that of Havelock, who had declared that "three sots and two fools had purchased over him, and that but for his family he would not have served another hour." It was plain to all men not themselves interested in the matter, that although England might be proud of its officers, and although it had on the whole avoided disaster, theoretically the system was absolutely untenable. To the reforming Government of the day it was a matter of prime necessity even irrespective of the army scheme that purchase should be abolished. To that scheme its abolition was the necessary threshold. Mr. Cardwell therefore suggested that on a certain day purchase should cease, but that vested interests should be carefully guarded; commissioners were to be appointed to represent the purchaser and pay to those officers who withdrew from the army the full price of their commission, not only the legal regulation price, but the extra price which though itself illegal had been sanctioned by custom.

In the agitation which had preceded the Bill the expense thus necessarily incurred, which Mr. Cardwell put at about £7,000,000, had been carefully explained to the nation, and it appeared clear that it was willing to pay the price. But the destruction of purchase was regarded with the greatest hostility by the greater part of the army, and by Conservatives who desired to maintain what they considered the high social standard of the officers and the due influence of wealth. The existing system had also been regarded favourably by many eminent authorities, and opinions in its favour expressed by such men as Wellington and Raglan carried considerable weight. The stand made by the military men and their supporters was of so obstructive a nature, and threatened so entirely

Opposition to  
the Army Bill.

to preclude legislation upon other subjects, that the Government at length felt themselves compelled to remodel their Bill, and to confine it to the abolition of purchase and the transfer of the power over the militia and volunteers from the Lords-Lieutenant to the Crown. A very clear hint that further opposition would be followed by the refusal of the Government to pay more than the regulation prices by way of compensation had its effect upon the opponents of the Bill, and in its curtailed form it was passed without much further difficulty (July 3, 1871). The Bill had still to pass the House of Lords, and was there met by a Conservative amendment moved by the Duke of Richmond, to the effect that the House should not pass the second reading of the Bill until it had the full plan of reorganisation before it. The speech of Lord Northbrook in introducing the Bill to the Upper House had in fact given all the information that was necessary, especially as the reorganisation, as apart from certain large principles and financial questions, was distinctly the business of the executive and not of the legislature. The amendment however had an air of plausibility about it, and at the same time relieved the Lords from undertaking what they felt to be an impossibility, the direct rejection of the abolition of purchase. On the division there appeared a majority of twenty-five in favour of the amendment. It was thought that this was tantamount to the rejection of the Bill, though technically it was but its postponement. It was evident that a quarrel between the two Houses was threatening. But the public were taken a good deal by surprise when two days after the passing of the amendment in the Lords Mr. Gladstone announced in the Lower House that purchase had already been abolished. Pointing out that the Commons had assented to the principle, and were willing it must be supposed to pay the price, he had thought it right, he said, to advise her Majesty to destroy by royal warrant a system which existed only by royal warrant, and to declare that by the 1st of November purchase should cease. A similar announcement was made in the Lords. The excitement in Parliament was considerable. Mr. Disraeli denounced the conduct of the Ministry as "a part of a shameful conspiracy against the undoubted privileges of the Upper House." The House of Lords, after bitter speeches against the supposed infringement of the Constitution, passed a vote of censure upon the Ministry, at the same time assenting to the second reading of the Bill in order to secure to the officers the compensation due to them on the abolition of purchase. There was a good deal of question among thinking men of both

Abolition of  
purchase by  
royal warrant.  
July 1871.

parties both as to the legality and the wisdom of the Government policy. By the people at large it was accepted, without complaint of the method employed, with approval of the object gained.

The organisation of the army thus became the duty of the Government of the day ; and in the following year, on moving the estimates, Mr. Cardwell explained in detail the scheme he intended to adopt. The German organisation which had produced such great results was necessarily taken as the groundwork of the arrangement, but so modified as to suit the peculiar requirements of the English army. The objects which Mr. Cardwell set before him were the localisation of the regiments, the establishment of an army sufficient at once for foreign service and for home defence, and a ready means for raising both the home and foreign regiments on any emergency to their full strength. The country was divided into districts, in each of which a central depot was established, where the home battalions of the local regiments were stationed, with which during their period of service the militia regiments of the districts were brigaded. The volunteers were likewise brought under the same general system. To remove the evils which had attended the system of long service, and to pass a greater number of men through regular training, a short service was introduced. Recruits were to enlist for twelve years ; for seven of these they were to serve with the colours and then pass for the remaining five into the army reserve, still liable to be called out for foreign service. Each regiment of the line being divided into two battalions, while one remained at home the other was employed on foreign service, the intention being that at least one-half of each arm of the service should be constantly at home. Along with this arrangement went a considerable amount of decentralisation, each military centre being in many respects complete in itself. But unity was given to the whole by a new arrangement of departments. The Secretary of State for War was responsible for the whole working of the machine. The three branches, presided over respectively by the Commander-in-Chief, the Surveyor-General of Ordnance, and the Financial Secretary, were brought together at the War Office. The Commander-in-Chief was given the command of all the land forces of the Crown whether at home or abroad. The Quartermaster-General, hitherto a rival and co-ordinate power, was subordinated to the Adjutant-General, who became practically what is known as Chief of the Staff. Considerable complaints were made as to several points in the scheme ; short service was held to deprive the army of its chief element of steadiness—the presence of veteran soldiers ; the *esprit de*

Reorganisation  
of the Army.  
1872.



*corps* which forms so large a factor in the efficiency of a regiment was thought to be weakened by the change of name which the regiments underwent and by the destruction of the privileges and peculiarities of various corps, which was a necessary consequence of the scheme of reorganisation ; while as a matter of fact the frequent demands of foreign service have prevented that balance between the home and foreign regiments which was essential to the completeness of the scheme. But there can be little question that taken as a whole,—including as it did a considerable amount of decentralisation, the establishment of better arrangements for commissariat and transport, higher requirements for obtaining commissions, and a general unity of system,—the scheme was a great and valuable one.

One other reforming attempt, meeting with much the same reception as the Army Bill, occupied the attention of Parliament in 1871, and was not completed till the following year. This was Mr. Forster's Ballot Bill. Its object was to render secret voting necessary both in municipal and parliamentary elections, and generally to secure the purity of elections. Though introduced early in the session, its discussion was long postponed by the debates upon purchase. Mr. Gladstone, who had previously opposed the principle, now became its most ardent supporter. The feeling in the House was however not

**Failure of the  
Ballot,  
Licensing,  
and Local  
Government  
Bills. 1871.**

strong in its favour, the Opposition pursued the same course of obstruction as had delayed the Purchase Bill, and though the Government and its supporters adopted the very unusual policy of allowing its opponents to speak unanswered, it was very late in the session before the Bill could be got through the House. Full of anger against the Ministry, and not observing any great or general feeling in favour of the Bill, the House of Lords threw it out by a very large majority. The year was indeed one of legislative failures. Mr. Bruce had vainly endeavoured to advance the cause of temperance by a Licensing Bill ; the interest of the licensed victuallers was too strong for him, and it had been withdrawn. A Bill introduced by Mr. Goschen for the reform of local government and taxation met the same fate. In fact of more than one hundred Ministerial Bills the Universities' Test Bill was alone passed.

Nor was the financial scheme of the Government more successful. Although the receipts of the last year had largely exceeded the estimates, Mr. Lowe, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, reckoned that, on account of the outlay rendered necessary by the abolition of purchase and the other improvements in the army, there would be a

deficit for the coming year of more than £2,000,000. This he proposed to meet by alterations in the probate and succession duties, by an increased income-tax raised on a system of percentages and amounting to 10s. 8d. per cent., and by a tax upon matches. On this latter point he explained the immense waste and the immense consumption, and calculated that a duty of a halfpenny on a hundred would produce a very large sum. He proposed that the tax should be collected by means of stamps attached to each box, and suggested the punning motto, "*Ex luce lucellum.*" No one of his propositions met with approval. The match manufacturers of the East End feeling that the match-tax would fall chiefly upon them, made a violent opposition to it, and the very poor class employed in the manufacture expressed their disapprobation by crowded processions to Westminster; the wealthy classes regarded the alteration of the succession duties as an assault upon property; while the collection of the income-tax upon percentage instead of by a definite sum per pound excited general suspicion. It was found necessary to withdraw the whole Budget, and to substitute for all the various methods of Mr. Lowe a simple addition of 2d. in the pound to the income-tax.

Matchbox-tax  
thrown out.  
1871.

This year of failures had so loosened the hold of the Government upon the people that it was not without serious marks of disapprobation that the Prime Minister presented himself in the autumn to his constituents at Greenwich. The speech he then delivered was a remarkable effort, and secured for the moment a complete triumph. He was obliged to confess that nothing had been done except the abolition of purchase, but upon this he laid great stress, excusing the want of success in other directions upon the ground that it was in accordance with the English custom to think long before adopting changes, and asserting the necessity of the ultimate success of the rejected Bills. He at the same time drew attention in eloquent words to the deeper social movements which underlay the surface of politics, the growing desire for restrictions on intemperance, the necessity of sharing between the rich and the poor the increasing wealth of the country, and of raising the appreciation of honest labour.

Gladstone's  
Greenwich  
speech.

Yet, although the year 1872 somewhat redressed the disasters of the preceding year and the Government was enabled to pass several important measures, it had received a blow from which it never properly recovered. Its very successes in some respects tended to increase the disfavour with which it was regarded. The Ballot Bill

was indeed carried in the face of much opposition, and after a com-  
 promise with the House of Lords ; but many even among  
 the Liberals regarded secret voting with dislike as con-  
 trary to the principles of the Constitution, and as a fur-  
 ther step towards annihilating the influence of wealth and  
 education. The abortive Licensing Bill of the preceding  
 year was reproduced in a moderate form, and was successfully carried  
 through the House. It contained provisions against adulteration,  
 organised the licensing bodies both in counties and boroughs, leaving  
 the power of licensing in the hands of the magistrates, and fixed the  
 hours during which public-houses could be open ; eleven o'clock in  
 the country and twelve o'clock in London was the hour appointed for  
 closing. But the Bill though not otherwise than moderate excited  
 the anger of the licensed victuallers, and aroused the feelings of many  
 of the lower classes, who disliked the restrictions laid upon their  
 habits, and clamoured vehemently against the advantages accorded to  
 the wealthier classes by the exception of clubs and hotels from the  
 action of the new law. By many also the attempt to enforce virtue  
 by legislation was regarded as a step in the wrong direction. The  
 Budget, though simple and easy, did little towards restoring the  
*prestige* of the Ministry. The receipts so far exceeded the estimated  
 expenditure that a surplus of more than £3,000,000 resulted, but  
 Mr. Lowe contented himself with half, thus undoing what he had done  
 the preceding year—withdrawing 2d. from the income-tax, and lessen-  
 ing the duty upon coffee by one-half. But the very existence of the  
 large surplus, and the simplicity with which it was handled, seemed  
 a confession that previous estimates had been erroneous, and the  
 contemplated changes proposed in the previous year ill-judged.

It was not however the legislation of the Ministry alone which had  
 shaken their popularity. No doubt there was a general  
 feeling that they were guided by a vexatious eagerness  
 for uncalled-for reforms and guilty of want of tact in  
 carrying them out. But still more dangerous to them was the  
 growing opinion that they were inclined to tamper in their manage-  
 ment of foreign affairs with the honour of the country. The Franco-  
 German war, the Black Sea Conference, the Treaty of Washington,  
 each in turn afforded ground for charges of the kind.

The outbreak of the war in the middle of 1870 had been somewhat  
 a surprise to Europe. There was every appearance of  
 peace, when among the candidates for the vacant throne  
 of Spain there appeared a Prince of the Hohenzollern House, and it

Popularity of  
 Government  
 decreased by  
 passage of the  
 Ballot and  
 Licensing Bills.  
 1872.

Discontent with  
 the manage-  
 ment of the  
 Foreign Office.

Origin of the  
 Franco-German  
 War.

at once became apparent that the signs of peace were fallacious. The misgovernment of the Queen of Spain had led in 1868 to a revolution which drove the Bourbons from the throne, and since that time Serano, acting as Regent, and Marshal Prim as Commander-in-Chief and Minister, had carried on a provisional government with the avowed intention of ultimately re-establishing the government of the country upon a constitutional basis. The difficulty was to find a sovereign at once acceptable to the people of Spain and to the Powers of Europe. Many candidates had been proposed; among them the most prominent was the Duke of Montpensier, the son of Louis Philippe. But as a vote of two-thirds of the Cortes was necessary to secure the acceptance of any candidate, and none of them had as yet gained sufficient popularity to allow of the hope of such a result being obtained in their favour, General Prim looked elsewhere for a candidate. He had found a man whom he believed answered his requirements in Prince Leopold of Hohenzollern Sigmaringen, who was indeed distantly connected with the Prussian House, but far more nearly with the supporters of the Napoleonic tradition, for one of his grandmothers was a Murat, and the other a Beauharnais.

Candidate for  
the throne of  
Spain.

There was no reason to suppose that such a candidate would be distasteful to the French Emperor. But events had occurred in France which induced Napoleon to desire a foreign war. Opposition to his personal rule had increased to such an extent that he had found it necessary in 1869 to promulgate changes in the constitution, giving it a greater appearance of liberty, and to place the Government in the hands of Ollivier, one of the leaders of the constitutional party. The general election which followed, in spite of the large use of government influence, had resulted, especially in the towns, in the choice of representatives opposed to personal power. But though compelled to adopt the forms of constitutionalism, Napoleon had no intention of surrendering the position he had so long enjoyed. He found as he believed the means of obtaining a renewed lease of power in the application to existing circumstances of the principle which he had always maintained. He called to his aid universal suffrage, and insisted upon superseding the legislative body, and submitting the constitution to the verdict of a plebiscite. He obtained a large majority in his favour, but there was an ominous diminution in the numbers of his partisans as compared with those who had voted for him in 1863; in the large cities his cause was in a minority, and even among the

Napoleon's  
desire for war.



soldiery his diminishing popularity was evident. He would seem to have been desirous to mark his renewed acquisition of power by some striking exploit, which should at once hush amid the enthusiasm of a national war the voices of his opponents and restore by the glories of victory the shaken allegiance of the army. He saw in the jealousy of Prussian aggrandisement which since the events of 1866 had been prevalent in France a ready instrument for his purpose. His diplomatic agents by their mistaken information misled him so completely that he supposed Austria and the South of Germany would hail him as a friend, while those in charge of the military administration at home, with equal want of honesty and of knowledge, persuaded him that his army was in the highest state of preparation. Advantage therefore was at once taken of the Hohenzollern candidature to raise a cry against the ambitious views of Prussia. Not satisfied, it was said, with its triumphs at home and its interference in the East, it was bent on establishing its influence in Spain, at the very threshold of France. The French Ambassador was instructed to protest against this conduct, and to demand a voluntary withdrawal of Prince Leopold. The demand was granted, and Ollivier was satisfied with his diplomatic triumph. Not so Napoleon and his more immediate friends in the cabinet. Gramont, the foreign Minister, was authorised to utter in the Legislative Chamber words which could mean little less than war. The Emperor and his Bonapartist Ministers insisted upon a written disclaimer from King William, and a promise that the candidature should not be renewed. Pressing himself upon the King with these arrogant demands, Benedetti, the French Ambassador, met with a somewhat rough reception. Bismarck, who desired war, but understood that to carry Germany with him the first blow must come from France, took advantage of the incident; an incomplete report of the supposed insult roused a storm of anger which no Minister could oppose, and France almost immediately declared war.

It was tended no doubt that this sudden act should be followed by an equally sudden exertion of military force. Napoleon intended to push at once between Prussia and the Southern States of Germany, which he expected to find friendly to his interests. But when it came to the point the army on which he relied proved in no condition for immediate movement. Delay was necessary, and delay enabled the Prussians to bring their admirable organisation at once into play, to secure the friendship of their southern fellow-countrymen, and to change the defensive war with which they were threatened into one of active offence. The French

Beginning of  
the war.

Emperor, who had himself taken the command of his army, did indeed strike the first blow by an idle bombardment of the open town of Saarbrück, but the movement was without result. The real warfare began when the army of the Crown Prince surprised a portion of Marshal MacMahon's army at Wissemburg, and two days afterwards, on the 6th of August, completely defeated the Marshal himself at Wörth. The battle was the result of a combined advance of the Prussians, and on the same day, in the neighbourhood of Saarbrück, upon the heights of Spicheren, the armies of Steinmetz and Prince Frederick Charles won an equally decisive victory over the French. MacMahon's army in Alsace was virtually destroyed at Wissemburg, and was compelled to find its way back as best it could to Châlons, where the army of reserve was stationed. The armies of Lorraine, with which the Emperor himself was, withdrew into the valley of the Moselle, resting upon the great fortress of Metz. Into the gap thus formed the Prussians at once pushed. Coming both from the north and the south they thrust themselves between Metz and Châlons, and succeeded after a series of murderous engagements in inclosing the French with Bazaine at their head in Metz. The Emperor with difficulty made his way to Châlons, but in fact his power had left him. The disastrous news of the first defeats had produced a wild excitement in Paris, and the demand for his deposition was loudly raised. The Empress made a gallant effort to uphold the cause of her husband and child, assumed the post of Regent, appointed a new Ministry of a more thoroughly Napoleonic character under General Montauban, and set energetically to work to put Paris in a state of defence. But the course of the war soon scattered to the winds the efforts of the Empress. While Bazaine, to whom the chief command had been intrusted, allowed himself to be shut up in Metz by the northern and central armies of the Prussians, MacMahon, withdrawing by a circuitous route before the advancing forces of the Crown Prince, reached Châlons in safety. To release Bazaine's army, which included almost the whole of the organised force of France, seemed a matter of prime necessity. Setting out from Châlons with 180,000 men, MacMahon and the Emperor marched in a north-easterly direction, with a view of reaching the valley of the Meuse, and forcing their way down it. The Crown Prince followed the movement; so strong were the armies around Metz that it was found possible to despatch a body of 80,000 to his assistance. Thus with more than 200,000 men at command, and aided by the slow and badly organised march of the French, he forestalled MacMahon's action, placed himself between the

French army and Metz, cut its communications with Châlons, and forced it to take refuge in Sedan. There on the last day of August and 1st of September the crowning battle of the campaign was fought, and the Emperor was compelled to surrender with his whole army.

The news of this catastrophe was fatal to the dynasty of Napoleon. At a midnight meeting of the legislative body the formal deposition of the Emperor was demanded, but when after a short adjournment it again met to discuss the question, it was evident that the power had passed into other hands. The populace broke into the Assembly, and headed by Gambetta and the chief members of the Opposition, proceeded to the Hôtel de Ville. There a provisional government, subsequently known as the Government of National Defence, was declared. With Trochu as its President, Jules Favre as Minister of Foreign Affairs, and Gambetta Minister of the Interior, it began its work by suppressing the Legislative Body and the Senate, and allowing the Republic to be proclaimed at the chief provincial cities of France. It was hoped by onlookers that the fall of Napoleon, to whom the war was due, and the completeness of the vengeance which the Prussians had inflicted upon their assailant, might lead to an honourable peace. The hope was dispelled by the utterances of Jules Favre and a counter declaration of Bismarck. As the mouthpiece of the new Government, the Minister of Foreign Affairs declared that it undertook as its first duty to clear France from the invaders, and would listen to no terms of peace implying the abandonment of one inch of territory or one stone of a French fortress. In reply the Prussian Minister explained clearly that Germany, after the terrible efforts to which it had been driven by French aggression, could not be satisfied without a strong defensive frontier including the possession of Strasburg and Metz.

Thus the second act of the drama of the great war began. The Crown Prince resumed his march upon Paris from which his movement towards Sedan had drawn him. On the 20th the Prussian King had reached Ferrières, the remnants of the French armies were defeated before the city, and Paris was completely invested. In the absence of any constitutionally established Government recognised by the whole of France great difficulties arose in the way of negotiations, and it seemed not unnatural that some cessation of hostilities to allow of elections and reorganisation should be granted by the Prussians even in their own interest. A conference between Bismarck and Jules Favre was arranged through the instrumentality of the English Ambassador; but as the

Deposition of  
Napoleon.  
Sept. 4, 1870.

Siege of  
Paris.

one demanded the cession of Strasburg and several other fortresses as a preliminary condition, and the other was pledged for the time to resist all such concessions, the negotiations came to nothing. The only hope of moderating the war seemed to lie in the intervention of the neutral powers; and Thiers, the foremost of French statesmen, set out on a voluntary mission to the capitals of Europe for the purpose of obtaining it. Meanwhile the march of the Crown Prince to Sedan had given the Parisians time to organise their defence; the forts had been armed and strengthened, 400,000 national guards and mobiles organised, marines brought to work the guns, and vast quantities of ammunition made. But the Prussian generals placed their hopes upon famine and political difficulties within the city, and shrank from active measures of assault. To maintain the vast blockade taxed all their powers. Though they had 650,000 men in France, two-thirds of these were employed elsewhere. Bazaine, with his army, had still to be kept shut up in Metz, the communications with Germany had to be guarded, and at first Strasburg and several other important fortresses still held out. It seemed not impossible if the unconquered part of France could be roused to energy that the capital might yet be saved. The duty of making the attempt was undertaken by Gambetta. Escaping early in October from the besieged city in a balloon, he made his appearance at Tours, at once assumed the Ministry of War with almost dictatorial powers, and proceeded to infuse into the provinces something of his own feverish enthusiasm. Armies sprang into existence in all directions; a great force under General D'Aurelle de Paladines was gradually collected behind the Loire; Garibaldi, who had offered his services to the new Republic, took command of a mixed and irregular force in the south-east, while a third active army was established under Count Kératry in the west. But before Gambetta was able to bring any trustworthy troops into action against the Prussian lines, an event occurred which changed the aspect of affairs and proved fatal to the fortunes of France. On the 27th of October Marshal Bazaine surrendered Metz, and with it the whole of his army. Three Marshals of France, 180,000 soldiers, 3000 guns, and 40,000,000 of francs fell into the hands of the conquerors. Either wilfully to suit his own views, as his enemies assert, or from incapacity, the General had allowed this vast force resting on a first-rate fortress to be inclosed by an army hardly larger than itself. Several ill-managed and costly sorties had been made, on more than one occasion with considerable success, but they had never been pressed home;

Gambetta's  
attempt to  
rouse France.



never to all appearance had any serious effort been made to break a way through the Prussian lines. The mere existence of the army there had however drawn away from offensive action a full third of the Prussian forces ; its surrender now set them free to secure the predominance of the besiegers of Paris, and to push on to the further subjugation of the country. Gambetta's forces must henceforward expect to be themselves attacked. The news of the fall of Metz produced a fresh revolutionary outbreak in Paris ; the members of the Government were for some time in the hands of the mob. The vigour of Ernest Picard, who had escaped capture and was well supported by General Trochu, suppressed the insurrection. A plebiscite confirmed by a large majority the authority of the existing Government, and the defence was actively pushed on.

At the very moment of the insurrection, Thiers returned from his mission. He had been unable to procure any active intervention from the neutrals, but had received advice and sympathy, and entered at once into negotiations with Bismarck to produce an armistice. But again the negotiations failed.

Failure of  
Thiers' negotiations.

Though the Germans were willing to grant a cessation of arms and to allow the election of a National Assembly, they refused to listen to the suggestion that Paris should be revictualled. It was indeed scarcely to be expected that they should thus surrender the great advantage their lengthened blockade had secured them, and as Thiers made this a necessary condition of the arrangement, his efforts, like those of Jules Favre, proved abortive. The armistice was scarcely refused when for one moment it appeared as though the French might win by arms what they could not secure by negotiation. Before the troops from Metz could enter upon their aggressive movement, General d'Aurelle had set the army of the Loire in motion, and had won over Von der Tann at Coulmiers the only real victory obtained by the French during the war. Moltke recognised the danger. He even for the moment seems to have thought that a withdrawal from Paris might be necessary. But the troops which he hurriedly despatched to Von der Tann's assistance proved sufficient to re-establish the Prussian supremacy in that direction ; the French were beaten at Ardenay and again at Orleans, and forced to retreat in two directions, thus breaking in half the army of the Loire. The failure was attributed to want of skill in the General. Threatened with a court-martial, he threw up his commission ; the southern army of the Loire was placed in the hands of Bourbaki, while General Chanzy with the remainder withdrew towards Le Mans. There seemed but little

chance that Paris would be relieved from outside. Faidherbe was indeed making some way in Picardy, Garibaldi and those with him were occupying General Werder in the south and east, but in all directions it appeared clear that the German troops in the field were able to restrain the forces opposed to them from any dangerous approach to the great siege. Meanwhile Paris was not idle. The news of the victory of Coulmiers produced, while the subsequent disasters of d'Aurelle were yet unknown, an important and threatening sortie under General Ducrot which for a while seemed to promise to be successful. For two days the fighting was kept up. But on the 3d of December the French General withdrew, compelled so to act in part by the cold, against which his troops were improperly provided. A second great effort under General Vinoy was made upon the 21st of December, but again owing to some mismanagement of the commanders it proved unsuccessful. The coming winter, the extension of the war, the threatening activity of the besieged, drove the Germans to have recourse to more active measures. While a new levy of 200,000 men was demanded from Germany, the bombardment of Paris at length began, and on the 29th of December one of the forts was taken.

It was the beginning of the end. Whatever was to be done to save Paris either from within or from without must be done quickly. Help might come from Faidherbe in the north, from Chanzy in the west, from Bourbaki in the south, and against the large armies which these Generals had at their command the Prussians had very inferior numbers to oppose. But the raw levies of France proved unable to perform the task set them, while the genius of Moltke, divining always the point of danger and strengthening it, seemed to neutralise their numerical superiority. Faidherbe, who had obtained a transient success at Bapaume, was shortly afterwards completely defeated near St. Quentin, whither a Prussian corps had been hastily despatched by rail from Paris. The hopes of Chanzy lay in the power of Bourbaki to keep the Germans employed upon the Loire. But Bourbaki was engaged on a great enterprise, and had moved away eastward. At once divining his intention the Prussian commander entirely neglected him and sent all his troops against Chanzy, who, gallantly disputing every inch of ground, was finally defeated at Le Mans. The fate of Bourbaki was still more disastrous. Thinking to throw himself upon the German communications in Alsace, he had moved rapidly eastward and attempted to separate the German forces at Vesoul and Belfort: he

Defeat of  
Faidherbe,  
Chanzy, and  
Bourbaki.

failed. The enemy concentrated in the neighbourhood of Héricourt, and there after a three days' battle Bourbaki suffered a complete defeat. He attempted to retreat, but found himself entrapped by the skill of Moltke, who had not shrunk from withdrawing an army from the north and hurrying it southward. Arriving too late for the battle of Héricourt, it was in time to cut off Bourbaki's retreat, and to drive the whole of his forces into Switzerland, where in accordance with the law of neutrals they laid down their arms.

These successive defeats all took place between the 12th and the 19th of January. On the last of those days the final effort of the Parisians themselves was made. Under the command of Trochu himself 100,000 men pushed out towards St. Cloud and St. Denis. Successful for a while, they were finally beaten back as the German reserves were concentrated on the threatened point. The inevitable consequence of this failure was a riot. Though it was suppressed without difficulty Trochu surrendered the command; and it was evident that at length the forces on which the Germans had relied had done their work—that famine and sedition rendered further defence impossible. On the 23d of January negotiations began. On the evening of the 28th an armistice was signed, and Paris surrendered. Food had been long collected by the Germans in expectation of the surrender, and England was ready to despatch with the greatest speed provisions for the suffering people. Upon the advance of the Germans towards Tours, Gambetta had gone to Bordeaux. He at once indignantly repudiated the armistice. But the other members of the Government of national defence proved too strong for him; recognising that he was after all but a delegate of that Government, he thought it necessary to give in his resignation. Then began an attempt to reorganise in France a Government so national and with such promise of permanence as to be capable of changing the armistice into a peace. A National Assembly was accordingly opened at Bordeaux on the 3d of February, with Grévy as its President, while Thiers was put at the head of the Ministry. Listening to his advice the Assembly proceeded to take measures for relieving the country of the invaders. A Commission was despatched to Paris, and preliminaries of peace were arranged, including a convention allowing of the formal

Surrender of  
Paris.  
Jan. 28, 1871.

Terms of peace.  
March 2, 1871.

occupation of Paris for a few hours by 30,000 German troops. The terms of peace, though undoubtedly hard—including as they did the cession of Alsace and a considerable portion of Lorraine, and the payment of an enormous war indemnity,—were accepted by the Assembly. On the 2d of March, peace

was ratified. The brief occupation of the Champs Elysées by the German troops passed off quietly, and the invasion was at an end.

But France was not yet free from its difficulties. The capitulation had roused the angry temper of the population of Paris. An opportunity was afforded in the widespread discontent for the active movement of the extreme Radical party, which had already made itself felt during the siege, and had lately been well organised under a central committee. Arms had been left in the hands of the National Guard, and under the pretence of guarding the cannon, they had drawn them into the revolutionary quarters of Paris. The number of the regular troops was small, nor were they wholly free from sympathy with the National Guard and popular party. An attempt to withdraw the artillery failed. Many of the troops refused to oppose the insurgents. The Central Committee established itself at the Hôtel de Ville, the members of the Government and General Vinoy with the faithful troops withdrew, an election for the Municipality was held, and the Commune entering into office in the Hôtel de Ville became the sole recognised authority in the city. In view of the disturbances in the capital the Assembly had decided to hold its sittings in Versailles, and thither the troops on leaving Paris withdrew. The men who had appropriated the government of the capital had definite political views. They desired that France should be dissolved into a confederation of Communes, to each of which the fullest measure of self-government should be given, the unity of the country being secured and represented by an Assembly of Delegates from the Federal Communes. With views so absolutely opposed to those of the reactionary Assembly, and so closely affecting the interests of all the privileged classes, in armed rebellion against the constituted authorities of the country, and with their cause already sullied by the needless murder of General Thomas and the slaughter in the Place Vendôme of more than thirty unarmed men who had been there attending a demonstration in favour of order, the men of the Commune could expect no mercy at the hands of the Versailles Government. A regular war sprang up between the rival authorities, and Paris again underwent at the hands of Frenchmen a second and more disastrous bombardment than that from which it had just escaped. Allowed by the Germans to increase the number of regular troops, and easily drawing to himself the late soldiers of the Empire as they returned from captivity, Thiers was able to bring an overwhelming force against the capital. Little by little after stubborn fighting the insurgents gave ground, and at length in an agony

Establishment  
of the Com-  
mune.



of despair lost all self-restraint, cruelly murdered the Archbishop of Paris and other hostages whom they held in their hands, and set fire to many of the public buildings. The want of self-restraint was not all on one side. Little or no quarter was given by the assaulting troops, prisoners were shot in batches, and the triumph of the Assembly of Versailles was marked by vindictive cruelty.

There could scarcely be a question as to the position which England should take up in the presence of such events; as English interests were by no means directly involved in the quarrel, a policy of neutrality was almost necessarily imposed upon the Government. It is however always difficult for a great Power to play the part of a neutral with success. Its duty as a leading State seems to lie in moderating the demands of both the contending parties with a view to re-establishing peace. It cannot merely stand aloof. The limits of its interference are always open to question. Its ancient friendships seem to demand some effective action, its refusal to recognise the claim is likely to excite the anger of both sides. In the widespread ramifications of national intercourse it is strange if it does not find its interests more or less indirectly involved in the course of the war. It was with the full knowledge of the difficulties that would attend it that the Government decided to adopt a neutral policy. Before the actual outbreak of hostilities the good offices of England were used not without effect in urging upon the Prussian King his disavowal of the Hohenzollern candidature, and on the other side, in vain, in efforts to persuade the French to lessen the arrogant demands which they raised.

But almost immediately the strength of the determination of the Government to maintain a friendly neutrality was severely strained. There was a prevalent feeling in England that France had forced the war on Prussia, and English sympathy was at first entirely upon the German side. Bismarck, not unnaturally anxious to weaken as far as possible the connection, now of considerable standing, between France and England, communicated to the *Times* a project of a treaty, written in the handwriting of the French Ambassador Benedetti, by which it was proposed to secure to France the possession of Belgium in exchange for certain advantages guaranteed on the other hand to Prussia. The independence of Belgium was a cardinal point in the foreign policy of England, and here to all appearance was our intimate ally quietly trafficking for the possession of that country. The project was the result of certain discussions of a somewhat earlier date between the

Position of  
England in the  
Franco-German  
War.

Bismarck's  
revelation of  
the Belgian  
Treaty.

French Ministry and Bismarck, and was written at the dictation of the German statesman. It had been summarily rejected by both Courts, but the document remained in Bismarck's hands and was now produced with great effect. It is true that Bismarck was himself as much implicated in the matter as Benedetti. But it at least proved how great was the jealousy felt by France of Prussian aggrandisement, and how ready the diplomatists of the Empire were to discuss any means however unscrupulous which might secure a countervailing advantage to France. It thus threw a somewhat awkward light upon the action of the Emperor in forcing on the war.

Before the whole truth was known the excitement caused in England by the revelation of the project was considerable, and even when more fully understood it appeared to show how easily a point of the first interest to England might be touched by the coming war. The cry was loud that friendly neutrality was not enough, that an armed neutrality was necessary. The Government stood firm, but listened so far to the loud demands raised that it contracted a special treaty, signed on the 26th of August, both with France and Prussia, to the effect that it would join in arms either party to repel any encroachment upon the integrity of Belgium. It also agreed to a very considerable increase of the army. About the same time a second form of pressure was put upon the Government. England was not alone as a neutral Power; and from several of the other large countries of Europe, and especially from Italy, came eager suggestions that the neutral Powers should enter into a formal combination. This also Lord Granville was wise enough to reject. He declared himself willing to go no further than an interchange between England and other countries of an assertion that they would not depart from their neutral attitude. From this position Lord Granville never wavered, and was therefore able to deny the charge made by the French Government and reiterated by the English Opposition, that by placing herself at the head of a neutral league England had prevented other countries from giving to France the assistance they would otherwise have been willing to afford. The want of effectual mediation was the next great accusation brought against the Ministers. It was again and again asserted by the English Opposition, and with almost passionate earnestness by the French as their misfortunes increased upon them. Yet it would appear to be groundless. While France was still under the Emperor and with hopes of re-establishing its affairs, the French Government had plainly told Lord Granville that they had no objection to an understanding

The policy of friendly neutrality firmly maintained.

between the neutral Powers, but that under present circumstances no offer of mediation from any quarter would be listened to. Lord Granville could only say that "her Majesty's Government had no desire to obtrude their mediation, but that France might be assured that if at any time recourse should be had to their good offices they would be freely given and zealously exerted." The impossibility at that time of any mediation was accepted by all the great Powers of Europe. The fall of the Empire changed the tone of France. The English Foreign Office was besieged by repeated requests to intervene in some way or other and to make propositions to Prussia. But at the same time, in fact on the same day, that the first of these requests was sent, Jules Favre had made his famous declaration against the cession of an inch of French territory. The reply of the English Foreign Office had been to the effect that more harm than good would be done by any attempt to mediate except upon a basis acceptable to both parties. But Bismarck's counter proclamation had indicated with perfect clearness that Prussia would require some territorial cession. The common basis could therefore not be found. It was in fact now Bismarck's turn to hold at arm's-length any offered mediation, as the French Empire had done while it still believed in its power. Nor was there ever a time till the final surrender of Paris when such a ground of intervention could be found. A deaf ear was therefore of necessity turned to the eager pleadings of the French, who urged in plain words that an armed intervention to restrain Prussia was desirable, and deplored with bitterness the abandonment of France by Europe.

Yet England never ceased to do what was possible for the interests of peace. It was through English instrumentality that the interview between Jules Favre and Bismarck in September was  
 Various efforts to secure peace. arranged; advantage was taken of the danger admitted even by the Germans of famine in Paris to press with great urgency the necessity of an armistice for calling a National Assembly; and Lord Granville even risked a somewhat humiliating rebuff from Bismarck by pressing on him, in spite of his well-known determination to engage only in direct negotiation, the presence of Mr. Odo Russell at Versailles, and certain alternatives suggested by the French Minister of Foreign Affairs. Even at the very close of the war a despatch of remonstrance was sent to the Prussians, which, while it acknowledged that in the full tide of its success Germany had not unreasonably refused the dictation of those who had stood aloof from the war, pointed out that were France to be totally ruined, and

Germany "left with no resource but to sieze and occupy vast territories filled with unwilling inhabitants, blame would attach to her for having rejected not the intervention but the good offices of some of the neutral Powers of a character which had so often led to satisfactory results in international disputes." Nor did the friendly work of England cease with the war. It was largely owing to her representations that the enormous war indemnity was decreased from six to five milliards of francs. It is difficult to see how the Government could possibly have done more than it did unless it was disposed to take the extreme step of intervening in arms, which no party in England seriously desired. Yet there were not wanting men who pretended to see in the temperate tone adopted and in the genuine effort to preserve a true neutrality a want of spirit which tended to lower England in the eyes of Europe.

The same feeling was excited with scarcely more reason by the action of Government with regard to the modification of the Treaty of Paris of 1856. Whatever chance of joint action between England and Russia in the French quarrel existed was checked by the sudden appearance of a declaration from Prince Gortschakoff in the autumn of 1870, asserting the right

Excitement  
caused by the  
Russian  
declaration.

of any Power to withdraw of its own will from a Treaty to which it had been a party. The principle in the present case was to be applied to the Treaty of Paris neutralising the Black Sea. Taking advantage of the state of France and the known desire of neutrals to prevent any extension of the war, the Russian Government had determined to throw off the restrictions laid upon their country at the close of the Crimean war. The high-handed method indicated by Prince Gortschakoff's declaration was to be adopted. It was impossible for England to pass over in silence an interpretation of the rights of co-signatories of a Treaty so novel and so threatening. It was a more open question whether the change proposed was itself desirable or not. In the correspondence which ensued it was alleged by Russia that the circumstances of Europe had absolutely changed, and that on more than one occasion during the fourteen years which had elapsed since the signature of the Treaty, its provisions had been infringed, notably in the fusion of the Danubian Principalities into one Power. It was also asserted that the very clause in question had been several times infringed by the presence of ships of war in the Black Sea. It was therefore argued on the one hand that the Treaty was already in fact broken, and on the other that the change of circumstances rendered a revision of it a matter of necessity.



Inquiry among the other Courts of Europe led the English Ministry to the conclusion that they sympathised with the Russian wish to remove restrictions which could scarcely be other than humiliating to a powerful nation, and which, as that nation was now in peace and friendship with them all, seemed unnecessary. When called to account subsequently for their action the Government declared that they would have found no single ally had they insisted on the maintenance of the restrictions.

The case was different with regard to the method which Russia had employed for obtaining its wishes. The maintenance of treaties was too important to all the Powers to allow them calmly to accept the new doctrine. Bismarck was appealed to and suggested a Conference at which the point at issue might be settled by the Powers which had signed the Paris Treaty. He named St. Petersburg as the place where the Conference might be held. The friendship between the Czar and the Prussian King was well known, the mistrust of Prussian ambition was great, and a strong feeling arose in England that Bismarck was playing directly into Russian hands.

The Black Sea  
Conference.  
March 1871.

Lord Granville protested against the choice of locality, and to remove all doubt refused to enter into conference except upon the distinct understanding that there was no foregone conclusion, and that the meeting was to be held out of Russia. The position of England, the Power which had chiefly insisted upon the restriction, was recognised. Lord Granville's objections were allowed, and the Conference assembled in London. As far as the principle of the maintenance of treaties was concerned the summoning of the Conference was conclusive, Russia consented to act in accordance with the wishes of the other Powers, and a declaration to that effect was the first act of the Conference on its meeting. But though the discussion was nominally free, the conclusion was after all a foregone one. The clauses which neutralised the Black Sea and forbade the presence in its waters of ships of war even of Russia and Turkey were removed. The principle that the Dardanelles and Bosphorus should be closed against external Powers during time of peace was upheld. But the Porte was allowed to open them to friendly Powers if the stipulations of the Paris Treaty were in danger. The change was no doubt a severe blow to English diplomacy. The revised clauses were regarded as the chief fruit of the Crimean war; not unnaturally the action of Government in resigning them was subjected to the severest comment. It was in vain that the general feeling of Europe was explained, and the slight value set upon the clauses by Lord

Palmerston asserted ; the feeling that England had suffered humiliation gained ground.

The Treaty of Washington and its attendant events tended still further to increase this feeling. Ever since the termination of the American war negotiations had been going on with regard to what were known as the *Alabama* claims. The Americans had persuaded themselves that England had played an unfriendly part during the contest, and, smarting under the injury inflicted on their trade by privateers wholly or in part fitted out in England, had demanded compensation for the alleged breach of its neutral duties on the part of England with a persistence and acrimony which seemed at times likely to produce open war. The English, aware that their effort to preserve neutrality in the face of great difficulties had been on the whole honestly made, and believing that technically no breach of neutrality had been committed, refused to listen to the angry demands of America. But the controversy seemed so unending and so threatening in its nature that the Government, with the intention of bringing the points at issue to arbitration, consented to the appointment of a joint High Commission of English and American statesmen to draw up a treaty on the subject. On the meeting of the High Commission at Washington the Americans raised a twofold claim, for direct and indirect losses, but declined to estimate their indirect claims in the hope that some settlement would be arrived at. They suggested the payment of a lump sum to cover all demands. The English, on the other hand, denying legal obligation, suggested arbitration. This alternative the Americans accepted, but only upon condition that certain principles to govern the arbitration should be agreed upon, and produced certain statements with regard to international law the acceptance of which they looked upon as absolutely necessary. The English Commissioners declared their willingness to accept these rules as binding for the future, but denied that they existed at the time of the civil war. It required a good deal of diplomatic correspondence to surmount this difficulty, but at length the English Government yielded, and though still denying the validity of the principles at the time the *Alabama* question arose, agreed that the arbitration should take place as if the principles had been then in force. These rules therefore formed the first part of the Treaty. The English Commissioners also consented to express a general feeling of regret for the loss occasioned by the privateers. The next difficulty arose when the English advanced counter claims arising from the Fenian raids into Canada.

The Treaty of  
Washington.  
May 8, 1871.

The Americans refused to allow that this question came within the scope of the intended Treaty. Again the English yielded, and reserved these claims for future consideration. The second part of the Treaty referred to the fisheries. Full liberty was granted on the one side to the American fishermen to fish on the coasts of British North America with the exception always of river-fishery and shell-fish, a similar privilege being granted to British subjects on the other hand as far as the 39th parallel. The Canadians regarded this exchange as largely in favour of the States. On these terms the Treaty was completed, and for the first time in history an international quarrel was referred to a formal court of arbitrators consisting of learned men appointed by various sovereigns to meet at Geneva. Before this court the cases of the rival countries were to be laid on the 13th of June 1872.

There was a very prevalent feeling that Government had shown weakness in accepting as the basis of arbitration principles which were regarded as innovations in international law, a feeling which was considerably strengthened by the other concessions made by the Government, especially by the exclusion of the counter claims resting upon the Fenian raids. But public dissatisfaction rose still higher when it appeared that the wording of the Treaty was so loose that the Americans saw in it an opening for advancing not only their direct claims arising from injuries and losses actually caused by the privateers, but indirect claims of indefinite and incalculable extent arising from such causes as the transfer of American trade to English shipping, the expense of the pursuit of the Confederate cruisers, and even the prolongation of the war, all of which they traced to the carelessness of the English Government. The negotiators declared that they had always understood, basing their understanding chiefly upon the opening declaration of the American Commissioners, that these indirect claims had been entirely waved, and that the arbitration arranged by the Treaty applied to the direct claims only. The Government took the same view, and supported its Commissioners. The Ministers even went so far as to say that unless these claims were withdrawn they should regard the Treaty as based upon an entire misunderstanding, and refuse to recognise it. Mutual recriminations, and charges of dishonesty and double-dealing passed to and fro between the two Governments, but at length the Americans so far listened to reason that the extreme measure of repudiating the Treaty was not necessary. The arbitrators met upon the appointed day. When the English agent demanded a postponement on the ground

The "Alabama"  
arbitration at  
Geneva.  
June 1872.

that no agreement had been arrived at with respect to the indirect claims, the arbitrators took the matter into their own hands and declared that they did not fall within the questions referred to them, and that they would not consider them. The chief difficulty being thus withdrawn, the arbitrators set to work and shortly produced a judgment against England in the case of the *Alabama* and the *Florida*, and in some respects also of the *Shenandoah*. With regard to the other five incriminated ships the verdict was in favour of England. The court was not quite unanimous, the English arbitrator, Sir Alexander Cockburn, differing from it in respect to the *Florida* and *Shenandoah*, and considering the damages which were set at 15,500,000 dollars as excessive. The award was no doubt a heavy disappointment to England; it was felt that the country was called upon to pay dearly for the somewhat ostentatious exhibition of high-mindedness which the arbitration had involved—and the opinion grew in strength that the new method of solving international difficulties, however grand in principle, tended both to practical loss and to diminution of *prestige*.

The application of a similar method to the solution of questions at issue with regard to the limits of the English dominions in North-West America produced similar results. The definition of that boundary by the Oregon Treaty of 1846, marking out as the frontier the middle of the channel separating Vancouver's Island from the mainland and thence to the Pacific Ocean, had neglected the fact that in the very middle of that channel lay the island of San Juan. Of course the question arose to which of the Powers the island should belong, for San Juan had become of great importance since the colonisation of Vancouver's Island. The question was referred to the Emperor of Germany, and his verdict was unhesitatingly in favour of the Americans.

Arrangement of  
the San Juan  
difficulty.

The foreign policy of the Government cannot but be regarded by lovers of peace and justice as consistent and noble, yet, resulting as it did in every case in decisions hostile to what were supposed to be English interests, it was not popular, and was by many considered, though unjustly, as wanting in the spirit of self-assertion befitting a great country. Awkwardness and want of tact in the management of little matters of domestic interest threw still further discredit upon the Ministry. Two appointments, which had the appearance of arbitrary evasions of the law, laid them especially open to stricture. It had been thought desirable in 1871 to strengthen the Privy Council by appointing four paid members of the Judicial Committee, who were



to be two Indian judges and two judges of the superior Courts. The Government discredited by two home appointments. exclusion of the law-officers from the list of those upon whom the choice might fall was held to imply that the appointments were intended to be strictly non-political, and that experience as a judge was a necessary qualification; but the Government had thought fit to appoint the late Attorney-General, Sir Robert Collier, to one of the offices, having previously, in order to fulfil the letter of the law, made him a judge of Common Pleas, a position which he held for two days. Sir Robert Collier was well fitted for the place, but the appointment had so clearly the appearance of a political job that it excited grave indignation. The Lord Chief-Justice entered a protest against it. The matter was brought before the House of Lords, and after an acrimonious discussion the Government escaped a vote of censure by two votes, while even in the House of Commons they could only command a majority of twenty-seven. The effect on the public of this unfortunate appointment was the greater because in another case the same disposition of the Government to act with over-confidence and to evade the law had been traced. The Rectory of Ewelme had fallen vacant. It was provided by statute that the rector should be a member of the Oxford Convocation, but Mr. Gladstone had appointed to the living a man educated at Cambridge, and only admitted as a member of the Convocation at Oxford for the purpose of allowing of this appointment.

The course of the year 1872 had thus in no way re-established the failing popularity of the Ministry. The majority in favour of Government in the House was too strong to allow the regular Opposition to dream of acceding to power, but a general feeling of disapprobation began to pervade the country, occasionally making itself manifest in the return of an Opposition member at a bye-election.

But Mr. Gladstone, confident in the great successes of the first years of his Ministry, seemed as yet scarcely conscious of his diminished power, and determined to produce the third of those great Irish reforms which he had from the first pointed out as necessary. Having treated the questions of the Church and of the Land, he now undertook to handle the thorny question of Irish education. In the insufficiency of the University teaching, arising partly from an inadequate supply and partly from the unwillingness of the Roman Catholics to accept the opportunities offered, he saw one of those practical inequalities which it was his avowed object to remove. There was no difficulty in showing that as a fact there was very little University training in Ireland. The

Irish University  
Bill.  
Feb. 1873.

number of students was small and apparently gradually decreasing. Even the wealthy Trinity College, which held the University of Dublin in its hands, showed a diminution in its matriculations. The undenominational Queen's Colleges, founded in 1845, had not proved a success. It is easy to judge of the reason from the nickname by which they were called; strong religious denominationalists of all classes shrank from education given in "godless colleges." The Roman Catholics especially, unable to make use of the Protestant University of Dublin, and placing as they always did religious teaching in the forefront of education, were practically debarred from all University teaching. It was on the double ground that there remained a distinct grievance—that Roman Catholics were deprived of a civil advantage on religious grounds—and that there existed a national want in that the amount of University teaching was utterly inadequate, that Mr. Gladstone based his measure. It was plain from the nature of the case that the conciliation of the Roman Catholics must be the main object aimed at. As long as three-fourths of the population of Ireland refused to use the educational opportunities offered them any large national plan must of necessity be nugatory. The once prevalent idea of concurrent endowment had been entirely abandoned. Secular education attempted in the Queen's Colleges had proved a failure. It was by the application to the Dublin University of the principles already accepted in the reform of the English Universities that Mr. Gladstone hoped to find a solution of the difficulty. The three chief principles there applied were the abolition of tests, the separation of the University from the Colleges, and the taxing of the Colleges for the maintenance of the University. In accordance with these principles Mr. Gladstone now proposed to separate the University from Trinity College, Dublin, to make it a separate corporation, and to give it a separate governing body. To the University thus constituted the Colleges would be affiliated, each of them being at liberty to make its own constitution. The composition of the governing body was a matter of some difficulty; it was proposed that it should first consist of nominees of the Crown, but that it should be subsequently continued in a way which threw the power largely into the hands of the affiliated Colleges. The University was to be not only an examining but also a teaching body, and was to possess professorships, fellowships, and exhibitions. But limits were to be set to its teaching. It was regarded as impossible in the presence of the heated theological rivalry of Ireland to allow of chairs of theology, of mental and moral science, or of modern history. The

theological faculty already existing in Trinity College was to be withdrawn from it and placed in the hands of the disestablished Church. The expenses of the scheme were estimated at £50,000 a year, for which it was intended to provide from the surplus of the ecclesiastical property of Ireland, by taxing Trinity College to the amount of £12,000 a year, by fees, and by a grant of £10,000 from the consolidated fund.

Like all Mr. Gladstone's work the scheme was large in conception, and thoroughly and minutely worked out in detail. The eloquent and masterly exposition with which it was introduced seemed at first to secure it general approbation. But though ostentatiously produced as a settlement of the question, and as was necessary in a measure of the kind attempting to please all parties, it soon became evident that the Bill would meet with much and varied opposition. It had been drawn up confessedly without consultation with any of the parties concerned, the Government therefore could rely upon no promises, and those whose interests were touched began at once to show their disapproval. Trinity College was not perhaps averse to be deprived of its denominational advantages, for it had already given its adhesion to Mr. Fawcett's often-repeated Bill for the removal of tests, but it could scarcely look with pleasure to being deprived of £12,000 a year for the new University. The Liberals disliked the large introduction of the power of the Crown. The Protestants objected to the possible multiplication of affiliated Colleges, and the consequent passage sooner or later of the power of the governing body into the hands of nominees of the Roman hierarchy. All men interested in education looked with ridicule upon a University where the teaching of mental and moral philosophy, theology and modern history was forbidden; and when the bishops of the Roman Catholic Church, whose interests it was believed were chiefly consulted in the scheme, expressed their objection to an undenominational University of any kind, there seemed to be few outside the limits of the immediate followers of Government who looked with approval on the Bill. On the second reading, the arguments against the Bill were summed up by Mr. Disraeli. After recapitulating the objections to a curriculum of education stripped of its most important branches and throwing doubt upon the possibility of forming a fitting governing body, he gave a general character to his attack and formulated in bitter words the feeling of hostility to Mr. Gladstone's policy which was very prevalent in the country. "The right honourable gentleman," he said, "had a substitute for

Objections to  
Irish University  
Bill.

the policy of concurrent endowment, the policy of confiscation. You have had four years of it; you have despoiled Churches, you have threatened every corporation and endowment in the country, you have examined into everybody's affairs, you have criticised every profession and vexed every trade, no one is certain of his property, no one knows what duties he may have to perform to-morrow." The reforming energy of Mr. Gladstone and his Government, however exhibited, was in fact disturbing the conservative feeling of England. It was in vain that Mr. Gladstone replied to the objections raised, and urged in earnest words that "to mete out justice to Ireland according to the best view that with human infirmity could be formed had been the work, he might almost say the sacred work, of this Parliament," and exhorted the House to proceed as they had begun, "and efface from the law and practice of the country the last of the religious and social grievances of Ireland." The combination of Conservatives with the Roman Catholics and discontented Liberals proved too strong for the measure, and it was defeated by a majority of three.

Irish University  
Bill thrown out.

Somewhat rashly Mr. Gladstone had staked the existence of his Cabinet upon success. He therefore immediately placed his resignation in the Queen's hands. But the Conservatives were by no means ready to take office, and Mr. Disraeli as their leader positively refused to undertake the government with the existing Parliament. He judged wisely that for the interests of his party nothing could be more damaging than the attempt to hold the reins of power in the presence of a majority which on all points of great national interest would certainly be opposed to him. As a dissolution appeared at present impossible, and as in fact the question of Irish University reform could scarcely be regarded as one of vital importance, Mr. Gladstone found it necessary to return to office. No doubt in thus acting Mr. Disraeli showed his wisdom as a party leader. Acceptance of office at the moment, unless accompanied by a dissolution, must have placed the conduct of Government for some months at the mercy of their opponents, and when the dissolution came at the close of the session the Conservatives would have appealed to the country as a weak and discredited party. Whether his conduct is so easily justified when looked at from a constitutional point of view may be doubted. The understood necessity of accepting office should they defeat the Ministry is one of the chief restraints upon the Opposition. Their refusal to do so on the other hand seems to leave the Government of the day free

Gladstone re  
signs, March 13;  
returns,  
March 20, 1873.



to act without any appeal, for if no other Government is possible they act under no penalty in case of want of success. The effect seems injurious to the country in both directions. The point which may be urged in Mr. Disraeli's justification is the character of the Bill on which the Government had resigned. It was not of such a kind as to engage the warm interest of the nation; the majority which had defeated it consisted of a fortuitous combination, an appeal to the people immediately following it could have been little else than a personal contest between the leaders.

The restored Government was still in the command of its majority in the House, but its position was materially weakened by the defeat it had undergone, and by its ineffectual effort at resignation. Yet it succeeded in passing at least one Act of primary importance, the Judicature Bill. The object at which this measure aimed, as explained by Lord Selborne, was to get rid as far as possible of the anomalies of

The Judicature  
Bill.  
April 1873.

the present system and to weld into one the legal and equitable jurisdiction, the separation of which was unknown in any other country. Various attempts had already been made in this direction, and a strong commission had in 1869 been appointed to consider the question. Lord Selborne did not hesitate to say that he had reaped the fruits of former attempts, so that in drawing up his Bill he was able to set out with several already accepted principles before him. The amalgamation of law and equity, the centralisation of courts and jurisdictions under one supreme court, cheapness, simplicity, and uniformity of procedure, and the improvement of the Courts of Appeal were points on which all parties were already agreed. The measure which was to fulfil these requirements consisted of the establishment of one supreme Court of Judicature, in which were to be united all the present superior Courts of Common Law and Equity, the Probate and Divorce Court, the Admiralty Court, and the Central Court of Bankruptcy. This supreme Court was to be divided into two branches, a High Court of Justice, and a Court of Appeal. The High Court of Justice was for convenience to be broken up into Divisions, in many respects following the lines of the old system but with this important exception, that in all the Divisions the judges were to administer equity as well as law. With regard to the Court of Appeal, the four existing Courts of Review were also consolidated, and in the place of the Exchequer Chamber, the Courts of Appeal in Chancery, the House of Lords, and the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, a single Court of Appeal incorporating representatives from all these branches was

established. Lord Selborne's Bill contemplated the entire cessation of double appeals ; the decision of the Appeal Court was to be final. Alterations were subsequently found desirable in the details of the Bill, the system of Divisions was modified, and the House of Lords regained the right of reviewing the decisions of the Court of Appeal. But the main principles of the Bill were maintained, the great work of the fusion of law and equity was completed, and a uniform system of judicature was once for all established. This Act was the only legislative work of importance brought to completion during the year. There were indeed abundant signs of activity among the private members of the House, but their attempts were for the most part thwarted either by the opposition of the Upper House, or by the attitude maintained by Government. It would seem as though in the consciousness that its growing unpopularity was traceable to over-activity, it was inclined to allow a period of rest to intervene before undertaking any other important steps. Thus Mr. Gladstone declared himself strongly opposed to any measure tending to the present disestablishment of the English Church, and the cause of temperance was allowed to suffer a severe defeat by the rejection of the Permissive Bill by a large majority.

In two directions public interest was attracted to affairs outside the kingdom. The advance of Russia upon Khiva excited the ever-smouldering jealousy with which the approach of that Power towards India was regarded ; while on the West Coast of Africa a sharp if inglorious contest with the King of Ashantee had been carried on. In the first years of its tenure of office the Government had entered into certain negotiations with Holland. Full freedom of action was given to the Dutch in Sumatra on the southern side of the Straits of Malacca, to the injury as it was affirmed of the British traffic through the straits. The consideration for this concession had been the transfer to the English of certain Dutch forts upon the African Gold Coast. To all appearance such a transfer was a wise one, for in old times commercial rivalry had caused the establishment in close proximity of Dutch and English factories or trading stations, and the erection of forts to protect them, so that the settlements of the two nations were curiously intermixed. But though there seemed to be obvious reasons for desiring a cessation of this close neighbourhood and rivalry, an oversight in the method of carrying out the transfer produced disastrous results. Each nation had entered into relation with the surrounding tribes and exercised a sort of protection over those in the immediate neighbourhood of the

The Ashantee  
war. 1873.

settlements. Behind and somewhat to the north of the coast tribes lay the powerful and warlike race of the Ashantees. More than once they had assaulted the European possessions on the coast and had been with difficulty driven back. The Dutch and English pursued a somewhat different commercial policy ; the Dutch, unlike the English, made no attempt in their settlements to raise a revenue by customs ; the Ashantees were therefore able to supply themselves through the Dutch with European produce untaxed. Not unnaturally their friendship followed their interest, especially as the English protectorate included the Fantees whom they disliked and despised. The Treaty had been carried out without consulting the wishes of the natives, the English system was established in the transferred settlements, and the Ashantees thus found themselves cut off from their free access to the coast. Other minor difficulties arose, and suddenly a host of savages invaded the English protectorate, and advanced to the immediate neighbourhood of Cape Coast Castle. In June 1873 they assaulted Elmina, one of the Dutch fortresses which had lately changed hands, close to Cape Coast Castle. They were beaten off by Colonel Festing with a body of seamen and marines. But the invasion was so threatening that it was thought necessary at home to despatch an expedition of sufficient importance to put an end for ever to danger from the Ashantees. At the head of it was placed Sir Garnet Wolseley. He was intrusted with two English regiments, but he was given to understand that their employment was undesirable unless the native levies which had been organised should prove insufficient. Fettered by these instructions and with very deficient information, Sir Garnet Wolseley missed the opportunity of striking a decisive blow while the Ashantee force was near the coast. The scattered fighting of the autumn had proved the untrustworthiness of the native levies, and it became necessary to push forward direct for Coomassie, the Ashantee capital, with the English troops. After a difficult march through close bush and exposed to constant unexpected assault from their savage enemies, the troops towards the close of January approached Coomassie. Two battles, in which the Ashantees displayed much bravery and caused considerable loss to their assailants, cleared the way to the capital. More than once during the march King Koffee Calcalli had expressed a desire to treat, and on one occasion the negotiations advanced so far that the English general supposed that the war was over. The offers of the Ashantee king however appear not to have been serious ; even after the capture of his capital he refused to sign the required conditions. The climate and the

exposed position of the English army rendered delay impossible. It was all the general could do to bring his troops into the town, immediate retreat was a matter of necessity. He therefore burnt the palace and the town, and set off on his return march. But the war was not to be concluded in this unsatisfactory manner. A division of English troops under Captain Glover had advanced to the capital by another route. Its approach frightened the king into submission. He sent messengers to demand the draft of the treaty from Wolseley, and some weeks subsequently the treaty was properly signed. Captain Glover's forces marched through Coomassie and joined the rest of the troops, so that the whole army returned in triumph together. Although the Ashantee war was but another instance of those little wars against savage countries which are the deplorable result of the character of the English Empire, the gallantry displayed by the troops and the skill with which the operations were arranged were at least a cause of satisfaction, while the barbarous nature of the Ashantee government precluded any feeling of regret at its destruction.

But the successful conclusion of the war was not destined to add to the popularity of the Ministry which had sent out the expedition. Before its return the great Ministry of Mr. Gladstone had fallen; it was a Conservative War Minister who moved the vote of thanks to the victorious troops. Mr. Gladstone had taken a step which if the possession of power be the object of party was singularly unfortunate. If a higher view than party objects be taken it will perhaps appear that his action was no less wise than that of his rival had been in declining office the previous year. It had been found necessary immediately after the close of the session to make considerable changes in the Ministry; the disagreement of views among the supporters of Government that was thus disclosed was a revelation of weakness. Several important elections had gone against the Liberals during the recess. Yet the world was taken a good deal by surprise when towards the end of January a manifesto was issued by the Prime Minister declaring that Parliament was to be dissolved. It is possible that he entirely miscalculated the strength of the Liberal party in the country, and hoped that a general election would give him a new lease of power. Be that as it may, there were at all events grave evils in the present position of parties in Parliament which he felt acutely. The Ministry was discredited by failure and only continued in office because their opponents had refused to accept it. They no longer held that command of public affairs which is necessary for a strong Government,

Dissolution of  
Parliament.  
Jan. 24, 1874.



and were constantly thwarted by the action of the Upper House. On the other side sat an Opposition which refused to define its policy, and declining to accept the responsibility which ought to have resulted from victory confined itself to the easy task of criticising and opposing. The existence of a Ministry should depend not on the toleration of its opponents, but on the expression of the national will. If such an expression could be obtained as would justify his remaining in power Mr. Gladstone hoped that, as usually happened, the opposition in the Upper House would disappear; and that with the full support of the country he might enter upon a new course of financial improvement. Having in his hands as he believed a surplus of more than £5,000,000, he saw the possibility of getting rid entirely of the income-tax. His declaration of this intention has been bitterly blamed as though it were the offer of a gigantic bribe in exchange for restoration to power. Yet never from the first, although he had made use of it, had he hidden his disapproval of that tax. In its nature a war tax, it had been applied with extraordinary success to assist in the reconstitution of our financial system. But it had always been regarded as an exceptional tax, and for a considerable time had been renewed from year to year only. Mr. Gladstone had in fact throughout his Ministry been preparing the way for its abolition. His Chancellor of the Exchequer, Mr. Lowe, had constantly reduced it till it had reached 3d. in the pound, and in his unsuccessful Budget of 1871 had given an indication of the nature of that rearrangement which Mr. Gladstone now declared would necessarily accompany the removal of the tax. In the alteration then suggested was included a considerable addition to the succession duties. It was to this that the Premier looked as his new resource. In the place of the income-tax with its recognised imperfections he intended to substitute taxes directly affecting realised property, and thus tending not only to cure the great fault of the income-tax, but also to diminish the ever-increasing inequalities in the distribution of wealth. He was not allowed the opportunity of carrying out his great scheme. The Church, the dissenters, the army, the licensed victuallers, the men of property, and the sticklers for national self-assertion had all alike felt themselves aggrieved by the action of late years. The elections gave them an opportunity of expressing their resentment, and the constituencies returned a majority of fifty to the Conservative party. Mr. Gladstone at once resigned, and Mr. Disraeli was summoned to form a new administration.

Mr. Gladstone's  
intention with  
regard to the  
income-tax.

Resignation of  
Ministry.  
Feb. 17, 1874.

Thus fell the great administration of Mr. Gladstone during which the Liberal desires, kept in abeyance throughout Lord Palmerston's tenure of office, had at length made themselves felt. Although it closed in some unpopularity, there was truth in Mr. Lowe's assertion that no Government had ever approached office with so vast a programme, and yet that with the solitary exception of the Dublin University Bill it had carried that programme through. The Irish Land Bill, the Disestablishment of the Irish Church, the Education Act, the introduction of the Ballot and the Judicature Bill, the abolition of purchase in the army, the organisation of the military forces, the opening of the Civil Services to public competition, the inauguration of the system of international arbitration were achievements sufficient to render any Ministry in the last degree memorable. To this may be added that either by skill or fortune they had been able to place the finances of the country in an extraordinarily prosperous condition. The remission of £12,000,000 of taxes, the payment of £26,000,000 of the National Debt, the diminution of the income-tax to 3d. in the pound, had still left a surplus in the hands of the Chancellor of the Exchequer. That Ireland had been put in the forefront of the political programme shows only the true appreciation by the Premier, which every subsequent year has tended to justify, of the vast importance to England of the condition of that country. His determination to remove every shadow of political or religious inequality proves how thoroughly he sympathised with those sentiments of justice which, however much overlaid at times by party ends and relics of old prejudice, had formed the basis of the Liberal policy of England from the time when its conscience was called into life at the period of the Reform Bill. The character of those Irish reforms seems to show that, though their full significance was not yet foreseen by the Liberal leaders, there yet existed no fundamental objection to applying them, when the time should arise and the necessity be evident, to cure the ills of society in England. In fact already it would seem that although he was very decidedly opposed to the idea of Church disestablishment his opposition was practical rather than theoretical. And, although no indication is as yet to be found that legislation with regard to land was in contemplation, the consistent refusal to support any measures for what was known as the relief of agricultural burdens, the sweeping clauses of Mr. Goschen's abortive Local Taxation Bill, may be held as proofs that Mr. Gladstone held the landlords in no particular favour; while the abolition of the income-tax was intended to go hand in

General view of  
Mr. Gladstone's  
Ministry.

hand with such a rearrangement of the succession duties as proves clearly enough how large his view was with regard to the duty of realised property to bear the chief burdens of the state.

But England would not be what it is if side by side with its warm desire for justice and improvement there did not exist a desire almost equally strong on the one hand that every man and every interest should be allowed quietly to follow out their own concerns, and on the other hand that the greatness of England and the importance of the part it plays in the councils of the world should be undiminished. With this class of feelings the late Government had come into collision. In the opinion of a large mass of Englishmen, as it proved in the opinion of the majority of the constituency, legislation had been carried too far. Every interest and every trade it was asserted had been vexed and worried. The principle of social duty, the good of the state as contrasted with the good of the individual, had been pushed to dangerous extremes, a policy of confiscation had been entered upon. The principle of peace and non-intervention had been used in a way detrimental to English interests and to the damage of the high position of the nation. It would have been well, it was said, if Mr. Gladstone had paid less attention to constant legislation in England and more to the position of the Empire abroad. It is as the expression of this feeling that the triumph of the Conservative party in the elections must be regarded. Rest at home, kindly improvement given from above to the poorer classes, but above all the assertion of the Imperial position of England was the programme of the new Premier.

It must not be supposed that the history of the legislative and political action of the time, important though it was, forms a sufficient index of the state of the nation. It is now evident that a great social revolution was working itself out. Questions regarding the mutual relations between capital and labour, and between the propertied classes and those who lived by manual toil on uncertain wages, were rapidly forcing themselves into prominence. Undoubtedly the legislation of the time, such as the Irish Land Law, the lowering of the franchise and the introduction of the ballot, were indications in the sphere of politics of the social movement which was taking place below. But the objects of the working classes were not such as could be touched by political legislation. For many years there had been a tendency in England to concentrate in a few hands the means of employing labour. This tendency was visible in all directions ; in retail trade large establish-

Causes for the  
fall of Mr.  
Gladstone's  
Ministry.

Social progress  
during Mr.  
Gladstone's  
Ministry.

ments occupying many houses were taking the place of small separate shops ; small agricultural holdings were disappearing in large farms covering vast extents of country ; the great manufacturing capitalist was gradually driving from the field the smaller competitor. The comparatively limited number of men in whose hands wealth thus lay held each of them at their disposal the work and therefore the livelihood of hundreds of labouring men. It seemed as though the triumph of capital was likely to be complete. But the very numbers of the dependent working class afforded an antidote to this evil. In their fellowship of powerlessness they began to discover the strength which combination could give them. The vast extension of their Societies led them to think their strength irresistible ; the greatness of the stake of each individual capitalist made him shrink from an internecine struggle. And as step by step the obstacles which the triumphant employer had for centuries raised in the way of combined action on the part of their workmen disappeared, the class which had hitherto been so depressed began to aim at nothing short of obtaining for itself the complete command of the destinies and organisation of labour. Combination and organisation among themselves were the means to be employed for gradually obtaining this dictatorial position.

The most direct and palpable signs of the movement were the growing importance of Trades Unions, the multiplication of strikes, and the occasional outrages attending trade disputes. Spread of Trades Unions. Although of late years legislation had partially recognised the legality of the combination of workmen, and had allowed them to be enrolled as Friendly Societies, it had left unaltered many restrictions upon their freedom of combination, and among others their incapacity to sue a fraudulent treasurer or secretary who should make free with their funds. The demand of the Unionists to be placed upon a strictly legal footing had made itself heard, emphasised as it was by a certain number of outrages which had taken place at Sheffield and at Manchester. Lord Derby's Government had in 1867 appointed a Royal Commission to inquire into the ends, ways, means, and effects of Trades Societies. The inquiries of this Commission led them to suppose that the conduct of the Unionists in Sheffield and Manchester was of so exceptional and so violent a character as to demand special investigation. The evidence laid before a small Commission appointed for this purpose threw a terrible light upon the evils which might attend Trades-unionism. It appeared that in Sheffield the coercion practised upon the non-union men was most pitiless. Rattening—that is, the abstracting or spoiling of the



workmen's tools and apparatus—was of common occurrence ; while at times the violence used reached to explosions, maiming, and even murder. In spite of these terrible facts the report of the Commission was by no means wholly adverse to the Unionists. It was seen that local violence should not be regarded as an essential part of the system. The report fully admitted the reasonableness and legality of combination, recommended the removal by statute of that stain of illegality about the Societies which rendered them unable to secure their funds from embezzlement, and suggested further restrictions and definitions as to the meaning of the ambiguous words "obstruction" and "molestation," the wide interpretation of which had hitherto acted so injuriously upon the workmen's Societies.

An Act of 1871 carried out these recommendations. Trades Unions were recognised as legal, their treasurers and trustees were made as liable as those of other Friendly Societies to be sued for misuse of the funds ; and, except in certain definite cases, only such conduct as would authorise a magistrate to bind the perpetrator over to keep the peace was to be regarded as criminal molestation. In spite of the loud outcry of the masters and their friends, in spite of the inevitable discredit thrown upon their cause by the terrible excesses of some of their members, the Trades Unions were thus placed in a more secure and powerful position than before. The number of members in the chief Societies increased rapidly. Between the years 1870 and 1875 the Amalgamated Engineers rose from 34,000 to 44,000, and the Stone Masons from 13,000 to 24,000. In some cases, as for instance in the Iron Shipbuilders' Union, which increased from 7000 to 16,000, the introduction of a new form of industry was the cause. But within those five years the members probably increased by more than two-thirds.

**Trades Union Act. 1871.** The success of the Unionists produced no relaxation in their efforts. The year 1872 was marked by an unusual number of important strikes. The movement even infected a class which had hitherto submissively accepted its lot ; under the influence of the stirring eloquence of Joseph Arch, who had himself been an agricultural labourer, Unions were established in several counties which unquestionably exerted considerable influence in raising agricultural wages. At one time in the Midland Counties 16s. a week became the usual wage. The awakening of the agricultural labourer brought to the front many questions besides those of wages. Improved sanitation and better cottages began to be demanded, and already indications were seen of the possible spread

**Prevalence of strikes. 1872.**

of an opinion akin to that already prevalent in Ireland that the labourer had, or ought to have, some interest in the soil he cultivated. A great strike in the building trade resulted in considerable advantages for the men. But the sympathy with which many people regarded these efforts on the part of the workmen to better their condition began to lessen when their action threatened formidable disturbance to the public comfort. A strike of the London bakers, of the police, and of the gas stokers seemed to touch so closely the very necessities of civilised life, that the severe sentences passed upon some of the strikers and the summary dismissal by the Gas Companies of many hundreds of their men met with general approbation.

The general feeling indeed of the propertied classes as evinced by the more important papers was strongly opposed to Trades-unionism and its effects. The ruinous and suicidal waste which strikes were supposed to cause was constantly emphasised by the Press. The risk of frightening capital from the country, the tyrannical rule (as it was held) of the minority among the workmen, and the loss thrown as it was thought, in whichever way the strike terminated, upon the public, were all incessant subjects of complaint. Yet in their own way the wealthy felt considerable sympathy for their poorer fellow-citizens. The efforts at independent action implied by Trades-unionism shocked them. They shrank from anything which had the appearance of changing the balance of classes. But of beneficence, and kindly patronage, and help as from superiors to inferiors, there was no lack. Taking advantage of this well-known feeling, which existed more especially among the Conservatives, a strange effort was made to connect the names of several important Conservative leaders with those of the most prominent leaders of the people in a document setting forth a sort of programme of popular requirements. Seven points were named:—The rescue of workmen's families from the dismal alleys of towns by planting them out in the midst of gardens and detached homesteads; to carry out this object the creation of a perfect organisation of the self-government of counties, towns, and villages, with power for the acquisition and disposal of land for the common good; the limitation of a day's labour to eight hours of honest work; the establishment of technical schools in the midst of the people's homesteads; the organisation as parts of the public service of places of public recreation, knowledge, and refinement; public markets for the sale of goods in

Dislike of  
Trades-union-  
ism among the  
propertied  
classes.

Attempted  
union of Con-  
servatives and  
working men.

small quantities and of the best qualities at wholesale prices ; and a great extension of the organisation of the public services on the model of the Post-Office for the common good. This curious programme of mingled benevolence and state socialism purported to be signed by Lord Salisbury, Sir Stafford Northcote, Lord Carnarvon, Mr. Gathorne Hardy and others, as well as by such popular leaders as Applegarth the joiner, Howell, Potter, and Barry. Mr. Scott Russell the enginicer appears to have been the originator of the movement. It is almost needless to say that the Conservative leaders at once repudiated any such scheme, which was to all appearance designed to make capital for the Tory party by contrasting their social benevolence with the drier and more political treatment of popular requirements by the Liberals. Yet such an idea would never have arisen had there not been some foundation for it ; and subsequent legislation on the part of the Conservatives has proved that on many points affecting the welfare of the working classes they were as a fact more alive to the popular wants than their Liberal opponents, who had learned by the whole course of the history of their party to look for remedies for social evils in the extension of political privilege.

## CHAPTER XII.

### MR. DISRAELI'S MINISTRY, February 1874.

<i>First Lord of the Treasury,</i>	Mr. Disraeli.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Lord Cairns.
<i>President of the Council,</i>	Duke of Richmond.
<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Lord Malmesbury.
<i>Chancellor of the Exchequer,</i>	Sir Stafford Northcote.
<i>Home Secretary,</i>	Mr. Cross.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Lord Carnarvon.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Derby.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	Mr. Gathorne Hardy.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	Lord Salisbury.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Mr. Ward Hunt.
<i>President of the Board of Trade,</i>	Sir Charles Adderley.
<i>Postmaster-General,</i>	Lord John Manners.
<i>Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster,</i>	Colonel Taylor.
<i>President of the Local Government Board</i>	Mr. Sclater Booth.

#### IRELAND.

<i>Lord-Lieutenant,</i>	Duke of Abercorn.
<i>Lord Chancellor,</i>	Mr. Ball.
<i>Chief Secretary,</i>	Sir Michael Hicks-Beach.

The following changes subsequently took place :—

<i>Lord-Lieutenant for Ireland,</i>	Duke of Marlborough, November 1876.
<i>First Lord of the Admiralty,</i>	Mr. W. H. Smith, August 1877.

The following changes took place in March 1878 on the resignation of Lord Derby and Lord Carnarvon :—

<i>Lord Privy Seal,</i>	Duke of Northumberland.
<i>Colonial Secretary,</i>	Sir M. Hicks-Beach.
<i>Foreign Secretary,</i>	Lord Salisbury.
<i>War Secretary,</i>	Colonel Stanley.
<i>Indian Secretary,</i>	Lord Cranbrook (Mr. Gathorne Hardy).
<i>Chief Secretary for Ireland,</i>	Mr. Lowther.

THOUGH the triumph of the Conservative party had been very complete, and Mr. Disraeli now found himself for the first time the trusted leader of a large majority both in the House and in the



constituencies, no great or immediate change of policy was observable.

**Peculiarity of Mr. Disraeli's position.** The Premier's position was unusually powerful. It was well understood that to his skilful direction of the party its present success was due. At the same time the Opposition was weakened by the declared intention of Mr. Gladstone frequently to absent himself from the House, and to give but a limited attention to the duties of leadership. But although the clamour raised against the late Ministry had been bitter and incessant, when the responsibility came into the hands of the new Prime Minister he appeared to justify the assertions of his opponents, and either to have no fixed line of policy to pursue, or to think it unwise as yet to follow it. Yet the accusation of want of policy so freely brought against him was unreasonable. Whatever his disapprobation may have been of the measures which had been taken, it was consistent neither with the traditions of his party nor indeed with the character of the English Government to attempt immediately to change them. The acceptance by the incoming party of the actions of its predecessors, so as at least to allow them a fair chance of being tried by experience, is necessary in a country where the alternation of parties is so frequent as in England. The immediate reversal of important measures upon the accession of a new Ministry could not but result in complete uncertainty and confusion. There was no course open at first to the new Ministry but to accept, amending if possible, the great Acts of the preceding years. Moreover the one objection most frequently alleged against Mr. Gladstone had been his reckless interference with all classes. Rest in domestic legislation was distinctly one of the objects which the Conservatives set before them; it was not till new questions, or new circumstances connected with old questions, arose, that the Government could find an opportunity of showing their political views.

The Ministry seemed to accept and even to approve of all that its predecessors had done. A terrible famine was devastating Bengal. Lord Northbrook, the Viceroy, while stirring up the officials to meet the danger and to avoid that quiescent course of *laissez faire* which had produced such terrible results in Orissa in former years, had yet taken the bold step of allowing export of food to be continued, trusting to the working of the laws of supply and demand to divert the food coming down from the Upper Provinces to the famishing districts. His conduct met with approval and praise from the new Ministry, and in the result its wisdom was vindicated. The Licensing Act, which had gone so far to alienate

**General character of the Government.**

the powerful body of licensed victuallers, was allowed with very slight amendments to continue in force. No attempt was made to change the new scheme for the organisation of the army. Alterations in rating suggested by Mr. Stansfeld were adopted and passed by Mr. Selater Booth; and Mr. Cross's Bill for limiting the labour hours for women and children in factories was substantially the same as that of Mr. Mundella. Even the Judicature Act, though it touched the authority of the House of Lords, met with the approval of the new Lord Chancellor, and a supplementary Bill incorporating some slight amendments, and extending its provisions to Ireland and Scotland, was only withdrawn under stress of circumstances, after its passage was a matter of certainty.

The important discussions of the year all turned upon ecclesiastical questions. Three Bills, the one for the amendment of the Endowed Schools Act, the second for the arrangement of patronage in the Scotch Church, and the third for the regulation of public worship in England, afforded occasion for warm debate. In all three the object was one legitimately forming part of any Conservative policy, the strengthening of the Established Church. The first of them (the only instance of a reversal of policy) proposed to put an end to the Endowed Schools Commission, and to transfer its power to the already existing Charity Commissioners, and, secondly, to restore to the Church of England a considerable number of schools. It had been the principle of the Act to treat as national all endowments made before the Act of Uniformity of 1661. Dissent having been unrecognised till then, and the Church having been regarded as co-extensive with the nation, no man, it was argued, having any religious intentions with regard to his school could have connected it with any religious body except the Church of England; all such schools therefore had by the Endowed Schools Act been made entirely undenominational. It was now proposed that the Church should resume its exclusive rights, in cases where the will of the founder showed a clear intention to connect his school with the Church. The want of wisdom of this retrograde policy was attacked with much eagerness by Mr. Gladstone, and the probability of the Liberal party finding a point of union on this question became evident. To avoid so undesirable a result, Mr. Disraeli, making the curious assertion that careful study had induced him to think that the Government propositions were incomprehensible, consented to their withdrawal, and the first half of the Bill alone passed.

The Endowed  
Schools Act  
amended.

The Church Patronage Bill aimed at destroying lay patronage in the Established Church of Scotland, and intrusting the choice of their

minister to the congregations. The circumstances of the two countries were so different that this proposition, which in England would have been regarded as a step towards disestablishment, was in Scotland avowedly made for the purpose of strengthening the Establishment. For two centuries the difficulty had been before the Scotch Church. More than once the law in the matter had been changed. It had not long since given rise to the great schism, and the secession of the Free Church. The value of the right of presentation was very small, and it was strongly urged by men whose opinion could scarcely be questioned that experience led to the belief that better men would be obtained by free choice than by nomination. From the Scotch dissenters, however, the Bill called out violent opposition. They had been driven from the Church, they asserted, upon this very point, and here was the Establishment declaring itself in the wrong, but taking care to keep the endowments; no such measure, they urged, would be fair unless a great effort were first made for a reunion of the Churches. Though their opposition was warmly supported by Mr. Gladstone, the Bill was carried by a large majority.

The Scotch  
Church  
Patronage Bill.

The third of the ecclesiastical Bills produced far more excitement, and by the lengthened debates which accompanied it practically compelled the withdrawal of most of the other Government measures. There had arisen among the High Church a section which seemed bent on assimilating the English Church as far as possible with the Church of Rome. Confession was avowedly taught and practised, and an amount of ceremony and decoration used in certain parts of the service which, unless it was employed merely from an idle and trumpery love of millinery, must have been symbolical of doctrines on the repudiation of which the Church of England was based. The difficulties which lay in the way of the legal repression of such excesses, and the growing disposition of those who practised them to disregard Episcopal authority even with contempt, induced the Archbishops to introduce into the Upper House a Bill for the purpose of regulating the forms of public worship, and establishing a direct and easy method of settling the legality of practices against which objection was made. It was proposed that the Bishop should have the sole power of directing worship, assisted by a Board of Assessors, lay and clerical. From their decision an appeal lay to the Archbishop and his assessors, whose decision was to be final. Lord Salisbury, who represented the Government in the Upper House, although not at once adopting the Bill, explained that he approved

The Public  
Worship Bill.

of its intention. But there was a strong feeling, to which Lord Shaftesbury gave expression, that this matter should not be left in the hands of the Bishops, for the Protestant and lay feeling of England was aroused, and with it the dread of the independence of the Church from all lay authority. In Committee he therefore proposed and succeeded in carrying an amendment to the effect that one Judge for ecclesiastical cases, appointed by the Archbishops with the approval of the Crown, should preside in the Courts of Canterbury and York, and that unless the Bishop to whom the complaint was first sent declared it frivolous, the case should be tried before this Judge, with an appeal to the Privy Council. In this shape the Bill was sent to the Lower House. It was intrusted to the management of Mr. Russell Gurney, the Recorder of London. He treated it chiefly as a matter of procedure, emphasising the present difficulties which surrounded ecclesiastical law and the advantage of freeing the Bishop from the position of prosecutor. At the same time he pointed out that there was no attempt in it to create new crimes, or to settle matters of doctrine. The opposition encountered by the Bill was unexpected; Mr. Gladstone threw himself with all his vigour into the contest. He objected to the want of concurrence between the Government and the Church in the introduction of the measure, to the want of recognition of the general excellence of the clergy which was implied, and to the right given by the Bill to a very small number of objectors to bring a case before the Bishop; he further suggested that occasional indiscretion might possibly be found among the Bench of Bishops. Before all he disliked the idea of in any way curtailing the large liberty of thought which the elasticity of the English Church allowed. He declared his intention of producing resolutions before going into Committee, giving expression to these objections. They covered so wide a field, and touched matters so closely connected with the very existence of a National Church, that there seemed every probability of the rest of the session being passed in a general ecclesiastical discussion. But men of less diffuse thought, of narrower but more practical minds, brought the question back to the limits of practical discussion; and when after much debate Mr. Disraeli, fully allowing the advantage of an elastic Church, declared that the object of the Bill was to put down Ritualism, and that Ritualism meant the "practices, by a portion of the clergy, avowedly symbolic of doctrines which the same clergy are bound in the most solemn manner to refute and repudiate," it became plain that the Government had adopted the Bill, and had made its settlement a matter of vital importance.



His speech was addressed to willing ears. The Protestant feeling of the country had risen high; the second reading of the Bill was carried unanimously, and after so strong an expression of opinion Mr. Gladstone thought it prudent to withdraw his resolutions. The clauses of the Bill were carried in Committee by great majorities, and but one amendment of importance was introduced. On this amendment the measure was however nearly wrecked. By a large majority it was carried that the complainants, if refused a hearing by the Bishop, should be able to bring their case before the Archbishop. When the Bill came back to the House of Lords the whole Bench rose in arms. "A Pope was to be set up in Canterbury and an Antipope in York," said the Bishop of Lincoln. The Bishop of Winchester declared he would rather trample his ecclesiastical robes under foot than suppose that each Bishop was not ruler by divine right in his own diocese. Lord Salisbury, though a Minister, thought it wise to support their opposition, and to talk of the bluster of the other House of Parliament. It seemed as though a quarrel between the Houses might supervene. But Mr. Disraeli skilfully worsted his refractory subordinate. He pointed out that Lord Salisbury had himself been long a member of the House of Commons, and that they knew him well. "He is one," he said, "who is a great master of jibes and flouts and jeers, but I don't suppose there is any one who is prejudiced against a member of Parliament on account of such qualifications. My noble friend knows the House of Commons well, and he is not perhaps superior to the consideration that by making a speech of that kind and taunting respectable men like ourselves as being a blustering majority, he probably might stimulate the *amour propre* of some individuals to take the course he wants and to defeat the Bill. I hope we shall not fall into that trap." After all, the action of the House of Lords in objecting to the amendment was strictly constitutional; he therefore recommended the Commons to accept the alteration rather than allow the Bill to be lost. His advice was taken. The Bill passed with the general approbation of the House, and Lord Penzance was appointed to the new Judgeship.

Retirement of  
Mr. Gladstone.  
Jan. 13, 1875.

it better before the meeting of Parliament in 1875 to withdraw formally from his position as leader of the Opposition. His predominance had been so great, his personal leadership so complete, that it was not at once clear how his place should be supplied. Among the several possible claimants the

choice of the party fell upon Lord Hartington, whose strong sense and straightforward determined character had gradually impressed itself upon all those with whom he had had to do. Much doubt was naturally felt as to the possibility of a man so eager and lively-minded as Mr. Gladstone, and one to whom it was believed the possession of power was so dear, being able or willing to refrain from interfering in party management. But, although Mr. Gladstone took not unfrequent part in the discussions in the House, he loyally preserved a subordinate position, nor was it till events occurred which touched the earnest and sentimental side of his character very closely, that he broke through this restraint, and by the influence which his burning words exercised proved both to himself and others how indispensable he was to the Liberal party.

Under these circumstances, as was to be expected, a period of comparative quiet in the political world ensued. Indeed the very cry against the harassing legislation of their opponents, which had served them so well upon the dissolution, compelled the Conservatives to avoid anything which could be spoken of as a heroic measure. Acceptance of what had been already done with slight alterations and amendments, and the introduction, in accordance with their declared views, of gentle measures of social improvement, formed the basis of their home policy. They had nothing new to advise for Ireland. With very slight relaxations they demanded a renewal of the Peace Preservation Act as well as of the Westmeath Act for the protection of life and property. Sir Michael Hicks-Beach, the Irish Secretary, and Lord Hartington, who had previously occupied that position, vied with one another in the support they gave to coercion. While, as it was urged, there had been practically little difference in the state of Ireland within the last two years, on the whole the effect of English Government since 1830, marked though it had been with a nearly unbroken line of such coercive measures, had produced most remarkable results. In 1833 Lord Grey had stated that in the last two years there had been no less than 9000 crimes connected with the disturbed state of the country ; the report of the last year put the crimes of the same description at 213. Backed by such authority and by such arguments the Coercion Bills were read a second time by an overwhelming majority, and ultimately passed with very little alteration, though for many weeks the Home Rule party fought the battle in Committee, using every vantage-ground allowed by the forms of the House. In the same way the Government adopted the Judicature

Quiet domestic  
legislation.

The Irish  
Coercion Bills  
renewed.

Act of its predecessors. Pressure of business alone had in the preceding year prevented the extension of its provisions to Ireland and Scotland. Lord Cairns now again introduced an amending Bill. The great principle of the Act of 1873, the fusion of the two branches of law and equity, was left untouched. But upon the one questionable point, the final Court of Appeal, the Lord Chancellor, yielding to the threatened opposition of the Lords both within and outside the House, now proposed that the Court should be one of intermediate appeal only. He left it uncertain what the Court of final appeal should be. For a year longer the House of Lords was as usual to act in that capacity. When in 1876 the question came up for final settlement, the House of Peers, with an addition of certain judicial Lords of Appeal, kept its old functions, and retained its position as the final Appeal Court.

The strange unauthorised declaration upon social points produced under the auspices of Mr. Scott Russell two years before, and its repudiation by the leaders of the Conservatives, has been mentioned. What the party was willing to do in that direction was now shown by a series of Bills which, while pretending rather largely to rectify acknowledged failings, were so timid in their character, so fearful of in any way infringing the rights of property, that they were nearly useless. The farmers had a well-grounded grievance in the want of

**Agricultural  
Holdings Bill.**

security for the capital employed by them in improvements. The Agricultural Holdings Bill was intended to secure compensation at the close of a tenancy for capital expended by the tenant. But instead of making this compensation compulsory, every facility was given for evading by private contract the enactments of the Bill; they only became valid when no arrangement on the matter was entered into between landlord and tenant. Another Bill with regard to land was of the same somewhat disappointing character. Since the failure of Lord Westbury's Registration Act, by

**Land Transfer  
Bill.**

which it had been rendered possible for any man proving an absolute title to his land to have it registered, and his claim to it thus acknowledged once for all as complete, the advantages of registration had not appeared sufficient to induce landowners to undergo the expense and trouble of proving a title. Both the late Lord Chancellor and Lord Cairns had supported measures for curing this defect by admitting to the register less perfect titles, and Lord Selborne had gone so far as to propose that after a certain date every transfer of land should be accompanied by registration. By this gentle compulsion it was hoped that by degrees a complete register

would be formed and the transfer of land rendered cheap and expeditious. Lord Cairns in his new Bill, while accepting the registration of titles less than absolute, dropped the compulsory part of Lord Selborne's Bill although he had previously supported it. Thus again the purely permissive character of the Bill went far to destroy its usefulness.

There was undoubtedly a crying evil in the wretched housing of the poor, especially in large cities. The terrible effect on the health of the people of overcrowding was only too evident. While 22 per thousand was the average death-rate in the country, in some parts of Manchester it rose as high as 67; while it was calculated that for every twelve children who lived and flourished in the better parts of London, in the worst parts only one survived. To remedy this evil Mr. Cross introduced a Bill for the improvement of Labourers' Dwellings Bill. the dwellings of the working classes. But again he guarded himself carefully from the charge of touching property. It was no business of the Government, he said, to supply citizens with prime necessities, it was not their business to encourage the charitable building of houses at less than the market rate. He took his stand entirely on the ground of health. Again he shrank from compulsion. Corporations of large cities were to be allowed to acquire by compulsory purchase buildings or land for the accommodation of the working classes; whether they would do so or not was left to the will of the Corporations. In the same way Sir Stafford Northcote's Friendly Societies Bill. Friendly Societies Bill, intended to cure the evils of insolvency common in such associations, shrank from imposing compulsory supervision on the Societies, and was contented with placing opportunities in the way of the managers for having their arrangements examined. It was plain that while the Conservative Ministry felt considerable sympathy with the ills of the poorer classes, and looked upon social improvements as of more importance at the instant than political changes, they shrank from anything resembling Government interference with the existing lines into which society had fallen. On one point they took up a somewhat bolder position, and by their legislation added a new and important link to the series of measures for the improvement of the position of the workmen. By an Act for amending the labour laws a clear definition was given to what constituted a criminal breach of contract on the part of a Amendment of the Labour Laws. workman. Malicious injury or the sudden desertion of employment which would, as in the case of gas or water supply, cause danger or injury to the public, were criminal. All



other breaches of contract were henceforward to be treated by civil process. In the same way with regard to conspiracy : while the general law was left untouched, combination in trades disputes to do an act not in itself punishable as a crime ceased to be punishable as a conspiracy. Though some few of the workmen and their most extreme supporters still objected to the very light restrictions thus left on them, by the bulk of the artisan class the Bill was thankfully received.

But if the country was disappointed by the apparent mildness of the Conservative legislation in the first two years of Disraeli's Ministry, those who were watching in expectation for something of a more striking and theatrical character were soon destined to be gratified. It was suddenly made known that the English Government had purchased by telegraph the whole of the Khedive's interest in the Suez Canal at a cost of £4,000,000. There was a sort of grandeur about the proceeding which was held to consort well with the imaginative character of the Premier. By a sudden use of resources such as no other country could have wielded, without striking a blow, England was supposed to have checkmated its ill-wishers, especially the French, and to have secured command of the high-road to its Indian possession. It was supposed that something little short of an Egyptian protectorate was aimed at, it might be even the possession of Egypt. The great Eastern difficulty was thought to be solved. With Egypt and the Canal in our hands it would be possible to allow Turkey and Russia to settle their own affairs. The splendid stroke of statecraft dwindled indeed to comparatively small proportions when described in the singularly cold and matter-of-fact language adopted by Lord Derby. But for a while it filled the minds of thousands of Englishmen with a glow of national pride, and may be regarded as the beginning of that feeling of imperial self-assertion which is the distinguishing note of Mr. Disraeli's administration. Stripped of its political significance, it was yet a step of considerable importance, preventing as it did the absorption by one nation and one company of what should on all grounds remain an international highway. The Suez Canal, the great work of Lesseps, had been opened about six years. It had been constructed under great difficulties by a French Company, and with a scarcely covered opposition from the English. The expenses had been great, the dividends were slow in coming, and the Company had been obliged to increase the tolls enormously. The commercial value of the canal had been proved, and the English Government had thought it necessary to

Purchase of the  
Suez Canal  
shares.

interfere in the general interests of commerce. It was naturally a cause of some bitterness that the country which had opposed the great project should, when it had proved of immense advantage to its own interests, interfere politically with the interests of the French shareholders ; and Lord Derby, to get rid of the jealousy engendered, had gone so far as to suggest to the French ambassador the idea that the Company should be bought out, and the canal placed in the hands of an International Commission. The idea was rejected by France, and there seemed a real danger that the whole canal would fall into French hands, and that English trade through it, more in amount as it was than that of all other nations put together, would be at the mercy of the French Company. For the financial affairs of the Khedive had fallen into much disorder, and to relieve himself from the pressure he was negotiating the sale of the 177,000 shares which he possessed, forming nearly the half of the whole capital of the Canal Company, to another French company. It was upon hearing of this that the English Government stepped in, and offered to purchase the Khedive's shares themselves. It was therefore a purely commercial transaction of a defensive character, and in no sense intended as the beginning of a new method of treating difficulties in the East. It was not however unnatural that a threatening meaning should have been attributed to it, for the signs of a coming storm were already visible in Turkey.

There was always a certain number of men engaged in public life whose attention was turned towards the state of the Empire in the East. The jealous feeling with which Russia was regarded was never entirely lulled, and as her conquests advanced in Central Asia and her frontiers drew nearer and nearer to those of British India, suspicion as to her ultimate designs grew stronger. In July 1875 the attention of Government had been called in the House to these advances ; and although the Ministers could not be induced to give any expression of their opinion, Mr. Bourke, the Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, had stated with some strength that the support of the independence of Afghanistan was a necessary part of our Indian policy, and seemed to indicate that should there be any appearance of a Russian approach upon Herat England would interfere. It was however the view of Government, a view supported by most of those well acquainted with the country, that the safety of the English dominion in India was chiefly secured by the *prestige* of the mother country. The belief that England was too strong to be attacked was held to be the surest

Fear of Russian  
encroachment  
in India.

means of checking any seditious feelings among the Indian people. With a view of bringing home to the Indian princes and the Indian people the reality of their connection with the great Imperial European

Prince of Wales's  
visit to India.  
Sept. 1875.

Power, it was thought desirable that the Prince of Wales should make a formal and ostentatious progress through India. A considerable sum of money was granted for this purpose, and the Prince's visit was carried out with all the surroundings of pomp which its intention seemed to require. A more political meaning was perhaps attributed to it than it deserved, for it took place just at the time when the European side of what is known as the Eastern question began again to rise into prominence, and was easily interpreted to carry with it an indication of the intention of the Government to assert to the full the position of the Empire in any coming difficulties which might arise. For events were taking place which brought the relations of Turkey with the rest of Europe into such prominence as almost to obliterate for several years any other subject of public interest, and aroused again in a considerable portion of the nation the latent dislike and mistrust of Russia which twenty years before had produced the Crimean war.

The policy of the Government of that time, ratified by the Treaty of Paris in 1856, had been to maintain the integrity and independence of the Turkish Empire as the best means of warding off the European war which the clash of interests following upon its dissolution would almost certainly have produced. But while maintaining the Empire and depriving the Czar even by force of arms of the exclusive protectorate of the Christian populations which previous events had given him, England and Europe had insisted upon such reforms as should remove the real grievances which weighed upon the Christians in Turkey, and should save them from the constant oppression and ill-usage under which they suffered. That these reforms should be carried out was the indispensable condition of the European protection extended to the Porte. But Turkey had failed to make good its promises, and while England had somewhat supinely refrained from offering advice, and satisfied itself with giving an opinion when asked, the Russians, much more deeply interested in the condition of their co-religionists, had again entered upon that course of intrigue and that exertion of personal influence through their ambassador which the war of 1855 had been intended to check. When in the early part of 1875 the oppressive action of the Turkish tax-gatherers drove the inhabitants of Herzegovina and Bosnia to rebellion, a strong suspicion was created that the insurgents were not

Re-opening of  
the Eastern  
Question.

acting without the secret encouragement of Russia, and there was at least the certainty that that country could not look on unmoved at an event which proved how little the reforming promises of the Porte had been kept. Even from this point of view it appeared as though the Eastern question was again to be opened

The international character of the question was much increased when the efforts of the Turks to suppress the insurrection proved too much for an exchequer weakened by lavish mismanagement, and the Porte was compelled to make authoritatively an arrangement with its creditors falling little short of a national bankruptcy (Oct. 1875). Again the preservation of Turkey in the face of its inherent weaknesses became a matter of European importance. If its collapse with all the attendant difficulties was to be averted, it seemed to

be necessary that Europe should insist upon reforms, directed on the one side to such economy as should secure

European  
efforts to secure  
Turkish reform.

the national credit, and on the other to the removal of those causes of dissatisfaction which had brought the Government to the brink of insolvency. As far as its public conduct was concerned there was no apparent reason for charging Russia with a desire to take undue advantage of the opportunity afforded by the insurrection for the destruction of Turkey. The Government of the Czar was the first indeed to suggest the necessity of intervention, but refrained from any single-handed action, and appeared desirous to act honestly with the rest of the guaranteeing Powers. It was mainly through its instrumentality that the Montenegrins and the Servians, eager to support the insurrectionary movement against their suzerain, were kept from hasty action. The course which in the opinion of Russia and its allies it was necessary that Europe should take for the preservation of peace was formulated by the Austrian Chancellor, Count Andrassy, at the close of the year 1875, in a note which was circulated among the other Courts of Europe, and received general adhesion. The only sign that Russia was applying independent pressure to the Turks was the promulgation in December of a firman promising to remove the chief grievances of the Christians. The Andrassy Note, which was in fact little more than a request that the promises

Failure of the  
Andrassy  
Note.

already given should be carried out, was with some modifications accepted by the Porte. It seems probable that the Turkish Ministry believed that it could rely upon the jealousy with which England certainly regarded the advances of Russia, and that, as on former occasions, division of interest among the Powers would prevent con-



certed action. Its honesty was hardly put to the proof. The Andrassy Note unfortunately contained no substantial guarantee for the performance of its recommendations. The insurgents therefore refused to trust merely to the word of the Sultan, the value of which they had already by experience learned. Thus the first effort of European diplomacy proved a complete failure.

The insurrection continued its course, and as the threatening attitude of Montenegro and Serbia required the presence on their frontier of much of the Turkish army, the attempts at its suppression were attended with so little result that the rebels were constantly encouraged to raise their terms. Other provinces began to be involved in it. In the beginning of May a movement took place in Bulgaria which appears to have been a somewhat hasty disclosure of a great general plot in which Serbia was implicated. Religious feeling rose throughout the Empire. In a Mahomedan outbreak at Salonica, the consuls of France and Germany were murdered. The safety of Europeans in Constantinople was so imperilled that the ambassador thought it necessary to apply to Government for leave to summon the fleet to Besika Bay. In this situation of affairs fresh intervention appeared necessary. The Czar himself with his Chancellor Prince Gortschakoff met Bismarck and Andrassy, the Ministers of the German and Austrian Empires, at Berlin, and drew up a note in which it was hoped that all the European Powers would join. It was naturally of a stronger character than the abortive memorandum of Count Andrassy. Emphasising the entire failure of the Turks to keep their promises of reform, it demanded an armistice for two months, during which negotiations for peace should be opened. The terms of peace demanded included the withdrawal of the Turkish troops to certain fixed centres, the retention of arms by the Christians, and the relief and restoration of the refugees and oppressed insurgents, and insisted that the work of reconstitution should be carried out by a mixed commission of Christians and Mahomedans under the supervision of the delegates of the great Powers. Thus only, it was suggested, could the honesty of the good intentions of the Porte be guaranteed. The document closed with the distinct intimation that if satisfactory terms could not be arrived at within the period of the armistice, more efficacious measures, which could mean nothing but force, would be employed. It was here that the European concert which had hitherto prevailed showed signs of dissolution; accepted by France and Italy, the memorandum was rejected by the English Foreign

Failure of the  
Berlin Note.

Office. The Government appears to have thought the terms unduly severe upon the Turks, and took umbrage at being required to accept a scheme on which it had not been previously consulted. The evidence of the constant presence of Russian intrigue, the obvious eagerness of the Russians to have recourse to coercion, had also begun to rouse the suspicious fears of England. Thus a second time the efforts of diplomacy failed.

Again following its usual policy, Turkey replied to the threats of coercion by a voluntary promise of reform. On this occasion the bid for independence was a large one. Amid the disintegration of the Empire, one man, Midhat Pasha, seems to have believed in the possibility of infusing new life into the decaying body by a complete constitutional change. Within a fortnight of the rejection of the Berlin note, a *coup d'état* was carried out in Constantinople under his management; Abdul Aziz the Sultan was deposed, and his successor induced to issue a declaration implying the popular source of his power, and promising large diminution in that personal expenditure which was eating up the finance of the country.

Turkish Coup  
d'Etat.  
May 30, 1876.

The change did not prove successful, and if it was intended in any way to attract the support of England, its result was immediately neutralised by tidings with regard to Bulgaria which reached England on the 23d of June. On that day letters in the *Daily News* giving a description of the horrors which had accompanied the suppression of the Bulgarian insurrection roused almost to fury the popular indignation of England. The Ministry refused to believe the accounts which had been received. Both Mr. Disraeli and Lord Derby declared in the strongest manner that they were vastly exaggerated. The question became one of party interest. The lukewarmness with which the Government regarded the Turkish misdoings became henceforward a chief point of assault. When in July an English agent, Mr. Baring, was despatched to make inquiries upon the spot, it appeared that after all scarcely any exaggeration had existed. To make head against the new insurrection it had been found necessary to arm and employ multitudes of volunteers and irregular Circassian troops. With these allies the Turks had been able before long to put down the insurrection, but not until the irregular levies, amenable to no discipline and fired with savage religious enthusiasm, had committed acts of the most fearful cruelty. That there had been some exaggeration was true, but enough remained to justify the outcry which had been raised. Brutal ill-usage of prisoners, incidents recalling in their horror the black hole of Calcutta, the destruction of not less than

The Bulgarian  
Insurrection.

12,000 persons in the district of Philippopolis, and the carrying off to Turkish harems of at least eighty Christian girls, Mr. Baring's report asserted as facts ; and worst of all he confirmed the terrible story to which the newspapers had given currency of a fearful massacre at Batak. Judging from the scene which met his eyes when weeks after the event he visited the spot, he was led to assert that there had been committed perhaps the most heinous crime which had stained the history of the present century. Nor could the Turkish Government avoid the charge of complicity, for the perpetrators of the atrocious deed, so far from being punished, had been publicly rewarded and decorated. The excitement in England was extreme, and found vent in crowded meetings denouncing the Turks and calling upon the Government to make common cause against them. In Parliament frequent motions were made tending in the same direction. But there Disraeli took his stand upon that ground which he had been already preparing, by the addition to the titles of the Queen of that of Empress of India, by the visit of the Prince of Wales to the East, and by the purchase of the Suez Canal shares. All his policy he declared had been directed not to the support of the Turks for whom we were not responsible, but to uphold and protect the English Empire. He concluded his last great speech in the House of Commons with these words : "What may be the fate of the Eastern part of Europe it would be arrogant for me to speculate upon. But I am sure that as long as England is ruled by English parties who understand the principles on which our Empire is founded, our influence in that part of the world can never be looked upon with indifference. The present is a state of affairs which requires the most vigilant examination, and the most careful management. But those who suppose that England ever would uphold or at this moment particularly is upholding Turkey, from blind superstition, and from a want of sympathy with the highest aspirations of humanity, are deceived. What our duty is at this critical moment is to maintain the Empire of England. Nor will we ever agree to any step, though it may obtain for a moment comparative quiet and a false prosperity, that hazards the existence of that Empire." With this characteristic declaration of imperial views, of the indissoluble connection of England with the East, and of ill-concealed distrust of Russia, Mr. Disraeli closed his Parliamentary career and passed into the quieter life of the Upper House with the title of the Earl of Beaconsfield (August 1876).

If the dread of the increase of Russian influence in the East was a reasonable feeling, there was much cause for its predominance at this

moment. For in June the ambitious Prince of Serbia, in conjunction with the Montenegrins, had plunged into open war with Turkey, in defiance of the remonstrances of England, but with an army largely composed of Russian volunteers, and led by the Russian general Tchernayeff. Lord Derby had made it distinctly understood that if the Prince chose to go to war he must abide the consequences. He was everywhere defeated, and by September was driven to demand, what after the warning he had no right to expect, the mediation of foreign Powers. The intervention of Europe had now become more difficult. It was no longer the pacification of insurgent provinces by conciliatory reforms which it was bound to demand, it was a power victorious in the open field with which it had to treat. The different views of England and Russia upon the right of intervention, and the method in which it should be employed, became henceforward more constantly obvious. Yet Lord Derby did not entirely refuse, as his former declaration would seem to indicate that he ought to have done, to intervene further in the quarrel. He joined in pressing an armistice upon the Porte, at the same time mentioning certain bases of negotiation, and suggesting a general Conference. A distinct declaration of the independence and integrity of the Turkish Empire, the *status quo* with regard to Serbia and Montenegro, and a protocol publicly signed in the presence of the representatives of the Powers, insuring local self-government to the insurgent provinces appeared to him to meet the requirements of the case. But the triumphant Turks were not inclined at present to listen to such terms. They offered to treat, but their terms were high, and they refused to grant more than a suspension of hostilities. To the great displeasure of the English Government, Prince Milan refused anything less than an armistice ; his refusal was supported by Russia, Russian volunteers still crowded to his standard, and the war recommenced. Again it was disastrous to the Servians. But the Russians were now almost avowedly supporting Prince Milan. In September they suggested to Austria a joint occupation of Turkey, and the advance of the fleets into the Bosphorus. Unable to resist their pressure the Turks promulgated a fresh scheme of reform, and offered an armistice for six months. Again the English Foreign Office accepted the Turkish view, but Russia, alleging that so long an armistice would be injurious to the Servian cause, determined to rescue Serbia from its difficulties, and, in order to prevent the Turks from carrying out their own reconstruction, suddenly forced upon them an ultimatum limiting the armistice

War between  
Serbia and  
Turkey.

European  
attempts for  
peace.



to six weeks. Yet although the divergence of views between the two Courts had become so obvious, the Czar had hitherto taken every opportunity to allay English mistrust. He had offered, should the naval demonstration prove sufficient, to waive all demands for the occupation of Turkey, and had declared that he had no views on Constantinople. He had explained that any occupation which might be necessary should be only temporary. He had gone out of his way to have a message of friendship conveyed to the English people. With the rest of Europe he had consented to a Conference to be held at Constantinople. And in spite of an utterance of the English Prime Minister at the Lord Mayor's dinner which seemed to presage war, and an answer to the challenge couched in the same tone by the Czar in a speech at Moscow, there seemed in the coming Conference some hope of averting an open breach. But the Conference was a failure. There was no division among the representatives of the Powers, nor did they exhibit any undue obstinacy. It was the Turks themselves who, firm in their determination to act independently and not at dictation, ruined it. Preliminary meetings without the presence of the Turkish representatives had settled the terms which the Powers demanded, and which were based upon the suggestions of Lord Derby. But once again the Turks attempted the same manœuvre they had already twice tried. The first public meeting was interrupted by the artillery announcing the promulgation of a new constitution for the Ottoman Empire with all the apparatus of ministries and assemblies and popular elections. Armed with this weapon the Turks opposed a polite refusal to all the arguments of the Powers, till one by one the demands which had been raised were set aside, and two only remained,—the appointment of Governors for five years with the approval of the Powers, and an international commission nominated by the Porte for the purpose of carrying out the reforms. These two points were laid before the Grand Council of the Ottoman Empire, and there with one dissentient voice rejected, upon the ground that the conditions required interfered with the independence of the Empire. When the rejection was notified to the plenipotentiaries, General Ignatieff declared that no further concession was possible, that the Conference must close, and further measures be resorted to.

Divergence of  
English and  
Russian views.

Failure of the  
Conference at  
Constantinople.  
Jan. 1877.

The language with which Ignatieff had brought the Conference to a conclusion was very threatening, especially as troops had been for some time collecting in large numbers upon the northern frontier

of Turkey. But one further effort at a diplomatic solution of the question was made. Almost immediately after the Conference had closed, Prince Gortschakoff on the part of Russia circulated a despatch among the Powers for the purpose of discovering what the Cabinets proposed to do with a view of meeting the refusal of Turkey to accept the propositions made at the Conference, and of insuring the execution of the wishes of the Powers. After some exchange of communications and a personal visit by General Ignatieff to several of the Courts, the effort of the Russian Government resulted in a protocol signed in London on the 31st of March. This document—while taking notice of the peace which Turkey had made with Servia, its negotiations with Montenegro, and its promises to improve the condition of the Christian populations—declared the intention of the Powers to watch by means of their representatives and local agents the manner in which those promises were carried out. It then proceeded to declare that should they be again disappointed, and the questions left in the condition which periodically disturbed the peace of the East, the Powers would regard that state of affairs as incompatible with the interest of Europe, and would consider in common the means best fitted to secure the well-being of the Christians and the general peace. To this document were appended two declarations, the one by Lord Derby stating that if the object proposed, namely the reciprocal disarmament on the part of Russia and Turkey and peace between them, should not be obtained, the protocol should be regarded as null; the other by the Russian Minister Schouvaloff, demanding that if the Porte accepted the advice of Europe and was ready to make peace with Montenegro, to place its forces on a peace footing, and seriously to undertake reforms, it should send a special envoy to St. Petersburg to arrange for mutual disarmament, but added that any recurrence of massacres such as those of Bulgaria would at once put a stop to the measures for demobilisation. The Russian Government apparently considered the protocol as an ultimatum, the English Government intended it to allow the Turks one more chance. The Ministers of the Porte, unwisely in the opinion of the English Government, thought it necessary to send an answer to the protocol. They entirely repudiated it on several grounds. In attempting to act at all without the co-operation of the Porte the Powers had infringed the Treaty of Paris; the independence of the Empire as guaranteed by treaty, and recognised even so lately as at the Conference, was assaulted; the protocol demanded reforms applicable to the Christian populations only, whereas the

Last effort  
for peace.

new constitution had guaranteed advantages to all classes and creeds ; lastly, the language of the Russian declaration was in the highest degree offensive. The Turkish answer seemed to imply that war would be preferred to submission. "In the face of hostile suggestions," it concluded, "unmerited suspicions and manifest violations of her rights, violations which are at the same time violations of international law, Turkey feels that she is struggling at the present moment for her very existence."

Rejection of  
the protocol  
by Turkey.  
April 10.

Russia under-  
takes war  
against Turkey.  
April 24.

This answer, which reached England on the 12th of April, at once produced a crisis. On the 24th Russia, declaring that the protocol which was the last expression of the collective will of Europe had been answered by a fresh refusal on the part of the Porte, and thus that no hope was left of deference on its part to the wishes and counsels of Europe, announced that the Czar had undertaken single-handed to obtain by coercion that which the unanimous efforts of the Cabinets had been unable to obtain, and had given orders to his army to cross the frontiers of Turkey. He expressed his conviction that while fulfilling a duty imposed on him by the interests of Russia, he was at the same time responding to the interests of Europe. The event had happened which all along the English Government had most dreaded ; Russia had undertaken single-handed to support the Christian interests in Turkey. Up to this time, although it must be confessed that the refusal of England to join in the Berlin memorandum somewhat shook the unity of their action, the Powers had been acting in concert in accordance with the spirit of the Treaty of Paris. The conduct of Russia could be easily construed into a repetition of that course of action which had excited so much indignation in 1871. The English Government at once appeared as the champion of the Treaty of Paris and the Declaration of London ; and Lord Derby as its mouthpiece expressed his strong regret at the line which Russia had taken, as being entirely inconsistent with the spirit of those arrangements. Henceforward a suspicion with regard to Russian intentions began in the minds both of the Government and of a large portion of the nation to take the place of sympathy with the Christian populations. Every fresh success won by the Russian arms in their war with Turkey increased the feeling till it seemed rapidly ripening into a state of excitement incompatible with the maintenance of peace.

Meanwhile the voice of diplomacy was for a time silent amid the noise of open war. The forces of Russia appeared at first to sweep all

opposition before them: the Danube was successfully crossed at the end of June, Bulgaria occupied and organised under a Russian Government, an army under General Gourko was pushed even across the Balkans, and all seemed to promise an immediate and easy march to Constantinople itself. But before long it appeared that the Turks were not to be so easily annihilated. For five months Osman Pasha in Plevna, some twenty miles south of the Danube, held his own against all the forces brought against him. Determined resistance upon the Schipka Pass rendered the passage of the Balkans long doubtful. It was not till 50,000 men had been sacrificed that the skill of General Todleben was successful in inclosing the troops at Plevna. Finally, on the 10th of December, its gallant defenders were driven to an unconditional surrender. But that obstacle once removed from their path, the Russians resumed their victorious advance. Already in Asia they had entirely broken the Turkish defence, and now in the depth of winter, while Gourko forced the Western Balkans, Scobelev and Radetsky cleared the Schipka Pass upon the east, and the two armies swept down into the plains of Roumelia. Conscious that their resources were exhausted, the Turks called for the mediation of Europe, and England accepted the duty. But a victorious Power does not readily admit interference in its progress; the Russian troops advanced nearer and nearer to the capital. It was by direct negotiations between the belligerents that an armistice was after some delay arranged (January 31), nor was it until the Russian troops were actually in possession of a portion of the seaboard and their headquarters advanced to San Stefano, that the preliminaries already arranged were brought into final form, and a peace concluded on the 3d of March.

The course of the war had been watched with feverish anxiety in England. The extent to which the Russians would claim to use the advantages they had won, and the degree to which England could allow free play to their demands without injury to its own interests, were the questions which divided the political parties of the day. To the Liberals it appeared that a frank and early recognition of the necessity of coercion for the purposes of securing the freedom of the Christians from Turkish misrule would have prevented any recourse to arms. Deprived of all hope of English assistance, they believed that Turkey would certainly have yielded. Even as things now were—while acknowledging that such an event as a Russian occupation of Constantinople would call for the inter-

Course of the  
war.

Excitement in  
England.



ference of Europe—they denied that it could be the duty of England alone to enter upon a war to prevent it, or to attempt to defeat Russia for the purpose of re-establishing Turkish misrule. To the Government and its as yet unbroken majority the interests of the Empire in the East and the assertion of the influence of the country, which they considered to have been set at nought by Russian action, seemed not unlikely to demand armed interference. Events so critical required an early meeting of Parliament, and the armistice was still unsigned when the Houses met on the 17th of January. The Queen's Speech acknowledged that the belligerents had not infringed the neutrality of England, and expressed a hope that the negotiations which had begun might terminate in a peace, but darkly hinted that unexpected events might occur which would render measures of precaution necessary, and consequently an appeal to the liberality of Parliament. The meaning of these words was soon disclosed, when the Government asked for a supplementary grant of £6,000,000 for the purposes of the army and navy. The Russians were still advancing towards Constantinople driving crowds of refugees before them, the terms of peace were still undeclared, and the Government thought it desirable that the wealth and determination of England should be clearly demonstrated, although, as at present advised, there was no intention of using the grant. The dispute on the subject was warm both within and without the House, and

Warlike measures of the Government.

there was plain indication of diversity of opinion even in the Cabinet itself. While the question of the grant was still pending, news arrived that the English fleet had been ordered to the Dardanelles, and was quickly followed by the resignation of Lord Carnarvon and Lord Derby. As the news proved to be false and the fleet had returned to Besika Bay, Lord Derby resumed office, but Lord Carnarvon, unable to agree in a threatening and warlike policy, finally withdrew from the Ministry. Outside the House the streets rang with a doggerel song, which supplied a party name which has since become historical; "We don't want to fight," said the burden of it, "but, by Jingo, if we do, we've got the ships, we've got the men, and we've got the money too." "Jingoism" became the distinctive name for the advocates of a self-asserting imperial policy. In spite of the strongest protests on the part of the Opposition, the £6,000,000 which was virtually a vote of credit to the Government was given by an overwhelming majority. As rumours spread that the Turks believing themselves deserted by the English were making common cause with

the Russians and conniving at their occupation of Constantinople, and as the terms of the armistice became known, things began to look still more warlike. The British fleet, without concert with the other Powers, and without a formal firman from the Porte, was brought up to the Sea of Marmora. Military and naval preparations were pushed on with zeal, ships were hurriedly put into commission, and reinforcements despatched to the Mediterranean fleet. It was announced that Lord Napier of Magdala had been chosen for the command of the army with Sir Garnet Wolseley as the chief of his staff.

The publication of the terms of the Treaty of San Stefano somewhat lessened the excitement ; there was no mention of the occupation of Constantinople, or the appropriation of the Egyptian tribute, or any direct interference with what were spoken of as British interests. But though the immediate risk of war appeared to be postponed, a fresh difficulty arose. There were many things in the Treaty which were regarded as objectionable, and, true to his original position, Lord Derby insisted that according to the existing international law of Europe no nation could attempt to settle the Eastern question without the consent of the other European Powers. The Austrian Court had already suggested a Conference ; indeed one ground on which Sir Stafford Northcote had pressed for the £6,000,000 was that it would increase the strength of England at such a meeting. Before that Conference Lord Derby demanded that the Treaty should be laid. The Russians naturally objected to have their hard-won advantages snatched from their hands. They would grant nothing further than that the separate nations should discuss at the Conference any stipulation which they considered injurious to themselves. As Lord Derby refused to yield upon this point, the hope of a Conference seemed to disappear. But the very same evening that this was known it was announced in the House that Lord Derby had again resigned. Upon his loyally refusing to state the reason, Lord Beaconsfield thought it right to declare that the resignation of his colleague arose from the decision of the Cabinet to make a still further exhibition of the determination of England by calling out the reserves. It subsequently appeared that this was by no means the whole of the truth : propositions had even been made and well received in the Cabinet to seize a port in Asia Minor without the leave of the Turks, and thus to guard our road to India. It would seem to have been the warlike and aggressive feeling which existed among the Ministers, rather than any specific act, which rendered the co-operation of Lord Derby with them im-

*Resignation of  
Lord Derby.  
March 28.*

possible. His place was taken by Lord Salisbury, who marked his accession to office by a vigorous circular addressed to our representatives at foreign courts. In this document he reviewed the terms of

Salisbury's  
circular.  
April 2.

the San Stefano Treaty, and arrived at the conclusion that they were of such a sort that neither the interests which England was specially bound to guard nor the well-being of the regions with which the Treaty dealt would be consulted by a Congress of the character proposed by the Russians. Before the debate upon calling out the reserves was concluded, the Budget was produced. It became apparent that more than half the vote of credit was already spent, and that the spending of the rest was in contemplation. Under these circumstances a deficit was a matter of course. It was to be supplied by an additional 2d. on the income-tax, and an increased duty on tobacco, and a million and a half would still be left to be paid in the coming year. The Government, which had spoken of the £6,000,000 as merely a sum to be held in hand for the purpose of affording it strength in its negotiations, had thus already made arrangements for spending nearly the whole of it, and was now demanding the still more distinctly warlike measure of calling out the reserves. Again the obedient Conservative majority voted as required, and then Parliament was dismissed for an unusually long holiday with an intimation from Sir Stafford Northcote that nothing had lately occurred in any way increasing the gravity of the position. It was a somewhat startling commentary upon this assertion when the morning after the adjournment news arrived that 7000 Indian troops had been summoned to Malta.

Indian troops  
summoned to  
Malta.  
April 17.

The policy of Government seemed to consist in a succession of surprises; no explanation had been forced from them during the late session, but step after step they had advanced by unexpected movements to the verge of war. Millions had been granted under a somewhat false pretence, the calling out of the reserves had been made known chiefly by the sudden resignation of a member of the Cabinet, and now Parliament had been sent off for its holiday to hear of a step, the legality of which was very questionable. Such a form of government was not pleasing to the nation. Though his united majority enabled the Prime Minister to act apparently in full security, signs were not wanting that the tide of his popularity was beginning to turn. Such elections as took place revealed the growing strength of the Liberal party. The employment of troops from India, an already recognised

Discontent  
caused by  
Beaconsfield's  
policy of  
surprises.

part of the imperial system of Lord Beaconsfield, excited the profoundest discontent. The Government regarded the limitation of the number of troops, which always accompanies the Parliamentary grant for their payment, as applicable only to troops within the realm of Great Britain. Such a construction seemed to destroy entirely the constitutional restrictions on the power of the Crown; whatever the number fixed in England might be, the Crown by means of the Indian army—the number of which was unlimited—could at any time plunge the nation into war. Opposition however was useless; the resolution moved by Lord Hartington was defeated by a majority of 120 (May 23); and although the manner in which they were carried out was repulsive to the great bulk of Englishmen, the measures of the Cabinet had the virtue of being successful. Constantinople had not been occupied; the Treaty of San Stefano had been less stringent than might have been anticipated; and now Russia had consented to submit it to the consideration of the European Powers. The negotiations for the Congress which had been broken off were resumed, and it was determined that it should be held at Berlin. England had certainly won a great diplomatic triumph.

The Congress, which was opened on the 13th of June under the presidency of Prince Bismarck, was attended by the Prime Minister and Foreign Minister of the various Courts of Europe. It was thus ostensibly a meeting of first-rate importance. It proved to be little better than a sham. For already before the plenipotentiaries left England a private agreement had been contracted between Russia and England, specifying the modifications which England would require in the Treaty. It did not exclude the introduction of other changes by common consent, but, failing these, purported to be a mutual engagement by the plenipotentiaries of Russia and Great Britain as to their conduct in the Congress. True to their policy of secrecy and surprise the Government had fenced with questions put to them with regard to the existence of such a treaty, and caused it to be understood that it did not exist. When published in the *Globe*, which had got hold of it through official carelessness, they pursued the same course. But its truth could not long be denied, and it contained a curious revelation of the practical issue of the loud talking of the Tories. Lord Salisbury's circular had so severely handled the Treaty of San Stefano, as to cause the remark that if the divergence between England and Russia was so strong, the

The Berlin  
Congress.  
June 13.

Separate Treaty  
with Russia.



Treaty could afford no common basis for agreement at all. It now appeared that with the exception of a few points the Treaty was not to be disputed. Of all the important stipulations which it included, the only one which was seriously modified was the creation of a single Principality of Bulgaria. The Anglo-Russian agreement insisted upon its division, and decided that the war indemnity should not be paid in land. On the other hand, the towns of Batoum and Kars, against the possession of which by Russia Lord Salisbury had urgently protested, were to remain in Russian hands, on the distinctly expressed understanding that the military importance of these towns need no longer be considered, since England had in a special manner undertaken the duty of preserving the Ottoman Empire. Thus the Tories found themselves, as was not unusual where Lord Beaconsfield was concerned, deserted, and so complete a change of front had been effected, that such approbation as the agreement met with came chiefly from the Liberal side. But even this did not close the series of surprises. It shortly became known that, again before the meeting of the Congress, England had also contracted an agreement with Turkey, and had pledged itself to defend for all future time the Asiatic dominions of the Ottoman Empire by force of arms, in consideration of receiving the island of Cyprus which was to be handed over to Great Britain, the Sultan at the same time promising to carry out the reforms required by his ally. It was upon these two separate Treaties that the work of the Congress really hinged. Bulgaria was to be divided, the Northern Province to be left in independence with an elected Prince and army of its own, the Balkan was to form the boundary of Turkey, the Bulgarians in Roumelia south of the mountains were to be governed by a Hospodar nominated by the Sultan and the Powers. Roumania was to be deprived of a portion of Bessarabia receiving the Dobrudscha in exchange, Servia and Montenegro were made independent with some territorial additions. Austria was allowed to occupy Bosnia and Herzegovina with the duty of restoring order. Batoum and Kars were left to Russia; and Greece, which had eagerly joined the attack on Turkey hoping for considerable advantages, was left much as she was, with a slightly improved frontier.

**Separate Treaty  
with Turkey.**

**The Berlin  
Treaty.  
July 13.**

The ambassadors returned from Berlin bringing as they declared "Peace with honour," and were received with acclamations of praise and satisfaction. Abroad, except perhaps in France, there was a chorus of approval of the masterly policy of Lord Beaconsfield,

whose work was universally regarded as securing a great triumph for England. If the policy was accepted as right there could be little doubt that the praise was deserved and the success complete. But in the eyes of the Liberal party, and indeed of the majority of the English nation, Lord Beaconsfield's policy, far from being accepted, was regarded as retrograde. Ignoring the complete change which the industrial and democratic growth of late years had produced, he was attempting to force England back into that position of European ascendancy which it had occupied sixty years before. With a total disregard of the increased sensibility of the public conscience, he declared that the maintenance of English interests—irrespective apparently of the justice on which they rested—was the sole object of an English statesman. The greatness of the Empire with a special reference to its Indian possessions was the first of those interests. The world had no right therefore to be surprised at the arrangements of the Treaty of Berlin. Although undoubtedly his followers had supposed that Lord Beaconsfield's intention was to protect the Ottoman Empire, he had himself again and again avowed that the measures taken had no such object, but were to preserve the Empire of England. The establishment under English protection of a Turkish Empire, however limited, accompanied as it was by the possession of Cyprus, fulfilled this object. The interests of England were not in the Premier's opinion involved in the independence of Servia, or the enforced retrocession by Roumania of a portion of Bessarabia, or the establishment of an independent Montenegro and Bulgaria. They required that Turkey should be of a certain strength, and therefore the aspirations of the Greeks were passed by unnoticed. They required that Turkey should be decently governed, and for that England made itself responsible. From this selfish point of view the Treaty appeared to be a complete success. It was successful also inasmuch as it was produced by a Congress before which the whole of the arrangements between the separate belligerents had been laid. The principle laid down in the Treaties of 1856 and 1871, on which England had taken her stand, was therefore upheld. But in thus arriving at a success which seemed to belong to a state of society which had almost passed away, Lord Beaconsfield had pursued methods as little in harmony with the prevailing feeling as were the objects which he had been seeking. He had given a severe blow to that confidence between the Ministry and Parliament, which had become traditional. Close secrecy and a reticence which at times fell little short of deception had marked the relation between the

Opinions as to  
Lord Beacons-  
field's policy.

Cabinet and the Houses. A series of surprises had brought the nation to the brink of war. The authority of the Crown had been strained to a degree which in the eyes of many was unconstitutional, while the very success of his policy was of a nature to cause considerable alarm. It was impossible to avoid seeing with some dread the grave responsibilities which it entailed, or the risk of future complication in maintaining what the Premier himself spoke of as the ascendancy of England in Europe.

The point at which the over-eager desire to establish English influence was to produce disastrous results was already marked out. Even in the midst of the excitement of the Eastern Question, Lord Lawrence had made his voice heard for a while in strictures upon the policy pursued upon the North-West frontier of India.

The relations of the Indian Government with Afghanistan were always a matter of much anxiety. For years the gradual increase of Russian conquests in Central Asia had been a cause of uneasiness to many Indian statesmen; and there was a general agreement that it was desirable, in order to interpose an obstacle to that advance and to cover the frontiers of India, that Afghanistan should be maintained as an independent and friendly Power. The attempt to establish direct British influence at the Court of the Ameer had brought with it such a series of disasters in 1842 that all further efforts in that direction had been laid aside. Dost Mahomed after his restoration to power at the close of the Afghan war had proved on the whole faithful to England; he had bound himself by treaty in 1855 to be the friend of our friends, and the enemy of our enemies, and during the trying time of the Mutiny had succeeded in restraining his people from any active intervention to the prejudice of the English. He had appointed as his successor his third son Shere Ali. For five years the country was plunged in civil wars, but in 1868 Shere Ali succeeded in establishing himself upon the throne of Cabul. The period of disturbance coincided with the viceroyalty of Sir John Lawrence, whose consistent policy, sometimes slightly spoken of as masterly inactivity, consisted in holding entirely aloof from the dynastic quarrels of the Afghans, in the recognition of any Prince who either by force or by popular favour succeeded in establishing himself on the throne, and in attempting to cultivate the friendship of the Ameer by gifts of money and arms, while carefully avoiding topics of offence. Thus when Shere Ali became master of the country he received with the full consent of the Conservative Government a large payment in money

Policy of  
England with  
regard to  
Afghanistan.

and a considerable present of arms and ammunition. Lord Lawrence was himself unable to meet the Ameer, but his successor, Lord Mayo, had an interview with him at Umballah in 1869. A strong love of independence and a desire to be left to their own devices were marked characteristics of the Afghans. The advance of Russia caused them much uneasiness, and they desired a complete alliance, offensive and defensive, with England. But at the same time they felt an extreme dislike to the presence of representatives of England within their boundaries, not unreasonably thinking that it would produce, as it had already once produced, disastrous results which might easily end in their loss of independence. The Ameer had also a personal object; he desired to obtain the British guarantee for the succession of Abdulla Jan, his favourite son. Lord Mayo adhered to the policy of his predecessor. He refused to enter into any close alliance, he refused to pledge himself to support any dynasty. But on the other hand he promised that he would not press for the admission of any English officers as Residents in Afghanistan. The return expected by England for this attitude of friendly non-interference was that every other foreign state, and especially Russia, should be forbidden to mix either directly or indirectly with the affairs of the country in which our interests were so closely involved. At a meeting at Simla in 1873 Lord Northbrook had declared afresh his adhesion to this line of policy. Meanwhile direct negotiations had been carried on with the Russians for the purpose of relieving the Ameer from danger from Central Asia, and in 1869 an understanding had been arrived at that Afghanistan should be excluded from the sphere of their Asiatic operations. The necessity of maintaining Afghanistan as a strong and independent but friendly state was thus fully accepted, and Viceroy after Viceroy, Indian Secretary after Indian Secretary, had accepted the policy by which that object should be obtained.

*Treaties with  
Shere Ali.  
1869 and 1873.*

But a different view was held by another school of Indian politicians, and was supported by men of such eminence as Sir Bartle Frere and Sir Henry Rawlinson. Their view was known as the Sindhi Policy as contrasted with that of the Punjab. It appeared to them desirable that English agents should be established at Quetta, Candahar, and Herat, if not at Cabul itself, to keep the Indian Government completely informed of the affairs of Afghanistan, and to maintain English influence in the country. In 1874, upon the accession of the Conservative Ministry, Sir Bartle Frere produced a memorandum in which this

*Disastrous  
change of policy  
in 1874.*



policy was ably maintained. The occupation of Quetta, and the construction of a railway to the Bolan Pass, even if necessary by the employment of force, formed part of his plan. The memorandum appears to have carried conviction to the mind of Lord Salisbury, although as Lord Cranborne he had fully concurred in the policy of preceding years. A despatch in January 1875 embodied his change of view. Lord Northbrook and his Council succeeded by remonstrances in postponing for a year any action in a new direction. But early in 1876 Lord Northbrook, disagreeing on the financial policy of India with the Secretary of State, brought upon himself a censure which induced him to resign. A Viceroy whose views were more in accordance with those of the Government, and who was likely to be a more ready instrument in his hands, was found in Lord Lytton, who went to India intrusted with the duty of giving effect to the new policy. He was instructed to find an excuse for despatching a temporary mission to Cabul, and with a view of rendering more definite the relations between the two countries to continue payments of money, to recognise the permanence of the existing dynasty, and to give a pledge of material support in case of unprovoked foreign aggression, but to insist on the acceptance of an English Resident at certain places in Afghanistan in exchange for these advantages. The policy thus indicated was fitted to produce all the evils against which previous Viceroys had guarded. The English Government undertook responsibilities which might easily involve it in hostilities brought on by events over which it could exercise no control. It pledged itself to support a prince who might be either too weak or too unpopular to establish his authority, and it insisted upon taking that step which of all others was the most irritating to the suspicious Afghans, and the most likely to drive them into a course of counter intrigue with Russia. Perhaps the worst feature of the proposed measures was the blow which they dealt to the high character for honour and honesty which the Indian Government had hitherto maintained. Lord Lawrence and those who thought with him in England prophesied from the first the disastrous results which would arise from the alienation of the Afghans. Shere Ali was a man of marked and peculiar character, and though capable at times of frank and even enthusiastic admiration, such as he had expressed for Lord Mayo, was inclined to allow what he considered as injuries to rankle in his mind. The suggestion of Lord Lytton that an English Commission should go to Cabul to discuss matters of common interest to the two Governments, was calculated further to excite feelings already somewhat unfriendly

to England. He rejected the mission, and formulated his grievances, which appeared to be certain interferences, perhaps unwise, on the part of Lord Northbrook, a hostile decision given by the arbitrators in his quarrel with Persia with regard to the Seistan boundary, the rejection of the Treaty of Alliance, and the refusal to recognise his successor.

Lord Lytton waived for a time the despatch of the mission, and consented to a meeting between the Minister of the Ameer and Sir Lewis Pelly at Peshawur. Far from producing concord the meeting resulted only in completing the alienation of the Ameer. The English Commissioner was instructed to declare that the one indispensable condition of the Treaty was the admission of an English representative within the limits of Afghanistan. The almost piteous request on the part of the Afghans for the relaxation of this demand proved unavailing, and the sudden death of the Ameer's envoy formed a good excuse for breaking off the negotiation. Lord Lytton treated the Ameer as incorrigible, gave him to understand that the English would proceed

Lord Lytton insists on the reception of a Resident and a scientific frontier.

to secure their frontier without further reference to him, and withdrew his native agent from Cabul. While the relations between the two countries were in this uncomfortable condition, information reached India that a Russian mission had been received at Cabul. It was just at this time that the action of the Home Government seemed to be tending rapidly towards a war with Russia. Attention had been called in a threatening manner to the Indian resources of the Empire by the troops which had been brought to Malta, and Russia not unnaturally determined as a counter move to irritate us in India. The step formed an excellent excuse for giving effect to the frontier policy already determined upon. If, it was argued, the Afghans could receive a foreign mission at all they could receive an English mission. Moreover as the despatch of a mission from Russia was contrary to the engagements of that country, and its reception under existing circumstances wore an unfriendly aspect, Lord Lytton saw his way with some plausible justification to demand the reception at Cabul of an English embassy. He notified his intention to the Ameer, but without waiting for an answer selected Sir Neville Chamberlain as his envoy, and sent him forward with an escort of more than a thousand men, too large, as it was observed, for peace, too small for war. As a matter of course the mission was not admitted, and Major Cavagnari, who had gone forward to Ali Musjid to arrange for its reception, was compelled to withdraw. The circumstances of his rebuff were falsely

reported ; it was said to have been accompanied by gross insult. Although this was absolutely untrue, an outcry was raised both in England and in India to the effect that it was impossible for the country to submit to such treatment, and that the punishment of the Ameer had become a matter of necessity. Troops were hastily collected upon the Indian frontier ; and a curious light was thrown on what had been done by the assertion of the Premier at the Guildhall banquet that the object in view was the formation of a "scientific frontier ;" in other words, throwing aside all former pretences, he declared that the policy of England was to make use of the opportunity offered for direct territorial aggression. The formation of this scientific frontier had long been an object with the Sindh school of politicians and soldiers. It meant the occupation of the upper side of the passes leading into the plain of India. The wisdom of such a change of frontier was more than questionable. The expense must have been an overwhelming burden upon the already overtaxed finance of India. The advanced points held must have been always subject to interference and assault from the wild and semi-independent tribes which would have surrounded them, the occupation of all the passes would have been impossible, and consequently the gateway to India would not have been closed, and the mountainous and rugged country which lay in front would have thrown great difficulties in the way of any combined defensive action. It was in the pursuit of this questionable object, and of the equally questionable plan of establishing English representatives and an intelligence department in Afghanistan, that the war was to be forced upon the Ameer.

As had been foreseen by all parties from the first, the English armies were entirely successful in their first advance. In three bodies —from Quetta towards Candahar under General Stewart, and towards Cabul by the Kuram Valley under General Roberts, and by the Kybur Pass under General Samuel Browne—the armies pressed forward and overcame all the terrible difficulties which lay in their way, in spite of the gallant resistance of the inhabitants, and fearful losses in the transport service. By the close of December Jellalabad was in the hands of Browne, the Shutargardan Pass had been surmounted by Roberts, and in January Stewart established himself in Candahar. When the resistance of his army proved ineffectual, Shere Ali had taken to flight, only to die. His refractory son Yakoob Khan was drawn from his prison and assumed the reins of government as regent. But in fact Afghanistan was fast falling back into anarchy ; the tribes gave their allegiance practically

Invasion of  
Afghanistan.  
November 1878.

only to their own chiefs, and Ayooob Khan, the brother of Yakoob, reigned in Herat. To avoid the total disintegration of the country, which must have been followed by occupation unless it was to be left as a prey to the Russians, was the chief object of England. To obtain English assistance and to establish himself on the throne of Cabul was the object of Yakoob Khan ; when, therefore, he appeared personally in May at the English camp at Gandamak, no great difficulty was found in completing a treaty. Yakoob readily granted the English demands, consenting to place his foreign relations under British control, and to accept British agencies. With considerably more reluctance, he allowed what was required for the rectification of the frontier to pass into English hands. He received in exchange a promise of support by the British Government, and an annual subsidy of £60,000. On the conclusion of the treaty the troops in the Jellalabad Valley withdrew within the new frontier, and Yakoob Khan was left to establish his authority as best he could at Cabul, whither in July Cavagnari with an escort of twenty-six troopers and eighty infantry betook himself.

Treaty of  
Gandamak.  
May 26, 1879.

Then was enacted again the sad story which preluded the first Afghan war. All the parts and scenes in the drama repeated themselves with curious uniformity—the English Resident with his little garrison trusting blindly to his capacity for influencing the Afghan mind, the puppet king without the power to make himself respected irritated by the constant presence of the Resident, the chiefs mutually distrustful and at one in nothing save their hatred of English interference, the people seething with anger against the infidel foreigner, a wild outbreak which the Ameer even had he wished it could not control, an attack upon the Residency and the complete destruction after a gallant but futile resistance of the Resident and his entire escort. Fortunately the extreme disaster of the previous war was avoided. The English troops which were withdrawn from the country were still within reach. The Candahar army which had scarcely left the city was at once recalled, a small force from the Kuram hurried forward and seized the Shutargardan Pass, and General Roberts hastened back from Simla to take the command. Disease had so weakened the forces holding the Kybur that they were unable at first to move, and now, as throughout this campaign, the difficulties of the transport were very great ; 60,000 beasts of burden had been lost in the earlier advance, and much difficulty was found in supplying their place. But

Murder of the  
Resident and  
the English in  
Cabul. Sept.  
1878.

Second invasion  
of Afghanistan.  
October 1879.



about the 24th of September, three weeks after the outbreak, the Cabul field force under General Roberts was able to move. On the 5th of October it forced its way into the Logar Valley at Charassiab, and on the 12th General Roberts was able to make his formal entry into the city of Cabul. Declaring that in his mercy he would spare the city, he proceeded with his work of punishment. The Ameer was deposed, martial law was established, the disarmament of the people required under pain of death, and the country scoured to bring in for punishment those chiefly implicated in the late outbreak. While thus engaged in carrying out his work of retribution, the wave of insurrection closed behind the English general, communication through the Kuram Valley was cut off, and he was left to pass the winter with an army of some 8000 men connected with India only by the Kybur Pass. It was not to be a time of rest. The patriotic leaders had retired to Ghuznee, and there though undoubtedly for the most part seeking their own interests maintained a semblance of allegiance to the deposed Ameer. At the same time the troops and tribesmen in Kohistan refused to accept the British rule. Bodies of insurgent troops in the beginning of December advanced both from the north and south towards the capital. General Roberts with characteristic energy at once assumed the offensive, and attacked them near Urghandi, about twenty miles west of Cabul, while they were still separated. Though frequently checked and beaten, they proved too strong for his resources. He found it necessary to concentrate his troops in the Shirpoor cantonments, two miles from Cabul, and wait for reinforcements. He was there attacked again and again, but finally, on the 23d of December, succeeded in beating off his assailants and re-establishing his authority in Cabul. As yet in Candahar all was quiet, though rumours were occasionally heard of the movements of Ayoob Khan in Herat. During the winter the patriot leaders at Ghuznee, nominally upholding the authority of the late Ameer who had now been deported to India, continued to gather strength. There was every probability that they were contemplating a fresh general insurrection. They were known to be in communication with Ayoob, and with a new and formidable personage who now made his appearance on the scene. This was Abdurahman, the nephew and rival of the late Shere Ali, who upon the defeat of his pretensions had sought refuge in Turkestan, and was supposed to be supported by the friendship of Russia. The expected attack did not take place, constant reinforcements had raised the Cabul army to 20,000, and rendered it too strong to be assailed.

It was not the intention of the English Government to maintain a lengthened occupation of the country, but it was impossible to withdraw and leave behind them the anarchy which their policy had created. They allowed it therefore to be understood that they were quite willing to retire if any chief could be found popular and powerful enough to hold his own upon the throne. Such an indication naturally tended only to increase the virulence of intrigue. In March, therefore, with a view of arriving at some conclusion, Mr. Lepel Griffin came to Cabul and superseded General Roberts in the management of political affairs. He announced the decision at which the English had arrived. As no powerful and accepted chief had arisen of sufficient importance to be intrusted with the government of the whole country, it was thought desirable to break up Afghanistan into a northern and southern province. As to the south the Government was still willing to recognise any Ameer of sufficient power except Yakoob Khan. The policy thus declared was carried out. A certain Shere Ali, a cousin of the late Ameer of the same name, was appointed Wali or Governor of Candahar. In the north signs were visible that the only possible successor to the throne of Cabul would be Abdurahman, who had met with a favourable reception there on his return from exile. The appointment of Shere Ali certainly fell short of satisfying the requirements of the English. He declared himself incapable of reigning alone, and demanded the continual presence of a British force. It was decided to intrust the duty of supporting this weak ruler to troops drawn from the Presidency of Bombay. The Bengal army under General Stewart was to march northwards, and, suppressing on the way the Ghuznee insurgents, was to join the Cabul army in a sort of triumphant return to Peshawur. The first part of the programme was carried out. General Stewart marched out of Candahar and encountered the enemy at Ahmed Khel, some twenty-three miles south of Ghuznee. Though in the course of the battle which ensued there were moments when success was doubtful, victory at length crowned the English arms, and General Stewart pressed on to Cabul where as senior officer he assumed the command. The second part of the plan was fated to be interrupted by a serious disaster which rendered it for a while uncertain whether the withdrawal of the troops from Afghanistan was possible.

Desire of  
the English to  
withdraw from  
Afghanistan.  
March 1880.

As far as Cabul itself was concerned no difficulty arose. The Government in England at this time passed into new hands. Lord Hartington succeeded Lord Cranbrook at the India Office. Lord

Lytton, knowing that his policy had been systematically opposed by the party now in power resigned, and Lord Ripon was appointed Viceroy.

The retreat  
safely effected  
from Cabul.

It was certain that immediate retreat would be the result of the change. But whatever policy was adopted it was impossible to leave Northern Afghanistan without a ruler, and there seemed no alternative but to continue the negotiations which Lord Lytton had already opened with Abdurahman. It was a strange conclusion to a war begun avowedly to check the influence of Russia that the English should thus be compelled to accept a Russian *protégé*. It was scarcely a less bitter comment on the policy pursued in order to establish English influence, that the new Ameer declared the hostility to England to be so strong that he must decline to accept any assistance from them, believing that their continued presence in the country could only be a source of difficulty to him. In spite of repeated victory the triumph of English arms was not rendered very obvious when all the stipulations of the Gandamak Treaty were withdrawn, when a pledge was given that no Resident should be forced upon the Ameer, and the great fortifications raised about Cabul were placed in his hands; while all that was required in exchange was his assistance to secure the retiring forces from difficulties during their retreat.

But even the withdrawal of the invading force with the appearance of unbroken strength and at its own time was not to be allowed. It was with the remnants only of an army that General Stewart marched to Peshawur. The pick of his troops were required to retrieve by a brilliant deed of arms a terrible disaster in the neighbourhood of Candahar, and to destroy the power of those followers of Yakoob and of Ayooob, who still maintained a patriotic attitude at Herat, and refused to submit quietly to the division of the Ameership. Ayooob had always expressed his disapproval of his brother's friendship for the English, and had constantly refused to accept their overtures. Though little was known about him, rumours were afloat that he intended to advance upon Ghuznee, and join the insurgents there. At length about the middle of June his army started. It was believed that the movement was directed rather against the new Wali of Candahar than against the English, and to the native troops was chiefly intrusted the duty of opposing it, but it was thought necessary to support them by an English brigade under General Burrows. There was but little disquiet felt at Candahar at Ayooob's advance. The road from Herat to Farah was supposed to offer extraordinary difficulties. Ghuznee rather than Candahar was

Disaster to  
the Candahar  
army.  
July 1880.

thought to be the object of the march. But before the end of June Farah had been reached and it seemed plain that Candahar would be assaulted. It was determined to hold the Halmand river against him. As he advanced the natives and many of the important chiefs joined his standard; and when the whole of the Wali's troops deserted and went over to the enemy, General Burrows found it necessary to fall back to a ridge some forty-five miles from Candahar called Kush-y-Nakhud. There is a pass called Maiwand to the north of the high-road to Candahar, by which an army avoiding the position on the ridge might advance upon the city. On the 27th of July the Afghan troops were seen moving in the direction of this pass. In his attempt to stop them with his small force, numbering about 2500 men, General Burrows was disastrously defeated. With difficulty and with the loss of seven guns, about half the English troops returned to Candahar.

General Primrose, who was in command, had no choice but to strengthen the place, submit to an investment, and wait till he should be rescued. General Phayre at Quetta at once set to work to organise an army for this purpose. But delay in obtaining transport prevented him from advancing till assistance had arrived from another quarter. The troops at Cabul were on the point of withdrawing when the news of the disaster reached them. It was at once decided that the pick of the army under General Roberts should push forward to the beleaguered city, while General Stewart with the remainder should carry out the intended withdrawal. It resulted that the advancing troops had no base of operations, but were engaged in what is known as a march in the air. With about 10,000 fighting men and 8000 camp followers General Roberts brought to a successful issue his remarkable enterprise. Between the 8th and the 31st of August the expedition traversed with two halts a distance of 318 miles, and reached Candahar. He had however not only to relieve the garrison but to destroy the assailants. This task he effectually performed, falling upon the army of the Ameer and entirely dispersing it a short distance outside the city.

The garrison  
at Candahar  
rescued by  
General  
Roberts.  
August.

All those at all inclined to the forward policy clamoured for the maintenance of a British force in Candahar. But the Government firmly and decisively refused to consent to anything approaching to a permanent occupation. In their instructions to Lord Ripon they reiterated the often repeated arguments of the Liberals, the danger of being drawn on to further aggression, the constant irritation likely to arise from the presence

The final with-  
drawal from  
Afghanistan.



of an English force, the absence of any real dread of immediate Russian advance, and the heavy expense which would be entailed upon the Indian exchequer. Lord Ripon was told to withdraw the troops as soon as a favourable opportunity should occur. General Roberts had at once returned to India after his victory, and a force sufficient for temporary occupation only was left under the command of General Hume to be withdrawn as soon as possible. On hearing the decision of the English, Abdurahman stated his intention of sending a Governor with an armed force to take over Candahar, and at the beginning of April General Hume began his homeward march. The struggle between Abdurahman and Ayooob continued for a while, and until it was over the English troops remained at Quetta. But when Abdurahman had been several times victorious over his rival and in October occupied Herat, it was thought safe to complete the evacuation, leaving Abdurahman for the time at least generally accepted as Ameer.

On the 25th of January 1878 Lord Carnarvon had stated the reasons which had induced him to leave the Cabinet. He had disagreed with the resolution for sending the fleet to the Dardanelles, and for demanding the supplementary vote of £6,000,000 for increasing the armament of the country. In the course of the year he took an opportunity to speak of what was known as imperialism. The imperialism of old times with its selfish disregard of all colonial interests had passed away, and a new form of imperialism which regarded as of vital importance the connection of the mother country with the colonies and devoted itself to cultivating their best interests had taken its place. But the exaggeration of this imperialism brought with it its own dangers. "It likes," he said, "to talk of the power of its armies, to flaunt its mercenary troops in the face of the world, to boast that it is in favour of a great not of a little England, to boast loudly of every extension of the frontier, to dress up the Queen of these realms in the costume of an Indian Empress." While therefore Lord Carnarvon thus deprecated the vulgar imperialism of the time, he felt deeply the necessity of supporting to its full the imperial position of England in a higher sense. It was with this view that while still Colonial Minister he had busied himself earnestly with the affairs of South Africa. Unfortunately the very evils which he deplored were not wholly absent from the schemes which he there set on foot.

The Colonies of South Africa were founded by Holland. They had passed into English hands; and the Dutch farmers, disliking the

Carnarvon's  
views of  
Imperialism.  
Jan. 1878.

English Government, had moved further inland. At this time besides the three English Colonies of Cape Town, Natal, and the lately formed Griqualand, there were two independent Dutch Republics,—the Orange Free State, and the Transvaal. Much of the white population even of the English Provinces was Dutch, and a still larger proportion consisted of reclaimed or half-reclaimed natives. Thus while among the white inhabitants themselves there was every opportunity for the exhibition of conflicting interests, there lay behind all disputes the question which invariably attends frontier settlements—the treatment of the native population. This difficulty had become prominent in the year 1873 and 1874, when the fear of treachery on the part of a chief of the name of Langelibalele located in Natal had driven the European inhabitants to unjustifiable violence. The tribe over which the chief had ruled had been scattered and driven from its territory, the chief himself brought to trial, and on most insufficient evidence sentenced to transportation. It was the persuasion that he was intriguing with external tribes which had excited the unreasoning fear of the colonists. For beyond the frontier there lay the Zulus, a remarkable nation, organised entirely upon a military system, and forming a great standing army under the despotic rule of their King Cetchwayo. Along the frontier of Natal the English preserved friendly relations with this threatening chief. But the Dutch Boers of the Transvaal, harsh and arbitrary in their treatment of natives, had already involved themselves in a war with a neighbouring potentate of the name of Secocoeni, and had got into disputes with Cetchwayo, which threatened to bring upon the European Colonies an indiscriminate assault. Lord Carnarvon had rectified in some degree the ill-treatment of Langelibalele. The Lieutenant-Governor who had banished him had been recalled, and after the reconstitution of the administration by Sir Garnet Wolseley who had been expressly despatched for the purpose, Sir Henry Bulwer had been appointed to the vacant place.

But Lord Carnarvon's views reached beyond local re-arrangement. The Confederation of Canada in which he had been largely concerned had proved successful, and he desired to apply the same cure to the difficulties of South Africa. To promote this object he had attempted to assemble a Conference of the various States, and had despatched as a semi-official agent Mr. Fronde, the historian, to rouse a feeling in favour of his plan. He had encountered much resistance from the legislature of Cape Town. The idea of confederation found little favour in that

Difficulties in  
South Africa.

Carnarvon's  
desire for  
Confederation  
of the South  
African States.

colony ; its ambitious object was centralisation, and the incorporation under itself of the various minor provinces. The difficulty of the situation was so obvious to the Colonial Minister that he had chosen as High Commissioner a man whose experience and energy he could thoroughly trust. Unfortunately in Sir Bartle Frere he had selected a man not only of great ability, but one who carried self-reliance and imperialist views to an extreme. He was destined to pursue in South Africa the same policy which he had recommended upon the Afghan frontier, and with results scarcely less disastrous. Determined in spite of the opposition he encountered to carry out the policy of confederation which he regarded as so hopeful, Lord Carnarvon in 1877 introduced a Bill not indeed insisting upon confederation, but laying down the framework of a constitution to which the Colonies at their own will might accede.

Before this Bill reached its second reading a strange event had occurred ; one of the Provinces implicated had lost its independence ; the Transvaal had been annexed to the British dominions. The danger caused by the reckless conduct of the Boers upon the frontier, and their proved incapacity to resist their native enemies, had made it a matter of the last importance that they should join the proposed Confederation, and thus be at once restrained and assisted by the central power. Sir Theophilus Shepstone had been charged with the duty of bringing the Transvaal Republic to consent to an arrangement of this sort. He found the strongest objection on the part of the people, and a bitter hostility against the British and their Government. Unable to persuade the Boers to accept his suggestions for an amicable arrangement, he proceeded, in virtue of powers intrusted to him, to declare the Republic annexed, and to take over the government. This high-handed act brought with it, as some of its critics in the House of Commons had prophesied, disastrous difficulties. Not only were the Boers themselves almost as a matter of course disaffected, but they handed over to the Imperial Government all their difficulties and hostilities. They were involved in disputes with both their barbarous neighbours. The disastrous result of their war with Secocoeni had been one of the chief arguments in favour of annexation. In 1875 they had made demands upon Cetchwayo, the most important of which was a rectification of frontier largely in their own favour. There was a hope that the more just and favourable treatment of native claims which might be expected from the English after the annexation would put an end to the profound mistrust felt by the African chiefs, and prevent them

**Annexation of  
the Transvaal.  
April 1877.**

from taking the law into their own hands. The arrangement of the disputed boundary with Cetchwayo afforded an opportunity of testing the soundness of this hope. Commissioners were appointed in 1878 to inquire into the rights of the case, the Blood River being taken for the time as the limit between the disputants. The Commissioners arrived at a unanimous decision against the Dutch claims, and Sir Henry Bulwer, who had all along regarded them as unjust, was of



opinion that the full and honest acceptance of this award would have been sufficient to allay the threatening irritation of the Zulus.

But before the Treaty could be carried out it required ratification from the High Commissioner, and it came back from his hands clogged with formidable conditions. Sir Bartle Frere held strong views as to the advantages of English influence, and the necessity of destroying the military organisation of the Zulus which he regarded as a constant



threat against our frontier. There were no doubt some causes for uneasiness. An outrage or two had been perpetrated by Sir Bartle Frere insists on guarantees from the Zulus. Zulus within the limits of Natal, an English surveyor had been robbed, some missionaries declaring that they were persecuted had withdrawn from the country. To Sir Bartle Frere these slight events appeared clear proofs of the overweening confidence and hostile intentions of Cetchwayo. While therefore he accepted the boundary report, he determined to make it an opportunity for the destruction of Cetchwayo's power. In December a Special Commission was despatched to meet the Zulu Envoys, to explain the award, but at the same time to demand corresponding guarantees from the King. When these were unfolded they appeared to be the abolition of his military system and the substitution of a system of tribal regiments approved by the British Government, the acceptance of a British Resident by whose advice he was to act, the protection of missionaries, and the payment of certain fines for irregularities committed by his subjects. These claims were thrown into the form of an ultimatum, and Cetchwayo was given thirty days to decide. All alternative, all explanation, all pacific means were excluded: it was to be submission or war. It proved to be war. Sir Bartle Frere had already prepared for this contingency; he had detained in South Africa the troops which should have returned to England, and had applied to the Home Government for more. Although his request had been at first coldly received, the Government had yielded to his constant assertion of coming danger, and had in November despatched reinforcements, on the understanding that they should be used for defensive purposes only. When no advances came from the Zulu king, Lord Chelmsford was appointed to the command of the troops upon the frontier, and on the 12th, the very day on which the time allowed for the acceptance of the ultimatum expired, the frontier was crossed.

The invasion was directed towards Ulundi, the Zulu capital. While Colonel Wood moved from the Transvaal, Colonel Glynn crossed the river at Rorke's Drift and Colonel Pearson entered the country by the Lower Tugela nearer the sea. The intelligence department had supplied Lord Chelmsford with full details as to the strength of the Zulus and their method of fighting. Experience gained in the Dutch wars with the natives was also plentiful. Nevertheless the first step across the frontier produced a terrible disaster. The troops under the immediate command of Lord Chelmsford encamped at Isandhlana without any of the ordinary precautions,

Invasion of  
Zululand.

and in a bad position. No steps were taken for striking the tents in case of attack, no trench was dug, nor were the wagons as is usual ranged round to form a laager. In this unprotected situation Lord Chelmsford, while himself advancing to reconnoitre, left two battalions of the 24th with some native allies under Colonel Pulleine, who were subsequently joined by a body of 3000 natives and a few Europeans under Colonel Durnford. The forces left in the camp were suddenly assaulted by the Zulus in overwhelming numbers and entirely destroyed. It was only the magnificent defence by Chard and Bromhead of the post and hospital at Rorke's Drift which prevented the victorious savages from pouring into Natal. Lord Chelmsford on returning from his advance hurried from the fearful scene of slaughter back to the frontier. For the moment all was panic; an immediate irruption of the enemy was expected. But when it was found that Colonel Wood to the west could hold his own though only with much rough fighting, and that Colonel Pearson, towards the mouth of the river, after a successful battle had occupied and held Ekowe, confidence was re-established. But the troops in Ekowe were cut off from all communication except by means of heliographic signals, and the interest of the war was for a while centred upon the beleaguered garrison. With extreme caution, in spite of the clamorous criticism levelled against him, Lord Chelmsford refused to move to its rescue till fully reinforced. Towards the end of March however it was known that the provisions were running low, and on the 29th an army of 6000 men again crossed the frontier. On this occasion there was no lack of precaution. Cavalry swept the sides of the advancing column, the troops slept in battle array in a hollow square around the laagered wagons; and when, as they approached the fortress, they were assaulted at Gingilovo their strong formation proved efficient against the wild bravery of their assailants, a complete victory was won, and the garrison at Ekowe rescued. A day or two earlier an even more reckless assault upon Colonel Wood's camp at Kambula was encountered with the same success. But for the re-establishment of the English *prestige* it was thought necessary to undertake a fresh invasion of the country; reinforcements had now arrived, and with an army numbering in its three divisions 24,000 men Lord Chelmsford proceeded to carry it out. During these events several attempts at peace had been made on the part of the Zulus. But their ambassadors were never, in the opinion of the English generals, sufficiently accredited to allow negotiations to be opened. Yet it

Disaster of  
Isandlana.  
Jan. 22, 1879.

Subsequent  
successes.  
April.

would appear that Cetchwayo was really desirous of peace, according to his own account even the assault at Isandlana was an accident, and the two last great battles were the result of local efforts. At length in July properly authorised envoys came to the camp. Terms of submission were dictated to them, but as they were not at once accepted a final battle was fought resulting completely in favour of the English, who then occupied and burnt Ulundi, the Zulu capital.

As in Afghanistan so in Africa, the English had destroyed the strong native rule, and having created anarchy were called upon to find some means of reconstructing the government of the country.

The General had quarrelled with Sir Henry Bulwer. Sir Bartle Frere

Sir Garnet  
Wolseley's  
settlement of  
the country.  
July 1879.

was required at the Cape. Sir Garnet Wolseley was therefore again sent out with full powers to effect a settlement. His first business was to capture the King.

When this was done he proceeded to divide Zululand into thirteen districts, each under a separate chief; the military system was destroyed; the people were disarmed and no importation of arms allowed; a Resident was to decide disputes in which British subjects were involved. The reception of missionaries against the will of the people was not however insisted on. The feeling of the Colonists—excited by the war—was not in favour of this settlement. They talked largely of annexation and the opening up of fresh land for emigration. The Government however maintained their position, believing that they had thus destroyed the Zulu power, and yet avoided the difficulties and expenses attending an extension of the empire.

But the Zulu war had been after all but an episode in the questions which were agitating South Africa. The success of the policy which dictated the annexation of the Transvaal, and recommended Confederation was still uncertain. The conduct of the Boers during the Zulu war had not been altogether friendly. The necessity of over-awing the disaffection in the Transvaal had influenced the movements

Difficulties in  
the Transvaal.

of the armies in the advance to Ulundi. At great meetings, especially one at Wonderfontein, the farmers had pledged themselves to continue to seek independence. To Sir Bartle Frere they had openly intrusted a strong protest to lay before the Government; but neither he nor Sir Garnet Wolseley who succeeded him held out the smallest hopes that the annexation would be reversed. The creation of a Legislative Council in the place of their old assembly, the Volksraad, was regarded by the Boers as a breach of the promises made to them on their annexation, and added fresh fuel to the disaffection which was visible throughout the

year 1879. The taxes which continued to be levied were paid under protest. Negotiations were continually carried on both at the Cape and in England for the restoration of independence, and at length in December, at another great meeting, which was recognised as a fairly representative assembly, the Boer farmers came to definite resolutions. They claimed the restoration of independent government and the re-establishment of the old Volksraad; but they were willing to intrust that body with the duty of making arrangements for the peaceful settlement of the difficulty, even at the price of some limitation on their independence. They were willing to allow the presence of an English Resident, to submit their quarrels with the natives to English arbitration, to adopt towards the natives the same general policy as that pursued by the English provinces, and even—although they made the concession very unwillingly—to enter into confederation. The meeting proceeded to pass resolutions against intercourse with the English and attendance at the Law Courts, and established a Volksraad with Pretorius as President to carry out this programme.

It was alleged at the time that a majority well inclined to accept the English rule were coerced by a violent minority, and that the party of independence rested its hopes of success upon strong expressions of opinion made by the Liberal candidates, especially by Mr. Gladstone, during the elections which led to the restoration of the Liberal party. But on the first point it would seem certain that, whatever may have been the views of the English settlers, the Boers as a whole had never accepted willingly the English government, and that the information sent to England describing their friendly attitude had been entirely misleading. On the other hand, the Ministry whether Conservative or Liberal could scarcely avoid recognising that it had undertaken the responsibility of supporting the interests of the English in the Colony, of those Boers who had been, as it was called, loyal, and of the natives. The Liberal Government was thus prevented from at once reversing the policy of its predecessors. Its object was to arrive at some peaceful and satisfactory solution, by which separate and independent government should be restored to the Boers and yet the interests of the English party respected. Such a solution was not to be arrived at. The declaration of Mr. Gladstone that he felt it his duty to maintain the annexation was received with bitter disappointment. The attitude of protest gradually ripened into serious disorder. The forcible resistance to a sale, to meet the taxes which a certain Boer in the neighbourhood of Potchefstroom had refused to pay,

The Liberal Government maintain the annexation of the Transvaal.



called for the presence of the military. Another great meeting was summoned, and in December 1880 the revolt broke out, and the flag of the Republic was hoisted at Heidelberg. Major Clarke and fifty soldiers defending the Courthouse in Potchefstroom were forced to surrender. A detachment of 250 men were fallen upon and defeated, with the loss of nearly half their number. Sir George Colley, the Governor of Natal, was obliged to undertake an invasion of the country. With a force too small for the purpose, and without waiting for

Defeat of the  
English at  
Majuba Hill.  
Feb. 1881.

reinforcements, he came upon the enemy at Langsnek, was beaten back in an assault upon the position, and when in February he attempted to turn it by occupying the Majuba Hill, the detachment he commanded was disastrously beaten and himself killed. The determination of the Boers to resist was obvious. Another instance was afforded of the difficulty of annexa-

Restoration of  
the Transvaal.  
March 1881.

tion and of the evils it entails; and the Liberal Government then in power thought it wiser, in spite of the clamour of their opponents, to give back their liberty to the Boers of the Transvaal, reserving only the sovereignty of the Queen, and a certain control over the foreign relations of the Republic. The project of Confederation was equally unsuccessful. Resolutions in its favour moved by Mr. Sprigg, the Prime Minister of Cape Town, found so little favour in the Assembly that they had to be withdrawn and the project dropped.

The foreign policy of Lord Beaconsfield's Government, which led it to attempt to extend English influence, and to support what it considered English interests regardless of the responsibilities which such a course entailed, was further illustrated in Egypt.

English policy  
in Egypt.

Ismail, the Khedive of Egypt, was a remarkable man, large and comprehensive in his views, speculative and lavish in the management of his finances, with an eager desire to bring his country within the limits of European politics, but governed wholly by a sense of personal interest and entirely regardless of the wellbeing of his subjects. The position of Egypt, lying on the highway to India and rendered more important by the creation of the Suez Canal, would have made the condition of the country of necessity an object of interest to English men, even though the large share they had taken in the financial speculations of the ruler had not connected them with it by the strongest pecuniary ties. To a Government with the avowed views of that at the time in office, the interests of the bondholders were in themselves an important consideration. The establishment in the country of a paramount influence, to which a door seemed open through

its financial difficulties, was a still greater object to Ministers who laid such stress on the imperial position of England in the East. Already, in 1875, English interference had checked the ambitious designs of the Khedive in Abyssinia and in Zanzibar, and the purchase of the Suez Canal shares, though it was not the great stroke of statecraft which it was at the time supposed to be, of necessity drew with it still closer relations with Egypt. The national insolvency of Turkey had been a large factor in producing the late war; a similar financial condition in Egypt might not improbably have produced a similar result. Mr. Cave was therefore sent out at the Khedive's own request, in 1875, to supervise the embarrassed accounts. His report, which was received in the following spring, at all events placed in a clear light what the difficulties of the country were. He pointed out as their cause the vast and hasty expenditure on public works, emphasised the result of reckless finance in the oppression of the poorer classes of Egyptians, and suggested that the only cure was the appointment of a trusted Minister, a European, as the head of a control department. Financially and politically the French were almost equally interested with the English in the prosperity of Egypt; in autumn therefore Mr. Goschen and M. Joubert were sent out as representatives of the bondholders to attempt to bring order into the finances. The reforms which they recommended and forced upon the Khedive were of a most trenchant character. About half the income was appropriated to meet the public debt; and the management of the revenue was placed almost entirely in European, and chiefly in English, hands. During the year 1877 this plan continued in operation, but its success did not appear sufficient, and in 1878 a new commission of inquiry at the head of which was Mr. Rivers Wilson was established. It advised still more stringent measures than those hitherto adopted. It imposed on the Princes of the Khedive's family the necessity of surrendering their estates for the public service, and at length induced the Khedive—with a declaration that his country was no longer African but a part of Europe—to accept, ostensibly at least, the position of a constitutional monarch. He appointed as his chief responsible ministers Nubar Pasha and Mr. Rivers Wilson. But the gradual concentration of power in English hands, coupled with the occupation of Cyprus, had excited the alarm of the French. They insisted upon having a representative in the Ministry, and M. de Blignières who had already been very serviceable under Mr. Goschen's arrangements was made Minister of Public Works. Thus the policy of Lord Beaconsfield

Gradual  
establishment  
of English  
influence.

was beginning to bear fruit ; the jealousy of France was excited, and England had become largely responsible for the good government of Egypt.

The Khedive, however, though he had appeared to acquiesce in the arrangements made, had his own views as to the meaning of the constitutional position he had assumed, and saw with apprehension the coil of European influence gradually tightening round him. He refused to submit to be a puppet in the hands of his three ministers, and taking advantage of a movement among the officers of the army, whose arrears were unpaid, drove Nubar from office in February, and demanded the right of being present at every Cabinet Council. Yielding to the pressure of the English and French Governments he accepted a sort of compromise. His son Tewfik was made President of the Council, but the absolute right of laying a veto upon every measure proposed was given to his English and French Ministers. The English Government appeared to be thus plunging still further into the responsibilities of Egyptian rule. But the struggle of the Khedive was not yet over. In less than a month he dismissed Tewfik and the ministers by a sudden *coup d'état* and established a wholly native Ministry under Cheriff Pasha. A national party, which was again to be heard of in a much more serious manner, was thus called into existence. But for the present it was easily suppressed. England and France indeed seemed inclined to accept the change, but Germany treating the matter as one of international concern interposed. The other Powers followed its lead and compelled Ismail to abdicate, placing Tewfik on the throne. The international character of the question which this crisis had exhibited seemed as if it might for a time entirely thwart the policy of the Western Powers. But after much negotiation the superior interest of France and England in the country was allowed, and by the consent of Europe a joint control under an English and French Minister was established, with power of inquiry into all branches of the public service, with seats in the Cabinet, and irremovable without consent of their respective Governments. It was thus in some degree as the agents of Europe, but with all the difficulties which had to be encountered placed upon their shoulders, that at the close of the Conservative Ministry England and France were undertaking the duty of managing Egyptian affairs.

Efforts of the Khedive to shake off foreign influence.

Egypt put under the joint control of England and France.

From a Government which had come into office chiefly for the purpose of reversing what they considered the worrying policy of the

last Ministry no important or sweeping domestic measures were to be expected. The country, used to the wide reforming measures of Mr. Gladstone, might have felt disappointed at the small measures of the present Cabinet had not its attention been almost entirely devoted to foreign affairs. But the determination of Government to restrict its domestic legislation to small measures of detailed improvement, while infusing into our foreign relations an unaccustomed spirit of self-assertion, had produced its natural results. The country was kept in a ferment by clamorous assaults upon Bulgarian atrocities; or by never-ending disputes—endless because they rested upon opinion only—as to the aggressive intentions of Russia; or different views as to the legal and constitutional aspects of the employment of the Indian army in European warfare; or the wisdom, if war was to be avoided, of placing in the hands of so self-asserting a Ministry a vote of credit for £6,000,000; or the justice or injustice of forcing half-civilised nations into war for the sake of establishing English influence, of insisting upon British Residents, or of acquiring scientific frontiers. It was not likely that in the midst of such heated discussion much time would be found for wide progressive measures affecting the political and social wellbeing of the English people.

Interest absorbed in foreign affairs.

Yet though the Parliamentary history of the time is singularly meagre in respect of great legislation, it was marked by events more important perhaps in their general effects than many great constitutional alterations have been, and to all appearance forcing on a change to be rather spoken of as revolutionary and structural than constitutional. For it is full of the rise and partial triumph of those obstructive tactics on the part of the Irish members which resulted, as they were intended to result, in throwing discredit upon the British Parliament, and, going hand in hand with the growth of Nationalist and Agrarian discontent in Ireland, forced into overwhelming prominence that part of the British dominions, and brought within measurable distance a system of divided Parliaments or Home Rule. There were fifty-one Irish members in the Parliament of 1874 who were avowed supporters of the principle of Home Rule. In the earlier sessions they accepted as their leader Mr. Butt, and subsequently Mr. Shaw. These men distinctly repudiated all idea of separation or of repealing the Act of Union, but they desired a separate Parliament for Irish affairs, taking their stand chiefly on the impossibility of the Imperial Parliament finding time to give proper attention to the wants of

Rise of obstruction in Parliament.



Ireland, or possessing sufficient knowledge of its requirements to listen with intelligence and sympathy to the demands of its representatives. But they sought their object by legitimate and old-fashioned Parliamentary means. It was not so with the younger and more eager men who, before this Parliament was dissolved, had pushed them from their seats and taken to themselves the leadership of the Irish party. Of these avowedly the leader was Mr. Parnell, a Protestant of English education, and unlike the greater part of Irish orators of a singularly cool and unimpassioned nature. He numbered among his faithful supporters Mr O'Donnell, Mr O'Connor Power, a man of education and real eloquence, and Mr. Biggar, a Belfast merchant, gifted at least with matchless effrontery which no amount of ridicule or disapprobation could abash. It was little thought when this party first entered upon their policy of obstruction, with the avowed object of throwing difficulties in the way of all legislation till Irish questions received what they considered a fair amount of attention, or of forcing the confession that one Parliament was incapable of grappling with the business of both countries, that their manœuvres would lead them to the verge of success. Disowned by the majority of their own party, repudiated by the acknowledged Home Rule leader, they excited at first feelings only of ridicule and vexation at their wearisome obstinacy.

The Irish party, strong as they believed in numbers, were disappointed in their hopes of influencing politics in the House. During the years 1874 and 1875 they had maintained an attitude of somewhat sulky isolation. It was perhaps this apparent failure of their Parliamentary tactics, this apparent want of energy on the part of their leader, which encouraged the small band of obstructives in their first movements. And perhaps to this may be traced the burst of Irish energy which marked the session of 1876. It seemed impossible that time should be found for the number of Irish bills of which notice was given, but, by an ingenious use of the machinery of the House by putting down the same bill in the names of different members, the Irish contrived to get hold of nearly all the Tuesdays and Wednesdays during the session. Some of these bills were of real interest. The Land Act of 1870 was upon its trial. It had been evident that means of evading its action had been found, and Mr. Butt moved a Bill for its amendment, which was intended to render free sale of tenant right absolute, to prevent large holders from contracting themselves out of the action of the law, and to deprive landlords of the arbitrary power

Activity of the  
Irish Members  
in 1876.

of eviction. The division showed how completely the two great parties of the country were at one in their opposition to the Home Rule movement. Only fifty-six members voted in favour of the Bill. Nor when Mr. Butt moved in a more direct manner the question of Home Rule, demanding an inquiry into the condition and wants of the Irish Government, could he rally more than sixty-one votes in his favour. But when the Irish, throwing aside their separatist tendencies, made their demands rest upon the equal treatment of the two countries the result was very different. Two attempts to equalise the one the municipal the other the borough franchise in England and Ireland were received with comparative approbation. In the one case the Government defeated the motion which was moved by Major O'Gorman by twenty-eight votes, in the other by a majority of thirteen only. Indeed the strong feeling that the wishes of Ireland must be attended to produced a more striking result even than this. Supported by Mr. Gladstone and the whole weight of the Liberal party, the motion for closing public-houses on Sunday was carried against the Government by fifty-seven votes.

Meanwhile in Ireland itself the discontent of the tenant farmers was by no means assuaged ; party spirit exhibited itself in fierce riots at Belfast ; and dissatisfaction with the gentle leading of Mr. Butt, producing bitter recriminations between himself and Mr. Smyth the leader of the Nationalists, became more and more evident. The little knot of obstructives in the House continued therefore in spite of want of sympathy from their own party to pursue their course. Already in the earlier sessions they had begun to show the tactics they intended to pursue, and Mr. Biggar especially had made himself notorious by the unprecedented length of his pointless speeches. He and his friends began to be regarded in Ireland as the truer representatives of the national aspirations. In 1877 their action brought on a crisis. They did not confine themselves to speaking upon Irish measures, and when on Monday the 2d of July a vote for the Army Reserve Force came on in Committee, Mr. O'Connor Power intervened with a motion for reporting progress. He had but eight followers, yet in face of an overwhelming majority this small band insisted upon driving the House again and again to a division. It was not till seventeen such divisions had been taken that at a quarter past seven on Tuesday morning the House was counted out. Conduct of the same sort characterised a debate on the 25th of July upon the motion for going into Committee upon the South Africa Bill. The Chancellor of the

Obstructive  
scenes in  
Parliament.

Exchequer thought it necessary to move that Mr. Parnell should be suspended from the service of the House for two days, for having wilfully and persistently obstructed public business ; and on the 27th he went still further, and submitted two new rules of procedure, by which when any member was declared to be out of order or to have disregarded the authority of the chair, a motion might be put without debate that he be not heard during the remainder of the debate, and, secondly, that no member should move for the report of progress, or that the Speaker do leave the chair, twice in the same Committee. Tenacious as Parliament has ever been of its rules and of the rights of minorities, it was so exasperated with the conduct of the obstructives that the resolutions encountered the opposition of only seven members. But Mr. Parnell and his friends were not inclined to submit. On the 31st, again on the South Africa Bill, they contrived to keep the House in continuous sitting for twenty-six hours. Government constantly refused to give way to the motions for adjournment, and it became a question of physical endurance. Chairman after Chairman was called on to preside, relays of members relieved those worn out in the struggle, and it was not till Sir Stafford Northcote threw out at length a hint that he should proceed to put his rules into execution that the obstructives yielded. Again on the 12th of April 1878 a wild scene took place in the House. The Earl of Leitrim had been barbarously murdered ; and Mr. O'Donnell thought fit by way of excuse to make a violent attack upon his character. So great was the scandal that it was thought more decent to clear the House of strangers. During the secret sitting some of the Irish members, shocked at the conduct of their colleagues, accused Mr. O'Donnell and Mr. Parnell of endeavouring to found a reputation on apologies for assassination. A storm of recrimination of the most violent character ensued and kept the House in disorder for three hours. The incident marks a complete break-up of the existing Home Rule party. Disgusted at the indecent violence of his followers, Mr. Butt withdrew from the leadership.

The obstruction once fairly afloat continued in spite of the new rules to interrupt the course of business for the whole duration of this Parliament. It indeed proved contagious ; on one occasion at least the more advanced Liberals did not fall short of the Irish in obstinacy. In 1879 a Bill was introduced for regulating the discipline of the army. It had been long felt that there were anomalies in the methods of military justice which required correction. The last Ministry had themselves undertaken the duty of producing a regular military code.

The Bill had been drafted and carefully revised, and now after a fresh revision might be supposed to represent the wishes of both parties upon the subject. It was accordingly supported not only by the Government but by the regular Opposition, and though the unpopular idea had been spread that it was intended to increase the power of the Crown, for some days its clauses were briefly discussed and passed with businesslike rapidity. But before long the question of the use of flogging in the army introduced a bitter element of strife. Amendments of all sorts were brought in, limiting the number of lashes, changing the word lashes to stripes, defining the character of the instrument with which they should be inflicted, and urging the total abolition of the punishment. Colonel Stanley who had the management of the Bill refused at first to give way, but subsequently was forced into concession. Concession thus grudgingly made rendered the assaults upon the Bill only more inveterate. Mr. Parnell and his friends took the opportunity afforded them by the Liberals of using their ordinary tactics in all their fulness. Nor was it till quite the end of the session, and after the rejection of a resolution in favour of the abolition of flogging moved by Lord Hartington, that the Bill was got through the House. So much time had it occupied, that in order to allow of its becoming law before the close of the session, it was hurried through the Upper House without debate.

Obstruction  
used against  
the Army  
Discipline Bill.  
April 1879.

It was impossible for the public to read the reports of these stormy scenes, and to observe the unchecked violence of the language used, without feeling that the dignity of Parliament, of which hitherto Englishmen had been perhaps unduly proud, had suffered a severe blow. The Irish had found a weak place in the arrangements of an assembly hitherto governed by the supposition that some mutual forbearance and courtesy would be exhibited in the strife of parties. Their unscrupulous use of the discovery they had made, justifiable only as a weapon of despair, was driving home the truth that it is impossible—without recourse to measures little short of coercive—to suppress even a small body of irreconcilable opponents, who, smarting under the feeling of oppression, regard themselves as emancipated from the ordinary rules of political warfare. Such was the position occupied by Mr. Parnell and his friends. Deeply impressed with the sufferings of their native land, which were indeed very real, and seeing no cure for them but the transference of the management of Irish affairs to Irish hands, they regarded some form of Home Rule as an absolute necessity. All

Determination  
of the Home  
Rulers.



efforts made in due Parliamentary form and with due respect for Parliamentary etiquette having proved ineffectual, they threw to the winds all restraint, and determined to fight the battle in a less scrupulous manner. But they were well aware of the close connection of social and political questions. If the social evils of Ireland could be cured only by political changes, political changes could be insured only by engaging the social passions of the nation. They saw in the present state of Ireland an opportunity for bringing this lever to bear. For the relief which the Land Law of 1870 was intended to secure for the tenants, in part thwarted by the defects of the law itself, had been also neutralised by the depression of agriculture. There was every sign of approaching distress, even of famine. The potato crop had failed, the rainy season had prevented the drying of the peat—the only fuel of the country, pauperism was on the increase, the traffic returns of the railways showed a considerable falling off, there was less consumption of luxuries, and voices were raised demanding public works for the relief of poverty.

The use they made of the distress in Ireland.

It was in a country thus already prepared by distress and want that Mr. Parnell and his followers began in June to set on foot an agitation against rent. It would be fairer to call it an agitation against landlordism. The cure proposed was nothing less than the getting rid entirely of landlords, and the establishment of a peasant proprietary. Mr. O'Connor Power may be said to have summed up the views of the agitation. "If you ask me," he said, "to state in a brief sentence what is the Irish land question, I say it is the restoration of the land to the people of Ireland; and if you ask me for the solution of the land question in accordance with philosophy, experience, and common sense, I shall be equally brief and explicit,—abolish landlordism, and make the man who occupies and cultivates the soil the owner of the soil." It was in June that the agitation first began. It encountered at first the same sort of opposition from the old Home Rule party that obstruction had encountered in Parliament. At a meeting in Dublin of the Home Rule League, on the 21st of August, groans were given for absent members, although they had explained that their absence was due to their devotion to the land question. But when Parliament rose and the members were free to give all their energy to the agitation, it became evident that their views so far from going beyond the wishes of the mass of Irishmen fell short of them. Through the months of August, September, and October, meetings were held in which assertions as to the necessity of getting rid of the landlords called forth ominous cries, which showed

Mr. Parnell's political agitation in Ireland.

that the idea of the use of physical force was very prevalent. It cannot be said that Mr. Parnell gave any countenance to such a feeling, unless it be found in his failure seriously to reprehend it. After contrasting the various ways in which landlords had been got rid of in other countries of Europe, he said that in Ireland he looked only to peaceful and constitutional means for the settlement of the question, and proceeded to explain what those means were. They were in fact the adoption of the obstructive policy pursued in Parliament. He suggested that farmers should combine and ask for due reductions. "It was then," he said, "the duty of the tenantry to pay no rent until they got the reduction. If they kept a firm grip of their homesteads no power on earth could prevail against them." But he calculated that such conduct would drive the landlords to sell. "They would find," he said, "after one or two seasons like that, that the landlord class would be only too willing to come in and say, 'For God's sake give us the value of our lands, and let us go in peace!' and they could afford to purchase the land, because on account of the present system the land of Ireland was not yet half cultivated." To support his agitation and assist his ends in both directions he proposed, on the one side, the establishment of a national convention consisting of 300 members chosen by popular election; the repeal of the old Convention Act in the last session had rendered such an assembly legal. Its objects were to be political. On the other side he established the Irish Land League, whose primary object was no longer to secure fixity of tenure and fair rents, but peasant proprietorship. For this end subscriptions were to be sought, especially in America, for the purpose of buying out the landlords. This appeal to the American Irish Mr. Parnell undertook himself to carry across the Atlantic.

The movement seemed to the Government dangerous enough to require their interference. A meeting at Gurteen in Sligo on November the 2d afforded the required opportunity. The full programme of the agitators was there urged in words of considerable violence. The people were advised to refuse to submit to eviction, to withhold rent, neither to take nor to suffer others to take land from which a man had been evicted; even the resumption, as it was called, by the people of what had originally belonged to them was mentioned with approbation. Mr. Killen, Mr. Daly, and Mr. Michael Davitt, who were the chief speakers, were apprehended on a charge of using seditious language; and subsequently Mr. Brennan, who at a great meeting at Bala in Mayo had adopted Mr. Davitt's

Arrest of Irish  
leaders.

words, was added to their number. These arrests and the absence of Mr. Parnell somewhat allayed the agitation for a time. His conduct during the mission he had undertaken laid him open to a good deal of blame. The distress in Ireland had been increasing, and it was avowedly with the intention of collecting funds to relieve the pressure of want that Mr. Parnell had gone to America. At the same time he had always declared that this was but a secondary object, and that he chiefly aimed at exciting the sympathy and support of the Irish in America for their fellow-countrymen in their efforts to change the laws regarding land. Not unnaturally it seemed strange that he should refuse to serve on a committee for the relief of distress, if, as was asserted, famine was not only approaching but had actually come to Ireland. It seemed a perverse and cold-blooded proceeding to postpone the crying needs of the moment to political ends. Yet there was in fact no inconsistency in his conduct. He acted as Mr. Shaw acted in moving an amendment on the Address when the Parliament met in February. He looked beyond the immediate present and desired to attack what he regarded as the permanent cause of recurring distress.

It was not only the Irish members who took the opportunity of freedom from Parliamentary service to rouse agitation. The Parliament was of necessity drawing towards its close. Its course had been marked by events which render it in some way the most remarkable of modern times. Never since the Reform Bill had the Conservative party been able to carry out in so masterful a way the principles by which they were actuated ; never had they been able to give the nation so clear a view of the course and consequences of their policy. Although at the instant there was no single great question on which the opinion of the nation could be taken, there was a rivalry both of parties and of individuals, a clearly marked divergence in every principle of government, which promised to give to the decisions at the coming elections a most momentous character. The last Ministry of Mr. Gladstone, the present Ministry of Lord Beaconsfield, complete expositions respectively of the principles of the parties and of their leaders, afforded ample ground on which the constituencies could form a judgment. And both parties thoroughly understood the critical character of the occasion. Never before had England resounded with so many utterances of first-rate importance as marked the autumnal recess of 1879. There was no immediate proof of any change in the general feeling of the

Object of Mr.  
Parnell's visit  
to America.

General review  
of the Conser-  
vative Parlia-  
ment.

Autumnal  
speeches of  
1879 against  
the Ministry.

country. The bye elections showed if anything a continued preponderance in favour of the Conservatives. But a considerable number of Liberal successes in the municipal elections seemed to show that among the boroughs at least the tide had begun to turn. The indictment which could be formed against the Ministry was indeed a strong one. It was difficult to repel the assertion that their great foreign policy had resulted in failure. Russia had not been checked, but had been alienated. Turkey had not been saved, but had been stripped of many of its provinces. The acquisition of Cyprus entailed nothing but expense. English influence in Egypt had not been established; on the contrary France had made good its claims to partnership, with the chance of endless complications. South Africa, pacified for a while by forcible annexation and a disastrous war, had not been confederated. Instead of a strong and independent Afghanistan, a broken and rebellious country was scarcely kept in order by the British troops that occupied it. If the foreign policy was unsatisfactory there seemed but little in the management of domestic affairs to compensate for it. No measure of first-rate importance had been added to the statute-book, though there were certain bills, such as the Army Discipline Bill, the Dublin University Bill, and the completion of the Judicature Acts, for which the Government deserved credit. But in the chief characteristic of the Parliamentary warfare of the time they had shown a considerable want of vigour. Obstruction had not been met with much firmness, and even the resolutions which had been passed to limit it had remained unused. Their finance had not been particularly successful. The sinking fund established for the gradual payment of the National Debt had met the fate of all sinking funds, and been employed to meet the deficit caused by the expenses of the foreign policy. The expenditure of the year had risen, especially that on the military and naval services. The Budgets had been of the most unpretending character. The Chancellor of the Exchequer had seemed contented to leave things exactly as they were, and to meet any deficit that arose by the easy machinery of the income-tax or by short loans. The Government was even charged, though with some injustice, with the wave of depression which was passing over the country; confidence it was said had been shaken, with its inevitable consequence, a fall of trade.

It was plain however that such charges as these rested upon a basis of opinion only. It was open to the adherents of Government to reply that England had never of late years occupied so important a part in the politics of the world: that even at

Defence of  
Government.



the risk of some disaster the recognition of its imperial responsibilities was the proper duty of a great nation : that the Eastern question had been settled without war yet without injury to British interests : the very absence of what is called sensational legislation was in itself an advantage after the hurried and injurious violence of the last Ministry : the maintenance at their full efficiency of the military services was a matter of necessity for a powerful and imperial nation ; and the depression under which England was suffering was to be traced solely to economic causes. It was thus that the country rang from one end to the other with excited oratory, supporting one or other of these views and admired or blamed according to the opinion of the hearers. To which view the majority of the constituencies would incline was to be settled in a few months.

A brief session intervened. The Government did nothing important to change the balance of opinion. The means taken to meet the famine in Ireland were explained. The terms on which money was advanced for improvements to land-owners had been lowered to one per cent. ; a circular had been issued to Boards of Guardians impressing upon them the necessity of being prepared for possible contingencies ; they had been instructed to notify any great distress in their unions, and the Lord-Lieutenant was authorised to summon a meeting of the baronial sessions, at whose instance useful and profitable public works were to be undertaken. As the Government in acting thus had gone beyond their powers, a Bill indemnifying them and authorising the measures taken was introduced early in the session. It met with bitter criticism from the Irish, who seemed unable to understand the extreme difficulty of giving in such a manner as to avoid injury to the self-reliance of the recipients, and were indignant that the landlords should be employed as intermediaries in distributing the public loans. The pressing necessity of these measures placed them first in the programme of the session. They were followed by a show of vigour, in the determined attempt of Government to put an end to obstruction by the introduction of a new standing order, placing upon the Speaker the duty of declaring when obstruction had arisen, but leaving the power of punishing it in the hands of the House. Both the great parties were equally eager for this step, which was therefore taken without serious difficulty. It was very generally supposed that the Government were contemplating, in preparation for the coming election, some sweeping domestic measure probably with regard to land, for which the ground was to be cleared

Measures to  
relieve Irish  
famine.  
Feb. 1880.

Measures  
against  
obstruction.

by the removal of obstruction. But no such measure was proposed. The land legislation which had been promised in the Queen's Speech was limited to a lessening of the expenses of conveyance, and to the placing in the hands of the life tenant of settled property the power under certain restrictions of selling or leasing it.

In none of these debates had there been any appearance of weakness or division in the Conservative party : nor did there seem any particular ground on which to dissolve. It would appear to have been the Metropolitan Water Bill which ultimately fixed the date of dissolution. The Government attempted to consolidate the seven Water Companies of London in the hands of a central body created by Government. It was a large scheme involving the transference of stock valued at more than £27,000,000.

Metropolitan  
Water Works  
Bill.

The suggestion was at once assailed upon the ground that the sum to be paid the Water Companies was far too liberal. The contention seemed to be proved by the enormous rise which took place in the value of the stocks in anticipation of the coming change. It was whispered that not only had much legitimate speculation been engendered, but that early knowledge of the intentions of Government had enabled some speculators to make large sums of money. The disapprobation felt outside the House seemed likely to be repeated within its walls, and in order to avoid a possible weakening of their majority the Government considered it desirable to put an end immediately to the Parliament which would in due course have been dissolved in a few months.

The immediate dissolution was made known on the 8th of March. For a few days longer the Parliament continued its sittings to get through the necessary work of the Budget. But all political interest was now centred in the coming election ; one after another in rapid succession the addresses of the party leaders appeared, and again as in the preceding autumn the country rang with political speech-making. The most important utterance of the Premier was contained in a letter addressed to the Duke of Marlborough, the Lord-Lieutenant for Ireland, published on the 9th of March. It was eminently characteristic of the man. Whatever may be thought of Lord Beaconsfield's policy or of his methods of action, it is impossible to deny the correctness of his foresight. The point of his letter was the danger under Liberal rule of the disintegration of the Empire. His opponents, he asserted, had attempted "to enfeeble our colonies by their policy of decomposition," and now there was every risk that the same process would be carried

Lord Beacons-  
field's letter.  
March 9, 1880.

further, and that the close union of England and Ireland would be broken. But "the power and unity of the English Empire could alone give it that ascendancy in the councils of Europe which would secure peace." He insinuated in a manner which could not be mistaken the complicity of the Liberal party with the Home Rulers and Separatists of Ireland. It was there that to his mind the great danger lay. The connection was indignantly repudiated by the Liberal leaders, who professed a zeal equal to Lord Beaconsfield's for the maintenance of the Empire, and asserted that the policy of self-government as applied to the Colonies had proved the only efficacious method for avoiding disruption. With regard to Ireland they denied in the strongest terms the possibility of yielding to the wishes of the Nationalists or the Home Rule party. Yet although Lord Beaconsfield's assertion was treated as a party move, and as casting a wholly unwarrantable aspersion upon the character of his opponents, it had in it much of truth. Just as he had foreseen at the time of the Land Act the gradual approach of a general opposition to rent, so he now foresaw the time when the demand for Home Rule would be supported by a large and influential section of Englishmen. Such foresight is one of the attributes of the highest statesmanship. Yet when it leads only to an attempt to stereotype a bygone political attitude, and to check rather than guide the inevitable progress of political and social forces, it is less effective in influencing the history of a nation than the more limited view of statesmen who may not indeed perceive the full scope of the measures they advise, but whose sympathies are keenly alive to the great movements of public thought and opinion. Lord Beaconsfield was right in asserting that "the decision of the nation would materially influence its future fortune and shape its destiny." That peace could not be obtained by the passive principle of non-interference but "rested on the presence, not to say the ascendancy, of England in the Councils of Europe" was an assertion belonging to a state of things which had wholly passed away, and which the political conscience of England could never suffer to return.

While the Premier thus illustrated at once the greatness and weakness of his views, his rival hastened to lay before the world his more progressive programme and to defend himself and his party from the charges brought against him. He betook himself to his new constituencies of Midlothian, and there poured out a stream of oratory so copious as almost to attract ridicule from his enemies. The ridicule was misplaced. In the autumn his reception in Edinburgh and along the line of his journey had

Mr. Gladstone's  
Midlothian  
Speeches.

been extraordinarily enthusiastic. It was no less so now. His fervid eloquence, the solemnity with which he emphasised the importance of the crisis, and the boldness with which, while criticising the Government, he repudiated all idea of sudden change of policy, inspired with an entirely new life the whole Liberal party in the country. The leadership of Lord Hartington had been in some ways able. His powers as a speaker had grown with practice; the steadiness and strength and solidity of his character were fully acknowledged. But he had not possessed that power of inspiration or that complete sympathy with popular feeling which were the peculiar gifts of Mr. Gladstone. The voice of their old leader, who seemed to outdo himself in his energy, and his outspoken expressions of confidence of success, roused the party to an enthusiasm which carried all before it. His burning words, supported by the able speeches of the other Liberal leaders who took their tone from him, laid before the people the real character of the choice they were required to make, and recalled England to its old traditions. The phantom of old-world imperialism lately so popular vanished at his touch, and the country gave its answer with no doubtful voice. The Liberal majority at the election was sufficient to counterbalance the Conservatives and the Home Rulers combined.

Liberal result  
of the elections.  
April 1880.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### *GROWTH OF THE DEMOCRACY.*

MANY of the chief questions of the time were left unsettled on Mr. Gladstone's return to office. The completion even of the reform of the representative system by the equalisation of the franchise in town and country, and the accompanying redistribution of seats was still wanting ; it was impossible to foresee the developments through which the Irish question might pass ; restraints on intemperance and the acceptance at least of some form of local option were still things of the future ; the line of conduct with regard both to domestic and foreign affairs which the new constituencies would adopt remained to be proved. But the great change which the course of more than forty years from the passing of the Reform Bill had produced in England had been virtually accomplished. The events which accompanied the election of 1880, and the social changes visible in the country in all directions, gave unanswerable proof that England had become a democracy. Unguarded by any written document, the Constitution of England has been open to continual growth and development. Even while the main outline and framework of the Constitution has been preserved, the shifting of the balance of forces within it has produced changes as complete as though the framework itself had been remodelled. Such a change in the relation existing between the various powers of the State had taken place in the course of the last forty years.

The line which separated the Upper from the Lower House had been broadened. The close connection which subsisted between a House of Lords and a House of Commons largely composed of their relatives and nominees had been broken by the Reform Bill of 1832. The aristocratic element in the Lower House had been supplanted by the representatives of the middle class. To the theoretic Liberals who had taken the lead in the reformed House of Commons the Second Chamber appeared an obstacle in the way of that supremacy of the national representation which it was

Separation  
between the  
two Houses.

their chief object to obtain. They were full of hostility, often outspoken enough, to the rival House. Disagreement between the Houses was no longer easily got over ; one party or other must yield, and the wisdom of the leaders of the Lords generally induced them to avoid contest. After the passing of the second Reform Bill a further change was visible. The Lords by no means abdicated their position as a legislative body ; on the contrary, as in the case of the rejection of the repeal of the paper-duty in 1860, they gave proof of renewed activity. Yet though their action roused a storm for a time, the change which had taken place in the character and position of the Commons tended rather to decrease the open hostility between the Houses. It was rather as a useless and superfluous adjunct to the Constitution, than as a rival in power, that the House of Lords became henceforward objectionable to the advanced Liberals of the Lower House.

For the power of the Lower House had become irresistible, at the same time that its position as an independent body had been seriously affected. Its increase of power arose from the widespread mass of opinion on which it rested ; its loss of position on the fact that it had ceased to be much more than the mouthpiece of that opinion. To this end the organisation necessary for the management in the interests of party of the wide half-educated constituencies had largely contributed. What has been spoken of as the "caucus" system had been introduced. In each constituency the management of the party and the selection of the candidate had been intrusted to a committee of some 300 or 400 of the more prominent politicians. Themselves chosen on distinctly party grounds, they naturally selected that candidate who was most ready to pledge himself to vote for the objects of the party. Independence on the part of the candidate became a disqualification, and the members sent up to Parliament ceased to be representatives and became delegates. It is plain that under such circumstances the House of Commons lost its position as the political instructor of the country. It was to the constituencies themselves, and not to their representatives already pledged, that rhetoric and argument must henceforward be addressed. The flood of extra Parliamentary eloquence which marked the election of 1880 shows how thoroughly this change had been carried out, and how completely it was understood by the leaders.

The Lower House loses its representative character.

The personal character of politics was a further result of the decision of political questions being thus thrown into the hands of the voters themselves. It was not to be supposed that even a majority in the new constituencies should be capable of forming political opinions.

But they were capable of appreciating general principles and tendencies when represented by a leader ; and thus political contests assumed the form of rivalries between individual chiefs, and, at elections, party cries were simplified into the names of Gladstone or of Beaconsfield. It

Increase of  
sentiment in  
politics.

was the same incapacity for real political opinion, the same want of political knowledge, which lay at the bottom of what is perhaps the most prominent instance of democratic change, the predominance given in politics to sentiment. The course of politics ceased to be directed in accordance with highly instructed, perhaps sophisticated thought, and fell chiefly under the guidance of the general feeling of what it was upon the whole right to do. The intricacies of diplomacy fell into disrepute, the advantages of balanced powers lost credit. It was indeed a part of the creed of the leading Liberals that the moral judgments of the people at large might be fully trusted. In full accordance with this state of things was the direct appeal to sentiment made by both the leaders in 1880. The love of imperialism, the somewhat vulgar patriotism which demands the ascendancy of the country in the councils of the world, was the sentiment which Lord Beaconsfield hoped to reach. The love of justice, the desire for the removal of social and political inequalities within the nation itself, combined with the unobtrusive enjoyment of greatness and prosperity shared by other nations, was the somewhat nobler sentiment to which Mr. Gladstone addressed himself. The feeling for justice was no doubt quickened by the difficulties in which the aggressive policy of the late Ministry had involved the Empire, and given its full weight by party organisation. Mr. Gladstone's victory was the result.

Changes in  
Society.

While thus whether for good or evil the democratic element in the Constitution had been continually gathering power, a similar change had been passing over society. The vast increase of wealth, derived chiefly from trade and manufacture, had not only added very greatly to the importance of the moneyed class, but had necessarily affected the position and aspirations of those engaged in industrial pursuits. The extraordinary development of the Empire and the rapid acquisition of wealth form in some respects the most striking characteristic of the time

Increase of  
the Empire.

It was indeed not without cause that Lord Beaconsfield had found in the cry of Imperial interests a word to conjure with. Those interests had grown to vast proportions. The Colonial Empire had in mere population quadrupled ; the 4,000,000 which was an outside calculation of its numbers at the

accession of the Queen had risen to nearly 16,000,000. Ports which forty years before had been little more than a few scattered wooden villages had become vast and prosperous cities, from which and to which flowed annually a stream of commerce, which could not be estimated at less than £150,000,000. Since the time of Lord Durham and the establishment of the Canadian Constitution, nearly all the more important colonies had been granted self-government and were connected with the mother country by the slenderest of ties. It would be no doubt wrong to trace their development entirely to this cause. Many circumstances and influences had combined to produce this result. The accumulation of population and of capital in England, and the necessity of finding outlets for it; the gold discoveries of Australia; the demand for raw materials in the constantly increasing manufacture of the mother country; the removal of the stigma laid upon some of the colonies by the system of transportation; all these had played their part in the general development. But it is scarcely to be doubted that the wise policy which bestowed on the rising communities the privileges of self-government had been a principal cause both of their prosperity and their continual loyalty. Though the peculiar condition of India had demanded a different treatment it none the less enjoyed its fair share of the general improvement. The population of British India had nearly doubled; tributary states had passed under the more beneficent rule of England, till four-fifths of the vast population were directly under British rule. Its revenues had risen from £22,000,000 to nearly £70,000,000; it was no longer a burden upon the mother country. To keep together so vast an Empire, to maintain its loyalty, to harmonise its jarring interests, to make its widespread members integral portions of the British State is a worthy object of statesmanship, and may well be purchased by considerable self-denial on the part of the nation. It is true that the increase of legitimate Imperial responsibility implied by the extension of the colonies had of necessity brought with it much increase of expenditure. In 1838 £51,000,000 had sufficed to meet the requirements of Government. In 1880 no less a sum than £84,000,000 was required. The larger portion of this extra expenditure was for the support of the army and navy. This increase began at the time of the Crimean war; the comparative failure of the army at that time seemed to show that the money hitherto granted for warlike purposes had been insufficient. Nor had the circumstances of Europe subsequently allowed of any return to more economical estimates. Every great nation had reorganised and largely increased its army, and even



when not actually engaged in war had thought it necessary to maintain a watchful and guarded attitude. England was unable to withdraw from the general movement, and although its army could not be considered as sufficient for any great offensive measures, the defence of itself and its colonies in the presence of the great armaments of foreign countries had probably rendered the increase of expenditure necessary.

Fortunately the additional burden upon the finances of the country had been met by a corresponding addition to its resources. It is difficult to say how much of the increased wealth depended upon changes in the financial system of the country, but as commercial prosperity and the system of finance react upon each other, it is not unreasonable to attribute it principally to those improvements in finance which were introduced by Sir Robert Peel. At the beginning of the reign in spite of the comparatively small expenditure the yearly budget showed a constant deficit, while at the same time industry suffered severely from the pressure of the Excise and protective Customs duties. In 1842 Sir Robert Peel called upon the nation to make an effort to restore the equilibrium of the finances, and proposed, as at a time of great emergency, the reimposition of the income-tax, properly speaking a war tax. At the same time he took the opportunity of largely reducing the Customs duties on a great number of articles. The policy thus begun was maintained. The repeal of the Corn Laws in 1846 marked the triumph of free-trade principles; under Mr. Gladstone and the Chancellors of the Exchequer who succeeded him they were carried to completion. The success of the change was so great that had it not been for the interruption caused by war and by the increase of military expenditure, the income-tax might perhaps, as was originally intended, have proved but a temporary burden. But at no time was it found possible to do without it, and it became a regular part of the fiscal system, indeed perhaps too completely the mainstay of each successive Chancellor. No tax once taken off has ever been successfully reimposed, nor does it seem possible to attempt any new form of indirect taxation. Although it was not so intended, the new financial system fell in exactly with the general democratic growth. It resulted in a complete alteration of the proportion of indirect to direct taxation, and not only threw as a matter of course a far larger burden upon the classes above the artisans, but also placed upon the same class of comparatively well-to-do people the burden of meeting the general increase of expenditure and the extraordinary demand

Improved  
financial  
system.

upon the public purse which circumstances from time to time required.

Under the new conditions of finance the industry and trade of the country advanced with giant strides. The coal and iron industries, which formed the basis of English commercial wealth, were quadrupled ; the wool, the linen, and the cotton manufactures were doubled ; in the trade with foreign countries the exports advanced from £45,000,000 to nearly £200,000,000, and the imports at a similar rate. It is estimated, upon the basis of the income-tax returns, that the value of the property of the United Kingdom amounted in 1880 to nearly £9,000,000,000 as against £4,000,000,000 in 1837. But the mere accumulation of wealth, while it undoubtedly largely increased the number and influence of the middle class and raised to social preponderance the possessors of moneyed wealth, affected also the great mass of the working class, professional or artisan. Had it not been so the result would have been merely to accentuate the difference of classes and to set an ever-broadening gap between the rich and poor. There is a general tendency to suppose that this fatal result actually occurred, nor can it be denied that the distribution of wealth threw the greater share of the advantages of its increase into the hands of men of capital. Yet it is impossible, in the face of statistics derived from the income-tax returns, and from a comparison of prices in relation to wages, to deny that professional incomes had considerably increased, that the number of those whose wealth placed them within the area of the income-tax was constantly larger, or that the artisan was in a better position than he had ever previously been. All the necessities of life freed from taxation had become cheaper, and the standard of comfort had unquestionably risen, so that articles were now considered as necessities which forty years before the poor man would scarcely have dreamt of possessing. It might seem that the improvements in machinery and the greater productiveness of the same amount of labour, while tending to the cheapening of commodities, must have acted prejudicially on the workmen by decreasing the amount of work required. But these improvements had been attended with such an expansion of manufactures, that although the population had largely increased, the demand for labour had more than kept pace with it. It is to be observed that the increase of population had been almost entirely in the classes of professional men and artisans. There was little or no change to be perceived in the number of ordinary labourers. This would seem to point to the one-sided character of the develop-

One-sided  
growth of  
prosperity.

Condition of  
the artisan.

ment which had taken place. It was to the advantage of commerce and manufactures that legislation and the course of events had alike contributed. Chiefly through the instrumentality of Trades Unions the artisan had succeeded in obtaining higher wages, and, reaping the advantage of cheaper production, he was now in a better state than he had ever before been. He had been raised to political importance, and the sense of his new position was constantly forced upon him by the political parties who sought his aid. In the presence of rapidly accumulating wealth, of which he could not but regard his own work as the origin, he was naturally inclined to turn his attention to the laws which governed the distribution of this wealth, and to seek a larger share of it for himself. Popular support was abundantly given to this aspiration of the working man, for it fell in exactly with the conscientious sentiment of the time. The uneasiness of the working classes in towns would thus appear to have depended rather upon success than upon depression. It showed itself in the repeated recurrence of strikes and hardly fought battles between employers and employed. Victory declared itself sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other ; on the whole the result was favourable to the claims of the working man. But the artisans had not yet advanced seriously any of those views in favour of a reconstitution of society which have since forced themselves into notice, although there were indications of their approach among the more advanced Trades-unionists and the International Society.

Yet in one direction the principles of political economy as hitherto accepted were being called in question, and that not by the working men themselves, but by a class above them. For the legislation which had been so advantageous to manufactures and commerce had acted unfavourably upon agriculture. It was no longer possible to feed the increased population on the produce of the kingdom alone ; the greater facilities afforded to the importation of foreign supplies by the employment of steamships, had worked hand in hand with the removal of preferential duties, and the agriculturist found himself face to face with a vast foreign competition. The vitality of manufactures centred chiefly in cities, drew the population more and more from the country districts, and the difficulties of competition were still further heightened by a comparative paucity of labour ; Trades-unionism under the able guidance of Mr. Arch found its way into the rural populations, and wages rose there as well as elsewhere. The advantage gained by the labourer proved detrimental to the farmer. During the very height of pro-

Condition of  
Agriculture.

prosperity, about the year 1870, this was not felt ; the foreigner had not yet organised his competition, and the landlords had been able considerably to raise their rents. But the pressure of increased rent and increased labour payments proved before long, when they were exposed to the full force of competition, disastrous to the farmers. Thus finding themselves hard pressed in the midst of general prosperity, the farmers began to lend a ready ear to suggestions for improving their position, which might not improbably prove to be the beginning of a great social change. The example of Ireland was before them ; the successful agitation which had produced the Irish Land Law, and the view of the limited character of property in land which that law seemed to recognise, began to have their effect in England. Demands for lowered rent, cries against the tyranny of landlords, suggestions coming chiefly from America that the nationalisation of land was both just and desirable, began to be heard. That land is an absolute necessity of life, that its amount is limited, and that it is in the hands of few, were held to distinguish it from other commodities. The right of the owner to appropriate the unearned increment, that is to say, the large increase of value which his property had acquired from the mere change of circumstances, and without any exertion of his own, began to be seriously questioned. Inquiries into the source and limits of the rights of property, which might easily be very far reaching, were set on foot.

Meanwhile the condition of the very poor had been exciting general attention. There was a very prevalent feeling that the extremes of wealth and misery were becoming constantly further separated, and that the class which had been spoken of as "the residuum" was on the increase. No doubt this unhappy class was numerous enough, consisting of those whose intermittent work and uncertain wages allowed them but a precarious livelihood, or of those who from want of energy and self-restraint were seldom fit to earn any wages at all, and who lived in the large cities a migratory and intemperate, often a criminal life, scarcely above the level of starvation. Yet the belief of the increase of the class was without foundation. There was much in the reduced returns of pauperism and crime wholly inconsistent with such an increase. Certainly the burden of the poor upon the nation was far less threatening than it had been when under the old Poor-Law the amount of pauperism seemed to be bringing on immediate disaster.

Yet although the amount of poverty in proportion to the population was less than it had been, the public mind was more sensitive to its



existence, the feeling of public duty and of the responsibilities of wealth had largely increased, and upon this more sensitive conscience the fact of the existence of a great mass of suffering and of poverty had been forced by the visible contrasts exhibited by the growing cities. The wealth which had poured so abundantly into the country had shown itself in the extraordinary increase of large towns, especially of London, in the erection of streets and squares and indeed whole quarters of suburban villas inhabited by the wealthy class. Meanwhile the influx of working people from the country had been continuous. Room had to be found for the growing population either in the already overcrowded courts and lanes, or in squalid districts hidden behind the splendours of the wealthy streets, or in monotonous and uninteresting rows of mean cottages. In a few steps a man might pass from a scene of extreme luxury and comfort to a filthy lane where fever was seldom absent, and an hour's walk from the west to the east of London would show at its one extremity the lavish employment of all that makes life pleasant, parks and gardens and places of amusement, and at the other a dreary monotony of sordid and unbroken dulness.

Its effect in  
producing  
social  
legislation.

The close juxtaposition of such different conditions of life was well calculated to touch the sentiment of the time, and thus for many years efforts always increasing had been made to fulfil what had come to be considered as the duties incident to the possession of wealth. The efforts were in part purely philanthropic; but on the other hand in a number of cases the intervention of the Legislature was demanded. It is thus that a whole mass of legislation affecting and restricting absolute individual freedom in many of the common occurrences of life came into existence. It is thus that restrictions were laid on the employment of the labour of women and children, that laws of a compulsory character with regard to health and the housing of the poor were made, that education became with certain modifications compulsory, that inspections of all sorts were established over mines, factories, and ships. It was thus that the Irish Land Law was passed, and that the English tenant obtained some security for his improvements. In such legislation as this, it is impossible to avoid recognising a growing change in public opinion as to the duties of the State. In fact the system of *laissez faire* as it was called, the system which relies on the unrestricted working of the law of self-interest to secure the general welfare, was beginning to fall into discredit. The results to which it had led were not regarded with continued satisfaction. The precarious position of

the artisan, the depression of the agriculturist, the poverty of the labourer and the class below him, seemed all direct results of the competitive system, and to call for the substitution of the directing hand of the State. With this increasing sense of the necessity for State interference, there went as a natural consequence a belief in the power of legislation to cope with all evils as they arose.

It appears then to have been chiefly in these directions that the democratic growth of the period made itself felt. The balance of political forces within the Constitution was changed so as to admit of a more direct interference on the part of the constituencies in political questions. As a consequence, sentiment, as compared with educated political thought, had assumed an increased weight in deciding the national attitude. The view of the proper functions of the State had been enlarged. There was an inclination to throw upon it the duty of interfering to secure the happiness of the individual, and consequently an increasing desire to attack every evil by immediate legislation. It was in complete harmony with these prevalent ideas that Mr. Gladstone began his new Administration.



# INDEX

- ABDUL I., Sultan of Turkey, 56, 59, 235, 239.
- Abdul II., Sultan of Turkey, his bad government, 520; deposed, 521.
- Abdurahman, his character, 540; Ameer of Cabul, 541; declines English help, 542; final success, 544.
- Abercorn, Lord, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 421; again, 507.
- Abercrombie, Speaker, 33.
- Aberdare, Lord, Home Secretary, 450; President of the Council, 450; his Licencing Bill, 472.
- Aberdeen, Lord, Foreign Secretary, 77, 78; attempts to settle Scotch Church disputes, 101, 102; willing to modify the Corn Laws, 133; arranges the Oregon difficulty, 145, 146; his negotiations in the Spanish marriages, 148-151; his charges against Palmerston, 187, 203, 204; Premier, 225; his treaty with the Czar, 231; averse to war, 236, 273; consents to the occupation of the Black Sea, 238; bent on peace, 239; resigns, 271.
- Abyssinia, war with, 436-438.
- Acland, Sir Thomas, 20, 21.
- Acre, siege of, 58, 59.
- Adams, General, at Inkerman, 263.
- Adderley, Sir Charles, Board of Trade, 507.
- Adullamites, the, 420, 421.
- Afghanistan, first war with, 60-71; opinion of the war in England, 79, 86, 91, 94, 141; assists the Sikhs, 194; conquers Candahar, 288; treaty with Lord Lawrence, 306; necessity of supporting, 517; policy with regard to, 534-538; second war with, 539-544.
- Africa, refuses convicts, 197; Kaffir war, 228; first Ashantee war, 372; second Ashantee war, 497-499; confederation of, proposed, 544, 545; annexation of the Transvaal, 546; the Zulu war, 547-550; the Transvaal war, 550-552.
- Agnew, Vans, murder of, 193.
- Agra, 302, 303, 318, 319.
- Agricultural Holdings Bill, 514.
- Airey, General, complaints against, 267; his conduct vindicated, 278.
- Akbar Khan, 64, 65, 68, 69.
- Alabama, the, 378, 417, 489-491.
- Albert, Prince, his marriage, 35, 36; his German views, 207; dislikes Palmerston's policy, 207, 212, 215; plans the exhibition, 208; quoted, 271; his love of culture, 287; conversations with Napoleon, 334; death, 393, 394.
- Alexander II., Czar of Russia, accession, 276; at Berlin, 520; attempts to allay English mistrust, 524; his warlike speech, 524; war with Turkey, 526.
- Allahabad, 302, 303, 307, 309, 314, 320, 327.
- Allen, Fenian, 440.
- America, internal dissensions, 10; conduct during Canadian rebellion, 10, 11; Ashburton treaty, 91, 144; negotiations with Ireland, 113; Oregon treaty, 144-146; difficulties with, 284, 285; the Civil War, 372-381; contributes to the cotton famine fund, 383; objects to interference, 381; trade with, 385, 391; temperance in, 407; Irish in, 416, 418; the treaty of Washington, 489; the Alabama arbitration, 490, 491; Parnell's visit to, 561, 562.
- Anderson, murder of, 193.
- Andrassy, Count, his note, 519, 520; meeting with Bismarck and the Czar, 520.
- Anson, Commander-in-Chief at Delhi, 305.
- Anti-Corn Law League. [See Corn Laws.]
- Arbitration, international, 490, 491.
- Arch, establishes agricultural unions, 504; effect of his agitation, 574.
- Argyll, Duke of, Privy Seal, 225; again, 272; again, 348; again, 410; Indian Secretary, 450.
- Army, increased, 361, 362, 571, 572; reform in, 467-472; Discipline Bill, 558, 559.
- Ashantee, first war, 372; second war, 497-499.
- Ashburnham in China, 290.
- Ashburton treaty, 91, 144.
- Ashley, Lord, his Factory Bill, 39; opposes Russell's Education Bill, 42; his Collieries Bill, 88-90; his address on education, 96; his Factory Bill, 97, 98. [See Shaftesbury.]



- Attwood presents the Charter, 45.  
 Auckland, Lord, his Afghan policy, 61, 62, 66, 67; retires, 66; Admiralty, 154.  
 Augustenberg, Duke of, his claims, 364; supported by Austria, 430.  
 Australia, refuses to receive convicts, 197; constitution given to, 198; contributes to cotton famine fund, 383; growth of, 571.  
 Austria, power of, 53; frigates at Beyrout, 58; annexes Cracow, 156; revolutions in, 180-182; war with Italy, 181, 186, 188, 189; accession of Francis Joseph, 187; conquers Hungary, 199, 200; rivalry with Prussia, 207, 344, 362, 432; protects Montenegro, 232; policy with regard to Turkey and Russia, 234, 236, 239, 245, 259, 274, 275, 282; Napoleon's schemes against, 333-335, 342; breach with France, 344; war with Italy, 346, 355-361; Schleswig-Holstein war, 363-366; war with Prussia, 429-432; attempts to secure Turkish reform, 519, 520; occupies Bosnia and Herzegovina, 532.  
 Ayob Khan at Herat, 539, 540; advances upon Candahar, 542; victory at Maiwand, 543; defeated, 543; struggle with Abdurahaman, 544.  
 BALACLAVA, 252, 256-259, 265, 267, 269, 279.  
 Ball, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, 507.  
 Ballot, bill for, introduced by Grote, 37; demanded by the Chartists, 44; used in school board elections, 466; bill rejected, 472; passed, 474.  
 Bauk, charter reorganised, 117-119; effect of restriction on, 173, 174; high rate of discount, 385; restrictions on, relaxed, 412, 428.  
 Bankruptcy, Bill, 351, 352.  
 Baring, Consul, his report on Bulgaria, 521, 522.  
 Bariug, Sir Francis, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 48; his budgets, 50; Admiralty, 154.  
 Barnard, Sir Henry, at Delhi, 305, 306.  
 Batak, massacre of, 522.  
 Battles—Ahmed Khel, 541; Aliwal, 143; Alma, 247-250; Assemghar, 326; Balaklava, 256-259; Candahar, 543; Cawnpore, 310; Chattanooga, 379; Chillianwallah, 194; Chinhat, 311; Coulmiers, 480; Custozza, 431; Ekowe, 549; Ferozeshah, 142; Futteypore, 309; Gengislovo, 549; Gurgewo, 244; Goojerat, 194; Hyderabad, 94; Inkerman, 260-265; Isandlana, 549; Kambula, 549; Langsnek, 552; Lissa, 431; Maharajpore, 95; Maiwand, 543; Majuba Hill, 552; Meeanee, 94; Mentaua, 432; Nezib, 56; Novara, 187; Punniar, 95; Ramnuggur, 194; Rorke's Drift, 549; Sadowa, 431; Sedan, 478; Sobraon, 143; St. Benoit, 9; St. Charles, 9; St. Eustace, 9; Tchernaya, 280; Tezzen, 69; Toronto, 9, 10; Weissenburg, 477; Worth, 477; Ulundi, 550; Urghandi, 540.  
 Bayne, his reform motion, 399.  
 Bazaine, in Metz, 477, 479, 480.  
 Beaconsfield, Lord (see Disraeli), made Earl, 522; his warlike speech, 524; preparations for war, 529; his policy of surprises, 530; annexes Cyprus, 532; his foreign policy, 533; desires a scientific frontier, 538; effect of his Egyptian policy, 553, 554; absence of domestic legislation, 555; general view of his ministry, 562-564; his letter to the Duke of Marlborough, 565; his foresight, 566; the popular sentiment to which he appealed, 570.  
 Beales, President of Reform League, 422.  
 Bedchamber, question, 31-33.  
 Belgium, treaty concerning, 484, 485.  
 Benares, 302, 307, 319.  
 Benedek, General, 431.  
 Benedetti, ambassador, 476, 484.  
 Bentinck, Lord George, character, 134; leader of the Protectionists, 136; opposes the Corn Bill, 138; joins Russell against Peel, 139; his Irish railway scheme, 161, 162; supports the West India planters, 175; death, 191.  
 Berampore, mutiny at, 299.  
 Beresford, Secretary at War, 218.  
 Berlin, congress, 531, 532.  
 Berlin, note, 520.  
 Bernard, on heresy, 397.  
 Bethell. [See Westbury.]  
 Biggar, his character, 556; his long speeches, 557.  
 Bismarck, his views, 363, 364; his convention with Russia, 367; his German policy, 429-432; his moderation, 467; in the French war, 478, 480, 484-486; Black Sea conference, 488; the Berlin note, 520; presides at the Berlin Congress, 531.  
 Blackburne, Lord Chancellor for Ireland, 218; again, 421.  
 Blignières, in Egypt, 553.  
 Boers, in the Transvaal, 545; their treatment of the natives, 546; their claims against the Zulus, 547; unfriendly to England, 550; their agitation, 551; regain their independence, 552.  
 Booth, Selator, Local Government Board, 507; adopts Stansfeld's suggestions, 509.  
 Bosnia, insurrection of, 518, 520; occupied by Austria, 532.  
 Bosquet, General, at Inkerman, 264.  
 Bourbaki, General, 480-482.  
 Bourke, his speech on Afghanistan, 517.  
 Bowring, Sir John, in China, 290.  
 Brady, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, 154, 225, 272, 348, 410; desires the suspension of the Habeas Corpus, 417.

- Brennan, arrest of, 561.  
 Bressou, at Madrid, 149, 150, 151.  
 Bright, John, on the Anti-Corn Law League, 131; defeated, 201; his opinion of strikes, 403; his views on Ireland, 418, 443; on the Reform Bill, 420, 426, 427; on church rates, 448; Board of Trade, 450.  
 Broad Church, rise of, 395-398.  
 Broadfoot, Major, 142.  
 Bromhead, at Rorke's Drift, 549.  
 Brougham, Lord, on the slave trade, 27, 28; on education, 40, 41; on the Corn Laws, 82; on the income-tax, 84; on social legislation, 90; approves of the verdict against O'Connell, 115; opposes the Factory Act, 170; opposes Palmerston's policy, 187.  
 Browne, General, at Allahabad, 538.  
 Bruce, Frederick, in China, 368.  
 Bruce, Henry Austin. [See Aberdare.]  
 Buccleuch, Duke of, Privy Seal, 77; President of the Council, 77; opposes Peel, 133.  
 Buccleuch, Duchess of, 78.  
 Buchanan, American President, 373.  
 Buckingham, Duke of, Privy Seal, 77, 78; resigns, 80.  
 Buckingham, Duke of, President of the Council, 421; Colonial Secretary, 421, 425.  
 Budgets—Baring's, 50-52; Peel's, 81-86; 116-121, 123, 124, 135, 136, 138; Wood's, 174, 175, 211, 212; Disraeli's, 220-222; Gladstone's, 226, 240, 241; Lewis', 285; Gladstone's, 385-393; Disraeli's, 438; Lowe's, 473, 474; Gladstone's, 500, 501; Northcote's, 563.  
 Bulgaria, insurrection in, 520-522; occupied by Russia, 527; settlement of, 532.  
 Buller, Charles, in Canada, 11, 13.  
 Bulwer, Sir Henry, at Constantinople, 55; at Madrid, 149, 151; dismissed, 183.  
 Bulwer, Sir Henry, in Natal, 545, 547, 550.  
 Buol, Count, at Vienna, 275.  
 Burke, Fenian, in Clerkenwell, 440.  
 Burnah, war in, 228, 298.  
 Burnes, Sir Alexander, in Cabul, 60, 61; his views, 63; murdered, 64.  
 Burrows, General, at Candahar, 542, 543.  
 Butler, General, 377.  
 Butt, Home Rule leader, 462; his views, 555; his bill to amend the Land Act, 556; his Home Rule Bill, 557; the Irish dissatisfied with, 557; withdraws from the leadership, 558.  
 CABUL, 60-70, 536-544.  
 Cairns, Lord, Solicitor-General, 342; Lord Chancellor, 421, 442; on the Irish Church, 453; Lord Chancellor, 507; approves the Judicature Bill, 509, 514; his Land Transfer Bill, 514, 515.  
 Calpee, 322, 324, 325.  
 Cameron, in Abyssinia, 436.  
 Campbell, Lord, Lord Chancellor, upholds the legality of repeal meetings, 110; reverses the verdict against O'Connell, 115; Duchy of Lancaster, 154; Lord Chancellor, 348; his judgment on Colenso's case, 398.  
 Campbell, Sir Colin, at the Alma, 250; at Balaklava, 254, 256; in India, 314; at Lucknow, 319; at Cawnpore, 320; takes Lucknow, 322; in Rohileund, 326; in Oude, 327.  
 Campbell, Colonel, at Delhi, 315, 317.  
 Canada, 5-14, 26; contrasted with Jamaica, 30; the Oregon difficulty, 144-146; riots in, 197; ecclesiastical affairs in, 226; contributes to the cotton famine fund, 383; Fenians in, 417, 418; confederation of, 434, 545.  
 Candahar, 60, 62, 63, 66-69, 535, 538, 543.  
 Candlish, Dr., 102.  
 Canning, Lord, Under Secretary for foreign affairs, 78; disapproves of Palmerston's policy, 204; Postmaster-General, 272; Governor-General, 298, 299; his measures against the mutiny, 306, 307, 308, 321, 326, 327; Viceroy, 339; his proclamation, 339, 340.  
 Canrobert, at the Alma, 243; General, 252; bombards Sebastopol, 255; at Inkerman, 265; resigns, 280.  
 Canton, 71-76, 289-291, 371.  
 Cape Town, refuses convicts, 197; receives a constitution, 228; refuses confederation, 545, 552.  
 Cardigan, Lord, at Balaklava, 257, 258.  
 Cardwell, Board of Trade, 225; assaults Derby's government, 340; Irish Secretary, 348; Colonial Secretary, 348; again, 410; War Secretary, 450; his army reform, 464-471.  
 Carlisle, Lord [see Morpeth], Duchy of Lancaster, 154; Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 272; again, 348.  
 Carnarvon, Lord, Colonial Secretary, 421; resigns, 425; his Confederation of Canada, 434; repudiates Russell's scheme, 506; Colonial Secretary, 507; resigns, 528; his views on imperialism, 544; compensates Llangibalele, 545; desires confederation, 545, 546.  
 Cathcart, General, in Kaffraria, 228; at Inkerman, 263.  
 Cattle plague, 411, 412, 428.  
 Cavagnari, Sir Louis, sent to Afghanistan, 537; murdered, 539.  
 Cavaignac, in Paris, 182.  
 Cave, his report on Egyptian finance, 553.  
 Cavour, his wisdom, 344; interview with Napoleon, 344, 345; refuses to disband the troops, 346; resigns, 356; protests against an armistice, 357; submits to the cession of Savoy, 358; his success, 359, 360, 368.  
 Cawnpore, 300, 302, 303, 303-310, 313, 314, 319, 320.

- Cetchwayo, his despotic rule, 545; the Boers quarrel with, 546; disliked by Sir B. Frere, 548; war with, 549; desirous of peace, 550; captured, 550.
- Chadwick, his sanitary report, 195.
- Chalmers, at the Disruption, 100-102.
- Chamberlain, Sir Neville, at Delhi, 317; envoy to Cabul, 537.
- Chanzy, General, 480, 481.
- Chard, at Rorke's Drift, 549.
- Charles Albert, King of Sardinia, invades Lombardy, 181; his constitutional views, 185, 186; Palmerston's advice to, 188.
- Chartism, its object, 44; the charter rejected, 45; riots, 45, 46; opposed to the Poor Law, 79, and to the Anti-Corn Law League, 80, 87, 131; Chartist petition presented, 87, 88; riots, 91, 92, 106; divisions in the party, 176; the 10th of April, 177; practical success of the Charter, 178, 196.
- Chelmsford, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 336; opposes the Jews Bill, 340; Lord Chancellor, 421.
- Chelmsford, Lord (his son), General, invasion of Zululand, 548; at Gingilovo, 549; at Ulundi, 550.
- Cheriff, Pasha, Egyptian Minister, 554.
- Chester, Fenians in, 439.
- Childers, Admiralty, 450; Duchy of Lancaster, 450.
- Children, legislation for, 39, 40; 88-90, 96-98, 170, 407.
- China, the Opium war, 71-76; war with, 289-292, 368-371.
- Cholera, 88, 195, 266, 429.
- Christian IX., King of Denmark, 363; Bismarck's demand from, 364; his speech, 365.
- Christina, Queen of Spain, 148, 150, 179.
- Church of England, opposes Russell's education scheme, 40-43; Peel's Church districts, 98; the Tractarian movement, 103-106; Bishopric of Manchester, 172; Mr. Gorham's case, 210; Ecclesiastical Titles Bill, 209-211; opposes University reform, 241; rise of the Broad Church, 395; Essays and Reviews, 396, 397; Dr. Colenso, 398; Church rates, 399, 448, 449; felt aggrieved by Gladstone's legislation, 500; the Endowed Schools Act amended, 509; the Public Worship Bill, 510-512.
- Church of Ireland, Morpeth's effort to reform, 20; Peel's measures, 125; opposed to secular education, 211; condition of, 444-447; Disestablishment of, 451-454.
- Church of Scotland, the Disruption, 99-102; Patronage bill, 509, 516.
- Chusan, 59, 71, 73, 74.
- Civil Service, competition for, proposed, 286; carried, 339; completed, 501.
- Clarendon, Lord Privy Seal, 1; policy in Spain, 148; Board of Trade, 154; Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 154; desires suspension of Habeas Corpus, 169; opposes Fielden's Factory Bill, 170; Foreign Secretary, 225; his policy, 237, 238; quoted, 239; continues Foreign Secretary, 272; his firmness, 283; on the Conspiracy Bill, 332; conversations with Napoleon, 334; refuses office, 342; Duchy of Lancaster, 348; Foreign Secretary, 410; again, 450; death, 450.
- Clanricarde, Lord, Postmaster-General, 154; Lord Privy Seal, 272.
- Clerkenwell, attack on, 440.
- Clontarf, meeting, 114.
- Cobden, Richard, agitates against the Corn Laws, 80, 124, 131; opposes Wood's Budget, 196; dislikes Palmerston's policy, 204; opposes Disraeli's Budget, 221; motion against the Chinese war, 291; loses his seat, 291; desires increase of the fleet, 362; opposes the rate in aid, 382; arranges commercial treaty with France, 386.
- Cockburn, on Governor Eyre, 415; on the Alabama arbitration, 491.
- Colborne, Sir John, in Canada, 9, 13.
- Colenso, Bishop, 398.
- Coleridge, amendment on Reform Bill, 427.
- Colonies—Africa, 544-552; Australia, 197, 198; Canada, 5-14, 144-146, 197, 434, 435, 545; Jamaica, 26-31, 413-415; protection to, 86, 121, 175, 190; Colonial office reformed, 196-198; confederation, 434, 435; increase of, 570, 571.
- Colley, Sir George, in the Transvaal, 552.
- Collier, Sir Robert, his appointment, 492.
- Collieries Bill, 88-90.
- Coltman, Judge, 115.
- Colvin, at Agra, 318.
- Commerce. [See Trade.]
- Commercial Treaty with France, 386.
- Commune in Paris, 483, 484.
- Confederation, 10, 434, 435, 544-546, 552.
- Conspiracy, Palmerston's Bill, 331-333.
- Cooper, the Chartist, 176.
- Co-operation, 404-406.
- Corn Laws, Russell's proposal, 51; Peel's proposal, 80, 81; agitation on, 82, 85-87; 93, 130-133; repeal of, 134-138, 161.
- Corry, First Lord of the Admiralty, 421, 425.
- Cottenham, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 1; upholds the legality of repeal meetings, 110; reverses the verdict against O'Connell, 115; Lord Chancellor, 154.
- Cotton, Sydney, 304.
- Cotton famine, 377, 381-384.
- Cowley, Lord, at Vienna, 345.
- Craughton, minister at Washington, 285.
- Cranborne, Lord, Indian Secretary, 421; resigns, 425; opinion of Disraeli's Reform Bill, 428. [See Salisbury.]
- Cranbrook. [See Hardy.]
- Cranworth, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 225, again, 272; on the Paper Tax, 388; Lord Chancellor, 410.



- Crimean war origin of, 224, 229-240; the war, 245-285; alteration of the treaty, 487, 488.
- Criminal Law, ameliorated, 4, 5; West-bury's reforms, 352.
- Cross, Sir Richard, Home Secretary, 507; his Factory Bill, 509; his Labourers' Dwellings Bill, 515.
- Currency Bill, 118, 119.
- Currie, Sir Frederick, at Lahore, 193.
- Cyprus, annexation of, 532, 553, 563.
- Daily News*, on Bulgaria, 521.
- Dalhousie, Lord, Board of Trade, 77; Governor-General of India, annexes the Punjab, 195; declares war with Persia, 288; his Indian policy, 294-296, 303-304.
- Daly, his arrest, 561.
- Dannenberg, at Inkerman, 261-265.
- Danubian Principalities, 230, 232, 235, 237-239, 243-245, 259, 274, 284, 333-335, 487, 532.
- Dardanelles, 55-59, 200, 237, 275, 283, 487, 488, 528.
- Dartmouth, Lord, Disraeli's letter to, 445.
- D'Aurelle de Paladines, 479, 480.
- Davidson, at Hyderabad, 327.
- Davis, Jefferson, Confederate President, 375.
- Davis, Young Irishman, 108.
- Davitt, Michael, his arrest, 561.
- Delhi, 300, 302, 305-307, 315-318.
- Denman, Lord, on O'Connell's verdict, 115.
- Denmark, 181, 203, 205-207, 362-366.
- Derby, Lord [see Stanley], Premier, 218; upholds Protection, 219; resigns, 222; fails to form a Ministry, 272; his letter to the Queen, 332; Premier, 336; resigns, 342; his foreign policy, 346; his opinion of Russell's policy, 366; president of Cotton Famine Committee, 383; suggests workmen's trains, 408; Premier, 421; on the Reform Bill, 428; his foreign policy, 429; resigns, 442; protest against Irish Church Bill, 453.
- Derby, Lord, his son [see Stanley], Foreign Secretary, 507; purchase of the Suez Canal, 516, 517; disbelieves in the Bulgarian atrocities, 521; warns Servia, 523; his addition to the protocol, 525; his suspicion of Russia, 526; threatens to resign, 528; the San Stefano treaty, 529; resigns, 529.
- Devon, Lord, urges Irish relief, 18; head of the Irish Relief Commission, 125, 128, 165.
- Devon, Lord (his son), Duchy of Lancaster, 421.
- Diet, the German, 181, 182, 199, 203, 207, 363, 364, 430, 431.
- Dillon, writer in the *Nation*, 108; in Tipperary, 169.
- Disraeli, opposes Peel, 124, 126; joins Bentinck, 134; speeches against Peel, 135, 136; desires vengeance, 139; opposes Russell, 176; leader of the Protectionists, 191; attempts revision of the Poor Law, 196; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 218; his resolution against free trade, 219; his budget, 220-226; quoted, 226, 241; disapproves of the Chinese war, 291; opposes the Conspiracy Bill, 332; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 336; skilful leader, 336-338; his Reform Bill, 341; quoted, 366; his election address, 394, 395; upholds the Church, 399; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 421, 422; his Reform Bill, 423-437; his Imperial views, 435; Premier, 442; on disestablishment, 445; declines to resign, 447; resigns, 449; opposes Irish Church Bill, 452; opposes Irish Land Bill, 460; opposes Army Bill, 470; opposes Irish University Bill, 494, 495; refuses the Ministry, 495, 496; Premier, 500, 507; his programme, 502, 508; on the Endowed Schools Act, 509; on the Public Worship Bill, 511; on Lord Salisbury, 512; purchase of the Suez Canal, 516, doubts the Bulgarian atrocities, 521, his imperial views, 522. [See Beaconsfield.]
- Divorce Bill, 286.
- Donoughmore, Lord, Board of Trade, 336.
- Dost Mahomed, at Cabul, 60; receives Burnes, 61; deposed, 62; returns to Cabul, 70; assists the Sikhs, 194; conquers Candahar, 288; treaty with Lawrence, 306; faithful ally to England, 534.
- Drummond, his views on Ireland, 22-26.
- Ducrot, General, 481.
- Dufferin, Lord, Duchy of Lancaster, 450.
- Duffy, Gavan, writer in the *Nation*, 108, 164; arrested, 169.
- Duleep Singh, accession of, 142; pensioned, 195.
- Duncannon, Lord, Privy Seal, 1; Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 154; becomes Lord Bessborough, 155.
- Duncombe, presents Chartist petition, 87; motion against Graham, 122.
- Dundas, Admiral, at Malta, 233; at Sebastopol, 254, 255; at Sweaborg, 279.
- Dunkellin, motion against Russell, 420.
- Durand, Commissioner, in Central India, 323.
- Durham, Lord, in Canada, 11-14; his views on Ireland, 15; his Canadian views carried out, 434.
- Durnford, Colonel, in Isaullana, 549.



- EASTERN QUESTION, Palmerston's treaties and the Egyptian war, 54-59; the Crimean war, 229-284; the Danubian Principalities, 333-335; the Black Sea Conference, 287, 288; the Suez Canal, 516, 517; insurrections against Turkey, and the Berlin Congress, 518-534.
- Education, 40-43, 96, 97; in Ireland, 126, 127; Russell's proposals for, 171, 172, 226, 286; the Revised Code, 408, 409; Forster's bills, 463-466; Irish, 492.
- Edwardes, Herbert, at Mooltan, 193; at Peshawur, 304, 306.
- Eglinton, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 218, 336.
- Egypt, war with Turkey, 54-59; the Suez Canal, 516, 517; English policy in, 552-554.
- Ekowe, siege of, 549.
- Elgin, Lord, in Canada, 197; sent to China, 290; troops diverted to India, 303; Postmaster-General, 348; in China, 369, 370; in Japan, 371.
- Eliot, Lord, Irish Secretary, 77. [See Lord St. Germans.]
- Ellenborough, Lord, Governor-General of India, 66; his views, 68, 69, 70; Board of Control, 77; in Sindh, 92, 93; in Gwalior, 95; recalled, 141; Board of Control, 336; his despatch, 340; resigns, 340.
- Elliott, Captain, in China, 78.
- Elphinstone, General, in Cabul, 63-65.
- Elphinstone, Lord, in Bombay, 303, 327.
- Encumbered Estates Act, 163, 167, 168, 192, 195, 457.
- Endowed Schools, 463, 464, 509.
- Essays and Reviews, 396, 397.
- Estcourt, Adjutant-General, in the Crimea, 267, 277.
- Estcourt, Sotherton, Home Secretary, 336.
- Evans, Sir de Lacy, at the Alma, 249; at Inkerman, 262.
- Evictions, in Ireland, 24, 130, 159, 163, 165-167, 192, 456-462, 560, 561.
- Ewelme case, 492.
- Exhibition, the Great, 208, 209.
- Eyre, Governor, 414, 415.
- FACTORY BILLS, Ashley's, 39, 40; Graham's, 97, 98; Fielden's, 170, 171.
- Faidherbe, General, 481.
- Fantees, the, 498.
- Favre, Jules, 478, 479, 486.
- Fawcett, on abolition of tests, 494.
- Federation. [See Confederation.]
- Fenianism, 416-418, 438-442, 454, 459, 462.
- Festing, Colonel, in Ashantee, 498.
- Fielden, his Factory Bill, 170, 171.
- Filder, complaints against, 267; vindicated, 278.
- Flagstaff Battery, 254, 256, 260.
- Forster, Under Secretary for the Colonies, 411; Vice-President of Education Committee, 450; his Education Bills, 463-466; his Ballot Bill, 472.
- Fortescue, Irish Secretary, 410; takes a hopeful view, 416; desires the suspension of the Habeas Corpus, 417.
- Fox, on Canada, 6; on Ireland, 15.
- France, its Spanish policy, 52, 53; its Eastern policy, 56-59; Irish negotiations with, 113, 163; collision with England in Tahiti, 147; negotiations as to the Spanish marriages, 148-152; breach with England, 153, 178; deposition of Louis Philippe, 178-180; Cavaignac, 182; Louis Napoleon President, 183; expedition to Rome, 188, 189; supports Turkey, 200; quarrel with England in Greece, 200-202; supports Denmark, 206; the Coup d'Etat, 213; Napoleon III., 223; espouses the quarrel of the Latin Church against Russia, 229, 230, 233; Crimean war, 243-254; the Orsini bombs, 330, 331, 337; Italian war, 343-347, 355-361; dread of invasion from, 361; war in Mexico, 381; commercial treaty with, 386-388, 391; the Luxemburg treaty, 433; the Franco-German war, 467, 474-488; the Suez Canal, 516, 517; accepts the Berlin Note, 520; its Egyptian policy, 553, 554.
- Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria, his accession, 187; at Villafranca, 355.
- Francis II., King of Naples, 356; refuses advice, 358; grants a Constitution, 359; expelled, 359; assisted by France, 360.
- Francisco d'Assis, suitor to Queen Isabella, 149; marriage, 152; divorce, 179.
- Frederick III., of Prussia, as Crown Prince, in France, 477-479.
- Frederick VII., King of Denmark, his death, 363.
- Frederick Charles, Prince, at Sadowa, 431; in France, 477.
- Frederick William, King of Prussia, abdicates, 345.
- Free Trade. [See Trade and Tariffs.]
- Fremantle, Sir Thomas, Secretary at War, 77; Irish Secretary, 77.
- Frere, Sir Bartle, his Afghan policy, 535, 536; High Commissioner in Natal, 546; his policy, 547, 548; at Cape Town, 550.
- Friendly Societies Bill, 503, 504, 515.
- Froude, Hurrell, 103.
- Fronde, James Anthony, at Cape Town, 545.
- GAMBETTA, organises the Republic, 478; escapes from Paris, 479; at Tours and Bordeaux, 482.
- Gandamak, treaty, 539.
- Garibaldi, his expedition against Naples, 359; restrained by Cavour, 359; meet-

- ing with Victor Emmanuel, 360; at Caprera, 361; his expedition against Rome, 432; volunteers in the French war, 479, 481.
- Gastein Convention, 429.
- Geneva, meeting of arbitrators at, 490.
- Ghuznee, 62, 68, 69, 70, 540, 541.
- Gibson, Milner, defeated, 291; opposes Conspiracy Amendment Bill, 332; Board of Trade, 348; again, 410.
- Gilbert, Sir Walter, at Goojerat, 194.
- Gladstone, Board of Trade, 77, 78; Colonial Secretary, 77; resigns, 123; dislikes Palmerston's policy, 204; opposes Disraeli's budget, 221, 222; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 225; his first budget, 226-228; war budget, 240, 241; resigns, 273; opposes the Chinese war, 291; efforts for the Danubian principalities, 335; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 348; character, 349; his finance, 385-393; desires reform, 400; defeated at Oxford, 410; his Reform Bill, 419, 420; his amendments on Disraeli's reform bill, 426, 427, 428; his views on the Irish Church, 444-447; his compromise on Church rates, 448; defeated for Lancashire, 449; elected at Greenwich, 450; Premier, 450; his programme, 451; his disestablishment of the Irish Church, 451-454; his Irish Land Bill, 454, 459, 460; his University Tests Bill, 466; announces abolition of army purchase, 470; supports the Ballot Bill, 472; his Greenwich speech, 473; the appointment to Ewelme rectory, 492; his Irish University Bill, 492-495; resigns and returns, 495; disapproves disestablishment of the English Church, 497; dissolves Parliament, 499; his intention as to the income-tax, 500; resigns, 500; character of his ministry, 501, 502; opposes amendment of Endowed Schools Act, 509; opposes Scotch Church Patronage Bill, 510; opposes Public Worship Bill, 511; retires, 512, 513; his policy as to the Transvaal, 551, 552; supports the Irish Public Houses Bill, 557; his Midlothian speeches, 566; returns to power, 567, 577; the popular sentiment to which he appealed, 570.
- Gleuelg, Lord, Colonial Secretary, 1; character, 8; retires, 33.
- Glover, in Ashantee, 499.
- Gordon, in Jamaica, 413-415.
- Gorham, accused of heresy, 210.
- Gortehakoff, at Inkerman, 261; his declaration, 487; at Berlin, 520; his despatch, 525.
- Goschen, George, Duchy of Lancaster, 410, 411; Poor Law Board, 450; his Local Government Bill rejected, 472; his Local Taxation Bill, 501; his Egyptian finance, 553.
- Gosford, Lord, in Canada, 8, 9.
- Gough, Sir Hugh, in China, 74; in Gwalior, 95; at Moodkee, 142; at Ramnuggur, 194.
- Goulburn, Henry, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 77, 78; reduces the national debt, 119; his budget, 120; measures to relieve Irish famine, 133.
- Gourko, General, invades Turkey, 527.
- Graham, Sir James, supports Peel, 2; his motion against the Chinese war, 46; Home Secretary, 77, 78; upholds the Poor Law, 90; his Factory Bill, 97, 98; his reply to the Scotch Church, 101; accused of opening letters, 122; considers the potato famine, 130; desires to suspend the Corn Laws, 133; introduces Coercion Bill, 138; opposes Fielden's Factory Bill, 170; dislikes Palmerston's policy, 204; Admiralty, 225; resigns, 273.
- Grant, General, 379, 380.
- Grant, Sir Hope, at Agra, 319; at Cawnpore, 321; in Oude, 326, 327; in China, 369, 370.
- Granville, Lord, Foreign Secretary, 154, 218; President of the Council, 225; again, 272; unable to form a Ministry, 342; President of the Council, 348, 410; at Osborne, 418; Colonial Secretary, 450; Foreign Secretary, 450; on the Irish Church Bill, 454; maintains neutrality, 485, 486; quoted, 487; arranges the Black Sea Conference, 488.
- Greece, 200-202, 532, 533.
- Grévy, President of French Republic, 482.
- Grey, Sir George, Home Secretary, 154; introduces Coercion Bill, 165; Colonial Secretary, 225; Home Secretary, 272; Duchy of Lancaster, 348; Home Secretary, 348, 410; his Cattle Plague Bill, 412.
- Grey, Lord (Howick), Secretary at War, 1; opposes Melbourne, 48; refuses to serve with Palmerston, 133; Colonial Secretary, 154, 155; charges against, 197, 198.
- Grey, Earl de, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 77.
- Grey, Earl de, and Ripon. [See Ripon.]
- Griffin, Lepel, at Cabul, 541.
- Gros, Baron, in Greece, 202; in China, 369.
- Grote, George, introduces Ballot Bill, 37.
- Gubbins, Frederick, at Benares, 319.
- Guizot, French Minister, 59; disliked by Palmerston, 147; negotiates Spanish marriage, 149-152; dismissed, 179; his mediation in Switzerland, 184.
- Gurney, Russell, introduces Public Worship Bill, 511.
- Gwalior, 95, 314, 318, 319, 322, 324, 325.

- HADDINGTON, LORD, Admiralty, 77;  
Privy Seal, 77.
- Halifax, Lord, Privy Seal, 450.
- Hardinge, Lord, Secretary at War, 77;  
Governor-General, 142; in the Sikh  
war, 143; returns home, 144; approves  
of annexing Oude, 295.
- Hardwicke, Lord, Postmaster-General,  
218; Privy Seal, 336.
- Hardy, Gathorne, Poor Law Board, 421;  
Home Secretary, 421; repudiates Rus-  
sell's scheme, 506; War Secretary, 507;  
Indian Secretary, 507; Lord Cranbrook,  
507.
- Harris, Lord, in Madras, 303.
- Harrowby, Lord, Duchy of Lancaster, 272.
- Hartington, Lord, War Secretary, 410;  
defeated, 449; Postmaster-General, 450;  
Irish Secretary, 450; leader of the  
Opposition, 513; approves of coercion,  
513; motion against Government de-  
feated, 531; Indian Secretary, 541; op-  
poses Army Bill, 559; his character, 567.
- Hatherley, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 450.
- Havelock, General, in Persia, 289; at  
Allahabad, 308; at Futteypore, 309; at  
Cawnpore, 310; at Lucknow, 313, 314;  
death, 320; quoted, 469.
- Havelock, Sir Henry, in Behar, 327.
- Hay, Sir John, on the Ashantee war, 372.
- Head, Sir Francis, in Canada, 8-10.
- Henley, Board of Trade, 218; again,  
336; resigns, 341.
- Herat, 60, 61, 288, 289.
- Herbert, Sidney, Secretary at War, 77,  
78; supports Peel, 133; dislikes Palmer-  
ston's policy, 204; quoted, 219, 220;  
Secretary at War, 225; resigns, 273;  
his confidence in Miss Nightingale,  
278; War Secretary, 348.
- Herbert, Henry, Irish Secretary, 272.
- Herries, Board of Control, 218.
- Herzegovina, insurrection in, 518; occu-  
pied by Austria, 532.
- Jeytesbury, Lord, Lord-Lieutenant for  
Ireland, 77.
- Heywood, James, his University Reform  
Bill, 241-243.
- Hicks-Beach, Sir Michael, Irish Secre-  
tary, 507; approves of coercion, 513;  
Colonial Secretary, 507.
- Hill, Sir Rowland, 49.
- Hobhouse, Sir John Cam, Board of Con-  
trol, 1; again, 154; defeated, 176.
- Hodgkinson, on the compound house-  
holder, 427.
- Hodson, at Delhi, 318.
- Holstein. [See Sleswig.]
- Home Rule, rise of the movement, 462;  
strength of the party in the House,  
513, 555; Butt's Bill, 557; split in the  
party, 558; agitation for, 559, 560, 566.
- Hong-Kong, 71, 74, 76, 289.
- Hope, Admiral, in China, 369.
- Horsman, Irish Secretary, 272; head of  
the Adullamites, 420; on the Irish  
Church Bill, 443.
- Howick. [See Lord Grey.]
- Hume, introduces Ballot Bill, 196; on the  
income-tax, 212.
- Hume, General, at Candahar, 544.
- Hungary, 181, 188, 190, 212.
- Hunt, Ward, Chancellor of the Exche-  
quer, 421; Admiralty, 507.
- IBRAHIM, PASHA, 55, 58.
- Ignatieff, General, at Constantinople, 524;  
his efforts to secure peace, 525.
- Imperialism, 435, 437, 516, 522, 528, 544,  
546, 564, 566, 570.
- Income tax, 83-85, 120, 123, 124, 175, 211,  
212, 220, 221, 227, 240, 386, 387, 390,  
391, 392, 438, 473, 474, 500, 572.
- India, Afghan war, 59-70; Sindh war,  
92-94; Gwalior war, 95; Sikh war,  
142, 144; Punjab war, 192-195; Persian  
war, 288, 289; Mutiny, 292-328; India  
Bills, 329, 337-339; reforms in, 352-  
354; troops sent to Abyssinia, 437,  
438; Prince of Wales' visit to, 517, 518;  
the Queen made Empress of, 522; In-  
dian troops called to Malta, 530;  
Afghan war, 534-544; progress of, 571.
- Inglis, General, at Lucknow, 312.
- Ireland, excited condition of, 3, 5; the  
victim of party government, 14-16;  
revision of the Poor Law, 16-18; the  
Tithe Bill, 19-21; the Corporation Bill,  
21; Normanby's administration, 22;  
Drummond's views, 22-24; debates on,  
24, 25; Drummond's railway scheme,  
26; Registration Bills, 46-48; Repeal  
Association, 93, 107; Young Ireland,  
108; the monster meetings, 109-114;  
Smith O'Brien's speech, 111, 112;  
O'Connell's trial, 114-116; Maynooth  
grant, 125, 126; education, 127; the  
potato famine, 128-130, 137, 156-167;  
Bentinck's railway scheme, 161, 162;  
Encumbered Estates Act, 163, 167, 168,  
192; rebellion, 168-170; potato disease  
reappears, 190; measures of relief, 191,  
192; hull of agitation in, 195; Disraeli  
proposes an income-tax in, 220; rela-  
tions between landlords and tenants  
referred to Select Committee, 226; con-  
trasted with Jamaica, 413; Fenianism,  
415-418, 428, 438-443; the Irish Church,  
444-447; Reform Bill, 448; quiet, 449;  
Disestablishment Bill, 451-454; Land  
Bill, 454-461; Home Rule movement,  
462, 555, 559, 566; University Bill,  
492-494; Gladstone appreciates im-  
portance of, 501; activity of Irish  
members in Parliament, 555-559; the  
Land League agitation, 559-562; dis-  
tress in, 560, 562, 564; effect of special  
legislation for, on England, 575; Coer-  
cion Bills, 110, 137, 165, 168, 169, 191,  
418, 428, 438, 439, 461, 513.

- Isabella, Queen of Spain, her marriage, 148-153; its consequences, 179, 475.
- Ismail, Khedive of Egypt, sells his Suez Canal shares, 516, 517; character, 552; English interference with, 553; attempt at independence, 554; abdicates, 554.
- Italy, desire for union, 180; revolutions, 181, 182; Palmerston's negotiations in, 184, 185; war with Austria, 181, 186; battle of Novara, 187; French expedition to Rome, 188; defeated, 199; alliance with France, 343-346; Napoleon in, 355, 356; formation of the northern kingdom, 357; Cavour's policy, 358-361; united, 361; alliance with Prussia, 430; gains Venice, 431; the French in Rome, 432; advises neutrality, 485; accepts the Berlin note, 520.
- JAMAICA, difficulties in, 26-31, 34, 413-415.
- Japan, 371.
- Jellalabad, 66-69, 538.
- Jews, admission to Parliament, bill rejected, 226; carried, 340.
- Jhansee, 295, 319, 323, 324.
- Jingoism, 528.
- Jones, William, at Delhi, 315, 317.
- Joubert, his Egyptian finance, 553.
- Jowett, Professor, 396, 397.
- Judicature Bill, 496, 497, 509, 513, 514.
- Jung Bahadour, 322, 327.
- KAFFIR WAR, 228.
- Kagosima, burnt, 371.
- Kamran, in Herat, 60, 61.
- Karr, Seton, 327.
- Kars, siege of, 282; left in Russian hands, 532.
- Keane, General, in Afghanistan, 61, 62.
- Koble, his influence, 103, 104.
- Kennedy, on evictions, 166, 167.
- Kerr, Lord Mark, 327.
- Khedive, the. [See Ismail.]
- Kimberley, Lord, Lord Privy Seal, 450; Colonial Secretary, 450.
- King, Locke, Franchise Bill, 211, 399.
- Koffee, King of Ashantee, 498, 499.
- Korniloff, in Sebastopol, 253, 255.
- Kossuth, Hungarian revolt, 181; defeated, 199; in England, 212.
- Kunwar Singh, 326, 327.
- LABOUCHERE, Board of Trade, 1; again, 154; Irish Secretary, 154; Colonial Secretary, 272.
- Labour Laws amended, 515.
- Labourers' Dwellings Bill, 515.
- Lamartine, President, 168; his prudent conduct, 180.
- Lamorière, Papal General, 360.
- Land laws, Irish, 128, 129, 454-461, 556, 557, 560.
- Land Transfer Bill, 514, 565.
- Lansdowne, Lord, President of the Council, 1; again, 154; refuses office, 225; in the Cabinet, without office, 225, 272.
- Law, reform of, 351, 352.
- Lawrence, Sir Henry, in the Punjab, 144, 195; approves of annexing Oude, 295; character, 304; at Lucknow, 300, 310; 311; death, 312.
- Lawrence, Sir John, in the Punjab, 195; character, 304; his energy, 305; thinks of abandoning Peshawur, 306; sends help to Delhi, 307; on the Council, 354, Viceroy, 534; his Afghan policy, 534; his warning, 534, 536.
- Lawrence, Sir George, at Ajmeer 318.
- Layard, quoted, 277.
- Leader, on the franchise, 37.
- Leake, at Kars, 282.
- Lee, General, 373, 379, 380.
- Lefevre, Shaw, Speaker, 34.
- Lefevre, Shaw, quoted, 378.
- Leiningen, Prince, his mission, 232.
- Leitrim, Lord, murder of, 558.
- Leopold, King of Belgium, 35.
- Leopold, of Saxe Coburg, suitor to Queen Isabella, 150, 151, 152.
- Leopold, of Hohenzollern, claimant for Spain, 475, 476.
- Lesseps, makes the Suez Canal, 516.
- Letheby, Dr., his sanitary reports, 287.
- Lewis, Sir George Cornewall, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 272, 273; contracts a loan, 277; his budget, 285; on the India Bill, 329; Home Secretary, 348; War Secretary, 348.
- Licensing Bill rejected, 472; passed, 474; renewed, 508.
- Lichfield, Lord, Postmaster-General, 1 opposes penny postage, 49.
- Lin, Chinese Commissioner, 72, 73.
- Lincoln, Lord, Irish Secretary, 77. [See Newcastle.]
- Lincoln, American President, 372, 373; his prudence, 376; death, 380.
- Liprandi, at Balaclava, 256, 259.
- Littler, Sir John, at Ferozeshah, 142.
- Loch, in China, 370.
- Lonsdale, Lord, President of Council, 218.
- Lords, House of, Conservative, 3; reject Irish bills, 16; reject Irish Tithe Bill, 21; mutilate Irish Corporation Bill, 21, 22; pass censure on Government, 25; oppose Brougham's motion for immediate emancipation, 28; mutilate the Jamaica Bill, 34; oppose Russell's education scheme, 42; oppose the Collieries Bill, 89, 90; pass Coercion Bill, 137; mutilate Irish Poor Law Bills, 163, 192; last efforts of Protectionists in, 190, 220; reject the Jews Bill, 226; the attempt to make life Peers, 286; oppose the Jews Bill, 340; oppose Westbury's law reform, 352; the dispute on the



- paper tax, 388-390; amendments on Irish Church Bill, 453, 454; reject Napier's Land Reform Bill, 458; oppose Army Reform Bill, 470; reject Ballot Bill, 472; oppose legislation, 497, 500; oppose the Public Worship Bill, 511, 512; remain a Court of Appeal, 496, 514; position of, 569.
- Louis Philippe, King of France, his friendship for England, 53, 58, 146; yields to his ministers, 57; his negotiations for the Spanish marriage, 148-153; his consequent isolation, 178; deposed, 178-180.
- Louis Napoleon. [See Napoleon.]
- Low, John, on the Indian Council, approves of the annexation of Oude, 295.
- Lowe, Robert, on reform, 400; his revised code, 409; opposes Russell's Reform Bill, 420; on Ireland, 443; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 450; Home Secretary, 450; his budgets, 472-474; reduces the income-tax, 500; his review of Gladstone's ministry, 501.
- Lowther, Irish Secretary, 507.
- Lucan, Lord, at Balacava, 256-258; compromise on the Jews Bill, 340.
- Lucknow, 300, 302, 310-314, 319-322.
- Lugard, in Behar, 326, 327.
- Lyndhurst, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 77, 78; unpopularity of, 98; approves of the verdict against O'Connell, 115; speech on French invasion, 385; on the paper tax, 388.
- Lyons, Lord, his energy, 247; urges the assault on Sebastopol, 251, 252; assaults Fort Constantine, 255; in the Black Sea, 279.
- Lyons, Lord (his son), in America, 375.
- Lytton, Lord, Colonial Secretary, 336; on the Reform Bill, 342.
- Lytton, Lord (his son), Viceroy of India, 536; desires a mission to Cabul, 536, 537; resigns, 542.
- Luxemburg, neutrality of, 433.
- Malta, Indian troops sent to, 530, 537.
- Mamelon, 279, 280.
- Manchester, schools, 42; Chartists, 91; Corn-law meetings, 131; bishopric of, 172; Fenians in, 439, 440.
- Manners, Lord John, Protectionist, 124; Commissioner of Works, 218; again, 336; again, 421; Postmaster-General, 507.
- Mansel, on the Punjab Board, 195, 304.
- Marlborough, Duke of, President of the Council, 421; Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 507; his measures against the famine, 564; Beaconsfield's letter to, 565.
- Matthew, Father, 50, 156, 406.
- Maule, Fox. [See Pannure.]
- Maximilian, Emperor of Mexico, 381; death, 433.
- Maynooth College, 125, 126, 452.
- Mayo (see Naas), his views on Ireland, 442, 443; Viceroy of India, 535; treaty with Shere Ali, 535, 536.
- Mazzini, his letters opened, 122; in Rome, 188; opposed by Cavour, 343.
- Meagher, Thomas, writes in the *Nation*, 164; career of, 169.
- Meerut, 300, 305.
- Mehemet Ali, Viceroy of Egypt, 54-59.
- Melbourne, Lord, Premier, 1; his moderate views, 2, 3; his guidance of the Queen, 4, 35; his liberality in the Civil List, 5; resigns, 31; his views on the Queen's ladies' question, 32, 33; returns to office, 33; arranges the Queen's marriage, 35; resigns, 53; opposes changes of the Corn Laws, 82.
- Melly, George, on Education, 464.
- Menschikoff, at Constantinople, 232, 233; his diplomacy thwarted, 234, 235; at the Alma, 247, 248; his plans for defending Sebastopol, 252, 253; apparent success, 255, 260.
- Metternich, Austrian minister, 56; resigns, 181.
- Metz, siege of, 477, 479, 480.
- Mexico, 381, 433.
- Midhat Pasha, his reforms, 521.
- Milan, Prince of Servia, war with Turkey, 523; success, 532.
- Miles, Protectionist, 124; opposes repeal of Corn Laws, 136.
- Militia Bill, rejected, 216, 217; passed, 218.
- Mill, John Stuart, on the India Bill, 329; on Ireland, 418, 443.
- Mihuan, defeated at Assemghar, 326.
- Minto, Lord, Admiralty, 1; Privy Seal, 154; in Italy, 184, 185.
- Mitchell, writes in the *Nation*, 164; career, 169.
- Molé, his Egyptian Policy, 55, 56; attempts to form a ministry, 179.
- Molesworth, Sir William, quoted, 197; dislikes Palmerston's Policy, 204; Commissioner of Works, 225; again, 272; Colonial Secretary, 272.
- MACMAHON, MARSHAL, 477.
- Maenaghten, Sir William, in Cabul, 62-64; assassinated, 65.
- Maguire, John, on Ireland, 442, 459.
- Mahmoud II., Sultan of Turkey, 54, 56.
- Mahon, Lord, on education, 42.
- Mahrattas, defeated in Gwalior, 95; deprived of four provinces, 294, 295; the Mutiny becomes a national movement, 300, 302.
- Maine, Police Commissioner, at Keunington.
- Malakoff, 254, 279, 281.
- Malnesbury, Lord, Foreign Secretary, 218; recognition of Napoleon III., 223; Foreign Secretary, 336; replies to Walewski, 337; Privy Seal, 421; again, 507.

- Moltke, at Sadowa, 431, 432; in France, 480-482.
- Montauban in China, 369; last Napoleonic minister, 477.
- Monteagle. [See Spring-Rice.]
- Montenegro, insurrection in, 232; restrained by Russia, 519; war with Turkey, 523; made independent, 532.
- Montpensier, son of Louis Philippe, his marriage, 149-152; candidate for throne of Spain, 475.
- Montrose, Duke of, Duchy of Lancaster, 336; Postmaster-General, 421.
- Moolraj, his rebellion, 192, 193.
- Mooltan, insurrection at, 193.
- Moolvee, The, at Allahabad, 307; at Lucknow, 319, 322; death, 326.
- Moore, Captain, at Cawnpore, 309.
- Moore, George, on the Irish Church, 446.
- Moravieff at Kars, 282.
- Morpeth, Lord, Irish Secretary, 1; Tithe Bill, 20; Corporation Bill, 21; his policy, 22, 24, 33; Registration Bill. [See Lord Carlisle.]
- Mulgrave. [See Normanby.]
- Mundella, his Factory Bill, 509.
- Municipal reforms, Ireland, 3, 16, 19-22.
- Murray, Archbishop, 17.
- Mutiny, the Indian, 292-328; cost of, 353.
- NAAS, LORD, Irish Secretary, 218; again, 336; again, 421; desires the suspension of Habeas Corpus, 439; becomes Lord Mayo, 442.
- Nachinoff, Admiral, at Sinope, 238.
- Nagpore, annexed, 295; position of, 302.
- Nana Sahib, repudiated, 295; at Bithoor, 297; intrigues, 300; at Cawnpore, 308, 309; declared Peishwa, 325; defeated, 327.
- Nankin, treaty, 74.
- Napier, Sir Charles, Admiral, at Sidon, 58; in the Baltic, 245, 279.
- Napier, Sir Charles, General, in Sindh, 92-94; in the Punjab, 194.
- Napier, Lord, in China, 72.
- Napier, Lord (his son), in St. Petersburg, 366.
- Napier, Sir Robert, in Abyssinia, 437, 438; Commander-in-Chief, 529.
- Napier, Lord Chancellor for Ireland, 336; his Land Bill, 458.
- Naples, insurrection in, 185, 187; misgovernment of, 356, 358; Garibaldi in, 359; united with Sardinia, 361.
- Napoleon, Louis, President, 188; the Coup d'Etat, 213, 214; Emperor, 223; supports the Latin Church, 229; sends fleet to Salamis, 233; desires war, 236; letter to the Czar, 239; suggests invasion of the Crimea, 246; announces the fall of Sebastopol, 253; desires peace, 282; the Orsini bombs, 330, 331; his schemes, 333, 335; visit to England, 334; his Italian schemes, 342-346; his Italian war, 355-357; mistrusted, 358, 361; assists Rome and Naples, 360; wishes to mediate in the American war, 378; commercial treaty, 386; gives Venice to Italy, 431; assists the Pope, 432; desires war, 475, 476, 485; his last campaign, 477; surrender and deposition, 478.
- Narvaez supports Christina, 148; driven from office, 150; returns, 179; his arbitrary government, 183.
- Natal, difficulties in, 545, 549, 550.
- Navigation Act suspended, 161; repealed, 190.
- Neill, General, his energy, 303; at Allahabad, 307, 308; at Cawnpore, 310; death, 314; at Benares, 319.
- Nesselrode, Russian Chancellor, his circulars, 230, 235, 237.
- Newcastle, Duke of, Colonial Secretary, 225; War Secretary, 225; orders invasion of the Crimea, 246; his advice to Raglan, 270; character, 273; orders railway at Balaclava, 274; Colonial Secretary, 348.
- Newman, Cardinal, 103-105.
- New Zealand, receives a constitution, 218.
- Niagara, Falls, case of the *Caroline*, 11.
- Nicholas, Czar of Russia, alienated from England, 200; upholds the Greek Church, 229, 230, 232; his conversations with Sir H. Seymour, 231, 232, double-dealing, 233; dislikes Lord Stratford, 234; mistakes England, 236, 237; his circular, 238; prepares for war, 239; orders invasion of Turkey, 243; death, 274.
- Nicholls, Sir Jasper, his views on the Afghan war, 66.
- Nicholls, Poor Law Commissioner, his report on Ireland, 17, 18.
- Nicholson, John, at Peshawur, 304; his movable column, 305; at Delhi, 307, 315; death, 317.
- Nightingale, Florence, at Scutari, 278.
- Nolan, Captain, at Balaclava, 258.
- Norbury, Lord, murder of, 23, 25.
- Normanby, Lord (Mulgrave), Lord-Lieutenant for Ireland, 1; his policy, 22; his defence, 24, 25; Home Secretary, 33; in Paris, 214, 215.
- Northbrook, Lord, Viceroy of India, 354; introduces Army Bill, 470; his management of Indian famine, 508; Treaty with Shere Ali, 535; resigns, 536.
- Northcote, Sir Stafford, Board of Trade, 421; Indian Secretary, 421, 425; repudiates Russell's scheme, 506; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 507; his Friendly Societies Bill, 515; demands the £6,000,000, 528, 529; quoted, 530; his motion for suspending Parnell, 558; his rules of procedure, 558; complaints against his finance, 563.

- Northumberland, Duke of, Admiralty, 218; Privy Seal, 507.
- Nott, General, at Candahar, 63, 66, 68; at Cabul, 69.
- Nubar Pasha, Egyptian Minister, 553; dismissed, 554.
- Nuisance, Removal Bill, 195.
- OASTLER, Chartist leader, 44.
- Obstruction, in Parliament, 138, 555-558; rules against, 558, 563, 564.
- O'Brien, Smith, resigns his magistracy, 109; his speech, 110-112; his ability, 164; asks help from France, 168; his rebellion, 169; transported, 170.
- O'Brien, Chartist leader, 176.
- O'Connell, Daniel, importance of, 2, 15, opposes the new Poor Law, 18; supports Normanby, 22, 23; opposes Stanley's Registration Bill, 47; his Repeal Association, 107; loses his seat for Dublin, 108; regains his power, 108; deprived of his magistracy, 109; organises monster meetings, 109, 113; arrested, 114; his trial, 115; retires, 116, 128; death and character, 163, 164.
- O'Connell, John, deprived of his magistracy, 109; arrested, 114; acquitted, 115; leader of the Repeal party, 164.
- O'Connor, Feargus, Chartist leader, 44, 91; arrested, 92; tried, 106; opposes the Anti-Corn Law League, 131; his land scheme, 176; member for Notting-ham, 176; on Kennington Common, 177; his mind fails, 178.
- O'Donnell, supports Parnell, 556; his speech, 558.
- O'Donovan Rossa, Fenian, 417.
- O'Gorman, Major, on equalisation of the franchise, 557.
- Olmütz, Convention, 207.
- Onar Pasha, his campaign, 238, 243-246.
- Oregou, frontier, 144-146.
- Orsini, his attempt, 330; effect, 343, 345.
- Osman Pasha, in Plevna, 527.
- Otho, King of Greece, misgovernment, 200.
- Oude, annexation of, 295, 296.
- Oude, King of, 297, 300, 318.
- Oudenot, General, in Rome, 188.
- Outram, Sir James, in Sindh, 94; in Persia, 289; annexation of Oude, 295, 296; at Cawnpore, 314; at Lucknow, 320, 322; on Canning's proclamation, 339.
- Overeud and Gurney, failure of, 412.
- Oxford, Tractarian movement, 99, 103-106; University reform, 241-243, 466; Broad Church in, 396-397; influence on Gladstone, 410.
- Oxmantown, Lord, on Irish agitation, 23.
- PACOT, LORD GEORGE, at Balaclava, 258, 259.
- Pakington, Sir John, Colonial Secretary, 218; Admiralty, 336; again, 421; War Secretary, 421, 425.
- Palmerston, Lord, Foreign Secretary, 1; supports the Spanish Queen, 3, 53; general description of his policy, 53; mistrusts the French, 54, 147; policy on the Eastern question, 54-59; quoted, 59; the Chinese war in accordance with his views, 71; opposes Peel's policy, 90; dislikes the Ashburton Treaty, 91; Grey refuses to serve with, 133; opposes Aberdeen's policy, 147; supports the Progressistas, 148; effect of his return to office, 150, 151, 155; his despatch to Bulwer, 152; Foreign Secretary, 154, 155; sympathises with the Liberals in Europe, 178, 181, 183; upholds the independence of Switzerland, 184; quoted, 184, 185; his policy in Italy, 186, 187; quoted, 189; charges against, 198, 203; sympathy with Hungary, 200; deals firmly with Greece, 201, 202; defends his policy, 203; his policy disliked by Prince Albert, 207; the Queen's memorandum to, 208; sympathy with Kosuth, 212, 213; his dismissal, 214, 215; his explanations, 216; opposes the Militia Bill, 217; amends the Free-trade resolution, 220; Home Secretary, 225; hostility to Russell, 225; mistrusts Russia, 236; resigns, and returns, 238; advises attack upon Sebastopol, 245; Premier, 272; character, 273; sanitary reforms in the Crimea, 274, 276; secures peace, 282, 283; approves of Persian war, 288; popularity, 291; India Bill, 329; Conspiracy Bill, 331; resigns, 332; aware of Napoleon's schemes, 333; meets Napoleon at Osborne, 334; opinion on Derby's India Bill, 338; dislikes Reform Bills, 341, 351; reconciliation with Russell, 342; Premier, 348; character, 350; his Italian sympathies, 355, 356, 357; mistrusts Napoleon, 358; prepares for French invasion, 361, 362; his tact, 366; sends troops to Canada, 376; his measures for the cotton famine, 382; his compromise on the paper tax, 389; death, 393; his dislike to reform, 419; refuses Irish land reform, 458, 459.
- Panmure, Lord (Fox Maule), War Secretary, 154; again, 272; character, 273.
- Papal bull, 209.
- Paper tax, 388-390.
- Papineau, in Canada, 8, 9.
- Paris, Louis Philippe deposed, 179, 180, 182; Coup d'Etat, 213; siege of, 478-482; second siege, 483.
- Parke, Sir James, dissents from O'Connell's verdict, 115; his peerage, 286.
- Parker, Admiral, 201.
- Parkes, in China, 289, 290, 370.
- Parliament, New in 1838, 5; in 1841, 52



- in 1847, 165 ; in 1852, 219 ; in 1857, 291 ; in 1859, 342, 346 ; in 1855, 394, 410 ; in 1868, 449 ; in 1874, 499, 500 ; in 1880, 567, 570.
- Parnell, Charles Stewart, 462 ; character, 556 ; suspended, 558 ; accused of apologising for murder, 558 ; obstructs the Army Bill, 559 ; his views, 559 ; his agitation against landlordism, 560 ; the Land League, 561 ; his visit to America, 562.
- Paskiewitz, Russian General, 243.
- Patten, Wilson, on cotton famine, 383.
- Pattison, Mark, Essays and Reviews, 396.
- Pauloff at Inkerman, 263.
- Peabody, his houses, 408.
- Pearson, Colonel, in Zululand, 548, 549.
- Peel, Sir Robert, his ministry of 1835, 2, 20 ; his power in Opposition, 2, 3, 11, 16 ; his views on Irish questions, 19, 21, 25 ; opposes Drummond's railway scheme, 26 ; opposes the Jamaica Bill, 31 ; declines the ministry unless the Queen's ladies were changed, 32, 33 ; his amendments on the Jamaica Bill adopted, 34 ; his skill as a party leader, 35 ; opposes the Factory Bill, 40 ; defeats Melbourne's Ministry, 52 ; Premier, 77 ; refuses a declaration of policy, 78 ; his views on protection, 80, 81 ; his sliding-scale, 81, 82 ; his financial measures, 83-86 ; unpopularity of, 82, 90 ; maintains the Corn Laws, 93 ; establishes Church districts, 98, 99 ; strongly against repeal of the Union, 108 ; refuses O'Brien's motion for inquiry, 113 ; influenced by O'Connell's movement, 116, 123 ; his Currency Bill, 116-119 ; his conversion to Free-trade, 122-124 ; attempts to deal with the Irish Church, 125 ; carries his Maynooth Grant, 126 ; establishes undenominational colleges, 127 ; avoids land legislation, 128 ; inquires into the potato disease, 130 ; wishes to modify the Corn Laws, 132 ; resigns, 133 ; resumes office, 134 ; proposes to repeal the Corn Laws, 135, 136 ; strong opposition to, 137, 138 ; his patriotism, 139 ; resigns, 140 ; his measures to avert the Irish famine, 156 ; opposes Bentinck's railway scheme, 162 ; his opinion on Irish evictions, 167 ; opposes Fielden's Factory Act, 170, 171 ; vindicates his Bank Restriction Act, 174 ; his proposal for Irish relief, 191 ; admires Palmerston's speech, 203 ; disapproves of Palmerston's policy, 204 ; death and character, 204, 205 ; his Free-trade policy vindicated, 219 ; signs memorandum on Russia, 231 ; Gladstone continues his financial system, 386, 572.
- Peel, Jonathan (his brother), War Secretary, 336 ; again, 421 ; resigns, 425.
- Peel, Sir Robert (son of Sir Robert), Irish Secretary, 348.
- Pegu, annexation of, 228.
- Pélissier, succeeds Canrobert, 280 ; in the Malakoff, 281.
- Pelly, Sir Lewis, his Treaty with Afghanistan, 537.
- Pennefather, General, at Inkerman, 262, 264.
- Penzance, Lord, appointed Ecclesiastical Judge, 512.
- Persia, 59-61, 288, 289.
- Persigny, French minister, 356.
- Peshawur, 60, 67, 195, 305, 306, 542.
- Phayre, General, at Quetta, 543.
- Philanthropy. [See Social Questions.]
- Philpotts, Bishop of Exeter, abuses the Poor Law, 38 ; the Gorham Case, 210.
- Pius ix., Pope, grants constitution, 181 ; difficulties with, 185 ; flies from Rome, 188 ; restored, 199 ; his Bull, 209, 210 ; disregards French advice, 344 ; war with Sardinia, 360, 492.
- Plevna, siege of, 527.
- Plowden, in Abyssinia, 436.
- Plunket, Lord, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, 1.
- Poland, annexed, 153, 156 ; insurrection in, 199, 366-368.
- Polk, President of United States, 145.
- Pollock, General, in Afghanistan, 67-69.
- Pomare, Queen of Tahiti, 147.
- Ponsonby, Lord, at Constantinople, 55.
- Poor Law, complaints against, 17, 37, 38, 79 ; upheld by Peel, 90 ; Disraeli tries to alter, 196 ; the cotton famine, 381, 382.
- Poor Law, Irish, altered, 16-18, 163, 191, 192.
- Portugal, Palmerston's negotiations in, 53, 54, 179.
- Post office, penny postage, 49 ; savings banks, 408.
- Potato famine, 128-130, 156-160, 164-167, 189, 560-562, 564.
- Potter attacks the Corn Laws, 131.
- Pottinger, Major Eldred, at Herat, 61 ; at Cabul, 65.
- Pottinger, Sir Henry, in China, 73, 74.
- Power, O'Connor, character, 556 ; obstructs Army Bill, 557 ; quoted, 560.
- Prague, Treaty of, 431.
- Prideaux in Abyssinia, 437.
- Prim, Spanish Minister, 475.
- Primrose, General, at Candahar, 543.
- Pringle in Jamaica, 30.
- Pritchard in Tahiti, 147.
- Privateers, in the American war, 375, 377-379, 385, 489-491.
- Procedure rules, 558, 564.
- Prussia, power of, 53 ; revolutions in, 181, 182 ; refuses the Imperial Crown, 199 ; supports Sleswig, 203, 206, 207 ; rivalry with Austria, 207, 344, 362 ; William I. Regent, 345 ; unfriendly to Napoleon, 355, 358 ; Sleswig-Holstein war, 363-366 ; Convention with Russia, 367 ; war with Austria, 429-432 ; Luxemburg, 433 ; education in, 463 ; Franco-



- German war, 475-487; Black Sea Conference, 488; San Juan, 491; policy in Egypt, 554.
- Public Health Bill, 195.
- Public Worship Bill, 510-512.
- Pulleine, Colonel, at Isandlana, 549.
- Punjab, 60, 192-195, 295; 303-307.
- Purchase in the army abolished, 469, 470.
- Pusey, Dr., leader of the High Church, 103, 105; proceeds against Jowett, 397; on temporal jurisdiction, 398.
- QUEEN'S COLLEGES, Ireland, founded, 127; unsatisfactory, 493.
- Quetta, 535, 536, 538, 543.
- RADETSKY, Austrian General, in Italy, 186.
- Radetsky, Russian General, in Turkey, 527.
- Raglan, Lord, character, 244; obeys Newcastle, 246; at the Alma, 249, 250; yields to St. Arnaud, 250-252; at Balaklava, 256-258; at Inkerman, 264, 265; his energy, 267; charges against, 270; death, 280.
- Railways in Ireland, Drummond's scheme, 26; Bentinck's scheme, 161, 162.
- Railway mania, 140, 141.
- Ranec, the, of Jhansee, 319, 323-325.
- Rao, Sahib, 323, 325.
- Rassam, in Abyssinia, 437.
- Rathgar, siege of, 323.
- Rawlinson, Sir Henry, his policy, 535.
- Rebecca riots, 106, 107.
- Redan, 254, 281.
- Reed, General, at Delhi, 306.
- Reform, effects of the great Reform Bill, 1, 36; desire for, 37, 44; Russell's Bill withdrawn, 238, 241; Disraeli's proposal, 341; Russell's bill withdrawn, 351; failure of private bills, 396; Gladstone's desire for, 400; failure of Russell's bill, 419, 420; agitation for, 422, 423; Disraeli's bill, 424-428; for Ireland and Scotland, 448; Ballot Bill passed, 474; effect of, 569, 570.
- Registration Bill, 514.
- Registration, Irish, Bill, 47, 48.
- Reid, Major Charles, at Delhi, 315, 317.
- Relief Bill, Irish, 157-160, 163, 191, 192.
- Renaud, at Allahabad, 308; at Futteypore, 309.
- Repeal Association, 107, 108.
- Richardson, murder of, in Japan, 371.
- Richmond, Duke of, Board of Trade, 421; President of the Council, 507.
- Ripon, Lord, Board of Trade, 77; Board of Control, 77.
- Ripon, Lord, Indian Secretary, 410; President of the Council, 450; Viceroy of India, 542; ordered to withdraw from Afghanistan, 544.
- Roberts, General, his march to Cabul, 538; his second invasion of Afghanistan, 539, 540; relieves Candahar, 543; returns to India, 544.
- Roden, Lord, on Ireland, 25.
- Roebuck urges extension of the franchise, 37; on the Chartist petition, 88; supports Palmerston, 203; motion against Aberdeen's Ministry, 271; chairman of Crimean Inquiry Committee, 273; on the American war, 378.
- Roman Catholics, excluded from national education, 40; oppose Graham's Factory Bill, 97; the Tractarian movement, 104, 105; in Ireland, 111, 112, 125, 126; Papal Bull, 209-211.
- Rome, 188, 358, 359, 432.
- Romilly, Lord, introduces the Encumbered Estates Act, 192.
- Rose, Sir Hugh, at Constantinople, 233; in India, 323-325.
- Rothschild, advances money, 283; in Parliament, 341.
- Runjeet Singh, treaty with, 60, 61; death, 142; his conquests, 192.
- Russell, Lord, Home Secretary, 1; moderate in his views, 2; his Canada Bill, 9, 11; proposes a compromise on Irish bills, 19, 20; approves of concession to Ireland, 22; proposes vote of confidence, 25; advises Melbourne to resign, 31; Colonial Secretary, 33; his Jamaica Bill, 34; opposes reform movements, 37; his Education Bill, 41, 42; suppresses Chartism, 45; his proposal on the Corn Laws, 51; quoted, 78; his amendment on Peel's sliding scale, 81; declares the legality of repeal meetings, 110; his manifesto on Free-trade, 133; attempts to form a ministry, 133; his explanations, 135; joins the Protectionists to overthrow Peel, 139; Premier, 154; his measures to relieve the Irish famine, 157-160; listens to other suggestions, 161; establishes Education Committee, 171; obtains an increased grant for education, 172; proposes to raise the income-tax, 175; quoted, 176; modifies the Irish poor-law, 192; introduces the Australian Constitution Bill, 197, 198; supports Palmerston, 203, 208; letter to the Bishop of Durham, 210; resigns and returns, 212; correspondence with Palmerston, 216; his speech against him, 216; his Militia Bill, 216, 217; resigns, 217; Foreign Secretary, 225; hostility to Palmerston, 225; his views on education, 226; his Reform Bill, 238, 241; his University Reform Bill, 242; resigns, 271; fails to form a ministry, 272; Colonial Secretary, 273; at Vienna, 274, 275; resigns, 276; his resolutions on education, 286; disapproves of the Chinese war, 291; proposal as to Derby's India Bill, 338; bill to admit Jews to Parliament, 340;

- opposes Disraeli's Reform Bill, 341; reconciliation with Palmerston, 342; Foreign Secretary, 348; his importance, 349; introduces and withdraws Reform Bill, 351; Palmerston's letter to, 355; sympathy with Venice, 361; his conduct in the Sleswig question, 362-366; remonstrance as to Poland, 367, 368; preserves neutrality in the American war, 375, 378; desires reform, 400; Premier, 410; pledged to reform, 411; his Reform Bill, 419; resigns, 420; charges against his foreign policy, 429.
- Russell, Scott, his social programme scheme, 506, 514.
- Russia, power of, 53; dread of, 54; commercial treaty, 55; Palmerston's convention, 58; advance in Asia, 59; siege of Herat, 60; in Cabul, 61, 71; alliance with Austria, 199; hostility to England, 200, 201; supports the Greek Church, 229; the Crimean war, 230-283; friendship with France, 333-335, 344, 345, 355; insurrection in Poland, 366-368; Gortschakoff's declaration, 487; Black Sea Conference, 488; its advance in Asia, 497, 517, 534; intrigues in Turkey, 518, 519; supports Servia, 523; war with Turkey, 526, 527; treaty of San Stefano, 529, 531; the Berlin treaty, 532; sends a mission to Cabul, 537; supports Abdurahman, 540, 542.
- SADOWA, battle, 366, 431.
- St. Arnaud, character, 243; objects to invasion of the Crimea, 246; at the Alma, 249, 250; decides on the flank march, 251; death, 252.
- St. Germans, Lord [see Eliot], introduces Coercion Bill, 137; Lord-Lieutenant for Ireland, 225.
- St. Leonards, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 218.
- Salar Jung, 327.
- Sale, General, in Cabul, 63; in Jellalabad, 66, 67; at Cabul, 70; death, 142.
- Salisbury, Lord, Privy Seal, 218; President of the Council, 336.
- Salisbury Lord [see Cranborne], opposes University Test Bill, 466; repudiates Russell's scheme, 506; Indian Secretary, 507; approves the Public Worship Bill, 510; Disraeli's speech on, 512; Foreign Secretary, 507; his circular, 530-532; approves Sir B. Frere's policy, 536; quarrels with Northbrook, 536.
- Salkeld, at Delhi, 317.
- Salonika, murder of consuls at, 520.
- San Juan difficulty, 491.
- San Stefano, treaty, 527, 529-531.
- Sandilli, war with, 228.
- Sandou, Lord, Protectionist, 52.
- Sandwith, Dr., at Kars, 282.
- Sanitary reform, 88, 195, 287, 384, 407, 504.
- Sardinia, 181, 182, 185-187, 279, 280, 334, 335, 343-346, 355-361.
- Saugor, 323.
- Savings Banks, Post Office, established, 408.
- Savoy, annexation of, 357.
- Scarlett, General, at Balaclava, 256, 257.
- Scobelev, General, in Turkey, 527.
- Scotland, the Disruption, 99-102; potato disease in, 155; Reform Bill, 448, 449.
- Scutari, Hospital, 266, 274, 278.
- Sebastopol, Russian fleet at, 58; Palmerston's views on, 245, 246; described, 251; defence of, 252-255, 279; fall of, 281.
- Secocoeni, his war with the Transvaal, 545, 546.
- Selborne, Lord, Lord Chancellor, 450; the Judicature Bill, 496, 497; his Land Transfer Bill, 514.
- Semmes, Captain, in the *Alabama*, 378.
- Sepoys, in the Afghan war, 65; mutiny, 292-294, 297-301.
- Serano, Spanish minister, 179, 475.
- Servia, restrained by Russia, 519; war with Turkey, 523; independent, 532.
- Seward, the *Trent* affair, 376.
- Seymour, Sir Hamilton, in St. Petersburg, 230-232.
- Seymour, Sir Michael, in China, 288, 290.
- Shaftesbury, Lord [see Ashley], his philanthropy, 407, 408; on the Public Worship Bill, 511.
- Shakespeare, Sir Richmond, in Afghanistan, 69, 70.
- Shaw, leader of the Orangemen, 18, 24.
- Shaw, Home Rule leader, 555; his amendment to the Address, 562.
- Sheffield, riots in, 44; trades' union outrages, 503, 504.
- Shepstone, Sir Theophilus, his Transvaal policy, 546.
- Shere Ali, Ameer of Cabul, 534; treaties with, 535; character, 536; rejects the mission, 537; flight and death, 538.
- Shere Ali, Governor of Candahar, 541.
- Shere Singh at Mooltan, 193.
- Sherman, American General, 379.
- Shewell, at Balaclava, 258, 259.
- Shiel, Minister in Persia, 288.
- Shuttleworth, Sir Kay, on education, 172.
- Sicily, 185, 358, 359.
- Sidon, stormed, 58.
- Sikhs, in Cashmere, 60; war with, 142-144; at Mooltan, 192-194.
- Silistria, siege of, 243-244.
- Simonich, at Cabul, 60.
- Simpson, General, Chief of the Staff, 274; quoted, 277; succeeds Raglan, 280; the Redan, 281.
- Sindh, independent, 60; war in, 92-94.
- Sindia, 302, 303, 314, 318, 325.
- Sinope, fleet destroyed at, 238.
- Slavery, Brougham on, 26, 27; in Jamaica, 29; in relation with Protection, 52, 86, 121; one cause of American Civil War, 373.
- Sleeinan, Sir William, approves of the annexation of Oude, 295.

- Sleswig and Holstein, first war, 181, 203-207; second war, 362-366; third war, 429-432.
- Slidell and Mason, arrested, 376.
- Smith, William Henry, Admiralty, 507.
- Smith, Dr. Southwood, his sanitary report, 195.
- Smith, Sir Henry, at Aliwal, 143; in Kaffraria, 228.
- Smith, Sir Lionel, in Jamaica, 29.
- Smith, Vernon, Board of Control, 272; Canning's letter to, 339, 340.
- Smith, Baird, at Delhi, 315-317.
- Smith, Brigadier, at Gwalior, 325.
- Smyth, protectionist, 124.
- Smyth, Home Rule leader, 557.
- Social questions, 39, 88, 93, 95, 170, 171, 208, 286, 287, 400, 406-408, 502-506, 514-516, 573-577.
- Soimonoff, at Inkerman, 262, 263.
- Somerset, Duke of, Admiralty, 348; again, 410.
- Somerville, Sir William, Irish Secretary, 154.
- Sonnauth, gates of, 69, 70.
- Soofah Dowlah, expelled by Dost Mahomed, 60; restored by the English, 61-63; murdered, 68.
- Soult, Marshal, his circular, 56.
- Spain, Palmerston's negotiations in, 3, 5, 53, 54; the Queen's marriage, 148-153, 179; breach with England, 183, 184; candidates for the throne, 475, 476.
- Spencer, Lord, Lord-Lieutenant for Ireland, 450.
- Spring-Rice, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1; not made Speaker, 33; his finances, 48; becomes Lord Monteagle, 48.
- Stanhope, Lord, dislikes the Poor Law, 38, 86.
- Stanley, Lord, joins Peel, 2, 22; opposes Russell's Education Bill, 42; his Irish Negotiation Bill, 46, 47; Colonial Secretary, 77, 78; refuses to support Peel, 133; suggested as Premier, 134; opposes Russell's Irish Poor Law Bill, 163; condemns Palmerston's policy, 203, 204; fails to form a ministry, 212; becomes Lord Derby, 218. [See Derby.]
- Stanley, Lord (his son), Colonial Secretary, 336; Board of Control, 336; Indian Secretary, 339, 353; Foreign Secretary, 421; remonstrates with Napoleon, 432; maintains neutrality, 433; Abyssinian war, 437; sees the urgency of the Irish question, 442; amendment on the Irish Church, 446. [See Derby.]
- Stanley, of Alderley, Board of Trade, 272; Postmaster-General, 348; again, 410.
- Stanley, Colonel (brother of Lord Derby), War Secretary, 507; introduces the Army Bill, 559.
- Stansfeld, Local Government Board, 450; his suggestions adopted, 509.
- Steinmetz, Prussian general, 477.
- Stephens, the Chartist, 44.
- Stephens, Fenian, 417.
- Stewart, General, at Candahar, 533; at Cabul, 541; marches to Peshawur, 542, 543.
- Stopford, Admiral, bombards Beyrout, 58.
- Stratford de Redcliffe, Lord, at Constantinople, 224-237.
- Strikes, 38, 39, 402-404, 504-506.
- Succession duties, tax on, 500, 502.
- Suez Canal, purchased 516, 517.
- Sugden, Sir Edward, Lord Chancellor for Ireland, 77; deprives Repealers of their magistracy, 109.
- Sutherland, Duchess of, 78.
- Swartzenburg, Austrian minister, 182; success of, 199; on Palmerston's fall, 216.
- Switzerland, 180, 184, 358.
- TAHITI, difficulties in, 147, 148.
- Tantia Topi, 319, 320, 322-326.
- Tariff, changes in, 50, 83, 85, 93, 117, 121, 123, 135, 227, 387, 391.
- Taylor, William, at Patna, 319.
- Taylor, Alexander, at Delhi, 318.
- Tchernayeff, Russian general, 523.
- Temperance movement the, 50, 406, 407; Permissive Bill, 497; Licensing Bill 472, 474, 508.
- Temple, Dr., Essays and Reviews, 396.
- Tewfik, Khedive of Egypt, 554.
- Texas, annexation of, 10.
- Theodore, King of Abyssinia, 436-438.
- Thiers, French minister, 57; warlike views, 58, 147; dismissed, 59; minister, 180; his mission, 479, 480; head of the ministry, 482; besieges Paris, 483.
- Thom, the fanatic, 43.
- Thomson Poulett (Lord Sydenham), Board of Trade, 1; Governor of Canada, 14.
- Times, The*, on Lord Durham, 13; on the Crimean war, 269.
- Tithes, Irish, 19, 21, 446, 451.
- Totleben, at Sebastopol, 253, 255, 256, 279; at Plevna, 527.
- Torrington, Lord, in Ceylon, 196.
- Towns Improvement Bill, 195.
- Tractarian movement, 103-106, 210, 395-399; Public Worship Bill, 510, 511.
- Trade, depression of, 48, 79, 86, 189; revival of, 195, 219, 401, 412, 428; with Turkey, 55; with China, 71, 72, 76, 371, with Japan, 371; with France, 386, 388, 391, 392; effect of American war on, 385; growth of, 573.
- Trades unions, rise of, 38, 39; increase of, 401-404, 574; legalised, 503-506, 516.
- Transvaal, the, annexation of, 545, 546; independence restored to, 550-552.
- Trelawney, Sir John, his Church Rate Bill, 399.
- Trent, affair of, 376.
- Trevelyan, Sir Charles, his Indian finance 354.

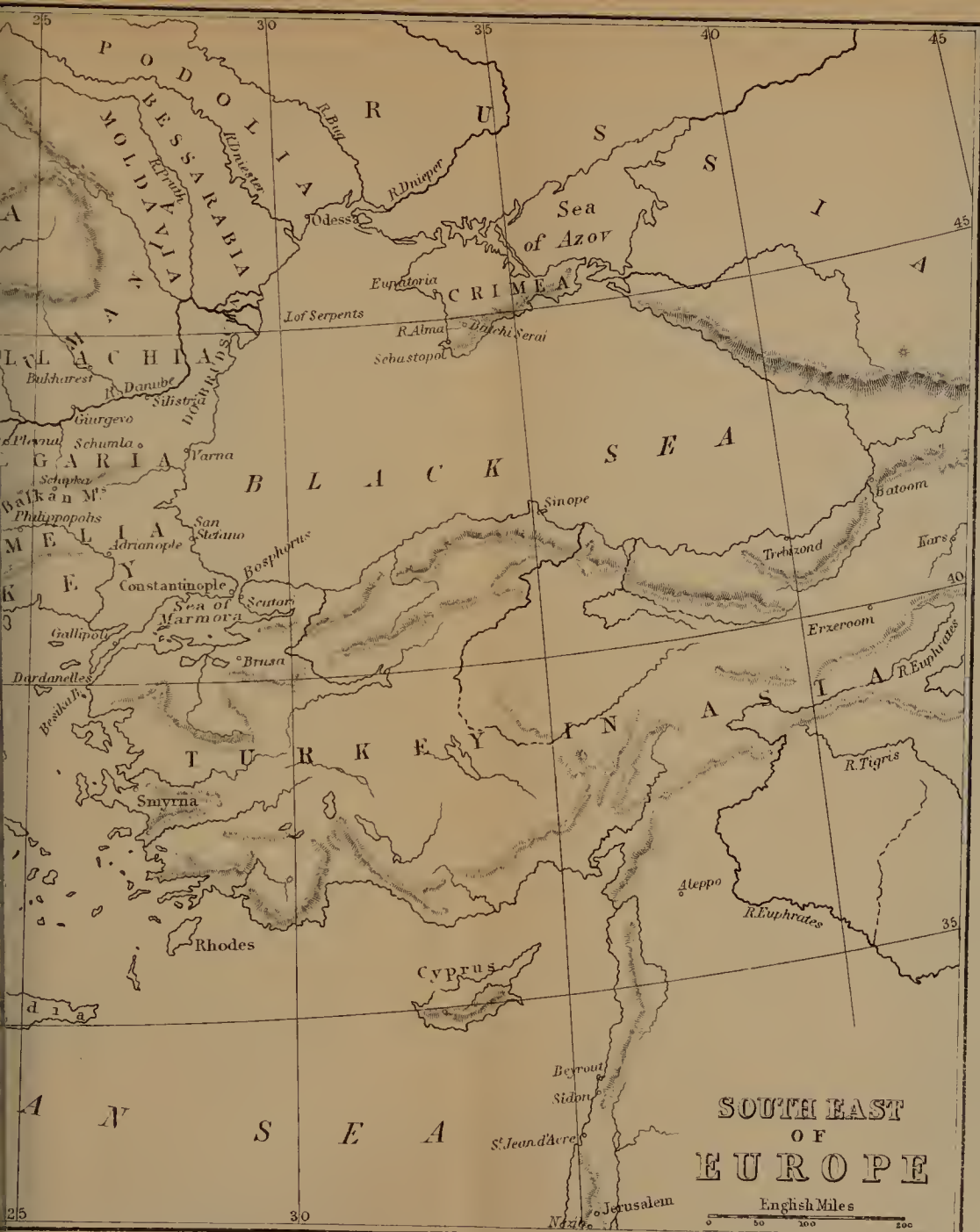
- Trevelyan, Sir George (his son), on army reform, 469.
- Trevelyan, Walter, on temperance, 407.
- Trochu, President of French Government, 478, 480, 482.
- Tuero, Lord Chancellor, 154.
- Tulloch, Colonel, his report, 277.
- Turgot, correspondence with Normanby, 214, 215.
- Turkey, Palmerston's negotiations with, and war with Egypt, 54-59; Hungarians refugees in, 199, 200; the Czar's views on, 231; panic in, 233; negotiations at Constantinople, 233-235, 237; declares war, 237; campaign on the Danube, 238, 239, 243-245; troops in the Crimea, 256, 260; terms of peace, 275, 283; the Danubian provinces, 334, 487; Black Sea Conference, 488; misgovernment of, 518; the Audrassy note, 519; the Berlin note, 523; the Bulgarian insurrection, 521, 522; the Servian war, 523-525; the Russian war, 526, 527; the Berlin treaty, 528-532.
- Tyler, American President, 145.
- ULSTER CUSTOM, 457, 459, 460.
- Uhundi, expedition against, 548-550.
- University Reform, 241, 242, 463, 464, 466, 467.
- VARNA, allied troops at, 244.
- Venice, Revolution in, 186; captured by Austria, 187, 199; Napoleon's negotiations, 355-358; Garibaldi's efforts for, 359; restored to Italy, 431.
- Victoria, accession, 4; civil list, 5; objection to change her ladies, 32; marriage, 35; at Eu, 149, 150; dislike to Palmerston's policy, 207, 212, 215; her memorandum, 208, 216; Napoleon's visit to, 334; difficulty of choosing Premier, 342; volunteer review, 361; Prince Albert's death, 394; objects to Disraeli's resignation, 447; Empress of India, 522.
- Victor Emmanuel, his policy, 343, 356, meets Garibaldi, 360; King of Italy, 361; policy, 432.
- Vienna, conferences at, 235-237, 274, 275, treaty of, 429.
- Villafranca, meeting, 355.
- Villiers, Charles, spokesman of the Anti-Corn Law League, 80-82; upholds Free Trade, 124, 219; Poor-Law Board, 410.
- Vincent, Chartist, 44.
- Vinoy, General, in Paris, 481, 483.
- Volunteers, 361.
- WALES, Rebecca riots in, 106, 107.
- Wales, Prince of, his visit to India, 518.
- Walewski, his conversations with Palmerston, 215, 216; his despatch, 330, 331; refuses to sign the Osborne compact, 335; quoted, 337.
- Walpole, Spencer, Home Secretary, 218, 336; resigns, 341; Home Secretary, 421; prevents reform meetings, 422.
- Washington Treaty, 489.
- Water Works Bill, 565.
- Wellington, Duke of, desires settlement of Irish Bills, 19; asked to form a ministry, 32; quoted, 45; foresees danger in Afghanistan, 62; criticises Ellenborough, 70; in the Cabinet, 77, 78; vindicates the Afghan policy, 93; supports Maynooth Grant, 126; objects to Peel's resignation, 133; supports the repeal of the Corn Laws, 138; supports Ellenborough, 141; remains Commander-in-Chief, 155; prevents Chartist riots, 177; advises General Napier's being sent to India, 194; death, 222; signature to treaty with the Czar, 231.
- Westbury, Lord, his law reforms, 351, 352; resigns, 352; his judgment on the Essays and Reviews, 396, 397; his Registration Act, 514.
- Wharnccliffe, Lord, President of the Council, 77.
- Whately, Archbishop, on the Poor-Law Commission, 17.
- Wheeler, Sir Hugh, at Cawnpore, 308, 309.
- Whish, General, at Mooltau, 193, 194.
- Whitelock, General, at Madras, 323; at Banda, 325.
- Wild, in Afghanistan, 67.
- William, King of Prussia, Regent, 345, King, 364; quarrel with France, 476; in France, 478; friendly with the Czar, 488; Emperor, arbitrator in the San-Juan difficulty, 491.
- William IV., hostile to his ministers, 1, 4; death, 4.
- Williams, General, at Kars, 282.
- Wilson, Archdale, at Delhi, 305, 306, 315, 317.
- Wilson, Thomas, at Lucknow, 312, 313.
- Wilson, James, his Indian finance, 354.
- Wilson, Rivers, his Egyptian finance, 553.
- Windham, General, at Cawnpore, 320.
- Window tax repealed, 211, 212.
- Wise, his Education Scheme, 41.
- Wiseman, Cardinal, 210, 211.
- Wodehouse, Lord, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 410; suspends the Habeas Corpus Act, 417.
- Wolseley, Sir Garnet, in Ashantee, 498, 499; chief of the staff, 529; in Natal, 545; reorganises Zululand, 550; High Commissioner, 550.
- Wonderfontein, meeting at, 550.
- Wood, Colonel, in Zululand, 548, 549.



- Wood, Sir Charles, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 154 ; raises a loan to meet the Irish famine, 160 ; opposes the Factory Bill, 170 ; examines the Bank Act, 173 ; his budget, 174, 175 ; his economic views, 191 ; his budget, 211 ; Board of Control, 225 ; Admiralty, 272, 273 ; Indian Secretary, 348 ; his able administration, 353, 354.
- Working Classes, distress among, 37, 80, 86, rise of trades unions, 38 ; necessity for education, 40-43 ; the Poor Law, 90 ; interest felt in, 93, 96 ; opposed to Corn Law League, 87, 131 ; effect of Crimean war on, 276 ; sanitary reforms, 195, 287 ; cotton famine, 377, 381-384 ; practical politics of, 400 ; trades unions, 401-404 ; co-operation, 405, 406 ; temperance movement, 407 ; Peabody buildings, 408 ; cheap trains, 408 ; interest in the Reform Bill, 422 ; trades unions, 502-506 ; legislation for, 515-516 ; political power, 570 ; condition of, 573-577. [See also Chartism ; Education ; Factory Bills.]
- Wyse, in Greece, 201, 202.
- YAKOOB KHAN, Regent at Cabul, 538 ; treaty with, 539 ; deposed, 540.
- Yeh, Chinese Commissioner, 290, 291.
- Young, Sir John, Irish Secretary, 225.
- Yusuf Khan, at Herat, 288.
- ZULUS, the, 545 ; irritated against the Boers, 546, 547 ; war with, 548-550.







SOUTH EAST  
OF  
EUROPE

English Miles

0 50 100 200









*History of England*

A History of England  
942 B76h

942 Bright, J. Franck

B76h History of England

^ - - ^

942

B76h

top 2

ISSUED TO

*AL*



